

M. 1. 85 THE ~~2052~~  
ROYAL GRAMMAR,

commonly called

LYLLY'S GRAMMAR,  
EXPLAINED.

In those Rules of it which con-  
cern the *Genders* and *Irregular De-*  
*clinings* of *Nouns*; and the *Preter-*  
*perfect Tenses* and *Supines* of *Verbs*;

ordinarily called,

*Propria quæ maribus*; *Quæ genus*; and  
*As in Præsenti.*

By way of *Question* and *Answer*,  
Opening the meanings of the Rules  
with great plainness to the under-  
standing of Children of meanest  
capacity.

With choice *Critical Observations* on the  
same, from the best extant *Authors* and *Gram-*  
*marians*. For the amending of the *Mistakes*, and supplying  
of the *Defects* thereof.

By WILLIAM WALKER. B. D.  
Authour of the Treatise of the *English Particles*.

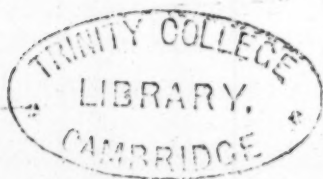
LONDON,

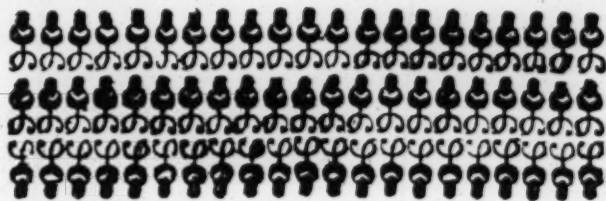
Printed for Robert Pawlet at the Sign of the Bible in Chancery Lane near Fleet-street, and Francis Heley at the end  
of Chancery Lane next Holborn. 1672. p 1.

*Imp. Coll.*  
*Ex dono Autoris, hujusce Collij*  
*quorundam discipuli. 1673*

*quell 62*







To the most Reverend Fa-  
ther in God *Richard* by Divine  
Providence, Lord Arch-Bishop of  
York; *William Walker* Rector of  
*Colsterworth*, wisheth all  
Happines.

*My Lord,*

**L** Here present your Grace this  
Tract in an English dress, which  
once you were pleased to look upon  
∴ a Roman habit, and so to look  
upon, as to look into, espying out, and ad-  
vertising me of the defects thereof; and  
the mistakes that were therein. The advice  
of Horace the critical Poet in such case as  
this is, was this :

---

Si quid tamen olim  
A 2      Scripseris

The Epistle Dedicatory.

Scripseris, in Mitij descendat iudicis  
aures,  
Et patris, & nostras, nonumque prema-  
tur in annum.

*And this advice I have followed herein, having submitted this Tract to the view of several much more discerning eyes than mine own, though to none more discerning than Your Graces are, and having suppressed it also nonum in annum; for 'tis that time and more, since you were pleased to vouchsafe your perusal to it. What then found Your Approbation, now begs Your Patronage, being by so much better than it was, as it is freed from those mistakes, and supplied in those defects, you observed in it, and sent the great Vossius himself in that particular Great Work of his, which he had been pleased to honour you with the presentment of, to rectifie me in, and to supply me with: which was to me an honour so high, and an encouragement so great, that it were an unworthiness, and an ingratitude in me to conceal it; and especially since this work hath acquired a considerable improvement by it. Your  
Grace's*

## The Epistle Dedicatory.

Grace's great humility and modesty is such, that if you remember any such thing (as perhaps you do not) Your goodness, in which the world speaks you more eminent than in greatness, inclining you to forget the good turns done by you unto others) yet I believe you had rather I had said nothing of it. But how then should I have performed that duty of Gratitude towards you, which Nature, as well as Grace, obliges me unto? Give me leave I humbly beseech your Grace to be, (or rather forgive me this fault, if a fault it be, that I have been) grateful. I should have done it in another better way; But I had no better, I had no other so becoming a way to do it in as this. The work is at the feet of Your Grace, and hopes you now will bid it live; being come to a fitting both bigness and shape, in that you did not bid it dye, when it had neither shape nor bignesse such as it should have had, as being an abortion rather than a birth, when first you saw it. But I must remember, Your Grace hath somewhat else to do, than to attend to, or mind such little things as these;

## The Epistle Dedicatory.

*and therefore with my hearty prayer,  
that you may long live to be an en-  
couragement to the Learned, as you  
have long lived already an Honour to  
Learning, I do in all humility take  
leave to rest,*

*From Colsterworth  
August the 2d.  
1669.*

*My Lord,  
Your Grace's most humble  
and most obliged  
Servant,*

WILLIAM WALKER.

A General Preface to this,  
and the ensuing Volumes of  
Grammatical Explanations.

Courteous Reader,

**H**AVING observed, whilst I was  
a *Schoolmaster* for many years  
in *Leitch*, new *Grammars* ever  
and anon coming forth: I  
concluded somewhat was amiss in the  
*old*, for why else should the Learned  
Authours of them spend their pains in  
compositions of *new*?

And this occasioned my considering  
of, and comparing the old and the new  
together: the result of which conside-  
ration and comparison was this, a con-  
clusion, that any of them would serve  
to do the business they were framed for,  
but none of them would do it so much  
better, as that there was any necessity



*A General Preface.*

to lay by the old, to give place to any new. And in as much as the change of Grammars was of evil consequence to Learners, therefore I concluded, that, though some few in those daies (of liberty, shall I say, or rather of licentiousness) might take a fancy privately to teach some *new Grammar*, yet generally Teachers would in publick Schools make use of the *old*, unless Authority should impose some new one, which I could not imagine it would do, without more necessity than any I saw. And to make it still lesse necessary, either to make a change of the old, or to allow or connive at a diversity of new ones, (the mischief of which, where tolerated, hath been found to be so great both here, and in other Countries, that authority both at home and abroad hath thought good to interpose in the case, and establish *one only Grammar* to be read in their Dominions, and forbid the Teaching of any other) I have thought good, after much deliberation with my self, and some of my learned friends, to set to my hand

### *The General Preface.*

to explain the *Obscurities*, to rectify the *Mistakes*, and to supply the *Defects* pretended to be in the old Grammar: which done, there could remain no necessity, nor very great reason that I could imagine, to bring us back again into that confusion and distraction by diversity of Grammars, for the removal of which the Authority of this Nation had upon mature deliberation established *this* to be *the only Grammar*, that should be learned in all the Schools of *England*.

In order to the effecting of this work, I have not only by the by taken notice of, but made it much of my business to consult and examine both *Authors*, and *Lexicographers*, and *Grammarians* as well Critical as Technical, and those both Ancient and Modern, of our own, and of other Countries, and observe from them, and collect out of them, what might be conducive to my intended purpose. And having had this under consideration well nigh twenty years, I have made some good progress therein: But not knowing whether I should live to finish the work, having other important

*The General Preface.*

tant occasions to divert me from it, or retard me in it, nor knowing how acceptable it would be when finished, I have thought good at present to put forth *three Volumes* of that work upon *three* most useful, and most used parts of the Grammer; *viz.* That concerning the *Gender of Nouns*, called *Propria quæmaribus*; and that concerning the *Heteroclites of Nouns*, called *Quægenus*; and that concerning the *Preterperfect tenses* and *Supines of Verbs*, called *As in Præfenti* as a *Specimen* or proof of the whole. If these be accepted of, and judged useful to the publick, I may be encouraged thereby to go on to publish more. If not, these are too much: and I shall humbly beg pardon for giving the world an unnecessary trouble.

Of my performances herein I shall boast nothing; but leave the censure thereof to every man; only I shall desire that justice and charity from all, which every one would expect from me. I have fitted it, the best I could, to be an *ease* to the Teacher, a *profit* to the Learner, and a *delight* for both; writing  
not

### *The General Preface.*

not only in *English*, whereas I had begun to do it in *Latine*, to the end I might be understood of, and so be profitable unto all even of weakest capacity, but also by way of *Question* and *Answer*, whereby the Scholars are capacitated to become Masters to themselves, or one another; and yet so contriving the *Questions* and *Answers*, that there is no necessity of learning the *Questions* without Book, every *Answer* containing an intire sense within it self, and so being much more easie to be understood, than it would be if half, or any part of the sense were to be fetched out of the *Question*, as is usual in Interlocutory Discourses. And yet the *Questions* are not needless, as serving hugely for the *Masters* ease, beside the benefit of them to the *Scholars*: in as much as by the help of them, he may (by asking them to the several Scholars of a Seat, in, or out of order, as he pleases) quickly go over a whole Lesson, and see how every one hath minded the Lesson, without the tedious labour of hearing every one say all, or letting some escape without hearing them say  
any

### *The General Preface.*

any thing at all. For the entertainment also of the Teacher in his vacancies, and also for the benefit or satisfaction of other more inquisitive whether Learning or Learned Persons, I have added *Critical Notes* or *Commentaries* upon every punctilio almost, that seemed any way needful or convenient to be adverted on, wherein he hath an account of every thing explained, or corrected in, or added to the Rules of Grammar, and whereby he is saved more charge in buying, and more time in reading other Grammars, than I will speak of.

You will find other *Grammarians*, beside our *Authour* now and then taking a nap, like old *Homer*, and awakened by me, yet without much noise, and if not with much respect, yet without any disrespect in the least. For who ever wore flesh, and was not subject unto over-sight, our Lord Jesus Christ alone excepted? And what from the distance of our times and places from those, when and where the Language, whereof we treat was spoken; and what from the loss of those monuments of that  
Language,

### *The General Preface.*

Language, that have been, and are not in being, and what from the corruptions and different readings of those monuments of it, that yet are in being, there is nothing wherein mistake is more easie to be committed, than in this subject; and especially when the mistakes of former Authours are become the *Dogmatical* Precepts of after Writers: whereby Error becomes Traditionary, and Authoritative, and if not impossible, yet very difficult to be wholly shaken off, as I find by experience not only in my self, but others, who very confidently give us several of the Errours of the old Grammar in those very new Grammars of their own composing, whereby they pretend to deliver us from those old Errours: Which consideration did move me the more strongly to prosecute this Design, and may invite others to a perusal of this work.

Neither will our *Authour* be found to be so erroneous, as some have been pleased to think him, being right enough in more places than one, where he hath been thought to be mistaken (as I have  
upon



*The General Preface.*

upon occasion shewn) what noise soever have been made of the *Errores Liliij*, by I know not how many pretenders to be *Lights to Lilly*, who indeed are rather *Lights from Lilly*, not only as having from him much of that Light, which they would have supposed to be their own, but, and rather as designing to light their Readers away from the learning of him, to the learning of their own composures: it being irrational to conceive, they should ever mean, children should learn *Lillies Grammar*, who put forth *other Grammars* of their own for Children to learn. For to what purpose this wast of time and pains to learn theirs, if they must learn him too? Unless it be for private fame or gain, how much soever the publick be damned thereby. But leaving this to the consideration of those that have *Power* to take cognizance thereof, I forbear to rave further into their designs, as thinking there was wisdom in that advice, whereby caution was given not to provoke Hornets.

These *Traacts* I conceive, will be useful

*The General Preface.*

full to all that deal with, or are delighted in *Grammar Learning*, but especially to all *Young Teachers* as well as *Learners of Grammar*, and more especially to private *Country School-Masters*, who may not have the conveniency of seeing, nor time for searching into those Books, which are necessary to be dealt withal, in order to satisfaction in these Particulars; and who will find herein the pith and substance of what hath been said to the purpose by the most and best, either *old* or *new Grammarians*. To all whom that it may be profitable is my prayer, and to any of whom it it shall bring any profit it shall be my joy. For so some glory, I hope, will redound unto my God, and some good will come unto his Church, both whom it is my Desire, as it is my Duty, in what I may, to be subservient unto.

And that good God, that hath endued me his weak and unworthy Servant with this small *Mite*, so blesse the design to publick advantage, that in the improvement of it, it may be unto others as a *Talent*. For my part, Reader,

*The General Preface.*

I beg not your *Praise*, I beg not your *Thanks*; but your *Patience* until you do read, and your *Charity* when you shall have read; this I do, and this I shall beg of you. And so committing the Work to your Mercy, and you to Gods Mercy, I rest

Your Servant for the  
publick good,

*W. W.*

---

**T**He Reader is desired to excuse the Author from such Errata's as have escaped the Press, his distance from the City not giving him the opportunity to peruse the sheets as they were done.

---



A N  
E X P L A N A T I O N  
of the RULES of the  
GRAMMAR;

Touching the Genders of Nouns as they are  
delivered in *Propria quæ maribus*, &c.

C H A P. I.

1. Quest. **H**ow many sorts of Rules doth  
the Grammar give for the Genders  
of Nouns?

Ans. The Grammar gives two sorts of Rules  
for the Genders of Nouns: Namely Rules for the  
Genders of Nouns *Substantives*, and Rules for the  
Genders of Nouns *Adjectives*.

2. Qu. How many sorts of Rules doth the  
Grammar give for the Genders of Nouns *Sub-  
stantives*?

2. An. The Grammar gives two sorts of Rules  
for the Genders of *Substantives*: Namely for the  
Genders of *Substantives Proper*, and for the Gen-  
ders of *Substantives Common*.

3. Qu. How many Rules doth the Grammar  
give

## An Explanation of

gth: for the Genders of Substantiv's Proper?

*An.* The Grammar gives two Rules for the Genders of Substantives *Proper*: The one for *Masculines* and the other for *Feminines*.

4. Qu. What Rule doth the Grammar gth: for the Genders of *Proper Nouns* of the Masculine Gender?

*An.* The Grammar gives this Rule for the Genders of *Proper Nouns* of the *Masculine Gender*.

## GULIELMI LILII

### Regulæ Generales Propriorum de Masculinis.

**Propria  
quæ Mari-  
bus.**

*Propria quæ Mariibus tribuuntur mascula dicas:*

*Ut sunt Divorum, Mars, Bacchus, Apollo; Virorum, Ut Cato, Virgilius; Fluviorum, ut Tiberis, Orontes; Mensium, ut October; Ventorum, ut Lybs, Notus, Auster*

5. Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule?

*An.* The meaning of this Rule is this, That all Proper names of *Persons* or *Things*; that either are, or, are conceived to be of the *Male Kind* [such as the word *He* may be applyed to] are of the *Masculine Gender*.

6. Qu. How many sorts of *Proper Nouns* or names are expressly contained in this Rule?

*An.* There are expressly contained in this Rule five sorts of Proper Names or Nouns: viz. *Divorum, Virorum, Fluviorum, Mensium, Ventorum*, i. e. The Names of Gods, of Men, of Rivers, of Months, of Winds.

7. Qu. Wh'ch branch of the Rule is it that concerns the names of Gods?

*An.* That branch of the Rule which concerns the

the gender of the Proper Names of gods, is this, *Ut sunt Divorum*, Mars, Bacchus, Apollo. *Ut sunt Divorum.*

8. Qu. What is the meaning of this branch of the Rule?

An. The meaning of this branch of the Rule is, That the Proper names of Gods are of the masculine gender.

9. What is there to be understood by the word *Divorum*, or the names of Gods?

An. By the word *Divorum*, or the Names of Gods, we are to understand all those names, which are used to be given, not only unto the One True God, such as *Jehova*, &c. but also unto all imaginary false gods, such as here are reckoned, *Mars, Bacchus, Apollo*, &c.

10. Qu. Which branch of the Rule is that wherein the Gender of Proper names of Men is concerned?

An. That branch of the Rule which concerns the Proper names of Men is this, *Virorum*, ut Cato, Virgilius. *Virorum*

11. Qu. What is the meaning of this branch of the Rule?

An. The meaning of this branch of the Rule is this, That the proper names of Men are of the masculine gender.

12. Qu. What is here to be understood by the word *Virorum*, or the names of men?

An. By the word *Virorum* or the names of Men, we are to understand all those Proper names which are given unto Persons that are of, or are conceived to be of the Male kind or Sex.

13. Qu. How many sorts of such proper names can you reckon up?

An. There may, of such Proper names, be reckoned up three sorts. (1.) The Names of Men, as Cato and Virgilius. (2.) The Names of Good Angels,



as *Gabriel* and *Raphael*. (3.) The Names of evil Angels, or Divels, *Lucifer*, *Apollyon*, &c.

14. Qu. May there nothing else be referred to this branch of the Rule?

An. To this branch of the Rule may be referred the Proper names of People, of several Countries, as *Car*, *Ser*, *Persa*, *Turca*, *Macedo*, *Saxo*, *Trevir*. *Arabs*, *Atrebas*, *Phryx*, *Thrax*, *Allobrox*, *Cappadox*, &c.

15. Qu. Which branch of the Rule is that, which concerns the gender of the proper names of Rivers?

*Fluviorum.* An. That branch of the Rule wherein the gender of Proper names of Rivers is concerned is this, *Fluviorum*, ut *Tibris*, *Orontes*.

16. Qu. What is the meaning of this branch of the Rule?

An. The meaning of this branch of the Rule is this, That the Proper names of Rivers generally are of the masculine gender.

17. Qu. Are there names of Rivers of any other but the masculine gender?

An. There are Exceptions from this Rule for the gender of the Proper names of Rivers: for some names of Rivers are of the Feminine gender: some are of the neuter gender; and one is both the masculine and neuter.

18. Qu. What names of Rivers are of the feminine gender?

An. *Stryx* and *Lethe* names of Rivers are of the feminine gender, as being made of greek names, and keeping that gender in Latine, which they had in Greek.

19. Qu. Are there none but Greekish names of Rivers of the feminine gender?

An. There are also Latine names of Rivers of the feminine gender; namely *Albula*, *Allea*, *Druentia*, *Lupia*, *Matrona*, *Misella*, *Sequana*, *Vistula*: and generally

nerally all names of Rivers of like terminations.

20. Qu. How then to it that many names of Rivers of a feminine termination are read in Authors of the masculine gender; as Mosella, Garumna, Duria, Bograda, Gela, Marfya, Addua?

An. When names of Rivers of a feminine termination are read in Authors of the masculine gender, those Authors had respect unto the word *Fluvius*, which they understood together with the name of the River, and thereto fitted the gender of the Adjective that they joyned to it.

21. Qu. But how comes it to passe that the same name of a River of a feminine termination is sometimes used in the masculine gender, and sometimes in the feminine; as Mosella,

An. When the name of a River in *a*, or any feminine termination, is used in the feminine gender, then respect is had either unto the termination, or else unto *aqua* understood with it. But when it is used in the masculine gender then the respect is had unto *Fluvius* understood likewise with it, or unto the feigned God of that River, who was pictured in the form of a man.

22. Qu. What names of Rivers are of the neuter gender?

An. *Tiberum* and *Jader* are proper names of Rivers of the neuter gender.

23. Qu. Which name of a River is both of the masculine and neuter gender?

An. *Nar* the proper name of a River is both of the masculine and neuter gender: of the neuter gender in respect of termination, of the masculine gender by reference unto *Fluvius* or *Amnis* understood with it.

24. Q1. What have the Grammatical's given in general touching the Gender of proper names of Rivers?

An. Mr. Farnaby gives this Rule in general touching

touching the gender of the Proper names of Rivers, that if any of them be used in the Masculine, or Neuter Gender, it is with respect unto *Fluvius*, or *Flumen* understood with them. And *Vossius* gives this Rule, that the Names of Rivers are of that Gender, which their termination requires. And if at any time, where the termination is feminine or neuter, the gender of the word is masculine, there is a *Synthesis* in the expression, and it is out of respect unto *Fluvius* understood therewith.

¶ For *Isther*, *Rhenus*, *Metaurus*, *Rhodanus*, *Iberus*, antiently they said *Istrum*, *Rhenum*; *Metaurum*, *Rhodanum*, *Iberum*, if the word *Flumen* followed. Hence that of *Horace* 4. Carm. 4. Od. *Testis Metaurum flumen & Afrubal.* and *De Art. Poet. Aut flumen Rhenum, aut pluvius describitur arcus.*

*Acheron* or *Acherons* the name of a River is used to signify an imaginary place or Country. And when it signifies a River it is of the masculine, when a Country it is of the feminine gender; *fluvius* being understood in the one, and *regio* in the other.

25. Qu. Which branch of the Rule is this, which concerns the Proper names of Months?

*Mensium.*

An. That branch of the Rule, which concerns the Proper names of Months, is, *Mensium*, ut *October*.

26. Qu. What is the meaning of this branch of the Rule?

An. The meaning of this branch of the Rule is this, That the Proper names of Months are of the masculine gender.

27. Qu. What are the names of Months properly Substantives or Adjectives?

An. The names of Months properly are Adjectives taken Substantively; as both *Farnaby* and *Vossius* affirm.

28. Qu. Why are the Proper names of Months

Months being ~~Adjectives~~ alwayes of the masculine gender.

An. The Proper names of Months though they be by nature Adjectives, yet they are *alwayes* of the masculine gender, because *Mensis*, which is ever understood, and sometimes expressed with them, is referred unto in the gender of them.

¶ The names of Months seems to be Adjectives first because they have the Substantive *Mensis* in several cases coming together with it. Hence we read in Cic. *Mense Quintili*. in Hor. *Sextile Mense*. in Plin. *Mense Maio*. in Sueton. *Septembrem Mensem*; and *Mensem Aprilem*. Secondly, because their names like Adjectives are set as agreeing with Substantives of divers genders. Hence we read in Horace, *Martiis Calendis*, and *Nonæ Decembres*; and in Cic. *Idibus Martiis*, &c.

29. Qu. Which branch of the Rule is it that concerns the gender of the Proper names of Winds?

An. That branch of the Rule which concerns the gender of the Proper names of Winds is this, *Ventorum*, ut Lybs, Notus, Auster : to which may be added *Cafias*, *Boreas*, *Aquilo*, *Eurus*, *Zephyrus*.

30. Qu. What is the meaning of this branch of the Rule?

An. The meaning of this branch of the Rule is this, That the Proper names of Winds are generally of the masculine gender.

31. Qu. Is there any name of any Wind in the feminine gender?

An. *Lilaps*, the name of a wind is to be excepted from the Rule of masculines; as retaining that gender in Latine, which it hath in greek, being originally a greek word, λιλῆψ.

32. Qu. But are not *Etesia* and *Ornithia* names of Winds of the feminine gender, being feminine in their termination?

B 4

An. *Etesia*

## An Explanation of

*An. Etesia* and *Ornithie* names of Winds, though feminine in their termination, yet are *masculine* in their gender, as being originally greek words *εσσια* and *ορνιθια* of the first declension of *Simples*, which are all masculines; and besides in both there is respect unto the greek word *αερος*, or unto the Latine word *ventus*.

¶ The Adjective names of Winds, as *Africus*, *Subsolanus*, &c. So *Favix* as being the same with *Favigins*, because that wind blows out from *Favigia* or *Apulia*, are used masculinely, as referring unto the substantive *Ventus*.

33. Qu. How are the words of this Rule declined?

The declining of the words in Propria quæ Mari-bus.

*An.* The words of this Rule are declined thus: *hic Mars*, *Martis*, &c. *hic Bacchus*, *Bacchi*, &c. *hic Apollo*, *Apollinis* &c. *hic Cato*, *Catonis*, &c. *hic Virgilius*, *Virgilii*, &c. *hic Tiberis*, *Tibris*, &c. *hic Orontes*, *Orontæ*, and *Orontis*, &c. *hic Oëober*, *Oëobris*, &c. *hic Lybs*, *Lybis*, &c. *hic Notus*, *Noti*, &c. *hic Auster*, *Austri*, &c.

34. Qu. Why not the Proper names of some other things, beside those specified in the Rule be referred hither?

Animalium sexus masculini.

*An.* Hither may be referred the Proper names of any sort of Creatures, whose sex is distinguishable, and which are certainly known to be of the *male-kind*; as for instance, the Proper names of *Horses* as distinguished from *Mares*, as *Bucephalus*; and *Dogs* as distinguished from *Bitches*, as, *Hylæus*, *Læon*, *Harpalos*, and so of other creatures.

Montium.

¶ Some refer hither the Names of *Mountains* and *Hills*. But there is no one certain Rule for them. For some are of the *masculine* gender, namely those that end in *os*, as *Achæos*; or in *us*, as *Æmus*, *Olympus*, *Pindus*, *Parnassus*, *Vesuvius*, *Caucasus*, *Taurus*. And whereas *Apuleius* useth *Hymettos*, and *Tenaros* in the *feminine* gender; by those names he means not any

Moun-

*Mountains in Attica, or Laconica, but the Countries themselves, so that the gender of the Adjectives joyned in the feminine gender with them, hath respect unto Regio understood in them. Again some are of the feminine gender, namely those that are of the first declension ending in a or e: as Aetna, Ossa, Oeta, or Oete, Rhodope, Caspe. And if any of these be at any time used, as sometimes they are in the masculine gender; it is by a Synthesis, respect being had unto Mons which is understood together with them. Lastly some are of the Neuter Gender; namely those that in the singular number end in on or um; as Pelion, &c. and those that in the Plurial number end in a, as Menala, Isinara, Taygeta (i. e. as they are plurals) and finally Soraete in the singular number of the third Declension. Hence Horace 1 Carm. Vides ut alba ster nive candidum Soraete.*

Thus far of the Rule for the Genders of Proper names or nouns of the masculine Gender.

## CHAP. II.

1. Qu. **V** What is the Grammar Rule for the gender of Proper nouns of names of the feminine gender?

An. The Grammar Rule for the gender of Proper nouns or names of the feminine is this.

*De Fæmininis.*

*Propria fæmineum.*

*Propria fæmineum referentia nomina sexum Fæmineo generi tribuuntur, &c. sive Dearum Sunt, ut Juno, Venus; Mulierum, ceu Anna, Philotis; Urbium, ut Elis, Opus; Regionum, ut Græcia, Persis; Insula item nomen, ceu Creta, Britannia, Cyprus.*

2. Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule?

An. The meaning of this Rule is this, that all Proper



Proper names of *Persons* or *Things*, that either are, or are conceived to be of the *female kind* [ such as the word *She* may be applied to ] are of the feminine gender.

3. Qu. How many sorts of Proper nouns or names are expressly contained in this Rule?

An. There are expressly contained in this Rule five sorts of Proper nouns or names, viz. *Dearum*; *Mulierum*; *Urbium*; *Regionum*; *Insularum*: i. e. The names of Goddesses; of Women; of Cities, of Countries; of Islands.

4. Qu. Why are the names of Cities and Countries, which are of no Sex, added to the Rule for the gender of Proper names of things of the female Sex?

An. The names of Cities and Countries, and so of Islands, are added to the Rule for the gender of the Proper names of things of the female Sex, because though they be not properly of any sex, yet they do in some degree represent the female Sex in that they are as it were the mothers of their Inhabitants, which they do bring forth.

5. Qu. Which branch of the Rule is that, which concernes the names of Goddesses?

*Dearum.* An. That branch of the Rule that concernes the names of Goddesses is this, *Sive Dearum sunt*, ut *Juno*, *Venus*.

6. Qu. What is the meaning of this branch of the Rule?

An. The meaning of this branch of the Rule is, That the proper names of all those Imaginary Deities, which the Heathens phansied to be, and worshipped as Goddesses, or the gods, are of the feminine gender. Such were *Juno*, and *Venus* here mentioned; also *Minerva*, *Luna*, *Diana*, *Cybele*, *Ceres*, *Vesta*, &c.

7. Qu. Which branch of the Rule is that which con-

are, or  
as the  
ninine  
s of  
Rule  
urum;  
i. e.  
, of  
and  
the  
s of  
so  
of  
be-  
yet  
ex  
in-  
ch  
he  
ut  
e  
3  
-  
.

concerns the gender of the names of Women ?

An. That branch of the Rule which concerns the Proper names of Women is this ; *Mulierum*, *cen* Anna, *Philotis*.

8. Qu. What is the meaning of this branch of the Rule ?

An. The meaning of this branch of the Rule is this, That the Proper names of Women, what ever be the termination thereof, though on or um, are of the feminine gender ; as Anna, *Philotis*, *Dorcion*, *Planesium*, *Glycerium*.

9. Qu. Are there not names of somethings else beside Women, to be comprehended under the names of Women ?

An. Under the names of Women are to be comprehended the names of sundry things beside women, which are conceived of, as if they were Women. Such are the imaginary Heathenish Poetical *Muses*, and *Graces*, and *Furies*, and *Harpies*, and *Nymphs* of all sorts, Wood Nymphs and Sea Nymphs ; and the Nymphs that belonged to Mountains and Springs, all whose names are of the feminine gender ; as *Calliope*, *Aglaia*, *Tisiphone*, *Celano*, *Atropos*, *Deiopeia*, &c.

10. Qu. Which branch of the Rule is that which concerns the Proper names of Cities ?

An. That branch of the Rule which concerns the gender of Proper names of Cities is this, *Urbium*, ut *Elis*, *Opus*.

11. Qu. What is the meaning of this branch of the Rule ?

An. The meaning of this branch of the Rule is, That the Proper names of Towns, whether greater, as Cities, or lesser, as Villages are of the feminine gender, as *Elis*, *Opus*.

12. Qu. Is the Rule in this so universally true that there are no exceptions from it ?

An. There

*An.* There are exceptions from this Rule, as we shall see afterward. In the meantime we may resolve on this; that the Gender of Proper names of Towns is known by their Terminations, and that if any of them have an Adjective joyned with it, disagreeing with the termination of it, then it is a *Synthesis* in the expression, and respect is had unto *Urbs*, which is understood. Hence nouns ending in *a* and *e*. of the first declension are of the feminine gender; as *Ardea, Roma, Mitylene, Helice*. And the like is to be said of plurals in *a*, as *Athena, Mycenæ*.

¶ *Adria* sometimes is the name of a City, and sometimes of a Sea. When it is the name of a City it is of the feminine gender; when it signifies a Sea then it is of the masculine gender, as having reference unto *Sinus*, whence is read in *Strabo* ὁ Ἀδρίας κόλτος l. 5.

13. Qu. Which branch of the Rule is that which concerns the Proper names of Countries?

*Regionum.*

*An.* That branch of the Rule which concerns the Proper names of Countries is this, *Regionum ut Græcia, Persis.*

14. Qu. What is the meaning of this branch of the Rule?

*An.* The meaning of this branch of the Rule is this, that the Proper names of Countries are generally of the feminine gender; as *Græcia, Persis*, so *Gallia, Italia, Anglia*, &c.

15. Q. Is there any Proper name of any Country, which is not of the feminine gender?

*An.* *Pontus* as well when it signifies a Country, whether that in *Asia*, or that in *Europe* so called, as when it signifies a Sea is of the masculine gender.

16. Q. Do terminations give any general rule touching the genders of Proper names of Countries?

*An.* Gram

as *An.* Grammarians give this Rule touching the  
may Proper names of Countries, that if at any time an  
name Adjective be joyned with the Proper name of a  
Country, which suits not with the termination of  
the name, there is a *Synthesis* in the expression,  
and *Regio* or *Terra* is referred to therein.

¶ Touching those names of Countries, which  
end in *ia*, as *Italia*, *Gracia*, it is probably con-  
ceived that they are Adjectives taken Substan-  
tively, whose masculine and neuter genders are  
now mostly grown out of use; and that the rea-  
son of their being feminine is because *Terra*, or  
*Tellus*, or *Regio*, are referred to therein. The  
ground of this opinion is, first because the mascu-  
lines of some of these words are yet remaining; as  
*Lacedæmonius* from *Lacedæmon*, whence is *Lace-  
dæmonia*. *Phrygius* from *Phryx*, whence is *Phry-  
gia*: So *Thracius* from *Thrax*, whence is *Thracia*,  
with which and the rest *Terra* or *Regio* is under-  
stood. Secondly, because the word *Terra* is often  
found in Authors put in the same case with these  
words. Whence we read in *Appuleius*, *morem  
Thessaliæ Regionis*: in *Cæsar*, *Ex usu Terræ Galliæ*;  
in *Livy*, *Extra Terram Italianam*. Of all which  
see *Voss. de Analogia* l. 1. c. 12. and *de Construc-  
tione* c. 2.

17. Qu. Which branch of the Rule is that  
which concerns the Proper names of Islands?

*An.* That branch of the Rule which concerns  
the Proper names of Islands is this,  
*Insula item nomen, seu Creta, Britannia, Cyprus.*

*Insularum.*

18. Qu. What is the meaning of this branch of  
the Rule?

*An.* The meaning of this branch of the Rule is  
this, that the Proper names of Islands are of the fe-  
minine gender; as *Creta*, *Britannia*, &c.

¶ Touching this branch it may be noted, as of  
the

the two former, that where a Noun of a Masculine termination is of the feminine Gender, there *terra* or *Insula* is referred unto.

19. Qu. Doth the Grammar make any exception from any branch of the Rule?

An. The Grammar makes an exception from that branch of the Rule, which concernes the Proper names of Cities, and that exception is this,

Excipienda  
tamen  
quædam  
sunt urbi-  
um.

*Excipienda tamen quedam sunt Urbium : ut ista Mascula, Sulmo, Agragas: quedam neutralia, ut Argos, Tibur, Præneste : & genus, Anxur, quod dat utrumque.*

20. Qu. What is the meaning of this exception?

An. The meaning of this Exception is this, that all names of Cities and Towns are not of the feminine gender; but some are of the masculine gender; some of the neuter gender; and one is both of the masculine and neuter gender?

21. Qu. Have you any Rule to guide you in this uncertainty of the Genders of Proper names of Towns and Cities, to know (if you meet with any other besides these particularly here excepted) which are of the masculine, which of the feminine, and which of the neuter gender?

An. The Rule of direction to know the genders of Proper names of Cities and Towns, is to observe the termination of the words: for according to the termination of the words, so is the Gender of them: those are of the masculine gender, whose termination is masculine; and those are neuters, whose termination is neutral: and if any word of a masculine or neutral termination be found to be of the feminine gender it is by a *Synthesis*, respect being had to the word *Urbs* or *Civitas*. But yet in our using of these words we must follow use, and take that for the gender of them, which they are used to read in.

22. Qu.

22. Qu. Which is that branch of the Exception that concerns names of Cities of the masculine gender?

An. The first branch of the exception [ which is this, *Excipienda tamen quadam sunt Urbium; ut ista mascula Sulmo, Agragas* ] concerns proper names of Cities and Towns of the masculine gender?

Mascula  
Sulmo.

23. Qu. What is the meaning of this branch of the Exception?

An. The meaning of this branch of the exception is this, That some proper names of Cities and Towns are of the masculine gender, namely those that end in *o*, as *Sulmo*, and those that end in *as*, as *Agragas* (or as it should be rather written *Acragas*, it being *Ἀκράγας* in greek.)

¶ *O* in the third Declension of the Latines is a masculine termination, as *Leo*, *Sermo*, &c. Hence *Sulmo* and *Crato* is of the masculine gender; and so is *Narbo*, and *Hippo*; which two yet are read with feminine Adjectives, in *Martial*, and *Silius*, by a *Synthesis*, with respect unto *Urbs*. Out of which respect it is that *Sirmio*, *Tarraco*, and *Castulo* being of a masculine termination, yet are used as feminines.

As In the fifth Declension of the Greeks is a masculine termination, as *ἰζύας* Hence *Acragas* of *Ἀκράγας* is of the masculine gender. Again, As in the first Declension of the Greeks is of the masculine termination, as *ἰ ταυλός* *Questor*, Hence *Taras* in *Lucan* l. 5. is of the masculine gender.

*Os* in the third declension of the Greeks is a masculine termination. Hence *Virgil* useth *Abydos*, and *Ovid*, *Lesbos* (of the second declension of the Latines answering to that third in Greek) in the masculine gender and accordingly those that end in *us* (yea though formed of Greek nouns in *os*) are mas-

masculines, by termination. Hence *Florus* useth *Corinthus* in the masculine gender. Yet partly because that termination *os* in Greek hath many feminines in that Declension ending in it; and chiefly out of respect to the general word *Urbs*, which in the understanding goes along with the words, both *Abydos* and *Lesbos*, and the other words of the same termination and derivation are mostly used as feminines, and some alwayes; as *Sestus* or *Sestos*, *Ilios*, *Colchos*, *Saguntos* or *Saguntus*.

*Us* in words which in Greek end in *us* contracted of *eus* is a masculine termination. Hence *Pestinus*, and *Daphnus* are of the masculine gender. And so in respect of termination *Amathus*, *Trapezus*, *Opus*, *Hydrus*, *Cerasus*, and the like are masculine, whereof yet some, as *Opus* and *Amathus* are used as feminines respect being had unto *Urbs* by a *Synthesis* or *Hyponaea*. But if any names of Towns end in *ys* they are feminines *riortus* in Laune *Gortys* being a feminine in *Homer*!

Lastly [ *I* ] in names of townes of the Plural number is a masculine termination; Hence *Philippi* and *Gabii*, and *Veii*, and the like are of the masculine gender. But those that end in *I* in the singular number are neuters; as *Aixi*, *Illiturgi*; as also are those that end in *y*; as *Dory*, *Æpy*.

24. Qu. Which branch of the Exception is that which concernes names of Cities of the neuter gender?

*Quedam  
neutralia  
ut Argos-*

An. The second branch of the Exception [ *quedam neutralia ut Argos, Tibur, Præneste* ] is that which concernes the proper names of Cities and Towns of the neuter gender.

25. Qu. What is the meaning of this branch of the Exception?

An. The meaning of this branch of the Exception is, that some Proper names of Cities and Towns are



are of the *neuter gender*, as *Argos*, *Tibur*, and *Præneste*, and those of like terminations.

¶ *Argos* is made of *ἄργος* of the first declension of greek contracts, which are all of the *neuter gender*, if they end in *os* like *ῥήγος*. Hence *Horace* and *Lucan*, respecting the termination rather than the signification of it, used it in the *neuter gender*.

*R* in names of Towns is a *neutral termination*. Hence not only *Tibur* like *Jecur*, but *Tuder* like *Tuber*, and *Gadir* like *Hir*, are *neuters*. *Festus Avienus* useth *Gadir* in the *feminine gender*, but it is by a *Synthesis* with respect unto *Urbs*.

*E* in names of Towns of the third declension, is a *neutral termination*. Hence not only *Præneste*, but *Reate*, *Care*, and *Nepate* are *neuters*. And when *Virgil* writes *Præneste sub ipsa*; it is a *Synthesis*, *Urbe* being understood and referred to.

*A* in names of Towns of the third declension, and singular number, is a *neutral termination*: Hence *Zeugma* is of the *neuter gender*. Also in plurals of the second declension, as *Artaxata*, *Bathra*, *Cythera*, *Susa*, &c.

*I* in names of Towns of the singular number is a *neutral termination*. Hence *Aixi*, and *Illiturgi*, are *neuters*: but in plurals it is a *masculine termination*, as in *Gabii*, *Veii*, as was said before.

*L* in names of Towns is a *neutral termination*. Hence *Hespal*, *Suthul*, and the like are *neuters*.

*M* in names of Towns is a *neutral termination*. Hence *brundisium*, *Cim*, *Lugdunum*, and the like are *neuters*. *Lugdunum* and *Saguntum* are both set with *feminine Adjectives*, but that is by a *Synthesis*, respect being had to *Urbs*.

*On* in names of Towns derived from Greek ones in *on* is a *neutral termination*. Hence *Pargamon*

is of the neuter gender. But names of Towns in *on* derived of Greek ones in *ur* are feminines, not by reason of the termination, which is mostly masculine, but by a *Hyponæa* or *Synthesis*, with respect unto *Urbs*. Hence *Ancon*, and *Croton*, and *Pleuron* are feminines.

Y in names of Towns is a neutral termination. Hence *Dory* and *Epy* are neuters- *Et summis ingestum montibus Epy*, Stat. 4. Theb.

26. Qu. Which is that branch of the Exception that concerns that name of a Town, which is both masculine and neuter

An. That branch of the exception which concerns a name of a Town both masculine and neuter is the third and last [ *Et genus Anxur quod dat utrumque.* ]

27. Qu. What is the meaning of this branch of the Exception?

An. The meaning of this branch of the Exception is, that *Anxur* is both of the masculine and neuter Genders.

¶ Some nouns in *ur* being masculine, as *Vultur*, *Turtur*, and some neuter; as *Guttur*, *Jecur*, but none feminine; thence Authors having regard to the termination of this word, have used it in the masculine and neuter genders, but not in the feminine.

28. Qu. How are the words of this Rule declined?

The declining of the words in Propria scemineum

An. The words of this Rule are declined thus: *hæc Juno, Junonis, &c. hæc Venus, Veneris, &c. hæc Anna, Anne &c. hæc Philotis, Philotis, &c. hæc Elis, Elidis, &c. hæc Opus, Opuntis, &c. Hæc Græcia, Græciæ, &c. hæc Persis, Persidis, &c. Hæc Creta, Cretæ, &c. hæc Britannia, Britannia, &c. hæc Cyprus, Cypri, &c. hic Sulmo, Salmonis, &c. hic Agragas, Agragantis, &c. hæc Argos, Argi, &c. hoc Tibur, Tiburis, &c. Hoc Preneste, Prenesti, &c. hic & hoc Anxur, Auxuris, &c*

Qu. May

29. Qu. *Why not the Proper names of some other things besides those mentioned in the Rule be referred hither?*

An. Hither may be referred the Proper names (if there be any) of other Creatures, whose sex is distinguishable, and which are known to be of the female sex; as *Nape*, *Harpya*, *Lycisea*, *Lagon*, *Lachne*, names of *Bitches* in *Ovid*; and the like.

*Animalium  
sexus fe-  
minei.*

Thus far of the Rules for the Genders of nouns Substantives Proper: Now follow the Rules for the Genders of Appellatives or nouns Substantives Common.

### CHAP. III.

1. Qu. *How many sorts of Rules doth the Grammar give to know the Gender of Appellatives or Substantives common by?*

An. The Grammar gives two sorts of Rules whereby to know the Genders of nouns Substantives Common; one sort is those that direct to the Gender of the word by the *nature* of the *thing*; the other sort is those that direct to the Gender of the word by the *declining* of it.

2. Qu. *How many General Rules are given for the knowing of the Gender of the word by the kind or nature of the thing?*

An. For the knowing of the Gender of the word by the kind or nature of the thing there are given two general Rules.

3. Qu. *What kind of things doth the first general Rule that is given for the knowing of the Gender of the words by the kind or nature of the things concern?*

An. The first general Rule for the knowing the

# An Explanation of

gender of words by the nature or kind of things is concerning *Trees*.

4. Qu. Which is the Rule whereby to know the Gender of the common names of *Trees*?

An. The Rule whereby to know the gender of the common names of *Trees* is this,

## Regulae generales Appellativorum

Appellati-  
va Arbo-  
rum.

*Appellativa arborum erunt muliebria, ut alnus Cupressus, cedrus.*

5. Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule?

An. The meaning of this Rule is this, that the Common names of *Trees* are generally of the feminine gender, as *alnus*, *cupressus*, *cedrus*.

¶ *Ennius* of old used *cupressus* in the masculine gender, saying *rectos cupressos*, Hence though *Gellius* say he did it, *contra receptum vocabuli genus*, some Grammarians will have it to have been antiently of the masculine gender; and even yet to be both masculine and feminine. But however it was with it antiently, it is now by Authors accounted a feminine. Hence *Ovid. Met. 3. Fab. 2. Vallis erat piceis & acuta densa cupressu*. Perhaps in that and the rest of the names of *Trees* of like termination and gender, Authors had respect unto the word *Arbor*, and therefore used words of a masculine termination in the feminine gender. Hence we read of these feminines in that termination, *Alnus*, *amygdalus*, *arbutus*, *buxus*, *caprificus*, *cedrus*, *cerasus*, *cornus*, *corylus*, *cupressus*, *ebulus*, *fagus*, *figus*, *fraxinus*, *juniperus*, *laurus*, *lentiscus*, *lotus*, *malus*, *mespilus*, *morus*, *myrtus*, *pirus*, *platanus*, *pinus*, *populus*, *prunus*, *quercus*, *ruscus*, *sambucus*, *sorbus*, *teucrium*, and *ulmus*; which last yet *Catullus* useth in the masculine gender; perhaps as respecting the termination of it; unless it were because that is called *maritus* not *marita*, unto which any

any marries ; for he saith , *At si forte eadem est ulmo conjuncta marito. De vite Carm. 61.* But in other words of other terminations Authors have much followed the termination of the word in the gender of it. Hence those words in *a* of the first declension are feminine, *betula, hedera, myrica, olea, palma, picea, tilia* ; and those in *x* of the third declension *ilex, larix, nux, salix, tamarix* ; and those in *r* in the second exception from the rule, namely *siler, suber, robur*, and *acer*, are neuters, whereas in the first exception *oleaster* of the same termination, as being of the second declension, is a masculine.

6. Qu. Are there any exceptions from this Rule ?

An. The Grammar makes two exceptions from this Rule ; the first is of names of *Trees* that are of the masculine gender ; the second is of names of *Trees* that are of the neuter gender.

7. Qu. Which is the exception of names of *Trees* that are of the masculine gender ?

An. The exception of names of *Trees*, that are of the masculine gender, is this ( according to the present textual reading of the Grammar ) *Mas spinus, Mas oleaster.*

8. Qu. What is the meaning of this Exception ?

An. The Authors meaning in this exception ( according to this reading ) is that *spinus* and *oleaster* names of trees are of the masculine gender.

9. Qu. Why do you add according to the present textual reading ?

An. I add according to the present reading, because there is said to be another reading in the margin, which\* is the righter, and that is *Mas spinus*, by which is meant not that *pinus* is the masculine gender, but that *Pinafter*, which is *mas pinus* is of that gender ; which yet I conceive to be a mistake, because *Pinafter* is of the feminine gender, as well as *pinus* is.

10. Qu. What way have you to right the Author and the reading?

An. The way to right the Author and the reading is, to read it *Mas pinus*, as a periphrasis of, and put for *pinaster*; and to alter the pointing of the rule, not setting the period at *cedrus*, but at *pinus*; and so making *mas pinus* no part of any exception, but an instance of the Rule for the feminine gender of the names of Trees, and to begin the exception, at *Mas Oleaster*.

¶ That *pinus* is not of the masculine gender now, whatever *Alvarus* say, without proof it hath been of old, is plain by *Virgil's Ipse te Tytere pinus*, Ecl. 1. and by *Horaces Sub altâ vel platano, vel hac pinu jacentes*, 2. Carm. Od. 11: So that it cannot be read *mas pinus*. That *Spinus* is of the feminine gender our best Lexicographers affirm: and though some Grammarians do deliver it for a masculine, yet it is without proof; and therefore others make no exception of it from among the feminines; and for this it seems not fit to be read *mas spinus*. And that it cannot be read *mas pinus*, as a periphrasis of *pinaster*, so pointed as to except *pinaster*, as a masculine from the Rule of feminines, is evident, because whatever divers Grammarians deliver by way of Rule touching words in *aster*, that they are of the masculine gender, the authority of *Pliny* is clear for its being of the feminine gender, unlesse he may be supposed to have respect unto *arbor* understood. Saith he l. 16. c. 10. *Pinafter nihil aliud est, quam pinus sylvestris mirâ alitudine, & a medio ramosa, sicut pinus in vertice. Copiosiore[m] dat hac resinam.* In this authority *Alvarus* and *Danesius* rested; and upon this authority in all likelihood *Theod. Gaza*, and *Theophrastus* used *pinaster* in the feminine. The only way therefore of righting the Author, is to alter the pointing of his Text, accordingly as we have done, and perhaps according to that which was

was his way of pointing it at the first; and to make the exception of masculines to begin at, *mas Oleaster*. But if from likeness of termination with *Oleaster*, it shall be concluded that *Pinafter* is a masculine; then let the exception be read *Mas pinus*, *Mas Oleaster*.

11. Qu. Is Oleaster then the onely name of a tree that is of the masculine gender?

An. Oleaster is not the only name of a tree that is of the masculine gender: For if *pinafter* be feminine yet *Cytesius* both in greek and latine is of the masculine gender: Hence we read in *Theocrit. Idyl.* 10. *οἱ κύτηες*; and in *Columel. l. de Arboribus c.* 28. that *Cytesius omni generi pecudum utilissimus est*. And if any where it be used femininely, it is by a *Synthesis*, *arbor* being referred to it, as it is in *Oleaster*, where *Cicero*, if he be read right *Or. 3. in ver. saith*, *Hominem suspendi iussit in oleastro quadam*. And so both *Stephanus*, *Mannius*, and *Manutius*, read it. And if *dumus* may be accounted the name of a tree, that is also of the masculine gender: As for *rubus* of the same nature with it, that is read both masculine and feminine, hence we read in *Virg. 2 Ecl. rubus asper*; and in *Gellius rubos late atque alte obortas. l. 19. c. 12.* the one perhaps respecting the termination, the other having respect to *arbor* or *planta* understood with it: though *Rhenius* thinks it righter to use it as a masculine.

*Mas Oleaster,*

¶ What hath been said of *rubus* may be accommodated unto *libanus*, which *Stephanus* delivers for both a masculine and feminine, and *Alvarus* testifies was antiently a masculine; if any used it in the masculine it was with respect unto the termination; and where any use it in the feminine it is with respect unto the signification, *arbor* being understood.

12. Qu. Which is the Exception of the names of Trees that are of the Neuter Gender.



*Et sunt  
neutra filer*

*An.* The exception of the names of Trees of the neuter gender is this. *Et sunt neutra filer, suber, thus, robur, acerque.*

13. Qu. What is the meaning of this Exception?

*An.* The meaning of this exception is, that some names of Trees are of the neuter gender, and particularly *filer, suber, thus, robur, and acer.*

¶ These being of neutral terminations, as well *thus*, like *jus, pus, crus*, as the rest like *fiser, tuber*, &c. no marvel if they be of the neuter gender. *Priscian* denies *filer* to be a tree; but without any reason; and saith, that there is to be read *hac acer, aceris*, but without any example. Some say *Suber* is of the masculine gender, if not of the feminine also, as well as of the neuter, but with no authority, unless a corrupt place in *Pliny*; whereupon *Alvarus* expressly affirms it to be a neuter only. Why *Thus* may be accounted a feminine there is some reason; because *Priscian* l. 5. observes that *Solinus* speaking *de Arbore Thuris*, saith *Palam fieret intorto eam esse vimine ad aceris qualitatem*, whereupon Mr. *Farnaby* leaves it out of his exception of neuters, adding in his margin, that they that make it to be a neuter, do not prove it by any good Author. In the mean time the termination of it being neutral. *Solinus's* using it in the feminine gender proves it not to be a feminine, because in the gender he might have respect (by a *Synthesis*) unto *Arbor*; and the rather that he might be clearly understood to speak of the Tree and not of the Gum of that Tree, which is also called by the same name of *Thus* that the tree is, and is certainly of the neuter gender.

14. Qu. Where are the words of this rule declined?

The decli-  
ning of the  
words in  
Appellativa  
Arborum.

*An.* The words of this rule are declined thus: *hac Alnus, Alni; hac Cupressus, Cupressus; hac Cedrus, Cedri; hac Pinaster, Pinastri; hic Oleaster, Oleastri; hoc Siler, Sileris; hoc Suber, Suberis; hoc Thus, Touris; hoc Acer, Aceris.*

And

And thus far of the first general Rule, that is given for to know the gender of words, by the kind or nature of the things.

CHAP. IV.

**VV**hat doth the second General Rule  
I. Qu. that is given for the knowing of  
the gender of words by the nature of things con-  
cern?

An. The second general Rule for knowing the gender of words by the kind or nature of things is concerning the common names of *Birds, Beasts, and Fishes*, and is, as followeth.

ÆPICŒNA.

*Sunt etiam volucrum seu passer, hirundo : ferarum  
Ut Tigris, Vulpes : & Piscium, ut Ostrea, Cetus  
Dista Epicœna : quibus vox ipsa genus feret aptum.*

*Sunt etiam  
volucrum,  
&c.*

2. Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule?

An. The meaning of this Rule is this, that the common names of *Birds, wilde-Beasts, and Fishes* generally are of the *Epicene* gender.

3. Qu. Is it not universally so in the names of *Birds, Wildbeasts, and Fishes* that both the *Sexes* are comprehended under one Gender?

An. It is not alwayes so in the names of *Birds, Wildbeasts, and Fishes*, that one word doth under one gender signifie both kinds or sexes; for *Gallus* a Cock doth not comprehend *Gallinam* a Henne; nor *Leo* a Lion, *Leonem* a Lionness, &c. but that all or the most of the names of those creatures whose Sex is hardly or not at all distinguished, are *Epicenes*, i. e. such as under one gender do comprehend both Sexes.

4. Qu. Is it the intent of this Rule to shew  
of

of those nouns that are Epicenes, which are masculine and which are feminine?

An. The intent of this Rule is not to shew of nouns that are Epicenes, which is of the masculine, and which is of the feminine gender: but that is left to be known by other Rules, and may be very much discerned by the termination of the Nominative case; as the Grammar itself intimates in that clause, which it adds to this rule of Epicenes, — *quibus vox ipsa genus feret aptum*.

5. Qu. What direction say you both the Grammar give for the knowing of the particular genders of Epicenes?

An. The particular direction that in this Rule the Grammar gives for knowing the Genders of Epicenes, which are masculine and which are feminine, is, That *Vox ipsa genus feret aptum* their gender may be very much known by their termination.

¶ So *passer* may be known to be masculine, because [*er*] is a masculine termination: *Hirundo* may be known to be a feminine, because [*do*] in words of above two syllables is feminine; *Tigris* may be known to be feminine, because [*is*] is a feminine termination: *Vulpes* may be known to be a feminine, because [*es*] is a feminine termination: *Ostrea* may be known to be feminine, because [*a*] in the first declension is a feminine termination: And *cectus* may be known to be a masculine, because [*us*] in the second declension is a masculine termination. This is more easie to be known in and by other Grammars, which do distinguish the genders of such words as are not known by their signification, by the termination of the Nominative case, giving in the Particulars, which are excepted from their general Rules, that it can in this, which distinguishes the genders of words mostly by the termination of the genitive; and yet the termination of the genitive

rive proposed to be known) the direction which this Grammar gives for distinction of genders in that way is competently good.

6. Qu. ~~How~~ are the words of this Rule declined?

An. The words of this Rule are declined thus. *hic Passer, Passeris. hac Hirundo, Hirudinis. hac Tigris, Tigridis. hac Vulpes, Vulpis. hac Ostrea, Ostreae. hic Cetus, Ceti, &c.* The declining of the words in *sunt etiam volucrum.*

7. Qu. What if any of the words belonging to any of the aforesaid Rules do end in *um*, or be a noun undeclined?

An. Touching the words belonging to all the aforesaid Rules either ending in *um* or being undeclined, the Grammar hath given two exceptive Rules.

8. Qu. Which is the first exceptive Rule and what doth it concern?

An. The first exceptive Rule, concerns nouns ending in *um*, and it is this  
*Attamen ex cunctis quæ diximus ante notandum,*  
*Omne quod exit in um seu Græcum sive Latinum*  
*Esse genus neutrum*

*Omnequod  
exit in um.*

9. Qu. What is the meaning of this Exceptive Rule?

An. The meaning of this exceptive Rule is this, that nouns ending in *um*, whether they be derived from the Greek, or be purely Latine nouns are generally of the neuter gender.

10. Why do you say generally? are there any nouns ending in *um*, that are not of the neuter gender?

An. I say generally nouns ending in *um* are of the neuter gender, not universally, because the proper names of Men and Women are respectively of the masculine and feminine gender, though they end in *um*; according to the old verse, *Um neutrum portas, hominum si propria tollas.* Hence *Pagnium,* and

and *Dinacium* in *Plaut.* are masculines, and *Planestum*, *Gymnasium* and *Silenium* feminines; as are *Glycerium* and *Phanium* in *Terence*.

11. Qu. What if a common name of a man or woman end in um? Is not that also respectively of the masculine or feminine gender?

An. Common names of Men and women as *manicipium*, *scortum*, *stuprum*, *servitium*, are of the neuter gender.

¶ Hence we read in *Horace* 2 *Carm. Od. 11. Quis devium scortum Eliciet dono Lyden?* and in *Salust. Servetia urban sollicitare*, &c.

12. Qu. Which is the second exceptive Rule, and what does it concern?

Sic invariable nomen.

An. The second exceptive Rule concerns indeclinable nouns; and lies in these words, *Sic invariable nomen*.

13. Qu. What is the meaning of this exceptive Rule?

An. The meaning of this exceptive Rule is this, That undeclinable nouns generally are of the neuter gender.

14. Qu. What nouns call you undeclinable nouns?

An. Those are called undeclinable nouns, which in divers cases of signification keep the same case of termination, so as their oblique cases differ nothing in termination from their Nominative.

15. Qu. Can you give any instance of such kind of undeclinable nouns?

An. Such kind of undeclinable words are *Cim*, *Metwgi*, *Aixi*, *Epy*, *Dory*; so *fas*, *nefas*, *nil*, *nihil*, *nadir*, *zenith*, *azimuth*, *gummi*, *cornu*, *sempe*, &c.

16. Qu. Are there any nouns undeclinable of any other but of the neuter gender?

An. There are no nouns Substantives undeclinable, but what are of the neuter gender: but nouns Adjectives

jectives are of all genders, though they be not declined, as *nequam*, *tor*, *quot*, &c.

27. Qu. Are there not some other things, besides properly so called nouns, comprehended under, of which is referrible unto this Rule?

An. Unto this Rule of declinable nouns may be referred whatsoever in contexture of speech stands instead of, or is put for a noun.

18. Qu. What things are used to be put for a noun in contexture of speech?

An. In contexture of speech there is put for a noun, sometimes the names of letters, *a*, *b*, *c*, whence in *Persius* we read *nigrum theta*. Sometimes a syllable, as *on*, or *um*; as *um*, *neutrum ponas*; sometimes a word taken materially for it self, without respect to the thing signified by it; as *amo est verbum*. And sometimes an Infinitive mood put by an Enalage for a noun; as in *Ovid*, *Posse loqui*, for *potentia loquendi*; so *velle suum*, for *voluntas sua*; and *scire tuum* (in *Pers.*) for *scientia tua*. And proportionably any clause or member of a sentence, or a whole sentence, that hath a noun adjective or a participle to agree with it; as *Audito regem Doro-berniam proficisci*. *Finire laborem*, *incipias*, *parto quod avebas*, *Hor. 1. Serm. 1. Satyr.*

¶ When words are put materially, Authors do sometimes put the Adjectives that are to agree with them, not alwayes in the neuter gender, as agreeing with the word so put, but sometimes in that gender that agrees with the thing signified by that word. Hence *Quintilian* speaking how the Latines did in the Nominative cases cut off *s* from those greek words that ended in *as*, reading *Pelia*, *Euthia*, *Hermagora*, for *Pelias*, *Euthias*, *Hermagoras*, saith further *ne miremur quid ab antiquorum plerisque Aenea & Anchisa dictus sit*, for *dictum sit* l. 1. c. 5. p. 23.

And

And thus far of the Rules given by the Grammar for knowing the genders of words, by the kind and nature of the things.

## CHAP. V.

Now follow the Rules which the Grammar gives for knowing the Genders of words by the declining of them; which Rules the Grammar introduceth with this form of Transition.

Sed nunc  
de reliquis  
quæ Appellativa vo-  
cantur.

**S**ed nunc de reliquis quæ Appellativa vocantur, Aut quæ sunt tanquam Appellativa, Ordine dicam. Nam genus his semper dignoscitur ex Genitivo, Infra ut monstrabit Specialis Regula Triplex.

1. Qu. What is the meaning of this Transition?

An. The meaning of the Author in this Transition is to declare, that his purpose is from hence forward to give Rules, whereby the genders of nouns Appellatives, or those that are tanquam Appellativa, as it were Appellatives, may be known by their genitive case; which Rules he here intimates to be especially three.

2. Qu. What is meant by tanquam Appellativa or words that are as it were Appellatives?

Aut quæ  
sunt tan-  
quam Ap-  
pellativa.

An. By tanquam Appellativa, words that are as it were Appellatives, I conceive to be meant words, that are indeed but the names of singular things, because there are no more things of that kind but one; but yet might and would be applied to more, so as to become the common name of all the things of that kind, how many soever there should be, were there more; such are *Sol*, *Phoenix*, and *Python*: also such nouns as Grammarians call *Gentiles*, names of people of several Countries; such are *Car*, *Ser*, *Tros*, *Arcas*, &c.

3. Qu.



3. Qu. What means the Author by saying of these nouns, that Genus his semper dignoscitur ex Genitivo.

An. By saying of these kind of nouns, that Genus his semper dignoscitur ex Genitivo, the Author means, that the genitive case of any noun Appellative being known, there is a certain way by which the gender of that Noun may be certainly known, which way he here lays down in three special Rules following.

Nam Genus  
his semper  
dignoscitur  
ex Geniti-  
vo.

CHAP. VI.

1. Qu. Which is the first special Rule for knowing the gender of nouns Appellatives or nouns Substantives common by their genitive case?

An. The first special Rule for knowing the Gender of nouns Appellatives or noun Substantives common by their genitive case is this,

Prima Regula specialis.

*Nomen non Crescens Genitivo seu caro carnis, Capra caprae, nubes nubis, genus est muliebre.*

*Nomen non  
crescens.*

2. Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule?

An. The meaning of this Rule is this, That nouns which do not encrease in their Genitive are of the of the feminine gender.

3. Qu. When are nouns said to encrease in their Genitive case?

An. Nouns are said to encrease in their Genitive Case, when in their Genitive case they have more syllables than they had in their Nominative; as *virtus, virtutis*.

4. Qu. When are nouns said not to increase in their genitive case?

An.

*An.* Nouns are said not to encrease in their genitive case, when in their Genitive case, they have no more syllables then they had in their Nominative; but the syllables of both those cases are equal; as *Caro*, *carnis*; *Nubes*, *nubis*; *Capra*, *caprae*.

5. *Qu.* Is this Rule so universally true that there are no Exceptions from it?

*An.* From this Rule there are four Exceptions: for of nouns that do not encrease in the Genitive case, besides those that are feminine, there are some of the masculine gender; some of the neuter, some of the doubtful, and some of the common of two.

## CHAP. VII.

1. *Qu.* **V**hat is the first exception from this Rule of?

*An.* The first exception from this Rule is of masculines that do not increase in their genitive case.

2. *Qu.* Is that exception a single one? or doth it consist of several branches?

*An.* This exception hath four branches.

3. *Qu.* Which is the first of these four branches of this exception?

*An.* The first of the four branches of this exception is this,

*Mascula excepta ex non crescentibus.*

**Mascula**

**nomina in a**

*Mascula nomina in a dicuntur multa virorum:*

*Ut Scriba, Assecla, Scurra, & Rabula, lixa, lanista.*

4. *Qu.* What is the meaning of this branch of the exception?

*An.* The meaning of this branch of the exception is this, That many Latine nouns importing the Offices,  
Condi-

Conditions, and Employments of Men are of the Masculine Gender, though they increase not in the Genitive Case; as these here named, to which may be added *pincerna, nauta, cacula, and apella*.

5. Qu. Why doth the Author put in the word *multa, many*, into his Rule? Is there any Exception from this Exception?

An. The word *multa, many*, is warily here added, because there are indeed some words importing manly Offices, Conditions or Employments, or, if you will, Men considered as employing themselves in those Offices, and as being of or in those Conditions, which are of the Feminine Gender. Such are *opere*, labourers, *custodia, vigilia, excubie*, watchmen and warders; so *cura*, when, it is put for *curator*, as in that of Ovid. *Tertius immunde cura fidelis haræ*: and *copia*, when in the Plural Number, it is put for Souldiers and Military Forces.

¶ The reason of these words, being of the Feminine Gender, is conceived to be this, because these words do first and properly import action, and are but by a Metonymie put for the Men, who are the actors, and therefore in their Tropical use do keep the Gender of their proper signification. This for the first Branch.

6. Qu. Which is the second branch of this Exception?

An. The second branch of this Exception is this,

*Mascula Græcorum quot declinatio prima  
Fundit in as & in es; & ab illis quot per a fiunt:  
Ut Satrapas satrapa; Athletes, athleta.*

Mascula  
Græcorum.

7. Qu. What is the meaning of this branch of the Exception?

An. The meaning of this branch of the Exception is this, That Nouns of the first Declension in Greek being turned in Latine words, whether they end in the Greek terminations *as*, or *es*, or in a the termination

## An Explanation of

of the Latines, are of the *Masculine Gender*, as *Satrapas*, and *athletes* according to the *Greek* termination, *satrapa* and *athleta* according to the termination of the *Latines*.

¶ Of the care of the antient Romans to turn *Greek Nouns* in *as* into *Latine ones* in *a*, *Quintilian* speaking in his *l. 1. c. 5.* saith, *Ne in a quidem atque a literas exire temere Masculina Gera Nomina recto casu patiebantur : ideoque & apud Caelium legitur Pelia Cincinnatus : & apud Messalam, Benefecit Euthia : & apud Ciceronem, Hermagora ; ne miremur quod ab antiquorum plerisque Aeneas & Anchisa sit dictus.*

To this Rule may be added these Examples also *Cometes* and *Cometa* which are said to be *Masculines* by an *Hyponea*, because *ὁ ἄστρον* a Star is referred unto ; so *planetes* and *planeta* ; likewise, *pandetta*, as of *pandettes*, in *Greek* *πανδέτης* ; so *grammatias*, *capnias*, *asterias* from *ὁ γραμματίας*, *ὁ καπνίας*, *ὁ ἀστρίας* ; also *poeta*, *idiota*, *spartiata*, *bibliopola* and the rest of that derivation and composition ; moreover *tiaras* from *τιάρα* of the first declension, though *tiara* from *τιάρα* of the second declension be of the *Feminine Gender* ; and these in *es*, *aromatites*, *absinthites*, *hyssopites*, *sortes*, *hematites*, *chernites*, *pyrites*, *selenites* ; though *pyritis* and *selenitis* be of the *Feminine Gender*, as coming of *πυρίτις* and *σελενίτις* *Feminines*, as the other did of *πυρίτης* and *σελενίτης* *Masculines* ; in the one perhaps *ὁ λίθος*, in the other *ἡ λίθος* (for there is both those) was respected ; and in reference unto which it is that the names of stones, though *Masculine* in their termination, yet are used by *Pliny* with some indifferency, and much in the *Feminine Gender*. Hence *l. 37. c. 1.* he useth *Achates* in the *Feminine*, *c. 8. Molochites* ; *c. 9. Aspilates*, and so *Botrytes*, *capnites*, *cepites* ; or else in the *Masculine* use of them *lapis* was referred unto, and in the *Feminine* *Gemma*.

8. Qu. Are there not some *Latine words* derived of *Greek ones* of the *3<sup>d</sup> Declension*, that are of the *Feminine*

**Feminine Gender, notwithstanding this Exception?**

**An.** From this Exception are to be excepted these Latine words derived of Greek words of the first Declension, which yet are of the Feminine Gender, *charta, margarita, catarracta, catapulta, cochlea, gausapa, mandragora, parasanga, metreta* (which are derived of *καρτης, μαργαριτης, καταρρακτις, καταπυλτης, κοχλίας, γαυσάπη, μανδραγόρας, παρασάνης, μετρητής*, all Masculines.)

¶ *Dionysias* the name of a Jewel in *Pliny* is of the Feminine Gender. *l. 37 c. 10.* saith he, *Dionysias nigra ac dura*, &c. but that is because it is made of *ἰδιονυσίας ἰδιονυσίδος* of the fifth Declension. Yet the same word *Solinus cap. 40.* useth in the Masculine: saith he, *Dionysias fuscus est*, &c. It is to be thought he conceived it formed of *ἰδιονυσίας τῷ ἰδιονυσίου*. And perpaps according as it is severally declined after the first, and fifth in Greek, and after the first and third in Latine, so it is of the Masculine, or Feminine Gender.

Some referr hither these words, *crypta, balista, catasta*, which (admit them to be of the Feminine Gender) yet I find not what Greek Nouns of the first Declension they are formed of. This for the second branch of the Exception?

9. Qu. **What is the third branch of this Exception?**

**An.** The third branch of this Exception is this;

*Leguntur*

*Mascula item verres, natalis, aqualis : ab asse  
Nata ut ventusis : conjunge lienis & orbis;  
Callis, caulis, follis, collis, mensis, & ensis,  
Fustis, funis, panis, penis, crinis & ignis,  
Cassis, fascis, torris, senis, piscis, & unguis,  
Et vermis, velis, postis ; societur & axis:*

*Leguntur  
Mascula  
item verres, &c.*

10. Qu. **What is the meaning of this branch of the Exception?**

**An.** The meaning of this branch of the Exception is this, That certain particular words in *es* and *is* here named, whereto may be added those

words that are made of [*as*] by compounding other words with it, namely, *semis*, *decussis*, *viginti*, *centis*, are of the Masculine Gender, though they increase not in the Genitive Case.

¶ *Natalis* of its own nature is an Adjective joined with Substantives of all Genders; as, *natalis gurgis*, *natalis lux*, *natalis hora*, *natalis sylva*, *natale astrum*, *natale solum*. Here it stands for a Substantive being an Adjective put sometimes Substantively, and *dies* understood. Like whereunto is *Majalis*, in which, by a *Hyponaa*, *porcus* is understood; so *jugalis*, in which *equus*; *molaris*, in which *dens*; and *annalis*, in which *liber* is understood.

*Callis* is read in *Liv.* 1. 22. in the Feminine Gender; *fert angusto saltu per devias Calles*; as *Nonius* reads the place. But it is safer to use it in the Masculine Gender.

*Funis* is read in *Lucret.* in the Feminine Gender: *Haud ut opinor enim mortalia seſſa Supernè Aurea de Cælo demisit funis in arva*. But the constant use of it in more refined Authors, as *Virgil*, &c. in the Masculine Gender doth not admit it to be taken for a Feminine. *Æn.* 8. *Laxi funes*. and *Æn.* 4. *Tortos incedere funes*.

*Crinis* is read in *Plautus*, *Casin.* 1. 4. in the Feminine Gender: *Censeo capiendas crines*. But it is more rightly accounted a Masculine. *Hor.* 1. *Carm.* *Od.* 32. *Nigro crine deorum*.

*Cassis* is hardly found in the Singular Number, unless in *Seneca's Agamem.* *Ac.* 5. *Sc.* 1. *At ille ut hispidus Sylvæ aper cum casse victus tentat egressus tamen*. Some add *Cossis*, but whether it be *Cossis*, or *Cossus*, 'tis uncertain.

*Sentis*, is mostly read in the Plural Number, like *Cassis*, yet *Columella* hath it in the Singular, *l.* 11. c. 3. *Nos sentem canis appellamus*.

II. Qu. May any more words be added to this branch of the *Ætceptis*, besides these already excepted in it?

An. There

*An.* There may be added to this branch of the Exception, besides the words already excepted in it, these that follow, *Mugilis, unicornis, acinacis, colis, cenchris*, when it is put for a *serpent* (which when it is the name of a *Bird* is a *Feminine*) likewise *cucumis* and *vepres*.

¶ *Lucretius* hath *vepres auctas* in the *Feminine* Gender, whence is *veprecula*. Yet more *Classick* Authors, as both *Virgil* and *Columella* using it in the *Masculine* Gender; it is rather to be taken for a *Masculine*. *Hunc veprem manifestum est interimi non posse. Colum. l. 11. c. 5. Sparsi rorabant sanguine vepres. Virg. Æn. 8.* And this for the *Third* branch of this Exception. The *Fourth* follows.

12. Qu. Which is the fourth branch of this Exception?

*An.* The *Fourth* branch of this Exception is this, *Mascula in er ceu venter: in os vel us ut logos, annus.*

*Mascula in er ceu venter.*

13. Qu. What is the meaning of this branch of the Exception?

*An.* The meaning of this branch of the Exception is this, That Nouns that end in *er, os, or us*, are generally of the *Masculine* Gender, though they do not increase in the *Genitive* Case; as *venter, logos, and annus*.

¶ The very antient Authors did use *Cancer*, for a *Disease*, in the *Neuter* Gender; but *Priscian* himself l. 5. thinks it not fit to follow them therein.

14. Qu. How are the words in this Exception declined?

*An.* The words in this Exception are thus declined. *Hic scriba scribae; hic assecla assecla; hic scurra scurre; hic rabula rabula; hic lixa lixa; hic lanista lanista; hic satrapas satrapa; hic satrapa satrapa; hic athletes athlete; hic athleta athlete; hic verres verris; hic natalis natalis; hic aqualis aqualis; hic centussis centussis; hic lienis lienis; hic orbis orbis;*

The Declining of the words in *Mascula nomina in a.*



hic callis callis; hic caulis caulis; hic follis follis  
 hic collis collis; hic mensis mensis; hic ensis ensis  
 hic fustis fustis; hic funis funis; hic panis panis;  
 hic penis penis; hic crinis crinis; hic ignis ignis;  
 hic cassis cassis; hic fascis fascis; hic torris torris;  
 hic sentis sentis; hic piscis piscis; hic unguis unguis;  
 hic vermis vermis; hic vestis vestis; hic postis postis;  
 hic axis axis; hic venter ventris; hic logus logi;  
 hic annus anni.

## C H A P. VIII.

1. Qu. **B**ut is this last branch of the Exception Masculine in *er*, &c. so universally true that there is no Exception from it?

An. This last branch of the Exception of Masculines, not encreasing in the Genitive Case from the special Rule of Feminines abovenamed, is not so universally true, but that there is an Exception even from that Exception.

2. Qu. Is that Exception a single one? or doth it consist of more branches than one?

An. The Exception from that Exception of Masculine in *er*, *ceu venter*, &c. hath two branches; the first of Latin Nouns ending in *er* and *us*; the second of Greek Nouns made Latine by the change of *os* into *us*.

3. Qu. Which is the first branch of the Exception from Masculine in *er* *ceu venter*, &c.

An. The first branch of the Exception from Masculine in *er* *ceu venter*, &c. is this.

*Feminina non crescentia.*

Fæminei  
 generis  
 sunt Mater,  
 &c.

Fæminei generis sunt mater, humus, domus, alvus,  
 Et colus, &c. quarta pro fructu ficus, acusque,  
 Porticus, atque tribus, socrus, nurus, &c. manus, idus:  
 Huc annus addenda est, huc mystica vannus Iacchi.

4. Qu. What

4. Qu. What is the meaning of this first branch of Exception?

An. The meaning of this first branch of Exception is this, That there are certain Latine Nouns ending in *er* and *us*, which are not of the Masculine Gender, and so differ from the last Exception of *Mascula in er*, but are of the Feminine Gender, and agree with the first special Rule of *Nomen non crescens*.

¶ Some of these words that now by use are grown to be *Feminines*, only antiently were used in the *Masculine Gender*. Hence *Livius* or rather *Lævius*, in his *Adonis*, *Humum humidum pedibus fodit*; and *Sempron. Gracchus* in his *Thyestes*, *Mersit sequentis humidum plantis humum*; yea *Sallust* in *Jug.* --- *Aliisq; generibus arborum, quæ humi arido atque arenoso gignuntur*. See *Manutius's* Scholion on the place. Though to this last it may seem to be answered that *arido* and *arenoso* do not agree with *humi* expressed, but with *loco* understood; i. e. *arido & arenoso humi loco*; like *Strata viarum* in *Virg.* i. e. *Strata viarum loca*. So *Alvus* antiently was a *Masculine*, in *Ælium*; as, *gravido concepit in alvo*; and *quàm fragilissimus alvus*; and in *Caro*, as, *ex alvo levando*; and in *Cinna*, as, *Scelus incesto Cyniræ crescebat in alvo*. But now the *Masculine* use of it is grown out of use. *Colus* is read in the *Masculine Gender* in *Catullus* in *Argon.* *Lava cœlum molli lana retinebat amictum*. And in *Propert. l. 4. el. 10.* *Idem ego Sidoniâ feci servilia palla Officia, & Lydo pensa diurna colo.* & *l. 4. el. 1.* *Non sunt a dextro condita fila colo*. But *Grammarians* now do not admit it to be any other but a *Feminine*. *Socrus*, as *Nonius* saith, is found in *Nævius* in the *Masculine Gender*; but then it is put for *Socer*, as having been antieptely of both *Genders*, like *nepos*, as *Vossius* saith.

5. Qu. Why doth the Author when he speaks of *ficus*, add a note of distinction to it, *quartæ pro fructu*?

An. The Author adds *quartæ pro fructu* to *ficus*, because it hath been doubted what Gender

*ficus* for a Tree was; and because it is concluded that *ficus* for a Disease of the Second Declension is a Masculine.

6. Qu. What is the resolution of Grammarians touching *ficus* as it signifies both fruit and tree, and whether it be of the second or fourth Declension?

An. It is resolved by Grammarians that *ficus*, as well for a tree as for the fruit, as well of the Second as fourth Declension, is of the Feminine Gender.

¶ Mr. Farnaby, in his Grammar, having delivered it for part of his rule of Feminines, that *ficus pro fructu ac arbore* is of the Feminine Gender, in his Margent adds *utris* note. *Tum in secunda tum quarta declinatione, sed pro morbo masculinum est.* So Vossius saith, *Non negarim, pro morbo tutius usurpari in Masculino; pro fructu autem in Feminino: idque tum in secunda tum quarta Declinatione.* Or Analog. l. 1. c. 14. And in his *Latine Gram.* p. 25. he saith expressly: *Ficus pro arbore & fructu Femininum est, & secunda ac quarta.*

7. Qu. Is *acus* always of the Feminine Gender?

An. *Acus* in that sense that it here stands is always of the Feminine Gender: namely, as it is the name of a Needle, in other senses it is of other Genders; Masculine, as it is the name of a Fish; Neuter, as it signifies Chasse.

¶ In the Feminine Gender, for a Needle, it is found in Juvenal. *Emerita quæ cessat acu.* In the Masculine Gender, for a Fish, it is found in Pliny l. 9. c. 51. *Acus sive belone unus piscium, &c.* Martial. l. 11. Ep. 37. *Et satius tennes ducere credis acos.* In the Neuter Gender, for chasse, it is found in Varro de R. R. *Acus Substernendum est gallinis parturientibus.* So in Cato de v. v. c. 54. is read *acus fabaginum*: Yet in this signification Columella useth it as a Feminine l. 2. c. 10. *Durissime quidem acus ressecta separata erunt.* So Festus, *Pateat etiam quadam de frumento acus dicuntur.* See Voss. Lat. Gram. p. 25.

by Analog. l. 1. c. 31. Farnab. L. Gram. p. 15. Steph. Thes. Lat. L. Priscian l. 6. Danes. Sc. p. 155. For a *Fish*, it is of the *Second Declension*; for a *Needle* of the *Fourth*; for *Chaff* of the *Third*, as a *Nenter*, of the *Fourth*, as a *Feminine*, if that Gender of it may be allowed.

8. Qu. How comes *Idus* to be set here, being it hath no Singular Number: and in the Plural Number it increaseth in the Genitive Case, as, *idus, iduum*?

An. *Idus* is here set because of the Analogie that it hath with other words that are here set also, namely, *ficus, acus, porticus, tribus, &c.* as being of the fourth Declension as well as they, so that if it might be supposed to have any Genitive Case Singular, that Genitive would not in the number of Syllables exceed its Nominative.

¶ Touching the word *Vannus* it may be enquired what it is; and why our Author gives it the Epithet of *mystica vannus Jacchi*. As to the first, it is said, that it is *Vas vimineum, latum, aptum purgando frumento*; a broad Vessel made of Withers of use to dress Corn with. As to the Second, 'tis said, that this kind of Vessel was of very much use in the mystical Ceremonies of *Bacchus*; And because it served thus to complete his Verse, our Author took it as he found it with its Epithet in *Virgil*, and so set it here.

This for the first branch of this Exception from *Mascula in er, &c.*

9. Qu. Which is the second branch of this Exception from *Mascula in er ceu venter, &c.*

An. The second branch of the Exception from *Mascula in er ceu venter, &c.* is this

*His jungas os in us vertentia Græca; papyrus  
Antidotus, costus, dipthongus, byssus, abyssus  
Crystallus, synodus, sapphirus, eremus & Arctus  
Cum multis aliis, quæ nunc perscribere longum est.*

10. Qu. What is the meaning of this branch of the Exception?

D 5

An. The

His jungas  
os in us ver-  
tentia Græ-  
ca.

**An.** The meaning of this branch of this Exception is this, That there are many *Latine Nouns* in *us* made of *Greek Nouns* in *os* of the *Feminine Gender*, which are not comprehended under that Exception from the first special Rule, namely, *papyrus, antidotus, &c.* and the rest here named, and some other that may be added.

**II. Qu.** Why do you say many *Latine Nouns* are there any *Latine Nouns* in *us* made of *Greek Nouns* in *os* which are not of the *Feminine Gender*?

**An.** I say many *Latine Nouns*; because all *Latine Nouns* in *us* made of *Greek Nouns* in *os* are not of the *Feminine Gender*, but on the contrary, in many are *Masculine*, as *Dialogus, stylus, tomus, hyacinthus* for a flower, *camelus, Isthmus, Scyphus, beryllus, opalus smaragdus, corymbus.*

¶ In *Virgil* 4. *Georg.* we read *ferrugineos hyacinthos.* In *Plin.* l. 37. c. 5. *Berillivarò alibi reperti.* Ib. cap. 6. *Veri opali ater color;* and *Vilessimi in Ponto.* Ib. cap. 1. *Sculpi etiam Smaragdos solitos.* In one place of *Pliny* it is read of the *Feminine Gender*, ---- *Smaragdo, in quâ fuerat sculpta amymone.* l. 37. c. 1. but the place though owned by some, yet is by others suspected for corrupted; whence in the Edition of *Dalechampius* it is read in *quo.* If the reading be right, then with *Vossii's* leave it may be taken for a *Doubtful*; especially since, as in *Strabo* l. 16. there is read *ὁ κριεργός*; so in *Suidas* there is cited from *Polycrates Samius* τὸς κριεργός ----

**12. Qu.** What *Latine Nouns* in *us* made of *Greek Nouns* in *os* is this Exception chiefly to be understood of?

**An.** The Exception is chiefly to be understood of such *Latine Nouns* in *us* as are made of *Feminine Greek Nouns* in *os*; though indeed all here named are not such.

¶ *κίς* in *Greek* is *Masculine*; *πάρων* is some.

sometimes Masculine, oftner Feminine; *χρυσανθος* for *Ice* is Masculine; for a *Jewel*, is found both in the Masculine and Feminine Gender. *Diphthongus* and *Eremus* are by nature Adjectives: but used as Feminine Substantives with respect unto the Substantives, *syllaba* understood with the first, and *terra* understood with the second; as being at the full of them *διφθόγγος συλλαβή, γῆ ἐρημος*. *Abyssus* is not used by any Latine, but those that are Ecclesiastical Writers. Of its own nature it is an Adjective, compounded of a privative and *Βυαοι* Ionically put for *Βυθός*, and properly signifies bottomless. When it is Substantively, there is a Substantive understood with it; and *Aristophanes*, in his *Rana*, joins one with it, *λίμνη ἀβυσσος*.

13. Qu. What words can you name more, that may be added to this Rule? The Author by his Expression *Cum multis aliis quæ nunc perscribere longum est*, seems to intimate that many may be added.

An. To this branch of the Exception, there may be added, *Nardus*, *methodus*, *dialectus*, *exodus*, *periodus*, *hyssopus*, *biblus*, *carbasus*, *diameter*, *perimetris*, *amethystus*, and *Chrysolithus*.

There is said *Hyssopus* also. In one Edition of *Val. Max. l. i. c. i.* *Carbasus* is of the Masculine Gender; for there we read, *Carbasum quem optimum habebat*. But saith *Vossius* other Copies have *quam optimam*, and them did *Stephanus Pighius* follow: so nothing from thence can be concluded to prove it a Masculine. See more in the end of the Rule of Doubtfuls not encreasing. In *amethystus*, and *chrysolithus*, there is respect unto *λίθος* or *gemma*; as also in *chrysoprasus*, and *topazius*, which are mostly used in the Feminine Gender. *Prudentius* in *Psychomachia* useth *chrysolithus* in the Mas. *Ingens chrysolithus nativo interlitus auro*. It is to be supposed he had respect unto *λίθος*, or *hic lapis*.

14. Qu. How are the words of this Exception declined?

An. The

The Declining of the words in Feminine generis Mater.

*An.* The words in this Exception are declined thus. *Hæc mater matris; hæc humus humi; hæc domus domûs; and (when at home is signified domi) hæc alvus alvi; hæc colus coli & colûs; hæc ficus fici & ficûs; hæc acus acûs; hæc porticus porticûs; hæc tribus tribûs; hæc socrus socrûs; hæc nurus nurûs; hæc manus manûs; hæc idus, harum iduum; hæc anus anûs; hæc vannus vanni; hæc papyrus papyri; hæc antidotus antidoti; hæc costus costi; hæc diphthongus diphthongi; hæc byssus byssi; hæc abyssus abyssi; hæc crystallus crystalli; hæc synodus synodi; hæc sapphirus sapphiri; hæc eremus eremi; hæc Arctus Arcti.*

And thus far of the first Exception from *Nomen non crescens*, the first special Rule.

## CHAP. IX.

I. Qu. **V** What is the second Exception from the first special Rule [of *Nomen non crescens*] of? and which is it?

*An.* The second Exception from *Nomen non crescens*, or the first special Rule, is of *Neuters* not increasing in the Genitive Case excepted from it, and it is this,

*Neutra non crescentia.*

Neutrum  
nomen in e.

*Neutrum nomen in e si gignit is, ut mare, rete;  
Et quot in on vel in um fiunt, ut barbiton, ovum.  
Est neutrum hippomanes genus, & neutrum cacoethes,  
Et virus pelagus neutrum modo, mas modo vulgus.*

2. Qu. What is the meaning of this Exception?

*An.* The meaning of this Exception is, That there are some Nouns not increasing in the Genitive Case, which are of the Neuter Gender.

3. Qu. Is this Exception a single one? or doth it consist of several branches?

*An.* This



An. This Exception consisteth of four branches.

4. Qu. What is the first branch of the four?

An. The first of the four branches of this Exceptive Rule is this, *Neutrum nomen in e si gignit is, ut mare, rete* :

Qu. What is the meaning of this branch of the Rule? Nomen in e.

An. The meaning of this branch of the Rule is this, That those Nouns of the third Declension which end in *e* in the Nominative Case are of the Neuter Gender, though they increase not in the Genitive Case, as *mare* and *rete*.

¶ For *rete* they antiently said *retis* in the Masculine Gender : Hence *Plaut. Rud. 43. Demisi retem*. But that is grown out of use.

6. Qu. Which is the second branch of the Rule?

An. The second branch of this Exceptive Rule is this,

*Et quot in on vel in um fiunt, ut barbiton, ovum.*

*Et quot in on vel in um fiunt.*

7. Qu. What is the meaning of this branch of the Rule?

An. The meaning of this branch of Exception is this, That Nouns ending in *on* or *um* not increasing in the Genitive Case, are of the Neuter Gender ; as *barbiton, ovum*.

¶ Though this Rule reach not to the proper names of *Men* and *Women*, as *Pægnium* or *Glycerium* : yet it reaches to their common names, such as *sextum, mancipium*. But these are comprehended in the general Rule of *Omne quod exit in um, atoregoing*. Some may think that *Cornu* and *Moly*, and such like as end in *u* or *y* may be referred hither; but there is no need of it, for being indeclinable they are comprehended before under the Rule for *Invariabile Nomen*. Yet so far as they hold analogy with those here named, and that is so far as by their Plural Numbers they may be found to be words, that if they were whole in both Numbers would not be increas-

increasers in the Genitive Case, so far may they be referred hither.

8. Qu. Which is the third branch of this Exception, and what is it of?

An. The third branch of Exception is of four particular words that encrease not in the Genitive Case, and yet are of the Neuter Gender; and it is this, *Est neutrum hippomanes genus, & neutrum cacoethes, Et virus, pelagus.*

*Est neutrum hippomanes.*

9. Qu. What is the meaning of this branch of the Exception?

An. The meaning of this branch of the Exception is this, That these four words, *hippomanes, cacoethes, virus* and *pelagus*, do not encrease in the Genitive Case, and yet are not of the Feminine, but of the Neuter Gender.

10. Qu. Are there not some more particular words of the same, or near terminations with these, that may here be added?

An. There may be added to these some more particular words of the same termination with the two former of these; and some of a termination near to the latter of these.

11. Qu. What are the words of the same termination with the two former of these, that may be added to them?

An. The words of the same termination with the two former of these are *nepenthes, panaces, solacophanes.*

¶ These are Neuter Adjectives taken Substantively from Commons in *us*; for of *παρανθης* is *παρανθης*; of *πανακης* is *πανακης*; and so of *ελακοφανης* is *ελακοφανης*; and of *ιντομανης* is *ιντομανης*.

12. Qu. What words are those of a near termination with the two latter that may be referred hither?

An. The words of a near termination to the two latter, that may hither be referred, are *chaos, melos*, and *epos*; which are Neuters?

¶ The first is in Ovid. *Met. l. 1. Quem dixere chaos.* it is

The

The second in *Pers. l. 1. Cantare credas Pegaseium melos*. The third in *Horac. 1. Serm. Sat. 10. Forte epos, acer, Ut nemo, Varius ducti. Virus* antiently had all its Cases. Hence in *Lucret. l. 2. Tetri primordia viri*. and *l. 6. Quod flueret naturali viro atque veniret*. and *ib. Contassos perdere viro*. Hence in *Phocas* is read *hoc virus viri*; and in *Charisius*, *hoc virus o virus, ab hoc viro*. Yet as *Carisius* of old said, that some then looked upon it as an undeclinable Noun; So *Stephanus* saith it hath only three like Cases; and *Vossius*; that *vir* and *viro* are scarce to be read but in *Lucretius. Pelagus* hath been taken to have been antiently Masculine also, as well as Neuter, because in some Editions of *Valer. Flac. l. 1.* was read --- *pelagum quantos aperimus in usus*. But in the old books as *Carrio* saith, it is read *pelagus*; nor do Authors use it any otherwise than as a Neuter; and no marvel, being it is in Greek το πῆλαγος *Priscian. l. 5. Phocas de Gen. & Declin. Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 32.*

13. Qu. Which is the fourth branch of this Exception?

An. The fourth branch of this Exception lies in these words, *Neutrum modò, mas modò vulgus*.

14. Qu. What is the meaning of this branch of Exception?

An. The meaning of this branch of Exception is this, That the word *vulgus* is both a Masculine and a Neuter, and yet encreases not in the Genitive Case.

Hence in *Virgil* we read, *Scinditur incertum studia in contraria Vulgus*; and *Hinc spargere voces In vulgum ambiguas*--- and in *Sallust. Vulgum effusum oppido cedere. Charis. l. 1. Voss. de Anal. l. 1. c. 31.* Some are of opinion that *Sexus* also antiently was Neuter as well as Masculine, because of that of *Plautus Rud. 1. Act. Virile sexus nunquam habui ullum*. But it being uncertain whether it should be read *sexus*, or *sexu*, or *secus* (sometimes used for *sexus*) it cannot be certainly resolved on, that so it was; and however; if it were so, yet now it is grown out of use. Only thus much of it by the by.

Neutrum  
modo mas  
modo vul-  
gus.

15. Qu.

*Voss. l. 1. de Anal. c. 31. Danes. Schol. p. 155.*

15. Qu. How are the words in this Exception declined?

An. The words in this Exception are declined thus : *Hoc mare maris* ; *hoc rete retis* ; *hoc barbiton barbiti* ; *hoc ovum ovi* ; *hoc hippomenes hippomanis* ; (if it be declined, some saying it is undeclinable) *hoc cacoethes cacoethis* (if this be not a Noun undeclinable) ; *hoc virus viri* ; (if any other variations from the Nominative may be allowed of) *hoc pelagus pelagi* ; *hic & hoc vulgus vulgi* ; *vulgo* ; *vulgum & vulgus*, *o vulge & o vulgus*.

And thus far of this second Exception from the first special Rule.

## CHAP. X.

1. Qu. **V**hereof is the Third Exception from the first special Rule? and which is it?

An. The third Exception from *Nomen non crescentis*, or the first special Rule, is of Doubtfuls that do not increase in the Genitive Case; and it is this,

*Dubia non crescentia.*

*Incerti generis sunt talpa & dama, canalis Halcyonis, finis, clunis, vestis, penus, amnis, Pampinus, & corbis, linter, torquis, specus, anguis : Pro morbo ficus fici dans, atque phaselus, Lecythus, ac atomus, grossus, pharus, & paradisus.*

2. Qu. Is this Exception a single one? or hath it any branches?

An. This Exception is a single one.

3. Qu. What is the meaning of this single Exception?

An. The meaning of this Rule of Exception is this, That there be some words, that do not increase

in the Genitive Case of the Doubtful Gender, and particularly these, or some at least of these that here are named.

4. Qu. Why do you say [or some at least of these]; are there any of them here named for Doubtfuls; that are not of the Doubtful Gender?

An. I say, [or some at least of these] because there be some of them, which either never truly were of any more but one of the Genders, or else have through disuse lost one of their Genders, so that they are not allowed to be but either Masculines or Feminines, and not Doubtfuls; thus *penus*, *amnis*, *ficus*, and *paradisus* are Masculines: *Halcyon*, *vestis*, *lecythus*, and *pharus*, are Feminines: *Pampinus*, *canalis*, *finis*, and *anguis*, are rather to be used as Masculines, than Feminines: *Lintes*, and *clanis*, *atomus* and *corbis* rather to be used as Feminines, than Masculines.

¶ *Talpa* and *dama* are found in Virgil of the Masculine Gender: but no where else but in him: and in Orators, they are alwayes Feminines. Yea, *Horace* 1. Carm. Od. 2. hath, *Et superjecto pavida natârunt Æquore damæ*. So that it is not very safe (*Vossius* indeed asks, *quis ausit usurpare, who dares?*) to use them in the Masculine Gender, especiall in prose. See *Alvar.* p. 187. *Farnab.* p. 8. *Voss.* *Lat. Gram.* p. 15. *Danesh. Schol.* p. 154.

*Canalis* is used by *Statius* 1. Syl. 2. in the Masculine; *demerso canali*; by *Varro* r. l. 3. c. 3. in the Feminine; *per canales angustas*. Yet I should rather use it, as a Masculine.

*Halcyonis* is no Nominative Case, but the Genitive of *Halcyon*, and so as increasing in the Genitive Case belongs not properly to this Rule. And for the Gender of *Alcyon* as some (and more rightly) write it, it is affirmed by *Alvarus* both in Greek and Latine to be Feminine: and in that Gender *Pliny* useth it, l. 10. c. 32. where speaking *De Halcyonibus* he saith, *Alterum generis earum magnitudine distinguitur & cantu---* *Alvar.* p. 170.

E

Finis

*Finis* is used as a Feminine, not only by *Gellius* and *Horace*, but by *Virgil* and *Cicero* : yet the Masculine Gender is the more usual.

*Clunis* is rarely used in the Masculine Gender; *Juvenal.* 11. Satyr. saith, *Ad terram tremulo descendunt clune puella.* And *Plautus*, *Clunes infractos fero.* But the Feminine Gender is so much the more usual, that *Alvarus* delivers it for a Feminine, p. 187.

*Restis* is a Feminine in *Stephanus*, and left out of the Rules for Doubtfuls, by *Farnaby* and *Vossius*.

*Penus* is used by *Lucilius* as a Feminine; *Magna penus parvo spatio consumpta peribit*, saith he : and in the *Digests* there is a title *De penu legatâ.* Hardly any where else is it to be found in the Feminine Gender; and therefore may pass for, at least be more safely used, as a Masculine. There is *hoc penus*, but that makes *penoris* of the Third Declension : and *hoc penum* of the Second. *Alvar.* p. 187. *Priscian.* l. 5. & l. 6. *Danef. Schol.* p. 158.

*Amnis* may be found in *Plautus*, *Naevius*, and *Varro* of the Feminine Gender, as *Stephanus* saith, from *Nonius*. But now it is by Grammarians accounted but a Masculine. *Voss. Lat. Gram.* p. 23. *Farnab. Lat. Gram.* p. 11. *Alvarus* p. 177. *Danef. Schol.* 168.

*Pampinus* is reckoned of by the old Grammarians, as a Doubtful; *Stephanus* alledges *Varro's* Authority for the Feminine use of it; but without Example. *Vossius* produceth *Sidonius Apollinaris*, as following *Varro* herein, and saying, *pampinus superducta*, l. 5. ep. 17. And *Claudian* hath it twice at least in this Gender, *Epithalam. Pallad. Acclinis florum cumulo crispatur opaca Pampinus* : and l. 3. de Laud *Stiticonis Transtra ligant hederae, malum circumflua vestit Pampinus.* Yet Grammarians are not willing to have it used in this Gender, because it is not found thus used *apud Classicos* saith *Alvarus*, *apud meliores Scriptores* & *Augusti ævo propiores*, saith *Vossius*. And therefore it is safer to use it in the Masculine Gender.

Gender. *Alvar. p. 174. Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 32. Danes. Schol. p. 158.*

*Corbis* is used by *Hirtius l. 6.* in the Masculine Gender. *Lapidibus corbes plenos demisit.* But it is mostly a Feminine.

*Linter* is found in *Tibullus l. 2. Eleg. 5.* in the Masculine Gender, *Ire solebat Exiguus pullâ per vada linter aquâ.* *Danefius* thinks he so used it *tum metri, tum equivoci causâ*; *Schol. p. 170.* *Priscian* thinks he might have respect to the Gender of the Greek word ἰάνθηρ; and gives this for a Rule, that Latine words made of Greek ones, if they keep their Greek termination in Latine, do also keep their Gender, *l. 5.* But *Vossius* thinks *Priscian* imposed upon by some of the latter Grecians, so as to take a Latine word for a Greek one: that word being neither found in *Pollux* where he reckons up the several sorts of Boats, nor in any other of the Antients. *De Analog. l. 1. c. 26.* The use of it in the Feminine Gender is ordinary.

*Torquis* and also *torques* for the same are allowed as Doubtfuls. *Cicero* and *Quintilian* use it in the Masculine, *Gellius* and *Propertius* in the Feminine.

*Specus* also of the fourth Declension is allowed of, as both Masculine and Feminine. *Livy* and *Horace* use it in the Masculine. *Silius* and *Gellius* in the Feminine. *Specus* of the Third Declension is of the Neuter Gender: *Virg. Æn. 7. Hic specus horrendum.* And *Silius l. 3. Invisum cœlo specus.* *Steph. Thesaur. Priscian l. 6. Danes. Schol. p. 157. Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 6. & 31.*

*Anguis* is used by *Val. Max. l. 4.* in the Feminine Gender, *Prolapsam anguem prospexit*; by *Varro Accinnus*; by *Tacitus* and *Ovid, de Medicam. faciet.* But the Masculine Gender of it is the more usual. *Stephanus Danes. Schol. 155. Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 29.*

*Ficus pro morbo*, as it is of the Second Declension



*dans fici*, so it is of the Masculine Gender. *Alvar.* p. 175. *Voss. Lat. Gram.* p. 25. & *De Analog.* l. 1. c. 14. *Rhenius* p. 39. *Stephanus*.

*Phaselus*, or as *Vossius* writes it, *faselus*, is used by *Catullus*, *Ansonius*, and *Cic.* in the Masculine Gender; by *Statius* and *Ovid* in the Feminine, and so may pass for a Doubtful.

*Lecythus* in *Rhenius* and *Farnaby* is a Feminine. And good reason; for *Alvarus* observes that *λεκυθος* in Greek Termination both in *Homer*, and *Aristophanes* is of the Feminine Gender: and even in *Cicero*, who in his l. 1. *ad Attic.* hath *Nosti illas λεκυθους*; but for the Latine Termination of it, he had not found it in any of the Antients. And so till authority prove it to be also a Masculine, let it remain for a Feminine.

*Atomus* is used by *Seneca* l. 7. *Nat. Quæst.* in the Masculine Gender; --- *Quod atomi congesti coaceruarique fecerunt.* *Lactantius* also useth it in the Masculine Gender, *Lucretius* *oblitus atomorum quos afferebat.* l. *de ira Dei*, c. 10. But the use of it in the Feminine is so frequent, even in *Cicero*, that Grammarians rank it amongst the Feminines. *Haynes*, *Farnaby*. And if it may not pass for a Feminine, yet 'tis best to use it as a Feminine. *Alvar.* p. 183.

*Grossus* found in the Singular Number both in *Plin.* l. 13. c. 7. and *Macrob.* l. 3. c. 20. is used in the Masculine Gender by *Celsus* l. 5. c. 12. and *Macrob.* l. 3. c. 20. In the Feminine by *Pliny*, l. 28. c. 7. where saith he, *Grossi illita strumas emolliunt & discutiunt.* And so let it go for a Doubtful.

*Pharus* is a Feminine in Latine, though in Greek *φάρος* be a Masculine. Hence in *Statius* 3. *Sylv.* we find *Pharus amula Lunæ*; in *Suet.* in *Claud.* *altissimam turrem in exemplum Alexandrinæ phari*: in *Ovid* l. 2. *Amor. El.* 13. *palmiferam pharon.* But any Example of a Masculine use of it, as yet appears

appears not : And so let it go for a Feminine. Haynes. Farnab. Alvar. p. 175. Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 32. The occasion of its being taken for a Doubtful might be, that some Editions of Suetonius, have in the forenamed place *Alexandrini phari*. But the more correct Editions have *Alexandrina* ; and Beroaldus approves that reading.

*Paradisus*, though some would have it a Feminine, yet both in Greek and Latine is only a Masculine, as *Alvarus* affirms, with whom *Stephanus* agrees ; and so as *Vossius* also reckons it, let it pass for a Masculine.

Touching these and all other of like nature *usus frequentior est observandus*. So that concerning the Gender of any one of them *Videndum* (as *Vossius* well saith) *utrum Poetae, an Oratores eo genere usurpent : & semelne, vel iterum, an crebro ita utantur*. L. Gram. p. 15.

5. Qu. May not some words of like nature to these be added to these ?

An. To these words may be added divers more like these, found used in Authors both as Masculines and Feminines, viz. *barbitus, rubus, balanus, palumbus*.

¶ *Barbitus* is in Greek a Feminine, saith *Alvarus* citing *Strabo* l. 10. saying *ἡ ῥοῦβιλος*, &c. In Latine it is both Masculine and Feminine. In Feminine *Ovid* hath it in *Epist. Sapphus ad Phaonem* : *Nec facit ad lachrymas barbitus ulla meas*. In Masculine *Horace* useth it, l. 1. *Carm. Od. 32. Age dic Latinum Barbite Carmen Lesbio primum modulate civi*.

*Rubus* we have spoken of before in the names of Trees. *Balanus* is used by *Pliny* l. 15. c. 23. in the Masculine Gender, *Ideo apud Gracos*

*Sardianos balanos appellant.* Horace l. 3. Od. 29. hath it in the Feminine, *Pressa tuis balanus capillis.* Hence Vossius thinks it ought to be almost placed amongst the Doubtfuls; and there Farnaby without any sticking at it, doth place it. Dane. Schol. p. 158. Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 31 Farnab. p. 9. *Palumbes* Pliny useth as a Masculine, l. 10. c. 35. *Vivere palumbes ad tricesimum annum, aliquos ad quadragesimum* Aristoteles *autor est.* Lucan said *macroscque palumbes.* Plaut in Bacch. 1. 1. *Dum unum expetitis palumbem.* In the Feminine Gender Virgil hath it *Ecl. 1. Nectamen interea rauca tua cura palumbes.* and *Ecl. 3. Aerie quo congestere palumbes.* And Plin. l. 10. c. 35. *Nigidius putat, cum ova incubat, sub testro nominatam palumbem relinquere nidos.*

Some may think *Volucris* fit to be added hither, because that is found both in the Masculine and Feminine Gender; in the Feminine every where; in the Masculine once, yet in Cicero, but yet in a Verse, l. 2. de Div. *Hunc ubi tam teneros volucres, matremque peremit.* The truth is, the word in Vossius's opinion is by nature an Adjective, but put Substantively, with respect unto *avis*; and thence it is so frequently of the Feminine Gender; and in Cicero it might have respect to *pullos*, and thence be there put in the Masculine Gender. Some (even Phocas and Probus) have thought *Carbasus* to be a Masculine as well as a Feminine; a place in Valerius Maximus seems to favour them: but to that we have spoken before. That it is a Feminine is certain from Propertius who l. 4. El. ult. saith, *Exhibuit vivos carbasus alba focos.* And Statius, Achil. l. 1. *Nec mora jam dextras Ithaceia carbasus auras Pascit.* But that it is also a Masculine is denied by Caper Haynes, Farnaby, and Alvarus deliver it for a Feminine. Vossius adds it to *Lithocomus*'s Rule of Doubtfuls: yet in his Marginal note upon it,

it, faith, *Carbasus* in *Feminino est usitatus*. 'Tis best to let it be a Feminine, till a clearer authority may be produced to prove it also a Masculine. *Alvar. p. 186. Voss. Lat. Gram. p. 25. & de Analog. l. 1. c. 31. Farnab. p. 9.*

*Fimus* is in *Apuleius* in the Feminine Gender, *Liquidâ fimo stritum egestâ*. But that is not enough to render it a Doubtful; but it is a Masculine. Some would have *incubus* to be a Doubtful. *Pliny l. 9. c. 8.* hath it in the Masculine Gender, *Incubi caule non minus grati*. And *l. 20. c. 8. Incubus erraticus*. But there is no Example brought out of any Classick Author shewing it a Feminine; and so it remains still a Masculine.

*Metus* also is to be found in *Ennius* in the Feminine Gender, *Ni metus ullas tenet*. But now it is only a Masculine.

6. Qu. ~~How~~ are the words of this Rule declined?

The Declining of the words in Incerti generis sunt talpa----

An. The words of this Rule of Exception are declined thus: [*Hic vel*] *hec talpa talpe*; [*hic vel*] *hec dama dame*; *hic [vel hec] canalis canalis*; *hec halcyon halcyonis*; *hic vel hec finis finis*; [*hic vel*] *hec clunis clunis*; *hec restis restis*; *hic [vel hec] penus penus*; *hic amnis amnis*; *hic [vel hec] pampinus pampini*; [*hic vel*] *hec corbis corbis*; [*hic vel*] *hec linter lintris*; *hic vel hec torquis torquis*; *hic vel hec specus specus*; *hic [vel hec] anguis anguis*; *hec ficus fici*; *hic vel hec phaselus phaseli*; *hec lecythus lecythi*; [*hic vel*] *hec atomus atomi*; *hic vel hec grossus grossi*; *hec pharus phari*; *hic paradisus paradisi*

And thus far of the Third Exception from the First Special Rule.

## CHAP. XI.

1. Qu. **O**f what is the fourth Exception from the first Special Rule and which is it?

An. The fourth Exception from *Nomen non crescentis generis*, or the first Special Rule is of Nouns of the Common of two Genders, that do not increase in the Genitive Case; and it is this.

*Communia non crescentia.*

*Compositum a verbo dans a commune duorum est :*

*Grajugena a gigno, agricola a colo, id advena monstrat*

*A Venio : adde senex, auriga, & verna, sodalis*

*Vates, extorris, patruelis perque duellis,*

*Affinis, juvenis, testis, civis, canis, hostis.*

2. Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule of Exception?

An. The meaning of this Exceptive Rule is this, That there are some Nouns of the Common of two Genders, which do not increase in the Genitive Case.

3. Qu. How many branches doth this Exception consist of?

An. This Exception consists of two branches, the first of Nouns ending in *a* made by composition of something else with a Verb; the second of some particular words disagreeing in Gender with the first special Rule.

4. Qu. Which is the first branch of the Exception?

An. The first branch of the Exception is this, *Compositum a verbo dans a commune duorum est :*  
*Grajugena a gigno, agricola a colo, id advena monstrat*  
*A venio.*

Composi-  
tum a ver-  
bo dans a  
commu-  
ne---

5. Qu. What is the meaning of this branch of the Exception?

An. The meaning of this branch of the Exception is this, That some words (that do not increase in the Genitive Case) ending in *a* and made by composition of a Verb with something else, are of the Common of two Genders; as *conviva*.

¶ A Noun of the Common of two Genders, is a word that so signifies both male and female [*he* and *she*] that under one and the same Termination it may have an Adjective of the Masculine Gender, joyned with it when it signifies the *Male*, and again an Adjective of the Feminine Gender, when it signifies the *Female*; so that as we say *civis Romanus*, and *affinis meus* when we speak of *men*, so we may say *civis Romana*, and *affinis mea*, when we speak of *women*. If Grammarians and those of best note be right in so defining of a Noun Substantive Common, then very few or none of those words, which can be conceived to be comprehended under this Rule, will be found to be Noun Substantives Common. For those of them, which have an Adjective Masculine at any time joined with them; as, *Grajugena*, *agricola*, *advena*, *auriga*, and so, *heredipeta*, *perfuga*, *transfuga*, are not found at any time to have an Adjective Feminine joined with them; and again *puerpera* which is a Feminine, is never found to have a Masculine Adjective joined to it. Indeed *Priscian* l. 5. cites out of *Pomponius*, a very old Author, *conviva* with an Adjective Feminine. *Conveni, inquit, omnes convivas meas*. But except this one, there is not extant any other Example, that *Alvarus* could find. But first it is possible that *Priscian's* copy of *Pomponius* which he read might be miswritten *meas* for *meos*. As great matters as that have been in the world. Again admit it written so by the Author, yet as we say one Swallow makes not a Summer: nor is one Example out of so old an Author as *Pomponius*, whom *Farn*, calls *autorem cascum*, sufficient to mak a Rule of, when

when there are no other to fellow and follow it. It had been better to have made this word an Exception from a more general Rule. Lastly, this word is in the judgment of *Vossius*, for nature in a manner an Adjective, *ad Adjectivorum naturam proxime accedit*, saith he. For we say, *vivus, viva, vivum* : whence is *conviva*, that is *una vivens*, *Ea nempe vivendi significatione qua convivium dicitur, quod Græce συμποσιον*. De Analog. l. 1. c. 15. There is said to be found *alienigenus sanguis*, and *alienigena studia* in *Valer. Max.* *Vitigenus liquor*, in *Lucret.* *Caprigenum pecus* in *Virgil.* *Verba verna* in *Plaut.* But *Rhenius* reckons of these words so used, as Adjectives, p. 28. And *Priscian* l. 6. seems to be of the same opinion, quoting to that end that of *Pavcuvius*, *Que via caprigeno generi gradibilis gressio est*, and that of *Cato*, *Caprigeni pectoris custos de gurgite vasto*, &c. Perhaps therefore we may say those words are Substantives agreeing with Substantives, or Substantives put in the same Case by Apposition with other Substantives, to denote some property or quality in them : For many of these may easily be found joyned in a Feminine Termination with Substantives both of the Masculine and Neuter Gender. So in *Ovid* 4. *Trist.* we have *Tempore rusticola patiens fit taurus aratri*. In *Gell.* *Neque vino alienigena, sed patrio usus*. In *Plin.* l. 14. c. 6. *Dixisse hospiti de indigena vino*. In *Columel.* l. 6. c. 2. *Bos indigena melior est, quam peregrinus*. If this be not it, then I know not what to say more, unless we should say, what perhaps at last must be said, that these words are both Adjectives and Substantives ; sometimes Adjectives of three Terminations, and sometimes Substantives of one Termination common indeed as to signification, but that only, and not at all in construction, as agreeing to both Sexes, but yet not admitting an Adjective of both Genders ; (Such as are many of other Terminations, both

Masculines,



Masculines, as *fur, latro, homicida*; and Feminines, as *proles* and *soboles*; and Neuters, as *animal, mancipium*; For *mulier* (for instance sake) is *fur*, and yet you cannot call a Woman *Magnam furem*, but *feminam furacissimam*; and again, a Woman is *bo-mo*; yet you cannot call a Woman *hominem miseram*, but *mulierem miseram*) and that they are by Authors sometimes used as Adjectives, and sometimes as Substantives; as Substantives when they differ in Termination from the Substantives they are set with, as, *uricolæ aratri*: and as Adjectives, when they agree in Termination with the Substantives they are set withal, as *alienigena studia*. And by the way, by agreeing in Termination, I do not mean, being of the same Termination as to Letters, but being put in a Masculine Termination with a word of the Masculine Gender, as *vitigenus liquor*, and so of the rest; and according to this *Adviso*, it must be understood what I mean by differing in Termination. Let the Reader here choose what he likes, and if he like nothing, let him give us somewhat that is better to be liked. *Alvar. p. 167. Rhenius p. 28. Farnab. p. 8. Voss. Lat. Gram. p. 14. and De Analog. l. 1. c. 15.*

Whereas our Author in that expression, *id advena monstrat*, may seem to demonstrate the truth of his Exception, it will be granted that *advena* is joyned with Substantives both of Masculine and Feminine Gender: for *Ovid 1. de Arte* saith, *Heu heu quàm multos advena torsit amor!* and *9. Ep. Ante meos oculos adducitur advena pater.* *Hor. 2. Epod. Pavidumque leporem & advenam laqueo gruem captat.* But it is not what Substantives a Noun Substantive is joyned with, but what Adjectives are joyned with it, that shew the Gender of it. And he that can find us an Adjective of the Feminine Gender joyned with this Substantive, will shew us a Novelty. In the mean time let this with his fellows be accounted Substan-

Substantives Common for Signification, but Masculine for Gender, and be referred to the first Exception from the first Special Rule, *Mascula nomina in a dicuntur multa virorum*. And as to this word in particular, it may be further said, that it hath in its own nature the force of an Adjective. For saith *Vossius*, *advena est adveniens, vel qui advenit. Similiter transvena quo utitur Tertullianus*. And thus much for this first branch of this Exception.

6. Qu. Which is the second branch of this Exception?

An. The second branch of this Exception is this,  
 --- Adde *Senex, auriga, & verna, sodalis, Vates, extorris, patruielis, perque duellis, Affinis, juvenis, testis, civis, canis, hostis*.

7. Qu. What is the meaning of this branch of the Exception?

An. The meaning of this branch of the Exception is this, That there are some particular words, which increase not in the Genitive Case, of the Common of two Genders.

8. Qu. Are not all the particulars here mentioned of the Common of two Genders?

An. If all the particulars here mentioned be Common in respect of Signification, yet they are not all of the Common of two Genders in point of Construction. *Vates, testis, civis, canis*, and *hostis* are properly Commons; the rest are Masculine Substantives, or Adjectives; by nature put in the Masculine Gender Substantively.

¶ *Senex* is not found with a Feminine Adjective. That of *Pomponius* which *Priscian*, to prove it a Common, quoteth out of *Varro*, proves it not. *Nam es verè pusus tu; tua amica senex*. That is, *tua amica est Senex*. He should have proved saith *Vossius*, that as it is said, *ille senex*, so it had any where been said of some old wife *illa senex*. Besides, *senex* is an Adjective,

by

by nature, added to other things besides mankind. Hence in *Lucilius* is read *cervus senex*; and in *Plautus*, *senex dies*; so in *Martial* l. 3. Ep. 57. *Et multa fragrat testa Senibus autumnis*. It forms also from it self the Comparative *Senior*, used by *Ovid*. *Met.* 12. *Tum Senior, quamvis obstet mihi longa vetustas*.

*Auriga* is a Masculine. *Hor.* 1. *Carm.* Od. 15. *Non auriga piger*. In *Virgil* 12. *Æn.* it is spoken of a woman. *Nec currus usquam videt, aurigamque sororem*. But that shews it a Common only in Signification, not in Construction.

*Verna* is a Masculine, *Hor.* 2. *Epod.* *Positosque vernas*.

*Sodalis* is a Masculine. *Mart.* l. 1. *O mihi post nullo Julo memorande Sodalis*. In *Ovid.* 2. *de Remed. Am.* there is read *turba Sodalis*. But that proves it not a Feminine.

*Vates* is a Common Masculine. In *Hor.* 2. *Carm.* Od. 6. *Debita sparges lachryma favillam vatis amici*. Feminine in *Virg.* *Æn.* 6. *Sanctissima vates Præscia venturi*. *Cic.* *de Arusp.* *Hac vate Suadente*. *Id.* 2. *de Leg.* *Infana vates*.

*Extorris* is a Masculine. *Liv.* 2. *ab Urbe*. *Ne se ortum ejusdem sanguinis extorrem, egentem, ex tanto modo regno cum liberis adolescentibus ante oculos suos perire sineret*.

*Patruelis* is found with a Feminine, as well as a Masculine Adjective. *Plaut.* *Pæn.* *Pater tuus is erat, frater patruelis meus*. *Sueton.* in *Jul. Caf.* c. 29. *Quia fratri patrueli suo Marco in consulatu successerat*. *Pers.* 6. *Sat.* *Age si mihi nulla jam reliqua ex amitis patruelis, nulla proneptis*. But it is an Adjective. Hence we read in *Martial.* l. 5. Ep. 36. *De patruelibus fundis*. In *Ovid.* *Metam.* 1. *Origo, patruelis*, and 1 p. 14. *patruelia regna*. Yet taken Substantively it may pass for a Common of two.

*Perduellis*

*Perduellis* is an Adjective like *rivalis*; *homo* is understood with it. So Mr. Farnaby tells us *System. Gram.* p. 11.

*Testis* was thought by *Alvarus* to be a Masculine, but it is a Common. *Horace* hath it in the Masculine Gender *l. 1. Sat. 8. Non testis inultus.* *Sueton.* in *Claud. c. 40.* hath it in the Feminine, *Inducta teste in Senatum, hæc inquit, matris meæ liberta & ornatrice fuit.* Such is *Civis*, *canis*, and *hostis*, as having Feminine Adjectives sometimes, though seldomer joined with them. *Civis* is found with a Feminine Adjective in *Ter. And. 1. 3. Et fingunt quandam inter se nunc fallaciam Civem Atticam esse Hanc.* *Canis* is found in the Feminine Gender in *Hor. 2. Epod. Aut trudit acres hinc atque hinc multâ cane Apros in obstantes plagas.* *Virg. Æn. 6. Visaque canes ululare per umbram.* *Varro de v. r. Quod si lupus aliussive quis his vulneratus est reliquas quoque canes facit, que id non habent, ut sint in tuto.* And for *Hostis* as *Statius* in *2. Thebaid.* useth it of *Gorge* the Wife of *Helymus*, which shews it a Common in signification: So *Quintilian l. 2. c. 2.* adds an Adjective of the Feminine Gender to it, *Studiorum perniciosissima hostis*; which shews it a Common also in Construction. Masculine Adjectives joined with these Substantives are ordinary.

*Affinis* hath indeed a Feminine Adjective as well as a Masculine added to it, *Cic. post. Redit. in Senat. Tu affinem tuam filiam meam à genibus repulisti.* But it is by nature an Adjective: Hence *Cic. 1. Catil. Huic facinori si paucos putatis affines esse, vehementer erratis.* *Id. pro Syl. Homines hujus affines suspicionis.* Yet it may also pass for a Common of two, taken Substantively.

*Juvenis* is thought by some to be a Common; and so it is in signification. That of *Pliny. l. 7. c. 37.* proves it, *Cornelia juvenis est, & parere adhuc potest.* But if it be a Substantive it is a Masculine,

Nor

Nor will that of *Catullus* in *Nupt. Carm. Cernitis innuptæ juvenes!* prove it to have a Feminine Adjective joined with it. For the true pointing is thus, *Cernitis, innuptæ, juvenes!* Where *innuptæ* is the Vocative Case, and *juvenes* the Accusative; and so the one belongs not to the other. But it seems by nature to be an Adjective: Hence *Ovid. Met. 7. saith, juvenes nutricibus annos Posse suis reddi. Hor. 3. Carm. Od 11. Surge quæ dixit juveni marito.* Besides it forms of it self *junior* (for *juvenior*) a comparative. Hence *Hor. 2. Ep. Toto anno junior.* And so it is no Common of two Substantive.

7. Qu. How are the words in th's Exception declined? The Declining of the words in

An. The words in this Exceptive Rule are declined thus, *Hic Grajgena Grajgenæ; hic agricola agricola; hic advena advenæ; hic senex senis; hic auriga aurigæ; hic verna vernæ; hic sodalis sodalis; hic & hæc vates vatis; hic extorris extorris; hic & hæc patruelis patruelis; hic perduellis perduellis; hic & hæc affinis; hic juvenis juvenis; hic & hæc testis testis; hic & hæc civis civis; hic & hæc canis canis; hic & hæc hostis hostis.* Compositum à verbo dans à-

And thus far of the first special Rule, and the Exceptions to it. Proceed we now to the Second.

## CH A P. XII.

1. Qu. VV What is the second special Rule?

An. The second special Rule is this.

*Secunda regula specialis.*

*Nomen crescentis penultima si genitivi  
Syllaba acuta sonat, velut hæc pietas pietatis,  
Virtus virtutis monstrat, genus est muliebre.*

2. Qu. What is the meaning of th's Rule?

An. The

Nomen  
crescentis  
penultima  
si Genitivi  
Syllaba acuta sonat-

*An.* The meaning of this Rule is this, That if the last syllable but one of an increasing Substantive be sounded sharp, that Noun is of the Feminine Gender.

3. *Qu.* What it is to increase we have seen before; but what is it now for a syllable to be sounded sharp?

*An.* For a syllable in any word to be sounded sharp, is to be uttered or pronounced with somewhat the more strength of breath, and loudness of voice, than the other syllables of the same word are, as is *ta* in *pietatis* and *tu* in *virtutis*.

¶ This is easie to discern in words of three syllables; but not in words of two. Whence all words of one syllable that increase in the Genitive Case, are to be taken for Feminines, except those that are excepted in the following Rules.

I render *sonat acuta* by sounding sharp, not long, as is usual; to prevent that mistake of all syllables for long in quantity, which are sounded acutely or sharply in tone, which some have run into by the reading of *sonat acuta* here by sounding long. For not only many monosyllables are sounded acutely in the *penultima* of their Genitive Case, which yet is short in the quantity of it; as *vir viri* not *virii*; so *mas maris* not *maris*: but also words of more syllables than two have syllables sounded sharp, whose quantity is short, as, *hominis*, *vigilis*, *comitis*, *pugilis*; and even in the *penultima*, as *Ovidi* and *Virgili*, the Vocative Cases of *Ovidius* and *Virgilius*, whose final Letter *e* is by an usual Apostrophe cut off from them, which otherwise should be *Ovidie* and *Virgilie*.

4. *Qu.* I know not so authoritatively that there are no Exceptions from it?

*An.* From this second Special Rule also, as from the first, there are four Exceptions. For of increasing Nouns, sounded sharp in the last syllable

syllable but one of their Genitive Case, some are *Masculines*, some are *Neuters*, some are of the *Doubtful Gender*, and some of the *Common* of two.

C H A P. XIII.

1. Qu. **VV** What is the first Exception from the second special Rule of?

An. The first Exception from the second special Rule is of *Masculines* increasing in the Genitive Case, and sounded sharp in the last syllable but one of that Case.

2. Qu. How many branches doth that Exception consist of?

An. That Exception consists of two branches; the one concerning *Monosyllables*, and the other concerning *Polyssyllables* excepted from the special Rule.

3. Q Which is that branch of the Exception that concerns Monosyllables.

An. That branch of the Exception that concerns the Monosyllables, or words of one syllable, is this,

*Masculina excepta ex acutè crescentibus.*

*Mascula dicuntur Monosyllaba nomina quædam, Sal, Sol, ren & splen, Car, Ser, vir, vas, vadu, as, mas, Des, Cres, præ, & pes, glis gliris habens genitivo, Mos, flor, ros & Tros, mus, dens, mons, pons, simul & fons, Sepe pro serpente, gryps, Thrax, rex, grex gregis & Phryx.*

*Mascula dicuntur Monosyllaba.*

4. Qu. What is the meaning of this Exception?

An. The meaning of this Exception is this, That there be many Nouns of one syllable, which do increase sharp in the Genitive Case, which yet are of the Masculine Gender, as *sal, sol, &c.*

F

¶ Sal



¶ *Sal* in the Masculine Gender is most usual. Hence *Ter. in Eun. Qui habet salem, qui in te est.* And *Sal. in Jug. Neque salem, neque alia irritamenta gule.* Yet *Priscian l. 5.* tells us, that some of the most antient Authors have used it in the Neuter Gender; *Colum. l. 12. c. 53. Deinde in seriam substernitur Sal coctum, sed modicè infractum.* In the Plural Number it is only a Masculine. *Properz. l. 3. El. 21. Librorumque tuos doctè Menandre Sales.* *Paul I C. l. 5. Sentent. Cotem ferro Subigendo necessariam, hostibus quoque venundari, ut ferrum, & frumentum, & sales, non sine periculo capitis licet.* The Neuter *Sal* may come of *Sale* a Neuter Nominative for the *Sea*, found in *Enn. 4. Annal. Cœruleum spumat Sale [i. e. mare] conferta rate pulsum.* *Vas* hath *vadis* here added to it, to distinguish it from *vas vasis* which is a Neuter.

*Pes* hath antiently had a Feminine use. Hence *Plaut. in Vidularia. Ubi quamque pedem videbat, suffurabatur omnis.* But there *Nonius* expounds *pes* by *pediculus*: in which Signification *Varro* also used the word, but in the Masculine Gender, *l. 3. Der. r. c. 9. Dato cibo cum perpurgarunt caput, ne quos habeant pedes, rursus eas includunt.* *Voss. Addend. ad lib. 1. De Analog.*

*Glis* hath *gliris* in genitivo added to it, to distinguish it from *glis glitis*, clammy earth, which is a Feminine; and from *glis glistis*, a bur or thistle, which is a Neuter; and from *glis glidis*, mouldiness in Bread, which is Feminine: This last *Holyoke* in his Dictionary, quotes *Livy* and *Vitruvius* for; the two former *Vossius* saith, are hardly to be read in any approved Author. *De Analog. l. c. 29.*

*Dens* is found in *Appulei. in Apolog. of the Feminine Gender. Splendidas dentes.* But he is not therein to be followed; it might be a mis-writing.

*Seps* a horn-worm, hath *pro serpente* added to it, to distinguish it from *seps* a hedge. In the first Signi-

Signification it is Masculine. *Lucil. 9. Oraque dissolvens cum corpore tabificus seps.* In the second Signification it is of Feminine Gender, if yet there be any such word, which may be doubted. For *sepem* and *sepibus* in *Virgil*, may well enough come of the Nominative Case *sepes*, which both *Virgil* and *Varro* use : The first in *Ecl. 1. Hinc tibi, quæ semper vicino ab limite sepes, Hyblæis apibus florem depasta salicis, Sæpe levi somnum suadebit inire susurro.* The other in *R. R. l. 1. c. 14. Secunda sepes est ex agresti ligno.* *Ausonius* indeed doth intimate as if *seps* in this sense had been a word used by *Cicero*. *Bucolico sepes dixit Maro : cur Cicero seps ?* so he. But no body ever said so but *Ausonius*. And in *Cicero's* works now extant, ye may go look it, but are not like to find it. *Voss. de Anal. l. 1. c. 33.*

*Grex* hath *gregis* added to it, to fill up the Verse. And this for the first branch of the Exception concerning Monosyllables.

5. Qu. Which is that branch of the Exception, that concerns Polysyllables of the Masculine Gender excepted from the second Special Rule ?

An. The second branch of the Exception that concerns Masculine Polysyllables, excepted from the second Special Rule, is this,

*Mascula sunt etiam polysyllaba, &c.*

Mascula  
sunt etiam  
polysylla-  
ba.

6. Qu. What is the meaning of this Exception ?

An. The meaning of this Exception is this, That there are many Polysyllables, words of more syllables than one, increasing sharp in the Genitive Case, which are of the Masculine Gender, contrary to the second Special Rule ?

7. Qu. Is not this branch of Exception capable of being subdivided into other Members ?

An. This branch of the Exception may be subdivided

divided into four other branches or members.

8. Qu. What doth the first Member of this branch of Exception concern? and which is it?

An. The first member of this branch of the Exception concerns words of more syllables than one, which end in *n*; and it is this.

In *n* ut  
Acarnan,  
Lichen---

*Mascula sunt etiam polysyllaba in n ut Acarnan, Lichen & delphin.*

9. Qu. What is the meaning of this first member of this branch of the Exception?

An. The meaning of this Rule is, That some words ending in *n* of more syllables, than one, which increase, and are sounded sharp in the last syllable but one of the Genitive case, are of the Masculine Gender, as *Acarnan, Lichen, delphin.*

10. Qu. Are there none of these words belonging to this Rule but these three have named?

An. To this Rule may be added also these four *Paan, Hymen, attagen, and lien.*

¶ *Paan* is Masculine in *Virg. 6. Æn. Latumque choro pæana canentes.* So *Hymen* hence *Festus hymen* in *Claudian ad Seren. Professus clamaretur hymen, Stat. Epithal. Stella, v. 26. Attagen;* in *Horace Epod. 2. Non attagen Jonicus jucundior,* and *Plin. l. 10. c. 8. Attagen maximè Jonicus celebratur, vocalis alior, caprus vere obmutescens, quoniam existimatus inter raras aves. Lien* in *Plaut. Cure 2. 1. Lien diruptus est. P. Amula, id lien optimus est.*

11. Qu. What doth the second member of this branch of the Exception concern? and which is it?

An. The second member of this part of the Exception concerns polysyllables in *o*; and it is this,

— *Et in o signantia corpus*

*Ut leo, circelio: sic senio, ternio, sermo.*

Et in o signantia corpus  
ut leo, circelio,  
senio, ternio, sermo.

12. Qu. What is the meaning of this Member of the Exception.

An.

An. The meaning of this part of the Rule is, That words in *o*, of more syllables than one, signifying a body, and increasing sharp in the Genitive Case, are of the Masculine Gender, as *leo*, *curculio*, *so ligo*, *umbo*, *stilio*, *pugio*, *titio*, *carbo*, *unio* for a precious stone, and for an onion, and *harpago* --onis.

¶ *Arrhabo* is a Feminine in *Varro l. 4. de L. Lat. Arrhabo si diſta, ut reliquum reddatur*. Every where else, it is a Masculine. *Plaut. Mil. 4. 1. Hunc arrabonem amoris a me accipe. Gell. l. 17. c. 2. Sed nunc arrhabo in sordidis verbis habere ceptus, ac multo rectius videtur arra*. Perhaps *Varro* might not respect the Gender of the word, but some other word by an *Hyperon* understood with it, as *diſtio*, or *vox*. If it may be allowed for a Masculine, it may go with the Rule: If not, it may be placed among the Doubtfuls, yet as being rather Masculine. *Ulpian* useth *carbo* in the Feminine Gender, *Si* (saith he) *lignum sit paratum ad carbones coquendas, atque conficiendas, &c.* But *Scipio Gentilis* suspects he had respect to the Greek *καρβύκη* *l. 11. παρρη*, and so for all him it may remain to be a Masculine; it not being safe without a better authority to use it as a Feminine. *Haynes. p. 11. Danes. Schol. p. 168. Voss. Lat. Gram. p. 19. & de Analog. l. 1. c. 22.*

13. Qu. Are there no other words in *o* but those that signify a body of the Masculine Gender?

An. Besides those words in *o* that signify a body, there are some others also of the Masculine Gender, which are named here by way of Addition to the Rule in that clause of it, *sic senio, ternio, sermo*.

*Sic senio,*

14. Qu. Are there any words at all in *o*, which increase sharp in the Genitive Case, and are not of the Masculine Gender?

An. Many words in *o*, that increase sharp in the Genitive Case, are of the Feminine Gender; as all verbals in *o*, such as *lectio*, and *traditio*; and some other words, that are like verba's, namely *ditio*, *conciatio*, *communio*.

¶ Some say *Unio* for *Union* or *Concord*, is of the Feminine Gender. But Mr. Farnaby tells us, that in this sense the word is not to be found in any good Author. *Tertullian* hath the word *l. 1. advers. Marcion. c. 4. Sed & alterius forma reges, qui singulares in unione imperii præsunt.* But there, saith *Vossius*, *Unio* notes *non societatem sed concordia*, not union, but unity. Nor doth it appear hence to be a Feminine. *Farnab. p. 12. Voss. de Anal. l. 1. c. 22.* In the mean time, That of *Plin. l. 9. c. 35. Duo fuere maximi uniones per omne ævum*, will prove it a Masculine, when put for a precious stone; and for an Onyon *Vossius* doubts not but it is of the same Gender, though nothing from the antients be said concerning it.

15. Qu. What doth the third Member of this branch of the Exception concern? and which is it?

An. The third member of this branch of the Exception of Masculine *Polyssyllables* from the second Special Rule, concerns words that end in *er*, *or*, and *os*; and it is this

Mascula in  
*er*, *or*, & *os*.

*Mascula in er, or, & os, ceu crater, conditor, heros.*

16. Qu. What is the meaning of this part of the Rule?

An. The meaning of this member of the Exception from the Special Rule is this, That Nouns ending in *er*, *or*, and *os*, increasing sharp in the Genitive Case, are of the Masculine Gender: as *crater*, *conditor*, and *heros*.

17. Qu. Is there no Exception from this member of the Exception?

An. From this member of the Exception some Nouns in *os* are to be excepted: for *cos*, *elos*, *eos*, and *glos gloris* are Feminines.

¶ That *cos* is the Feminine Gender, that of *Florus l. 1. c. 5.* is sufficient to prove: *Hoc, inquit, agit abam an cotem illam secare novacula possem.* *Dos* is a Feminine in *Plaut. Amph. Non ego illam mihi dotem duco esse, quæ dos dicitur, sed pudicitiam.* *Eos* is a Feminine

mine in Ovid. 4. *Fasti. Proxima viltricem quum Romam inspexerit Eos.* For *Glos* the husbands sister, or brothers wife, the signification is such, that it can be no other but a Feminine. *Glos glossis, rotten wood,* is said to be a Masculine. It may seem that some in or antiently have been Neuters. For in *Plaut. Merc. act. 5. Calor* is of the Neuter Gender. *Nec calor nec frigus metuo, neque ventum neque grandinem.* But now they are all Masculines. *Voss, de Analog. l. 1. c. 27.*

18. Qu. What both the fourth member of this branch of the Exception concerns, and which is it?

An. The fourth member of this branch of the Exception concerns a multitude of particular words of diverse endings, namely in *ens, as, es, ans, is, ops, ax, ex, ix, and yx,* which increase sharp in the Genitive Case, yet are of the Masculine Gender: and it is this,

*Sic torrens, nefrens, oriens, cum pluribus in dens  
Quale bidens, quando pro instrumento reperitur,  
Adde gigas, elephas, adamas, garyamasque, tapesque,  
Atque lebes, Cures, magnes, unumque meridi-  
es nomen quintæ, & quæ componuntur ab asse;  
Ut dodrans semis junguntur Mascula Samnis,  
Hydrops, nycticorax, thorax, & Mascula vervex,  
Phoenix & bombyx.*

*Sic torrens  
nefrens,  
&c.*

18. Qu. What is the meaning of this sentence of the Exception?

An. The meaning of this part of the Rule is this, That there are many particular words differing in Termination from those already mentioned in the former Exceptions, which are also to be excepted from the second Special Rule, as being of the Masculine Gender, though increasing sharp in the Genitive Case; as *torrens, nefrens, &c.*

¶ *Torrens* is an Adjective put Substantively; Hence in *Virgil Ecl. 7.* may be read *torrentia flumina.* *Amnis* or *fluvius* is understood with it. The like may be said of *confluens*, and *profluens.*

*Nefrens* ( if any such word there be ) is by nature an Adjective, and *Porcellus* is understood with it. *Varro de r. r. l. 2. c. 4*, speaking *de porcis* saith thus, *Amisso nomine laſtantes, dicuntur nefrendes, ab eo quod nondum fabam frendere poſſunt, id eſt, frangere.* Perhaps it were better inſtead of *nefrens*, to ſay, *nefrendis*. In *Joſeph Scaligers Conjeſſanea in Varronem* (p. 157.) he is called *nefrendis*, or *nefrendus puer*, *qui per atatem frangere non poteſt, ſenex qui dentes amiſit.* *Liv. Andronicus* ſaith, *Quem ego nefrendem alui laſteam immulgent opem.* Thence *nefrendes porculi*. See alſo *Trebellius Promptuarium*, or rather, That which that *Promptuariam* is but a breviat of the incomparable *R. Stephans Lat. Theſaurus*.

*Oriens* is an Adjective put Subſtantively in the Maſculine Gender with reſpect unto *Sol*. The like may be ſaid of *accidens*.

*Fidens* is an Adjective by nature uſed Subſtantively in the Maſculine Gender, *quando pro instrumento reperitur* as our Author ſaith, when *ligo* is referred to, and underſtood with it.--- *Virg. 2. Geog. Sarcula nunc duruſque bidens, & Vomer aduncus Ruris opes niteant, ib. duros jaſtare bidentes.* The like may be ſaid of *Tridens*. But when *bidens* is put pro eve, *cui dentes duo eminuli*, then it is a Feminine. And ſo *Virgil 6. Æn.* uſeth it, *Totidem leſtas de more bidentes* *Joſ. Scaliger Conſeſſan. in Varron. Macrob. Saturnal. l. 6. c. 9. A. Gel l. 16. c. 6. Farnab. L. Gram. p. 12. Steph. Lat. Theſaur*

*Cures* belongs not to this place, as being a word of the Plural number *I lor. l. 1. o. 2. Succedit Numa Pompilius, quem Curibus Sabinis agentem ultro petivere ob inclutam viri religionem.* So *Virgil. Æn 8. Subitoque rouum conſurgere bellum Romulidis Tatiusque ſeni Curibuſque ſeveris.* There is read indeed *Curetes*. *Virg 3. Æn. Et tandem antiquis Curetam allabatur oris.* And *Cuid. Metam. 4. Largoque ſaſto curetas ab imbre.* But *Cures* in the Singular number



number I meet not with, as yet.

*Unumque meridies nomen quinta*; But if a man had a mind to say *semidies*, and *sesquidies* like *semihora*, and *sesquihora*, They two should be of the Masculine Gender. *Meridies* hath no Plural number. *Vossius Lat. Gram. pag. 12.*

20. Qu. How shall we best understand that clause of this Rule, *Et quæ componuntur ab asse*.

An. The best understanding of that clause of the Rule, *Et quo componuntur ab esse*, I conceive to be this, That the names of the several parts of the Roman *As*, which increase in the Genitive case, are of the Masculine Gender; which are these, *Sextans* [the sixth part of *As* which contained twelve ounces] the name for two ounces, *triens*, three ounces, *quadrans* four ounces, *quincunx*, five ounces, *sestunx*, seven ounces, *bes*, eight ounces, *dodrans*, nine ounces, *decunx* and *dextrans*, ten ounces, and *deunx*, eleven ounces, as if the Author had spoken by an *Hypallage*, *quæ componuntur ab asse*, for *Ex quibus componitur As*.

Et quæ  
compo-  
nuntur ab  
asse--

21. Qu. Why do you conceive this the righter way of interpreting the Authors meaning?

An. I conceive this the righter way of Interpreting the Authors meaning, both because the words are compounded with *As*, all, or most, are words that do not increase in the Genitive case, and so cannot belong to this Rule, such are *semissis*, [*q. semis assis*], *decussis*, *vigessis*, *centussis*, &c. and because the two examples here given are words, neither of which is compounded of *As*: yet the one doth, and the other may signify some part of the *As*.

¶ For *dodrans*, that is so called *quia deest quadrans*, as *deunx*, *quia deest uncia*, and *dextrans* *quia deest sextans*. And for *semis*, *Vossius* saith, expressly of it, *Semis non quasi semias, ut Varro ait: sed ex vna contrahitur, ut Festus recte*

*restè monet.* And the word properly denoting the half of the *As*, is *semissis*, *quasi semis assis*. It is true *semis* may denote the half of the *As* too, but that is, because it is a general word that, as *Vossius* saith, *convenit cujusque rei dimidio*. And of *semissis* it may be said, that that may also signifie something more, than strictly the half of the *Roman As*, as a weight consisting of twelve ounces; whence *hares ex semisse* is *hares ex parte dimidiâ* of an estate demised by will; but still it is in that acception *semis assis*, the whole estate so demised by will, being termed *As*, and the Heir to the whole styled *hares ex asse*. And as the *As* was enlarged sometimes from its proper and particular signification to the signifying of any *integrum*, so not only *semissis*, but the rest of the words which signifie any parts of the *As* were enlarged to signify such proportion of the whole, as they bore to the *As*. *As decunx* eleven parts, *decunx* ten parts, *docunx* nine parts *bes* or *bescis* eight parts, *septunx* seven parts, *semissis* the half &c. Having delivered my opinion, with the ground of it, I leave every man to think as he will. See *Voss. Lat. Gram.* p. 16. and 24, and *De Analog.* l. 1. c. 29. p. 115. From that of *Apuleius* quoted by *Priscian*, *Sed tum sestertius dipondium semissem valebat*, *Vossius* gathers that *semis* is the Masculine Gender; and if it shew the Gender, then it also shews the Declining of it, that it increases sharp in the Gnerive Case.

*Phœnix* is the name sometimes of a *Bird*, sometimes of a *People*, and sometimes of a *Tree*. As it signifies a *Bird*, so it is of the Masculine Gender, *Unicus extremo Phœnix præcedit ab Euro.* *Claud.* l. 2. *D. Laud. Stiliconis*. And under that notion it stands here. Of the same gender it is, when it is the name of a *Phœnician*. But as it is the name of a *Tree* it is of the Feminine Gender. *Danes. Schol.* l. p. 163.

**Bombyx**  
pro vermiculo.

*Bombyx* pro vermicula. *Bombix*, Sometimes signifies a *Silk-worm*; sometimes the stuffe or garment made

made of Silk. For a Worm, it is the Masculine Gender. *Martial l. 8. Tam leve nec bombyx pendulus urget opus.* For the Silk Stuffle, it is of the Feminine Gender. *Plin. l. 11 c. 23. Assyria tamen bombyce adhuc feminis cedimus.* And if at any time *bombyx* be found in the Masculine gender, for the stuffle, as in that of *Propert. l. 2. & 3. Nec si qua Arabio lucet bombyce puella,* it is in respect to the Worm, which being the maker of the silke wherof the stuff is made, is, by a Metonymie of the efficient for the effect put for the stuffle or garment made of that silk. *Alvar. p. 173. Stephan. Th. Lat. Voss. Dancs.*

20. Qu. May any words be added yet further to this exception?

An. To this Root or Exception there may added *Spadix* and *Volvox*, and *Esox*.

¶ For *Spadix*, that of *Virgil. 3. Georg.* will be a sufficient account. *Luxuriatque toris animosum pedus: honesti Spadices, glaucique color deterrimus albis.* *Vossius* saith it is by nature an Adjective, and so of all Genders. *De Anal. l. 1. c. 34.* For *Volvox* I have nothing to say at present, but that our Lexicographers, give it for a Masculine increasing sharp. That of *Plin. l. 18. c. 28. Alii volvozem appellant animal prærodens pubescentes uvas,* shows that it increases, but whether flat or sharp it shewes not; nor yet what Gender, more than that it is the same with *convolutus* twice mentioned a little before, and so may be reasonably supposed to be of the same Gender with it. For *Esox*, *Vossius* saith, Late Authors place it, as well as *volvox*, among the Masculines. *Mr. Farnaby* adds *Varix*, *dropax*, and *Myrtax*. *L. Gram. p. 12.* But *Varix* both in *Stephanus* and *Priscian l. 6.* is said to increase flat; and a Verse beginning with *Varice succiso*, is cited out of *Horace*, yet not now to be found in him, saith *Vossius de Analog. l. 1. c. 34.* But the quantity of the penultima of it in the oblique cases may be guessed at by the penultima of

of *Varicus*, and the *ante-penultima* of *Varicosus*, which are both short, the one in *Ovid*, the other in *Persius*. *Seneca* in his 78. Ep. useth it in the Feminine Gender. *Dum varices exsecandas praberet legere librum perseveravit*. Hence some make it a doubtful.

*Propax* increases flat; That's plain by *Martial* l. 10. Ep. 65. *Levis dropace tu quotidiano* and l. 3. *Psilothro faciemque lavas & dropace calvam*.

Of *Mystax* I find nothing certain in any *Romane* Author. In *Vossius* it is a Masculine Analog. l. 1. c. 24.

*Vossius* speaking of *Vibex*; or, as he contends, it ought rather to be written *vibix*, saith it is reckoned among the Masculines; and rightly too. I know not then why *Persius* should use it in the Feminine Gender, *Sat. 4. v. 49. Si pūtea multā cautus vibicē flagellas*; unless it be accounted a Doubtful.

21. Qu. Is there no exception made by the Grammar from these exceptions?

An. From these Exceptions the Grammar it self makes an exception of four words, and that exception is in these words, *Attamen ex his sunt mulieris genus Siren, mulier, Soror, uxor*.

Qu. What is the meaning of this exception?

An. The meaning of this exception is this, that, contrary to what hath been said before of the Masculine Gender of words in *n*, *er*, and *or*, these four words *Siren*, *Mulier*, *Soror*, and *Uxor*, are of the Feminine Gender.

Q. *Mulier* increasing flat in the Genitive Case is further referred to the exception of Feminines from the third Special Rule in this verse,

*mulier; namque hac melius sub classe locatur.*

Though the signification be enough to tell the Gender of it.

22. Qu. How are the words in this exception to be understood?

An.

Attamen  
ex his sunt  
mulieris  
genus Si-  
ren--

The decli-  
ning of the  
words in  
Mascula di-  
cuntur mo-  
nosyllaba  
nomina  
quædam.

An. The words in this Rule or Exception are declined thus. *Hic sal salis; hic sol solis; hic ren renis; hic splen splenis; hic car caris; hic ser seris; hic vir viri; hic vas vadis; hic as, assis; hic mas maris; hic bes beffis; hic cres cretis; hic præs predis; hic pes pedis; hic glis gliris; hic mos moris; hic flos floris; hic ros roris; hic tros trois; hic mur muris; hic dens dentis; hic mons montis; hic pons pontis; hic fons fontis; hic seps sepis; hic gryps grypis; hic Thrax Thracis; hic rex regis; hic grex gregis; hic Phryne Phrygis.*

*Hic Acarnan Acarnanis; hic lichen lichenis; hic delphin delphinis; hic leo leonis; hic curculio curculionis; hic senio senionis; hic ternio ternionis; hic sermo sermonis.*

*Hic crater crateris; hic conditor conditoris; hic heros herois; hic torrens torrentis; hic nefrens nefrendis; hic oriens orientis; hic bidens bidentis; hic gigas gigantis; hic elephas elephantis; hic adamas adamantis; hic rapes rapetis; hic libes libetis; hic cures curis; hic magnes magnetis; hic meridies meridiæ. c. p. hic dodrans dodrantis; hic semis semisis; hic samnis samnitis; hic hydrops hydropis; hic nycticorax nycticoracis; hic thorax thoracis; hic vervex vervecis; hic Phœnix Phœnicis; hic bombyx bombycis.*

*Hæc siren sirenis; hæc mulier mulieris;*

*Hæc soror sororis; hæc uxor uxoris.*

And thus much of the first Exception from the second special Rule.

C H A P. XIII.

1. Qu. What is the second Exception from the second special Rule? and which is it?

An. The second Exception from the second special Rule is of Nouns whose Genitive Case increases sharp in the last syllable of it, and yet they are of the Neuter Gender, and it is this.

Neu-

*Neutra excepta ex acutè crescentibus.*

Sunt neu- *Sunt neutralia & hæc monosyllaba nomina, mel, fel,*  
 tralia & *Lac, far, ver, cor, as, vas vasis, os, offis, & oris*  
 hæc mono- *Rus, thus, jus, crus, pus. Et in al pollysylla in arque,*  
 syllaba no- *Ut capital, laquear. Neutrum halec & muliebre.*  
 mina.

2. Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule?

An. The meaning of this Exceptive Rule is this, That there are some Nouns that increase sharp in the Genitive Case, yet are not of the Feminine, but of the Neuter Gender, as *mel, fel, &c.*

3. Qu. How many sorts of those Nouns are there that increase sharp in the Genitive Case, and yet are of the Neuter Gender?

An. There are two sorts of these Nouns of the Neuter Gender that increase sharp in the Genitive Case, namely, *Monosyllables*, and *Polysyllables*, that is words of one syllable, and words of more syllables than one.

4. Qu. Which branch of the Exception is that which concerns the neutral Monosyllables; and which is it?

An. The first branch of the Exception concerns the Monosyllables that are of the Neuter Gender: and it is this,

Sunt neu- *Sunt neutralia & hæc Monosyllaba nomina*  
 tralia & *mel, fel,*  
 hæc mono- *Lac, far, ver, ar, as, vas vasis, os, offis & oris*  
 syllaba--- *Rus, thus, jus, crus, pus.*

5. Qu. What is the meaning of this branch of the Exception?

An. The meaning of this branch of the Exception is this, That there are some words of one syllable, which increase sharp in the Genitive Case, yet are of the Neuter Gender; as *mel, fel.*

¶ There is to be found in *Gellius. l. 12. c. 1. Laetum* in the Accusative Case. *Præsertim si ista quam*  
*ad*

ad præbendum lactem adhibebitis, aut serva est, aut servilis. So in *Plaut* in *Bacchid.* *Quæ nec lactem nec lanam ullam habet.* But here saith *R. Stephanus* some Copies have *lacte*. And such a word as *lacte* there is of the Neuter Gender. Hence *Nonius* cites out of *Varro* this, *Candidum lacte papilla quum finit.* So *Plaut.* *Menæch.* *Neque aqua aquæ, neque lacte est lacti, crede mihi, usquam similis.* act. 5. sc. 9. It is to be supposed that there was antiently in use both *lactis*, from whence *lactem*; and *lacte* a Neuter as well as *lac*; yea and *Vossius* talks alio of such a word as *lact*, to have antiently been used *De Analog.* l. 1. c. 23.

*Vas vasis* is said to distinguish it from *vas vadis* before mentioned. This word in the Plural Number is of the Second Declension. Hence *Cæs.* 3. *bel. civ.* *Conclamatis quidem vasis flumen transiit.* *Lucret.* l. 2. *Quassatis vasis distluit humor.*

*Pur* is said by *Priscian* l. 5. to be undeclined. But *puris* is read in *Plin.* *Ad puris & sanguinis excreationes.* And in *Celsus* l. 5. *Prodest etiam infra os ulcerum ladi, quo plus puris exeat.* Id. ib. *Neque alienum est, si plus puris fertur, vino fistulam eluere.* Again *puri* is read in *Celsus* l. 5. c. 28. *Cætera si desunt, imponi debet primum non pingue emplastrum: deinde si non expressit, quodlibet puri movendo accommodatum.* And pure there, too, *Expresso pure nulla ultro curatio necessaria est.* *Voss.* *de Analog.* l. 1. c. 46.

6. Qu. *What is the second branch of the Exception, viz. that, which concerns neutral polysyllables.*

An. The second branch of the Exception concerning neutral polysyllables is this, --- *Et in al polysyllaba in arque, Ut capital, laquear.*

7. Qu. *What is the meaning of this branch of the Rule?*

An. The meaning of this branch of the Rule is, That words of more syllables than one, which end

Et in al  
polysylla-  
ba in ar-  
que.



in *al* and in *ar* and do increase sharp in the Genitive case, are of the Neuter Gender, as *capital*, *laquear*, *calear*, &c. Except *Salar*, Which is of the Masculine Gender.

8. Qu. What is the meaning of that clause of the Rule. *Neutrum halec & muliebre*?

Neutrum  
halec & muliebre.

An. The Authors meaning in that clause of the Rule. *Neutrum halec & muliebre*, was to affirm *halec* to be both of the Neuter and Feminine Gender: but it is only of the neuter Gender, not of the feminine.

¶ That *halec* is of the Neuter Gender, there is proof enough, besides *Priscians* affirmation of it. *L. 3. That of Horace 2. Serm. Sat. 4. doth evidence it. Ego facem primus & halec, Primus & invenio piper album* -- *Circumposuisse*. But that *halec* is of the Feminine Gender there is no good proof. A corrupt place in *Plinie* where *alec* was read for *alex*, was the cause of its being mistaken for a feminine. In the mean time *alex* or *halex* is a feminine. *Plin. l. 32. c. 10. Alex de seruis facta anguim Scabritiem tollit*. From thence ye may read *halecem* formed in *Martial*. *Cui portat gaudens ancilla paropside rubra Alecem, sed quam protinus ipsa vorat. l. 11. Ep. 28*. But what is meant there by it, whether a *Fish*, or *pickle*, or *sauce* made of *garum*, or whether *alex*, or *allex*, or *hallex* as it is severally written, be at all put for a *Fish*, is an uncertainty. But that it is of the Feminine Gender, that is certain by this place. That it is put for *pickle*, or *Sauce*, is certain by another place in *Martial*. *l. 3. ep. 77. Capparin, & puri cepas alicie natantes, Et pulsam dubio de petasone voras*. And so in that sentence it may be safely used as a Feminine: *Far-nab. Gram. Lat. p. 13 Voss. De. Analog. l. 1. c. 23*.

9. Qu. How are the words in this Rule declined.

The Declension of the words in Sunt neutralia & lac monosyllaba.

An. The words in this Rule are declined thus. *Hoc mel mellis; hoc fel fellis; hoc lac lactis; hoc far faris*

*farris, hoc ver veris, hoc cor cordis, hoc as aris, hoc vas vasis, hoc os ossis, hoc os oris, hoc rus ruris, hoc thus thuris, hoc jus juris, hoc crus cruris, hoc pus puris, hoc capital capitalis, hoc laquear laquearis, hoc halec halecis.*

And thus much of the second Exception from the second special Rule.

CHAP. XV.

I. Qu. What is the third Exception from the second special Rule of ? and which is it ?

An. The third Exception from the second special Rule is of Doubtfuls excepted from it : And it is this.

*Dubia acutè crescentia.*

*sunt dubia hæc Python, scrobs, serpens, bubo, rudens, grus, perdix, lynx, limax. stirps pro trunco, pedis & calx.*

*Adde dies : numero tantum mas esto secundo.*

2. Qu. What is the meaning of this Exception ?

An. The meaning of this Exception is this, That there are some increasing words founded sharp in the last syllable but one of their Genitive Case, which are of the Doubtful Gender.

¶ Those words are properly of the Doubtful Gender, which are indifferently used of the same thing, either in the Masculine or Feminine Gender. Wherein yet use is to be observed, and so as they are wont to be used in Prose, or Verse, as Masculine or Feminine, so they are to be used now ; and that Gender of them is most to be followed, wherein they are observable to have been mostly used. What hath been the use of the words in this Exception, we shall now shew ; and by that the Gender of them will be the better to be determined of : and so it will be clearer known, which of them properly belong unto this Rule, and under what notion.

*Python* as it is the name of the Dragon killed by *Apollo*, so it is only of the Masculine Gender. Whence we read *tumidum Pythona* in *Ovid*. By the same name the City, where that Dragon was killed, was also called : but that is of the Feminine Gender. Thence that of *Tibul. l. 2. Delos ubi nunc, Phæbe, tua est ; ubi Delphica Python ?* The mistake of the Town for the Serpent gave occasion to think *Python* or *Pytho* of the doubtful Gender, which as it signifies the Serpent, is a Masculine. *Alvar. p. 170. Farnab. L. Gram. Voss de Analog. l. 1. c. 24.*

*Scrobs* is a confessed Doubtful. *Pliny* and *Columella* do both use it both in the Masculine and Feminine. *Plin. l. 17. c. 19. & l. 9. c. 51. Columel. l. 4. c. 1. & 14.* And *Ovid Met. 7.* hath *Haud procul cegestâ Scrobibus tellure duabus.* There is read also *Scrobis* in the Nominative Case. See *Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 29.*

*Serpens* is used in the Masculine Gender by *Ovid, Met. 3. Plin. l. 9. c. 27. & l. 29. c. 4.* In the Feminine by *Cic. 2. de Nat. Deor. Plin. l. 8. c. 14. Et l. 11. c. 47.* And no wonder if it be of both Genders, being by nature an Adjective ; and in both Genders it may respect *anguis*, which also is of both Genders ; though in the Feminine Gender it may have respect to *bestia* also. *Alvar. p. 184. Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 33.*

*Bubo* is used by *Virgil Æn. 4.* in the Feminine Gender. *Solaque culminibus ferali carmine bubo Sæpe queri---* In *Ovid. Met. 5.* and *Plin. l. 10. c. 12.* and every where else it is a Masculine. *Virgil* is supposed there to speak figuratively with respect unto *avis* understood. *Priscian l. 6.* declines it like a Common, *hic & hæc bubo* ; yet *Vossius* professeth not to dare to imitate *Virgil* in using it in the Masculine Gender, in Prose, and asks, who dares do it ? *Farnaby* reckons it, and ranks it among his Masculines, and there let it stand for me. *Farnab. p. 12. Alvar. p. 182.*

p. 182. & 185. Danes. Schol. p. 168. Vossius Lat. Gram. p. 15. De Analog. l. 1. c. 22.

*Rudens* is used by *Virgil* *Æn.* 3. and *Ovid* *Trist.* l. 1. *El.* 10. in the Masculine Gender, and by every body else : only *Plautus* in *Rud. Act.* 4. *Sc.* 1. hath it in the Feminine Gender. T. *Heus mane*, G. *Quid maneam?* T. *Dum hanc tibi quam trahis rudentem complico.* He is supposed to speak there by an *Hyponea*, with reference unto *funis*, which antiently was of the Feminine Gender : Whence *aurea funis* in *Lucilius* : But is now by use grown to be only of the Masculine Gender. And that Gender of it is now respected by those, that use *rudens* in the Masculine Gender ; who being all, that use it, let *rudens* (when it is used substantively, being in its own nature an Adjective) be accounted by us what it is by *Haynes*, *Farnaby* and *Vossius*, and that is a Masculine. *Farn.* p. 12. *Voss.* Lat. Gram. p. 26. De Analog. l. 1. c. 29. & 33.

*Grus* is used in the Feminine Gender by *Plin.* l. 10. c. 23. and by *Virg.* *Georg.* 2. But in *Hor.* 2. *Serm.* Sat. 8. it is Masculine. *Discerpta ferentes Membra gruæ Sparsi multo sale.* Being hardly any where else to be found in this Gender, no marvel if *Priscian* reckoned it a Feminine, and declined it *hec grus*, l. 5. *Vossius* and *Farnaby* allow of it as a Doubtful, yet most used in the Feminine Gender, and so let it pass for me. *Voss.* Lat. Gram. p. 26. *Alvar.* p. 186. *Farnab.* p. 13.

*Perdix* is used in the Masculine by *Varro*; *Statius* *Sylv.* 2. and *Plin.* l. 10. in the Feminine : by *Ovid* *Met.* 8. and *Martial.* l. 3. *Ep.* 57. and no marvel, it being *περδίξ* in Greek. *Vossius* and *Farnaby* allow of it as a Doubtful, and so let it go. *Farnab. L. Gram.* p. 13. *Voss. L. Gram.* p. 27.

*Lynx* is allowed also as a Doubtful, being used by *Plin.* l. 28. c. 8. in the Feminine; and by *Horace* in the Masculine l. 2. *Carm. Od.* 13. ---timidos agitare lynces.

But yet with this note, that it is Feminine in Orators; Masculine in Poets, if any other Poet beside *Horace* ever used it so, which can hardly be shown. *Farnab. p. 13. Voss. Lat. Gram p. 28.*

*Limax* is also allowed as a doubtful. *Columella l. 10. c. 31.* hath it in the Masculine *Pliny l. 29. c. 6.* in the Feminine.

*Stirps pro trunco seu planta* is a Doubtful. *Plin. l. 17. c. 14 Columel. l. 2. c. 2 & c. 9 & l. 3. c. 5* use it in the Feminine Gender. *Virgil. Æn. 12.* hath it in the Masculine — *Imo de stirpe recisum.* But when *stirps* is used *pro progenie*, then it's always Feminine. Thence in *Ovid. Trist l. 3 & 2.* *Stirps Latonia.* and *Met. 2. Divinæ stirpis alumnus:* And *Senec. Agam. Phæbum nefandæ stirpis authorem vocas?* *Pacuvius* of old said, *Quis stirpem occidit meum?* Whence it appears that antiently *pro sobole* too it was doubtful. But now that use of it is out of use. *Farn p. 13. Voss. L. Gram p. 26, 27. De Analog. l. 1. c. 33.*

*Pedis & Calx* is also a Doubtful, yet so that it is used by Orators in the Masculine only, by Poets both in the Masculine and Feminine. Thence in *Cic. 1. Tuscul. Video calcem, ad quem cum sit decursum, nil sit præterea extimescendum.* *Pers. 6 Sat. rigidos calces extendit* *Virgil. Æn. 11 ferrata calce fatigat.* *Sil l. 3: ferrata rapiebat calce volantem.* & *l. 17. Ferrata calce cruentat cornipedem.* But *calx pro materie* *cujus in struendis est usus*, [lime] is a Feminine. *Farn. p. 13. Voss. at Gr. p. 27. Alvar. p. 185.*

*Adde Dies* *Dies* in the Singular number is a Doubtful. Hence *longum diem*, in *Stat. 1. Theb.* and *longa dies* in *Martial l. 9.* But in the Plural Number it is only Masculine. *Alvarus* and *Vossius* quote *Cicero pro Plancio* using it even in the Plural Number as a Feminine, *O reliquas omnes dies* — which is hardly to be found any where else, saith *Alvarus*; no, nor there, say I, now in the more Correct Editions, which read *si reliquos*, not *reliquas*.

3. Qu. How are the words in this Exception declined?

An. The words in this Exception are declined thus. *Hic Python Pythonis*; *hic vel hæc scrobs scrobis*, *hic vel hæc serpens serpentis*, [*hic vel*] *hæc bubo bubonis*. *hic* [*vel hæc*] *rudens rudentis*, [*hic vel*] *hæc grus gruis*, *hic vel hæc perdix perdicis*, [*hic vel*] *hæc lynx lyncis*, *hic vel hæc limax limacis*, *hic vel hæc stirps stirpis*, *hic vel hæc calx calcis*, *hic vel hæc dies diei*.

And thus much of the third Exception from the second special Rule.

CHAP. XVI.

1. Qu. **VV** What is the fourth Exception from the second special Rule of? and which is it?

An. The fourth Exception from the second special Rule, is of words common of two Genders excepted from it. And it is this.

*Communia acute Crescentia.*

*Sunt Commune, parens, autorque infans, adolescens,*

*Dux, illex, heres, exlex, a fronte creata,*

*Ut bifrons, custos, bos, fur, sus, atque sacerdos.*

2. Qu. What is the meaning of this Exceptional Rule.

An. The meaning of this Rule is this, That there are some Nouns increasing sharp in the Genitive Case, which are of the Common of two Genders, as *Parens*, &c.

¶ *Parens* is of the Common of two Hence *tuus parens* in Cicero 1 Ver. and *claros parentes*, in Her. l. 1. Sat 6. And again, *Tua chara parens* in Virg. 9. Æn. and *occisâ parente* in Her. and *infandâ parens* in Senec.

*Offav.* 1. 2. and *alma parens* in *Virg. Æn.* 2 and 10. And no marvel, the word being of the nature of an Adjective put for *pariens* antiently the same with *gigno*, like *τίσσω* in Greek, but now applied only to Women. *Voss de Anal.* l. 1. c. 15.

*Autor* (or as *Vossius* writes it) *auctor*, is read in the Masculine gender, *autor valde bonus* in *Cic. pro Mur.* and *Non sordidus autor* in *Hor. 1 Carm. Od 28.* Again in the Feminine. *Optima tu proprii nominis autor eris*, in *Ovid. 4. Fast.* And — *Meritorum autore reliâa*, in *Ovid. Met. 8.* So that, unless it may be supposed, that where it is read with a Feminine Adjective, there is a *Synthesis*, reference being had unto *femina* understood, it may pass for a word of the Common of two. And the rather, if it be true, as *Vossius* delivers, That Verbals in or antiently were of the Common of two Genders. Whence is read in *Ulpian*, *mulier defensor*, in *Cassian* l. 8. c. 11. *Mulier persuasor*, in *Ovid. Ep. Parid.* *Sponsor Conjugii stat dea pîssa sui.* *Cornel sever.* in *Charif.* *Igneâ nam Phæbe ducebat sidera cælo Fraternis successor equis.* And thence *auctor* in the Feminine Gender, whether derived *ab augendo*, or from a disused supine of *aveo*, as *fautor* of *faveo*; Nam *qui fieri quid avert, suadendo ejus fit autor.* Later Writers chose rather to say *auctrix* in the Feminine Gender. *Alvar. p. 161. Voss. de Analog.* l. 1. c. 15. and 27.

*Infans* is read in *Ovid. Met. 15.* in the Masculine Gender. *Editus in lacem jacuit sine viribus infans.* So *Hor. 1. 3. Od. 4. animosus infans.* *Quintil. 1. 6. c. 1.* Hath it in the Feminine. *Infantem suam frigidissime reportavit.* So *Tacit. Annal. 15. Quartum intra mensem defuncta infante.* In these, and the like perhaps, there is reference respectively to *puer*, or *puella*. For the word is an Adjective Participial. Hence *cilo infantis boleti* in *Plin. 1. 22. infanti ore* in *Ovid. 4. Trist.* and *infantia ora* *Met. 4.* and *guttura infantia*, in *Ibin.* Hence also it is read in the Comparative



parative Degree in *Cic. ad Qu. Fratr. Omnino nihil accusatore Lentulo subscriptoribusque infantius*. And in the Superlative in *Cic. pro Cluent. Tum vero ita sum perturbatus, ut omnia timerem, si nihil dixissem, ne infantissimus: si multa, ne impudentissimus existimarer*. *Adolescens* is read both with a Masculine and a Feminine Adjective. Hence *Cic. 2. Offic. Multi in nostrâ republicâ adolescentes*. And *Serv. in Vir. l. 4. cum aliquo adolescente*.— So again *Ter. And. 3. 2. Veritus est optimæ adolescenti facere injuriam*. And no marvel, being it is an Adjective Participial, put substantively, *homo* or *mulier* being understood. Hence in *Cic. 1. de Orat. Homines adolescentes*. And in *Ep. Fam. l. 4. hominem adolescentem*; and *Ter. Hec. 4. 4. Mater quod suasit sua, adolescens mulier fecit, Cic. de Div. P. Africani filia adolescens*. And hence the Comparative *adulescentior*.

*Dux* is read both with a Masculine and Feminine Adjective. With a Masculine in *Cic. in Ep. Summum me ducem literæ tuæ reddiderunt*. With a Feminine in *Cic. de Amic. Natura optima vivendi dux*. *Id. 2. Acad. duce nocturnâ, Id. de Senect. Naturam optimam ducem sequimur*.

*Illex*, if it be any where read, is an Adjective, as is also *Exlex*, which is in *Cic. pro Cluent. Non quod illi Syllam exlegem esse putarent. Hor. de Arte. Et potius, & exlex*. Yet neither of them are read in any ancient Roman Authors, in any other but the Masculine Gender. *Steph. Thes. Lat. Nic. Causinus* in his *Parall. Histor. l. 2. c. 80. useth exlex* Adjectively, joyning it with a Substantive of the Feminine gender, *Apostrophiam venerem colunt, qui exleges copulas detestantur*.

*Hæres* is often read with a Masculine Adjective, Thence *Hor. l. 2. Carm. Od. 18. Neque Attali ignotus hæres regiam occupavi*. But with a Feminine seldome, if at all. Whence *Charisius* looks upon it as a Noun Common by signification, but not by

construction. *Farnaby, Danesiuss, and Vossius*, take it for a common. Of its being joyned with a Feminine Adjective, an instance is brought out of *Tryphonius l. ult. D. de doris collatione. Fuit questio, an si sua hæres filia patri cum fratribus contenta dote, abstineat se bonis, compellatur eam conferre. Vossius* brings this (and *eo lubentius*, as he said) to prove *hæres* to have a Feminine Adjective joyned with it, against both *Charisius* and *Alvarus*. I understand not how *sua* here can belong to *hæres*; I presume it belongs to *dote*, the words being to be read thus to make sense of them; — *an si filia hæres patri cum fratribus contenta dote suâ se abstineat bonis, compellatur eam conferre. Danes. Schol. p. 150. Voss. de Analog. l. i. c. 15.* Perhaps that of *Quintil. Decl. 388.* may be more passable. *Gratulari tamen tibi inter calamitates tuas cruenta possum, quod avia secunda hæres non fuit.*

*A fronte creata ut bisrons*, and so *effrons*, and the rest, if there be any more, are Adjectives. *Virg. Æn. 12.* hath *Janum bisfrontem*.

*Custos* is read often with a Masculine Adjective. *Cic. Phil. 3. Custos ovium praeclarus lupus.* Sometimes with a Feminine. *Plaut. Truc. 4. 3. Tu bona ei custos fuisti. Id. Menæch. Sic decet dari, facite verba custode catæ; Id. Curcul. Exuscitate vestram huc custodem mihi. Virg. Æn. 11. At Trivia custos jam dudum in montibus Opis Alta sedet.*

*Bos* is read with a Masculine Adjective in *Horace Ep. 2. fessos boves.* And *Cic. de Sen. Quum humeris sustineret bovem vivum.* With a Feminine it is also read in *Hor. 1 Carm. Od 10. Te boves olim nisi reddidisses amotas. Ovid. 24. Ep. Inter Agenoreas constiteratque boves. Voss. de Analog. l. i. c. 5.*

*Fur* is a Common in point of signification, but not of construction; neither will *Priscians* declining

ing it *hic* & *hac* *fur* make it such, being not read with a Feminine Adjective. *Plaut. in Pan.* said *Fures estis ambæ*; but that is *ambæ estis fures*. He might have said, *Mancipia estis ambæ*, but that would not have proved either *ambæ* the Neuter Gender, or *Mancipia* the Feminine. See the Note on *Compositum a verbo dans a.*

*Sus* is read with a Masculine Adjective in *Virg. r. Æn. Magnorum suum*. *Stat. 2. Achil. Fulmineus sus*. With a Feminine in *Virg. Æn 12. Setigeræ fatum suis* *Varro r. r. l 2. c. 4. Vere sus usque adeo pinguedine crescere solet, ut se ipsa stans sustinere non possit, neque progredi usquam*

*Sacerdos* is read with a Masculine Adjective in *Cic. de Leg. Divis aliis alii sacerdotes*. With a Feminine in *Hor. 2. Carm. Od. 3. Nepotem Troica quem peperit Sacerdos* *Cic. pro Balb. Sacra Cereris per Gracas semper curata sunt Sacerdotes*,

To these Master *Haines* adds *cliens*; and to prove it a Feminine *Alvarus* cites *Horace l. 2. Carm. Od. 18. Nec Laconicas mihi trahunt honestæ purpuras clientes*. But in the Editions by *Bond, Heinsius*, and *Cruquius*, it is *clientæ*; and so saith *Cruquius* it was read in *duobus landinis codicibus*: But in a third, *Sciolus aliquis*, as he calls him, had put out the diphthong, and made *clientes* of *clientæ*. That corrupt Copy might have deceived others, and so both *Alvarus*, Master *Haines*, and *Rob. Stephanus*, following it, might fall into that mistake. *Vossius* also approves the reading of *clientæ*; and condemns both *Charisius*, *Frischlinus*, and others for making it common; saying, that as there is *ἐπαύριος* and *ἐπαύριος* in Greek, so there is *hic cliens*, and *hæc clienta* in Latine *Voss. de Anal. l. 1. c. 15. Cruq. on Hor. l 2 Carm. Od. 18.*

Master *Danes* adds *Lux*. *Plautus* indeed hath *Luce claro deripiamus aurum matrone palam. Aul. sc. 27. and Cipell. 27. Cum primo luci cras nisi ambos occidero.*

Yea

Yea *Vossius* cites *Nonius* saying that *Cicero* in 2 *off.* hath *Luce claro in foro saltat senex*, and 3. *offic. Et cum prior ire lucē claro non queo*. And therefore to him *Lux dubium videtur*. I shall leave it in *medio*, only saying this, that in regard it signifies a thing incapable of Sex, I see not how it can be a common.

3 Qu. How are the words of this Rule declined?

An The words of this Rule are declined thus, *Hic & hæc parens parentis*; *hic & hæc autor autoris*; *hic & hæc infans infantis*; *hic & hæc adolescens adolescentis*; *hic & hæc dux ducis*; *hic & hæc illex illegis*; *hic & hoc hæres hæredis*; *hic & hæc exlex exlegis*; *hic & hæc bifrons bifrontis*; *hic & hæc custos custodis*; *hic & hæc bos bovis*; *hic & hæc fur furis*; *hic & hæc sacerdos sacerdotis*.

And thus far of the Second special Rule, and the Exceptions from it.

## CHAP. XVII.

1. Qu. Which is the Third special Rule?  
An. The third Special Rule is this?

*Tertia & ultima regula specialis?*

*Nomen,  
crescentis  
penultima  
si genitivi  
sit gravis.*

*Nomen, crescentis, penultima si genitivi  
Sit gravis, ut sanguis genitivo sanguinis est Mas.*

2. Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule?

An. The meaning of this Rule is this, That increasing Nouns, whose genitives are sounded flat or grave in their last syllable but one, are of the Masculine Gender, as *sanguis sanguinis*.

3. Qu. We have seen b. for: what it is for a syllable to sound or be sounded acute or sharp, what is

is it now for a syllable to be sounded grave or flat?

An. For a syllable to be sounded flat, is to be uttered or pronounced in lesser time and with lower voice than those syllables are, which are sounded sharp, or with an acute accent upon them.

4. Qu. How shall it be known what syllable in a word is sounded gravely or flat?

An. It may be known what syllables in a word are sounded gravely or flat, by observing which one of them is used to be sounded acutely or sharp; for there being but one syllable in any word sounded with an acute or sharpe accent, all the rest that are not so sounded, are to be accounted as sounding gravely or flat. The last but one in *sanguis*, and the last but two in *sanguinis*, being used to be sounded acute or sharp, it follows that the last syllable in the first, and the last but one in the second be accounted to sound gravely or flat.

The Declining of the words of Sunt commune patrens.

5. Qu. Are there any, or are there no exceptions from this rule?

An. From this Rule there are four Exceptions; the First is of Feminines, the Second is of Neuters, the Third is of Doubtfuls, and the Fourth is of Commons, which increase flat, or are sounded flat in the last but one of their. Genitive case, and yet, contrary to the special Rule, are not of the Masculine Gender.

## CHAP. XVIII.

1. Qu. **V**hat is the first Exception from the Third special Rule of? and which is it?

An. The first Exception from the third special Rule is of Feminines excepted from it: and it is

*Femineæ excepta ex graviter crescentibus.*  
*Feminei generis sit hyperdissyllabon in do*  
*Quod dinis; atque in go, quod dat ginis in genitivo.*  
*Id tibi dulcedo faciens dulcedinis, idque*  
*Monstrat compago compaginis: adice virgo*  
*Grando, fides, compes, teges; & seges, arbor, hyemsque.*  
*Sic Baccar, Sindon, Gorgon, Icon, & Amazon.*

*Græcula in as vel in is finita, ut Lampas, Jaspis,*  
*Cassis, cuspis; in us vox una-pecus pecudis dñs:*  
*His forfex, pellex, carex, simul atque supellex,*  
*Appendix, histrix, coxendix, adde filixque,*

2. Qu. What is the meaning of this exceptive Rule?

An. The meaning of this Exceptive Rule is this, That there are several sorts of words which increase flat in the genitive case, yet are of the Feminine Gender.

3. How many Branches doth this Exception consist of?

An. This Exception consists chiefly of two branches with the Appendixes thereto.

4. Qu. What doth the first branch concern? and which is it?

An. The first branch concerns Nouns of more than two syllables in *do* and *go* having *inis* in the Genitive Case, and it is this.

*Femineæ generis sit hyperdissyllabon in do,*  
*Quod dinis: atque in go, quod dat ginis in genitivo:*  
*Id tibi dulcedo faciens dulcedinis, idque*  
*Monstrat compago compaginis.*

5. Qu. What is the meaning of this branch of the Exception?

An. The meaning of this branch of the Exception is this, That flat increasing Nouns of more than two syllables ending their Nominative case in *do*, and *go* and in *inis* in their Genitive, are of the Feminine Gender, as *hæc dulcedo dulcedinis; hæc compago compaginis.*

## Lillies Grammar.

¶ *Ordo* is not of this Rule, because it is not an hyperdiffyllable; *Macedo* is not of this Rule, both because it is a Personal Noun, and because it makes not *inis* in the Genitive Case, but *onis*; *Harpago* is not of this Rule, both because it makes *onis*, not *inis* in the Genitive Case, and because it increases sharp. But *Cupido* is of this Rule, because it increases flat in *inis* in the Genitive Case. True it is, it is often found in the Masculine Gender; as *Hor. 2 Carm. Od. 16. Nec leves somnos timor aut cupido sordidus aufert.* And *Serm. l. 1. sat. 1. At bona pars hominum decepta cupidine caco.* *Sen. Hippol. 2. 2. Nullus hic auri fuit cacos cupido.* *Plaut. Amph. 2. 2. Sed pudicitiam pudorem, & sedatum cupido.* But in these Masculines there seems to be a *Metonymia efficientis*, the Name of the God *Cupid*, which is Masculine, being put *pro cupiditate*. For *Cupid* is not only said to be *Deus libidinis*, but also *cujusvis alius cupiditatis* *Danes. Schol. p. 169. Voss. Lat. Gram. p. 18. De Analog. l. 1. c. 21.*

6. Qu. What Appendix is there to this Rule?

An. To this Rule there is added an Appendix of some particular words, which are but of two syllables, in *go* and *do*, and *es*, and *or*, and *ems*, and *ar*, and *on* which increase flat, and yet are of the Feminine Gender, to which also is added one in *on* of three syllables; and it is this.

Adjec. *virgo*,  
*Grando*, *fides*, *compes*, *teges*, & *seges*, *arbor*, *hyemsque*,  
*Siccacarr*, *syndon*, *Gorgonon*, *icon*, & *Amazon*.

7. Qu. What is the meaning of this Appendix?

An. The meaning of this Appendix or Additional part of the Rule is this: That the particular words therein mentioned, are of the Feminine Gender, as indeed they all are, but for *baccar*, which is of the Neuter Gender.

¶ That *baccar* is of the Neuter Gender appears from *Plin. l. 21. c. 6. Eorum quoque error corrigendus est,*



est, qui baccar nardum rusticum appellaverunt. Id. c. 19. Baccar in medicine usu aliqui ex nostris perperam vocant. Had it not been of the Neuter Gender, he would have said *baccarem*, not *baccar*. I suppose our Author meeting with some oblique case of *Baccaris*, mistook it for *baccar*, and so set it down of the Feminine Gender. For the same herb which is called *baccar*, is also called *baccaris*. *Plin*, l. 12. c. 12. *Baccaris vocatur nardum rusticum de quo dicemus inter flores*. Hence *Ramus* in his Readings on *Virg*. 4. *Eclog*. *Baccaris seu baccar herba est quæ vulgo dicitur Chiræthea nostra domina, &c.* The word is read in *Vigil* 4. *Eclog* *Errantes hederas passim cum baccare tellus*. And 7. *Eclog*. *Baccare frontem cingite*. In *Hesychius* it is called Βάκκας, in *Dioscorides* Βάκχαρις, in *Galen* Βάκχαρις. See *Voss. de Analog.* l. 1. c. 25. & 36.

*Grando* is read in *Varro* of the Masculine Gender. *Albo grandine*, but he is not therein to be followed, *Voss. Analog.* l. 1. c. 22.

*Compes* is very ordinary in the Plural Number, and in the Ablative Singular *compede extra tamen auferendi cistum haut temere invenias*. *Voss. de Anal.* l. 1. c. 43.

*Icon* is hardly read in any Latine Author. *Stephanus* out of *Plin*. l. 14. c. 4. cites, *Quis iconas vocant*. Yet confesses that another Copy reads it *iconicas*.

8. Quæ hæc sunt et alia verba hæc addidit ad hunc Appendix?

An. To this Appendix may be added two words more, namely *Halcyon* and *Aedon*.

¶ Commonly we write and speak *Halcyon*, but *Alyon* is thought by some to be the righter writing, and speaking, *Custathius* defending that in Greek it ought to be ἁλκυὼν without an Aspiration; yet Dr. *Eusby*, in his most excellent Greek Grammar p. 15. reads it ἁλκυὼν with an Aspiration. The Gender of it (whatever be said of the reading of it) appears to be Feminine, because *Pliny* speaking of *Halcyonibus* saith

l. 10. c. 32. *Nidi earum admirationem habent.* And Virgil. Georg. 1. *Dilectæ Thetidi Halcyones.* Servius here saith, *hic & hac Halcyon dici*, but *perperam* saith Vossius, For admit it common as to signification, it follows not thence that it is common as to construction. For the Gender of *Aedon*, that of *Seneca* in *Agam.* will suffice. *Quæ lachrymis nostris questus Reddet aedon?*

Some have thought *merges* ought to be added hither. But Analogy is against it; for the Feminines of this Rule make *etis*, not *itis*, in the Genitive case; and *gurgis*, *gurgitis*, to which *merges* *mergitis* is like in declining, is of the Masculine Gender. Yet in *Plin.* l. 18. c. 30. is read *Atque inter duas mergites Spica una distinguitur.* Hence both *Priscian* and *Stephanus* take it for a Feminine. But the reading of the place is disputed, some read it *iterum è desectâ mergite*; and it might as well be either *inter duos mergites*, or *è desectlo mergite*. *Alvarus* makes it a Masculine, and *Farnaby* excepts it not from the special Rule of Masculines. In this uncertainty let the Reader please himself; I will be no judge.

9. Qu. What doth the second Branch of this Exception concern, and which is it?

An. The second Branch of this Exception concerns Latine Nouns in *as* and *is*, derived of Greek ones; and it is this.

*Gracula in as vel in is finita, ut lampas, Jaspis.*

1. What is the meaning of this Branch of the Exception?

An. The meaning of this Branch of the Exception is this, That some Latine Nouns, in *as* and *is* of a Greek derivation encreasing flat in the Genitive Case, are of the Feminine Gender, as *lampas lampadis*, *jaspis jaspidis*.

11. Qu. Are there any Latine nouns in *as* or *is* made of Greek ones, which increase flat in the Genitive Case, that are not of the Feminine Gender?

An.

11. Qu. Are there any *Latine* Nouns in as or is made of Greek ones, which increase flat in the gentle Case, that are not of the Feminine Gender?

An. *Artocreas*, and *Erysipelas* are Excepted from this Branch of the Exception, being Neuters, as being formed from words that also are Neuters in Greek, τὸ ἀρτοκρεας-αλος; τὸ ἐρυσιπέλας-αλος.

¶ *Artocreas* is in *Perfius* 6. Sat. *Erysipelas* in *Cels.* l. 5. c. 26.

12. Qu. May any other addition be made to this Branch of the Exception of like nature with it?

An. To this branch of the Exception may be added a clause concerning *Latine* words in ys made of Greek ones which are of the Feminine Gender, as *Chelys*, *Erinny*s, *Othrys*, &c.

¶ *Chelys* is a Feminine in *Sen. Troad.* *Lewi canoram verberans pleetro Chelyn.* *Chlamys* in *Cic. ad Heren.* *Vii citharadus, quum produerit optime vestitus, palla inaurata indutus, cum chlamyde purpurea coloribus variis intexta.* *Erinny*s in *Senec. Oſtav.* *Vacuumque Erinnyſſeva funesto pede Intravit aulam.* *Othrys* is read in *Lucan*, c. 6. and *Statius*, 1 *Achil.* in the Masculine Gender. *Nemorosus Othrys* is in the one; *Nubilus Othrys* in the other: but that is supposed to be by a *Synthesis*, with respect unto *mons* understood, even as we read *Theſſalus Oſſa.* *Voff. Lat. Gram.* p. 27. The Rule may be read thus, *Græcula in as, is & ys at Lampas, iaspis, Erinnyſſ.*

13. Qu. What Appendix is there to this Rule?

An. There is an Appendix to this Rule of sundrie particular *Latine* words ending in *is* and *us* in *ex* and *ix* which increase flat in that Case, and yet are of the Feminine Gender; And it is this.

*Cassis cuspis*; in *us* *vox una pecus pecudis dans*; *Hic forfex, pellex, carex, simul atque supellex.*

Appendix, *histrix, coxendix, adde filixque.*

14. Qu. What is the meaning of this Addition to the Exception?

An,

**An.** The meaning of this Addition to the Exception is this, That these particular words that are named therein, do increase flat in the Genitive Case, yet are of the Feminine Gender.

¶ *Pecus pecudis dans*, hath an example for it cited out of *Cesar* in *Auguralib.* by *Priscian* l. 6. *Si sincera pecus erat.* *Vossius* thinks the old Nominative Case of *pecudis* was rather *pecudis*, or *pecudes*, than *pecus*. However *pecus* were the Nominative Case, which *Danesh* thinks not probable, because the other words, which have *u* in the Genitive Case, do increase sharp in the obliques, as *salus salutis*, *palus paludis* (whereupon *Charisius* puts it among the words that want their Nominative and Vocative Case) yet it is not to be imitated in *Danesh*. Opinion, because it is but a single Testimony. I might reply, that if it be right said, there is no reason why we may not follow what is said right, though we read it said but once. (And it is some argument that it was said right, because said by *Cesar*, and not disapproved of by *Priscian*.) If it keep not to the Analogy of other words that is no novelty; perhaps *Charisius* met not with this instance of *Cesars*; else he would have allowed it a perfect word, as it may be supposed *Caper* did, who, as *Priscian* l. 5. testifies, was of opinion that there was said *hæc pecus pecudis*. But I list not to draw the Saw of Contention, let the more Learned determine.

15. Qu. May there not to this one word *pecus* be added another word of the same termination and Gender?

**An.** To his one word *pecus*, there may be added another word of the same termination in the Nominative Case, but not increasing into *udis*, but *odis* in the Genitive Case, which is also of the Feminine Gender. And that word is *lagopus lagopodis*.

¶ *Lagopus* is the name both of a bird and of an herb, and for both it is the Feminine Gender. For

a bird, *Martial. l. 7. ep. 86. Si meus auritâ gaudet*  
*Lagopode Flaccus. Plin. l. 10. c. 48. speaking de la-*  
*gopode saith thus. Pedes leporino villo nomen ei hoc*  
*dedere, catero candida, columbarum magnitudine.*  
*Non extra terram eam vesci facile, quando nec viva*  
*mansuescit, & corpus decise statim marcescit.* The  
 same Author speaking of the Herb *l. 26. c. 8. saith*  
*thus, Lagopus sistit alvum è vino pota, Alv. p. 177.*

*Hystrix* is read in *Plin. l. 8. c. 35. in the Feminine*  
*Gender. Hystrices generat India & Africa Pinâ con-*  
*teſſat, and generally. Yet Claudian writing of the*  
*Hystrix useth it in the Masculine Gender. — &*  
*cognitus Hystrix Herculeas affirmat aves.* Neverthe-  
 less *Farnaby*, as well as our Author, makes it a Fe-  
 minine; nor doth *Vossius* set it among the Masculines  
 excepted from the rule of Feminines in *X*, or so  
 much as place it among the Doubtfuls. Perhaps his  
 Authority, as being a late Writer, is not looked up-  
 on as considerable to overthrow a constant antient  
 use of a word.

16. Qu. May any thing be added to those Fem-  
 inines that end in *x*?

An. To those Feminines that end in *x*, may be  
 added *tomex*, and *forpex*.

¶ *Tomex* is in *Colum. l. 12. c. 32. Deinde fasci-*  
*culos facito, & tomice palmea aut juncea ligato.*  
*Forpex* is a word rarely read, yet that of it that is read  
 is Feminine, as *Forpices* in the Plural, in *Cassiodorus*  
 and *Beda de Orthographia, Forpices quæ sunt tonsorum.*  
 Master *Farnaby* addes *Sandyx*; and a Feminine it is in  
*Plin. l. 35. c. 6. Pingentes Sandyce sublitâ. Yet in*  
*Horace* it is Masculine, — *Lybico fucantur Sandyce*  
*pinna. So in Propertius l. 2. El. 26. Illaque plebeii*  
*vel sit Sandycis amictu:* Where yet the *penultima* is  
 long, as *Stephanus* also saith it is, perhaps for quantity  
 the *penultima* of the Genitive Case is common.  
*Vossius* gives it for a word Feminine in Orators, Mas-  
 culine in Poets, and so be it used for me, *Alvar. p. 178.*  
*Voss. Lat. Gram. p. 28.*

17. Qu.

17. Qu. **How** are the words in this Exception declined?

An. The words in this Exception are declined thus. *Hac dulcedo dulcedinis, hac compago compagini, hac virgo virginis, hac grando grandinis, hac fides fidei, hac compes* (if it have any other Case in the Singular Number, besides the Ablative) *compedis, hac reges regis, hac seges segetis, hac arbor arboris, hac hyems hyemis, hac baccar baccaris, hac sindon, sindonis, hac gorgon gorgonis, hac icon iconis, hac amazon amazonis.*

The Declining of the word in Feminine generis si Hyperdissilabon in d &c.

*Hec lampas lampadis, hac jaspis jaspidis, hac cassia cassidis, hac cuspis cuspidis, hac pecus pecudis, hac forfex forficis, hac pellex pellicis, hac carex caricis, hac supellex supellestilis, hac appendix appendicis, hac hystrix hystricis, hac coxendix coxendicis, hac filix filicis.*

And thus far of the First Exception from the Third Special Rule.

## CHAP. XIX.

1. Qu. **What** is the Second Exception from the Third Special Rule of? and **Which** is it?

An. The Second Exception from the Third Special Rule is of *Neuters*, and it is this.

*Neutra excepta ex graviter crescentibus.*

*Est neutrale genus signans rem non animatam*  
*Nomen in a, ut problema; en ut omen, ar ut iubar, ar dans*  
*Ur jecur, us ut onus, put ut occiput. Attamen ex his*  
*Mascula sunt pesken, fursur: sunt neutra cadaver,*  
*Verber, iter, suber, pro fungo tuber, & uber,*  
*Gingiber, & laser, cicer, & piper, atque papaver,*  
*Et sifer, atque filer. Neutra aquor, marmor, adorque,*

*Est neutrale genus signans.*

*Atque pecus, quando pecoris facit in genitivo.*

2. Qu. *What is the meaning of this Exception?*

An. The meaning of this Exception is this, That there be several sorts of words, which increase flat or short in the Genitive Case, that are of the Neuter Gender, as signifying things that do not live a life, either of reason, or of sense.

3. Qu. *What sorts of such words are there that increase flat or short in the Genitive Case, and yet are of the Neuter Gender?*

Signifying  
inanimate  
things.

An. There be six sorts of words of so many several terminations signifying inanimate things, besides some particular words of other terminations, that increase flat or short in the Genitive Case, and yet are of the Neuter Gender.

4. Qu. *What have these six sorts of words?*

An. The six sorts of words that increase flat or short in the Genitive Case, and yet are of the Neuter Gender are, First, Nouns ending in *a*, as *problema*; Secondly, Nouns ending in *en*, as *omen*; Thirdly, Nouns ending in *ar*, as *jubar*; Fourthly, Nouns ending in *ur*, as *secur*; Fifthly, Nouns ending in *us*, as *onus*; and Sixthly, Nouns ending in *put*, as *occi-put*.

¶ *En ut omen* Varro l. 1. de R. R. c. 12. useth *flumen*, a word in *en* with a Masculine Adjective. *Sin cogare secundum flumen adificare, curandum, ne adversum eum ponas.* But he is not to be followed therein, as speaking not according to the Gender of the word, but by a *Synthesis*, with respect unto the word *fluvius*, Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 24.

*Ar ut jubar* Jubar antiently was of the Masculine Gender, whence that of *innius* cited by Priscian l. 5. *Interea fugit albus jubar.* It is now a Neuter only, Plin. l. 2. c. 35. speaking de *Cometis*, saith, *Fiunt & hybernis mensibus, & in Austrino polo; sed ibi citra allum jubar.* Hither may be added *lucar*, i. e. *pecunia que ludis impendebatur* (if it increase short in the

Geni-



Genitive Case) which *Vossius* makes good to be a Neuter against *De Spauterium. De Analog. l. 1. c. 25.*

*Ur dans, ut jecur*] The Genitive Case of *jecur* is *jecoris*, as from *jecor*; whence *Persius, Rupto jecore exierit caprificus*. Sometimes it makes *jecinoris* from the old word *jecinum* or *jecinor*, whence *Livie l. 30. Caput jecinori defuit, Priscian l. 6. Guttur*, of this termination, may be added hither as a Neuter, though it seem antiently to have been a Masculine by that of *Plautus Aulul. 2. 4. Etiamne obrurat inferiorem gutturem? Danes. Schol. p. 100.* But *turtur* and *vultur* though ending in *ur*, belong not hither, because they do not signifie lifeless things, but signifie first whole things, and not parts of things, and then signifie things endued with a sensitive life. By which two particulars it is known, what words belong, and what do not belong to this Rule. For *tuber*, *tuber*, &c. signifie things endued with vegetation, but not with sense, and so they belong hither; and *jecur*, *caput* and *uber*, signifie parts onely of things endued with sense, and not the whole thing so endued, whereof they are parts, and so they belong hither.

5. Qu. Are there no words of any of these terminations signifying insensate things, but what are of the Neuter Gender?

An. From these words are to be excepted two words, the one in *en*, the other in *ur*, namely *pecen*, and *furfur*, which signifie things not endued with sense, and yet are of the Masculine Gender; as our Author advertiseth in that Exceptive clause of the Rule, *Attamen ex his Mascula sunt pecen, furfur.*

Mascula  
sunt pecen  
furfur.

6. Qu. What particular words are those that are of other terminations that are added to this Rule, as increasing that, or those in the Genitive Case, and being of the Neuter Gender?

*An.* The other words that are added to the Rule, as increasing flat or short in the Genitive Case, and yet being of the Neuter Gender, are some words in *er*, some in *or*, and one in *us*.

7. *Qu.* What are the words in *er*, that increase short, and are of the Neuter Gender?

*An.* The words that end in *er*, and increase flat or short, and are of the Neuter Gender, our Author here reckons up to be thirteen; saith he, *Sunt neutra cadaver, verber, iter, suber, pro fungo tuber, & uber, gingiber, & laser, cicer, & piper, atque papaver, & fiser, atque filer.*

¶ *Verber* in the Nominative Case is not usual; whence the word is by *Robbinson* in his *Heteroclitis* reckoned of as a *Diptot*. But the Gender of it is sufficiently known by the Plural Number *verbera*, *Voss. Gram. Lat. p. 21.*

*Iter* in the Genitive Case hath *itineris* of the old word *itiner*, used not only by *Plantus* in several places, but by *Varro*, and even by *Lucan* l. 6. *obvia discutiat plagis itinerque sequatur*, though now out of use. Formerly the word *iter* was declined with Cases formed from it self, *iteris*, &c. Hence *Accius* cited by *Nonius*. *Nam te itere cerno vadere*, *Danesh. Schol. p. 160.*

*Pro fungo tuber*] According to the several significations of it, *tuber* is of three several Genders.

(1.) For a Fusbal or Puff, growing out of the ground like a Mushromie (*planta genere sponte nascenti intra terram sed sine caule, foliis, aut capillamentis*) also for a Swelling, it is of the Neuter Gender. *Plin. l. 19. c. 2. Tuberum vocantur hæc undique terrâ circumdata nullisque fibris nixa. &c. Id. l. 8. c. 18. Illi [sc. Bætriani cameli] bina habent tubera in dorso.*

(2.) For a Tree it is of the Feminine Gender, *Plin. l. 16. c. 25. Ab ea proximè florent Armeniaca, dein tuberes, & præcoces: illa peregrina, hæc coacta, Colum. l. 11. c. 2. Possunt etiam his diebus cerasi, & tuberes,*

tuberes, & armeniaca, atque amygdala, catereque arbores, quæ prima florent, inferi commodè.

(3.) For the Fruit of the Tree, it is of the Masculine Gender, Sueton. Domit. c. 16. *Oblatos tuberes servari jussit in crastinum.* Further, it may be noted, that tuber of the Neuter Gender is long in the first syllable of it. Juven. 5. Satyr. *Fumat aper, post hunc raduntur tubera, si ver.* Of the other Genders it is short in that syllable. Mart. l. 13. *Non tibi de Lybicis tuberes & apyrina ramis,* R. Steph. Thes. Alvar. p. 171. Danes. Schol. p. 160. Voss. Lat. Gram. p. 21.

Gingiber is by Master Farnaby written *zingiber*. Pliny tells us some call it *zimpiberi*, alii vero *zingiberi* l. 12. c. 7. In Greek it is *Σιγγίβρις*.

Atque papaver] Papaver formerly hath been a Masculine, whence Plautus in *Trinum*. *Quam si tu objicias formicis papaverem.* Now saith Vossius, *Papaver rectè in neutris reponitur.* Rob. Steph. Thes. Danes. Schol. p. 160. Farnab. p. 14. Voss. de Anal. l. 1. c. 26.

Et sifer] That of Plin. l. 20. c. 5. *Sifer erraticum sativo simile est,* proves sifer a Neuter. The same Author elsewhere hath *tres siferes*, but in what Gender, Masculine or Feminine, is uncertain. But for all that, it passes among Grammarians for a Neuter.

8. Qu. Are there any words of this termination in er, that may be added yet further to these Nouns?

An. To these words of the Neuter Gender in er, may be added *spinther*, or as some read it, *spinter*, and *laver*, and the remaining Cases of the old word *juger*, namely *jugeri*, and *jugere*.

¶ Plaut. Menach. Act. 3. Sc. 3. *Jubeasque spinther novum reconcinnari,* Ib. *Nisi mihi tu dederis pallam & spinther nunquam factum reperies.* And scin' hoc quod sit spinther. And *Redde igitur spinther, si non meministi.* Laver is read in Pliny in the Feminine Gender l. 26. c. 8. *Laver quoque nascens in rivis con-*

*disa, & cōsta torminibus medetur.* Notwithstanding Master Farnaby reckons of it as a Neuter, and answers, that in this place *Pliny* had respect unto the Gender of *herba* understood; which *Vossius* also saith, which if it be not, it must be allowed to be a doubtful. Some have thought such a word as *runder* was to be added hither, because they met with *rudera* in the Plural Number. But saith *Vossius*, *rudera* is not of *runder*, but of *rudus*, whence comes *runderis*, as of *vulnus* comes *vulneris*. *Vitruvius* hath the word l. 7. c. 1. *Rudus, si novum erit, ad tres partes una calcis micesatur: si redivivum fuerit, quinque ad duum mixtiones habeant responsum, Plin l. 36. c. 35. Budus in quo dua quinta calcis miscenatur, Priscian. l. 5. Farnab. L. Gram. p. 13. Voss. de Analog. l. 1 c. 26.*

9. Qu. What are the words in or, that increase flat or short, and are of the neuter Gender?

*Ventra a-*  
*nor, mar-*  
*nor, ador-*  
*ne.*

An. The words in or, that increase flat or short in the Genitive Case, and are of the Neuter Gender, are reckoned up to be three by our Authour in that clause of the Rule. *Neutra aqnor, marmor, adorque.*

¶ There is both *ador* of the Neuter Gender, and *ador* of the Feminine Gender. *Ador* of the Neuter Gender makes in the Genitive Case *adoris penultimā correptā.* Hence *Priscian* l. 6. cites *Gannius* in 1. *Hic adoris dat primitias sibi sanguine libat.* And in 2. *Illum sponte satos adoris stravisse maniplos.* This Genitive Case comes of *adus* (for which they said *ador*) like *decoris* of *deus*. Hence *Ausonius* in *monosyllabis.* *Hinc ador atque adoris de polline pulvisculum far.* *Ador* of the Feminine Gender makes *adoris penultimā productā.* Whence *Gannius* in 3. cited by *Priscian.* *Emicat in nubes nidoribus ardor adoris.* This Genitive comes of the Feminine *adoris.* *Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 27.* Hither may be referred

referred *decor* used antiently in the Neuter Gender for *decus*, now only of that Gender in use. *Auson. in Coronide Professorum. Dum decor egregie commeminit patria.* Where saith *Vossius* he put *decor* for *decus*. *De Analog. l. i. c. 27.*

10. Qu. What one word in us is that, which is of the Neuter Gender, and increases flat, or short in the Genitive Case?

An. The one word in us which is referred to this Rule, as increasing short in the Genitive Case, and being of the Neuter Gender is *pecus* (as our Authour saith) *quando pecoris facit in genitivo.* *Atque pecus quando pecoris facit in genitivo.*

11. Qu. What need was there of adding this word as a singular example to the Rule? Was it not before comprized in that branch of the Rule, *us ut onus*?

An. There was need of adding this word as a singular example to the Rule, because it signifies a thing of life and sense, and so comes not under that clause of the Rule *us ut onus*, which concerns things without life

12. Qu. Can you call to mind any word of the Neuter Gender, that may yet further be added to this Exception, that is not already comprehended in it?

An. To this Rule may yet be added one word ending in *ex*, namely, the word *Atriplex*, which is of the Neuter Gender.

¶ *Plin. l. 20. c. 20. Atriplex & sylvestre est, & sativum.* In *Macer* it is of the Feminine Gender, in whom you may read *Atriplicem vitam cum nitro.* But both *Vossius* and *Danes* think *Pliny* is rather to be followed, the other speaking by way of *Synthesis*, respect being had to *herba* of the Feminine Gender, *Danes, Schol. p. 163. Voss. de Analog. l. i. c. 34.*

13. Qu.

## 13. Qu. How are the Words of this Exception Declined?

The Declining of the thus.

words in

*Hoc problema problematis; hoc omen ominis; hoc Est Neutra-jubar jubaris; hoc jecur jecoris and jecinoris; hoc onus le genus fig- oneris; hoc acciput occipitis. Hic pecten pectinis; nans rem hic furfur furfuris. Hoc cadaver cadaveris; G. hu. non anima- jur verberis (the Nom. verber being out of use) Ab.*

tum.

*hoc verberē; hoc iter itineris; hoc suber suberis; hoc tuber tuberis; hoc uber uberis; hoc gingiber gingiberis; hoc laser laseris; hoc cicer cicervis; hoc piper piperis; hoc papaver papaveris; hoc fiser fiseris; hoc filer fileris.*

*Hoc æquor æquoris; hoc marmor marmoris; hoc ador adoris; Hoc pecus pecoris.*

And thus far of the Second exception from the Third Special Rule.

## CHAP. XX.

1. Qu. What is the Third Exception from the Third Special Rule? and which is it?

An. The Third Exception from the Third Special Rule is of Doubtfuls excepted from it; and it is this.

*Dubia ex graviter crescentibus.*

*Sunt Ambigeneris cardo, margo, cinis, obex, Pulvis, adest, forceps, pumex, rames, anas, imbrex, Adde culex, natrix, & onyx cum prole filixque: Quamvis hæc melius vult mascula dici et usus.*

2. Qu. What is the meaning of this Exceptive Rule?

An. The meaning of this Exceptive Rule is this, That

That there be some words that increase flat or short in their Genitive Case, which are of the Doubtful Gender, such as are some of these here named.

3. Qu. Why do you say some of these here named? are not all of them here named Doubtfuls?

An I say some; because not all here named are doubtfuls; but some of them only, the most, though not all, being Masculines, whose Feminines are grown out of use, which the Author of the Exception himself did see, and therefore gave that Correctorie admonition subjoyned to the Rule, *Quamvis hæc melius vult mascula dicier usus.*

¶ *Cardo*, as *Alvarus* saith, was a Feminine *apud priscos*: whence that of *Gracchus* in *Priscian* l. 6. *O græd cordo regium egressum indicans.* *Virgil* hath it in the Masculine, *Æn.* 1. *Haud tanto cessabit cardine rerum.* And it is taken only for a Masculine. *Alvar.* p. 169.

*Margo* is of the Masculine Gender in *Ovid. Met.* l. 1. -- *brachia longo Margine terrarum porrextat.* So in *Stat. Theb.* l. 3. -- *divexo margine ponti.* It is of the Feminine in *Juven.* 1. *Sat.* *Plenâ jam margine libri.* But this example is rare, saith *Alvarus*, imò *insolens*, saith *Vossius*; and therefore if with *Farnabie* we allow it to be a Doubtful, it must be reckoned of one that is most Masculine. *Alvar.* p. 185. *Farnab.* p. 14. *Voss.* de *Analog.* l. 1. 22.

*Cinis* is a Masculine in *Ovid. Met.* l. 8. *Vos cinis exiguis*; and in *Persius.* *Minxerit in patrios cineres.* But in *Catullus* is found *acerba cinis*; and in *Lucret.* l. 4. *Cinere & multâ latet obrutus ignis.* From which Feminine use of it some take it for a Doubtful; And so let it pass; yet it is safer to use it for Masculine.

*Obex* is sometimes found used in the Feminine Gender. *Plin.* in *Panegy.* *Nullæ obices, nulli contumeliarum gradus.* *Plaut. Pers.* *Nunc commorandum est mihi apud hanc obicem.* *Virg. Æn.* 10. *Eccæ Maris*



*Maris magnâ claudit nos obice pontus.* But the Masculine is far more usual, Inasmuch that *Servius* saith on that place in *Virgil* *Modo usus habet, ut hic obex dicamus, unde quidam magno obice legunt. Antiqui etiam hac obex dicebant. Sed masculinum multo xstitatius fuit: femininum hodie de usu recessit.* Mr. Farnaby reckons it for a doubtful; and so let it pass; But the Masculine Gender of it is rather to be preferred. *Alvar. p. 179. Rob. Steph. Lat. Thes. Voss. Lat. Gram. p. 28. Danes. Schol. p. 165.*

*Pulvis* is sometimes a Feminine in Poets. Hence in *Enn. Annal. 8* — *Pulvis ad cælum vassa videtur.* In *Propert. l. 1. El. 21. pulvis Hetrusca.* and *l. 2. El. 13. arida pulvis.* But the Masculine is so much the more usual, that though it be allowed to be a Doubtful by Farnaby, yet it is not rashly to be used but as a Masculine, for which *Vossius* reckons it, though with a note, that some Poets have used it as a Feminine. This word is read in the Plural Number in *Hor. Epod. Od. 17. Novendiales dissipare pulveres.* Farnaby p. 14. *R. Steph. Thes. Lat. Alvar. p. 185. Voss. Lat. Gram. p. 24. Danes. Schol. p. 170.*

*Adeps* is a Doubtful. *Plin. l. 28. c. 9.* useth it in the Masculine Gender. *Celsus l. 4. c. 24. and l. 5. c. 18.* useth it in the Feminine; and so *Columel. l. 7. c. 12. and l. 6. c. 2.* There was anciently *adipes*, whence *Varro l. 1. de r. r. adipes illa.* This word *adeps* is found in the Plural number both in *Plin. l. 11. c. 38. adipes Detraher. & l. 8. c. 36. Illi sunt adipes medicamentis apii.* and in *Columella. l. 6. c. 2. corporatura—non adipibus obesa.* Contrary to what some have thought of it. *Steph. Thes. Lat. Alvar. p. 183. Danes. Schol. p. 164. Vossius de Anatog. l. 3. c. 33. & 39.*

*Forceps* is a Feminine. Hence *Ovid. Met. 17. Curva Forceps.* and *Nonius in Priscian. Signare oportet frontem calida forcepe.* In *Priscian* it is a Doubtful. But it is now to be found only in the Feminine

minine Gender. So that Farnaby reckons it for a Feminine. And Vossius taxes both Baptista Mantuanus and Hadrianus Junius of mistake, for the ones, saying *alieno forcipe*; and for the others saying *forçipes denticulati*. Farnaby pag. 13. Voss, de Analog. l. 1. c. 17.

*Pumex* is found in the Feminine Gender in *Catull. Carm. 1.* -- *libellum Aridâ modò pumice expolitum*. But the Masculine is far more used, and in Orators, whereas the Feminine is seldome used, and but in Poets. *Alvar. p. 185. Danes. p. 170. Voss. L. Gram p. 27.*

*Ramex* is a Masculine, used in that Gender by *Plin. l. 20. c. 13. Ut sylvestri rutâ cum axunguiâ veteri illitos ramices sanari prodant. Plaut. Pœn. Tuâ causâ nemo nostrum est suos rapturus ramices*. But no where that I find, is it used in the Feminine. *Vossius* delivers it for a Masculine, *Lat. Gram, p. 27. Steph. Alvar.*

*Anas* is by *Stephanns* and *Vossius* accounted a Feminine. And examples abound. *Mart. l. 13. Tota qui dem ponatur anas. Et. l. 3. Ep. 93. Et anatis habeas uropygium macræ. Petron. Et pictis anas enova pennos*. *Haines* reckons it for a Common. Till an example of a Masculine use of it be brought, it may pass for a Feminine.

*Imbrex* is a Doubtful. Masculine in *Plin. l. 17. c. 14. Servarique inter duos imbrices*. Feminine in *Plaut. Mil. Sc. 7. Meas confregisti imbrices*.

*Adde culex* ] *Culex* is a Masculine with *Vossius*. *Mali culices raneque palustres Avertunt somnos* is read in *Hor. Ser. 1. Sat. 5*. In the Feminine it is no where read, unless in *Plaut Eho tu nihili cana culex*, But *Jarus Gruterus* for *cana culex* there reads *Canalicola*. So that there is no certain example of the feminine use of it; and therefore for me let it be a Masculine. *Alvar. p. 179. Danes. Schol. p. 169. Voss. Lat. Gram. p. 27. De Analog. l. 1. c. 34.*

*Natrix*

*Natrix* was used by *Lucil.* l. 2. in the Feminine. *S. naribus natrixem impressit crassam & capitatam.* But *Phocas* accounts it a Masculine, producing for proof of it that of *Lucan* l. 8. *Et natrix, violator aquæ.* *Priscian* is of the same opinion, though he think too the Poet might in the Gender have respect to *serpens.* *Vossius* saith of it, *Aliter quam Masculino usurpare visum.* And if so, then shall not I encourage to use it in any other Gender; but as *Farnaby* excepts it not from, so I shall let it pass for a Masculine. *Priscian* l. 5. *Voss.* l. 1. c. 34.

*Et onyx cum prole*, that is, *Onyx* and *Sardonix*. These are often found Feminines in *Plinie*. Thence l. 3. c. 6. *Zenothemis Indicam onychem plures habere vacietates.* Ib. *Sotacus & Arabicam onychem tradit; sed eam a cæteris distare, quod Indica igniculos habet.* Ib. *Aliter quam in Sardonyche Indica.* The Poets have them oft in the Masculine Gender. Thence *parvus Onyx* in *Hor.* 4. *Carm.* Od. 12. *Densi radium testudine totâ Sardonyches* in *Juv.* Sat. 6. *Veros Sardonychas*, in *Mart.* l. 10. ep. 87. But then again, *Juvenal* hath *Sardonix* in the Feminine Gender. Sat. 7. *Ideo conductâ Paulus agebat Sardonyche.* And so *Persius* Sat. 1. *Et natalitiâ tandem cum Sardoniche albus Sede leget celsâ.* So that *Sardonix* is undoubtedly a Doubtful. But for *onyx* the Gender is said to varie according to the several significations of it. As it signifies, a *Jewel*, so it is of the Feminine Gender; thence *Indica onyx* and *vera onyx* in *Plin* l. 37 c 6. As it signifies the *Alabaſter Stone*, or an Ointment Box made of it, so it is of the Masculine Gender, in infinite places of Authors. *Plin.* l. 36 c 7. where he speaks of *amphoras* made *ex eo* of that kind of stone, and that *Chiorum magnitudine cadorum*; too big to be made of the *Jewel*. *Propert.* l. 2. el 13. *Cum dabitur Syrio munere plenus onyx.* In that sense is *Vester onyx* in *Catull.* *Eleg. de Comâ.* *Benices parvus onyx* in *Hor.* l. 4. Od. 12. *myrreus onyx*

in Propert l. 3. Eleg. 8. *Fossus onyx* in Stat. 1. *Sily. Epithalam. Stellæ & Violantilla*, lapis being understood, and the like in Martial l. 4. Ep. 28. l. 9. Ep. 60. Ep. 10. l. Ep. 87. l. 11 Ep, 1. l. 12. Ep. 50. Indeed in l. 7. Ep. 93. he seems to use it in the Fem. Gen. *Unguentum fuerat, quod onyx modo parva gerebat.* But that is so against the constant use of it in this sense, that the place is suspected to be corrupted, *parva* being put in for *Nerva*, or some other proper name. If the reading be true, there in this sense it must be allowed to be Doubtful: and there Farnabie places it, and Vossius too, yet with this advertisement, that it is a Feminine in Orators, a Masculine in Poets. Alvar. p. 186. Farnab. p. 14. Danes. Schal. p. 167. Voss. Lat. Gram. p. 28. De Analog. l. 1. c. 34.

*Silex* que is a Doubtful, yet in Orators a Masculine, both Masculine and Feminine in Poets. Thence Plin. l. 36. c. 18. *Lunensem silicem serrâ secari, at Tusculanum dissilire igni* ib c. 22. *Nigri silices optimi.* But Virgil. *Æn.* 8. *Stabat acuta silex præcis undique saxis.* & ib. l. 6. *Quam si dura silex aut si Merpesia cautes.* Yet Ovid, *Met.* 7. hath *silices soluti* in the Masculine. Alvar. p. 185. Danes. p. 166. Voss. Lat. Gr. p. 27.

4. Qu. *¶* p ttere any other words be added to this Exception of Doubtfuls?

An. To this Rule of Doubtfuls may be added *Cortex*, and *Varix*, and *ales*.

¶ *Cortex* is a Doubtful not only in Vossius and Farnabie, but also in Priscian l. 5. Ovid *Met.* 1. useth it in the Masculine Gender. *Sentit adhuc trepidare novo sub cortice pectus.* And Virg. *Æn.* 7. *Rapuit de subere cortex.* Again, Virg. *Ecl.* 6. useth it in the Feminine Gender *Tum Phaethontiadæ musco circumdat amara Corticis.* *Varix* in Celsus l. 7. c. 17. is Masculine. *Evenit ut in quorundam venibus varices sint quorum nulla alia curatio est.* Ib.

C. 31. In quibus orti varices non difficili ratione tolluntur. But in Quintil. l. 11. c. 3. it is Feminine. Solitum id facere Ciceronem velandarum varicum gratiâ. Senec. Ep. 78. Dum varices exsecandas præberet legere librum perseveravit. Danes. schol. p. 166. Voss. L. Gr. p. 27. Farnab. p. 14. Ales see in the Rule following.

*Smilax* is added hither by some: that it is a feminine is plain by *Plin. l. 16. c. 35*. Where describing *similax*, he saith it is *densis geniculatæ caulibus spinosis fruticosa ramis*, &c. But in *l. 24. c. 10*. He saith, *Smilax qui & Nicotrophos cognominatur similitudinem hederæ habet tenuioribus foliis*. *Coronâ ex eo factam impari foliorum numero aiunt capitis doloribus mederi*. I conceive it safer to use than the feminine, if it be but for the story of the Maid of that name, which *Pliny* tells us was turned into that tree, for the love of a young man called *Crocus. l. 16. c. 35*

*Tradux* is a masculine. *Var de r. r. l. 1. c. 8*. *Quos traduces quidem rumpos appellant* *Rhenius* ranks it amongst his masculines; yet tells us that in *Columella l. 5*. *Tradux etiam est femininum*. In *Collumel. l. 5. c. 6*. I find it a masculine, *ut novi traduces omnibus annis inter se ex arboribus proximis connectantur, & veteres decidantur*. But if it be any where else of the feminine gender I find it not. And so for me, let it be what *Vossius* calls it, a masculine, *Rhen. p. 41. Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 34*. *Lapis* may seem fit to be added hither. *Ennius* and *Varro* both used it in the fem. gen. saith the first, *Tanto sublata tunc agmine sunt lapides*. The second *R. R. l. 3. c. 5. subter columnarum stylobaten est lapis à falere pedē & dodrantem alta*: but that gen. of the word is now quite grown out of use, & they are not to be follow'd therein: Perhaps they had a fancy to follow the Greeks with whom *αἰδοῦ* is ὁ γῆς.

The declining of the words in sunt dubii generis cardo, margo.

Q. 5. How are the words of this exception declined?

Ans. The Words of this exception are declined thus, *Hic Cardo, cardinis*; *hic [vel hæc] margo, marginis*; *hic [vel hæc] Cinis, cineris*; *hic [vel hæc] obex, obicis*; *hic [vel hæc] pulvis, pulveris*; *hic vel hæc adeps, adipis*; *hæc forceps, forcipis*; *hic [vel hæc] pumex, pumicis*; *hic ramex, ramicis*; *hæc anas, anatis*; *hic*

*Hic vel hæc imbrex, imbricis; hic culex, culicis, hic matrix, matricis; hæc onyx [a Jewel] onychis; hic Onyx [an Alabaster-stone, or box] onychis; hic vel hæc Sardonyx, sardonichis; hic vel hæc filix, filicis: And thus far of the Third Exception from the Third special Rule.*

CHAP. XXI.

1. Qu. **W**hat is the Fourth Exception from the Third special Rule of? and which is it?

*An.* The Fourth Exception from the Third special Rule is of Nouns which are of the common of two Genders, though they increase flat or short in the Genitive Case: and it is this.

*Communia ex graviter crescentibus.*

*Communis generis sunt ista vigil, pugil, exul, Præsul, homo, nemo, Martyr, Ligur, Augur, & Artas, Antistes, Miles, pedes, interpret, comes, hospes, Sic ales, præses, Princeps, auceps, eques, obfes: Atque alia a verbis quæ nomina multa creantur; ut conjux, judex, vindex, opifex, & aruspex.*

*Communis generis sunt ista.*

2. Qu. **W**hat is the meaning of this Exception?

*An.* The meaning of this exceptive Rule is this: That there are some Nouns which increase flat or short in the Genitive Case, which are of the Common of two Genders, as *hic & hæc Conjux, conjugis.*

3. Qu. **A**re all the words mentioned in this Exception of the Common of two Genders?

*An.* All, or the most of these words in this Exception are common as to signification, and but few of them common as to construction; namely these nine, *nemo, martyr, augur, antistes, miles, comes, conjux, judex, and vindex*; whereof three, *miles, judex, and vindex* are disputable whether they be common, or no, as being

rarely, if ever, read with an Adjective feminine.

¶ Mr. Farnaby gives the description of Nouns of the common of two Genders thus--- *Sunt commune duum; quæ cum discrimine sexus, Masculum & admittunt adjectivum & muliebrem*. But this description will exclude diverse of these words from the Rule, as being not read with, and so not capable of having joyned with them a Feminine Adjective. What I have found in the examination of every one of them, I will give you brief account of it.

*Vigil* is sometimes used Substantively, and sometimes Adjectively, Adjectively used it signifies the same with *vigilans* waking, and in this sense like Adjectives in *is* it is joyned with Substantives both of the Masculine and Feminine Gender. Hence *oculi vigilēs* in *Virg. An. 4. Lucernæ vigilēs*, in *Hor. 3. Carm. Od. 8. aurora vigil*; and *flamma vigil*; and *cure vigilēs*, in *Ovid*. Substantively used it signifies the same with *Castes nocturnus* a Watch-man; and is only of the Masculine Gender, as being found only with Adjectives of the Masculine Gender joyned to it, as in *Plaut. Amph. Rex Creon vigilēs nocturnos singulos locat*, and *Ovid. Met. 13. Vigili date præmia vestro*. But not with Feminines.

*Pugil* hath an Adjective Masculine joyned to it in *Cicer. de clar. Orat. Pugiles in exercitatu solem sæpe ferre non possunt*. and 2. *Tusc. Pugiles castibus confusim ingemiscunt quidem*. But I find no Feminine Adjective joyned with it. *Terence* indeed, speaking of a Woman, saith thus: *Siqua est habitior paulo, pugilem esse aiunt. Eun. 2, 3, 23*. But that no more proves it a Feminine, than it would have proved *lanista*, or *gladiator* Feminines, if it had been said (which might as well have been said) *lanistam*, and *gladiatorem esse aiunt*. I shall therefore (with *Priscian* l. 5. and *Alvarus* p. 162.) conclude it for a Masculine.

*Exul* is a Common in signification, and therefore spoken sometimes of a Woman; Thence *Ariadna* in *Ovid*.



*Quid, unto Theseus, Exul ero.* But it is a Masculine only in construction; not admitting a Feminine Adjective with it, no nor a Masculine neither, when it is spoken of a Woman, who may not say *sum vaga exul*, but only *Sum vaga & exul.* Voss. Lat. Gram. p. 20.

*Præsul* is the Name of him that was the chief among those Priests of *Mars*, who were called *Salii*: and as they were called *Salii* from their leaping and dancing when they carried the *Ancilia*, So he from his leaping and dancing before them (*a præsiliendo*) was called *præsul*. And therefore no marvel if both *Alvarus* and *Vossius* take it to be only Masculine, *Alvar. p. 162. Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 15.*

*Homo* is common in point of signification, but Masculine only in point of construction, and therefore though *Priscian l. 5.* decline it *hic & hæc homo*, yet it is to be accounted to be a Masculine only. Several instances brought to prove it a Feminine prove short of being proofs of it. *Cicero pro Cluent.* Speaking of a Woman saith, *Cujus ea stultitia est, ut eam nemo hominem appellare possit.* But there *eam* agrees not with *hominem* expressed, but with *mulierem* understood; *q. d. --ut nemo possit appellare mulierem eam hominem.* *Sulpit. ad Ciceron. Fam. 4. Ep. Ep. 5. Quoniam homo nata fuerit.* But there *nata* agrees not with *homo*, but with *mulier* understood, *q. d. quoniam mulier nata erat homo.* *Ovid. Met. 2. Esse hominem vetui, facta dea est.* But there *facta* agrees not with *homo*, but with *Callisto mulier*, whereof the speech is. The same *Ovid. Met. 1. 1.* saith in like phrase, *Petit hanc Saturnia munus;* but that proves not *munus* a Feminine, the sense being, *petit hanc mulierem pro muliere.* So *Cicero De Harusp. Resp. Quid enim hunc persequar, pecudem & belluam, pabulo inimicorum & glande corruptum;* But this proves not either *pecudem* or *belluam* Masculine, for the Adjectives *hunc* and *corruptum* agree with *virum* spoken of, who being by nature a man, was by condition a Beast.

*Rob. Steph. Thes. Lat. Alvar. p. 158, 159. Dantes Schol. 151. Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 15.*

*Nemo* commonly joyned with a Masculine Adjective, as *Hor. l. 1. Sat. 9. Nemo deterius fortunâ est usus*, is found sometimes though seldom joyned with a Feminine Adjective, as well as spoken of a woman. *Ter. And 3. 2.* Speaking of a woman, saith, *Hoc unum scio neminem peperisse bio.* There 'tis spoken of a woman. *Plaut. Merc. De lanificio neminem metuo, una atate qua sit.* There it hath *qua* a Feminine Adjective joyned with it. So *Plaut in Cassu. Vicinam neminem amo merito magis quam te.* So *Titinnius in Priscian. l. 6. Quod rogas, neminem bonam decet*: So that if it be a Substantive, it may be allowed to stand where *Mr. Farnaby* sets it, that is, among the commons, yet with a note of its being rarely used in the Feminine Gender. But *Vossius* conceits this Noun to be an Adjective as to the nature of it, the same in sense with *nullus*; with this difference only, that *nullus* is a word applied generally to all things, but *nemo* a word peculiarly belonging unto men. The ground is, because Authours, *Terence, Cicero*, and others do say, *nemo homo* for *nullus*. And whereas *Virgil Aen. 9.* saith *Divinam nemo*; it is an abuse of the word beyond the propriety of its signification, which is *ne homo, or hemo*, as they antiently said. And if so, then there will be another word to be understood in all those expressions; where it is used Femininely, namely *mulier* or *femina*. But however, be it Substantive or Adjective, as to the nature of it it is common as to the Gender of it, and so let it pass: Only in passing it may not be amiss to note that this word hath had, if it yet may not have a Genitive case, *viz. Neminis*. It was used saith *Festus*, by *Cato*, *Sunt multi, quos miseret neminis*. And saith *Priscian*, by *Lucilius*. *Neminis ingenio quam confidere oportet*. And is used by *Plaut. in Captiv. ac. 3. Sc. 5. Neminis misereri certum est, quia mei miseret nemo*. Yet 'tis best to be sparing in the use of it. *Alvar. p. 162. Farn. L. Gr. p. 7. Priscian. l. 6. Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 15.*

Martyr

*Martyr* is often found in Ecclesiastical Writers used in both Genders, and so let it pass for a common of two, no doubt being but that the Heathens, who made Martyrs of Christian women, had they not been Heathens, would not have stuck to call to those women whom they so Martyred *Santas Martyres*. *Voss. de Analog.* l. 1. c. 15.

*Ligur* is *nomen populi*, and therefore of the Masculine Gender, and accordingly found in *Lucan.* l. 1. with a Masculine Adjective. *Et nunc tota Ligur*. But of its being used with an Adjective Feminine I find no instance. *Priscian* indeed saith *Ligus Liguris commune est*; but he gives no example. I suppose he means common for signification, but not for construction, because he gives none.

*Augur* is ordinarily found with a Masculine Adjective. *Ovid. Met.* 12. *Veri providus augur*. *Cic. Ep.* l. 16. *Ego quoque augur publicus*—Once it is found with an Adjective Feminine, in *Stat.* 9. *Theb.* *Simque augur cassafuturi*. And so it may pass for a common that is seldom Feminine; being that both *Farnaby* and *Vossius* allow it for such. *Farn. G. L.* p. 7. *Voss. de Analog.* l. 1. c. 15.

*Et Arcas*] *Arcas* originally is the proper name of a man, who was the Son of *Jupiter* and *Callisto*; and from him the Arcadians taking their denomination, the name of that person became a Gentile name, and so is of the Masculine Gender.

*Antistes* is used with a Masculine Adjective in *Ovid.* l. 3. *Trist. El. ult.* *Non finit illa sui varias antistitis unquam esse preces*. With a Feminine in *Valer. Max.* l. 1. *de servata religione. Ne deæ vetusti ritus perita deesset antistes*. *Gellius* l. 13. c. 19. tells us, that *Cicero* used to call women Priests *antistitas*, not, according to Grammar Rule, *antistites*. Nam (saith he) *quum insolentias verborum a veteribus dictorum plerumque respueret, huius tamen verbi in ea parte sonitu delectatus, Sacerdotes inquit, Cereris, atque illius fari antistita, &c.* From *Gellius*

then we may gather that by the Law of Grammar *antistites* is to be said for *women-Priests*, and that it was a piece of insolence in *Cicero* to call them *antistitas*. But saith Mr. *Farnaby* *antistita* is the more used word in that sense. *Ovid* hath it *Met.* 13. *Traffisque comis antistita Phœbi*. However *antistes* may pass for what both he and *Vossius* reckon it, that is, a common, though seldom used in the Feminine Gender, *Farn.* p. 7. *Voss. de Analog.* l. 1. c. 15.

*Miles* is ranked both by *Vossius* and *Farnaby* with those that are common, as being not only spoken of a woman, *Ovid. Met.* 2. *Miles erat Phœbes, nec Menalon attigit ulla Gravior hâc Trivia*; but also joyned with a Feminine Adjective in *Ovid. Ep.* 11. *Et rudis ad partus, & nova miles eram*. And yet though in regard of this example it may, and doth, passe for a common, yet in regard it is but one example, and that thought both by *Vossius* and *Farnaby* to be spoken by a *Synthesis*, it will be safest to use it but sparingly in the Feminine Gender. *Farn.* p. 7.

*Pedes* may be a common in signification, but it is not so in construction. It is read in *Virgil En.* 6. with a Masculine Adjective; and in *Livie*; in the one is *armatus pedes*, in the other *velocissimi pedites*; but nowhere is it read with an Adjective Feminine. So that *Vossius* accounts it a piece of rashness to place it among those that are common. *Voss. de Analog.* l. 1. c. 28.

*Interpres* used by *Horace de Arte Poet.* in the Masculine Gender, *Nec verbum verbo curabo reddere fides Interpres* is a common in signification; being spoken of a Goddess, *Virg. An.* 4. *Tuque harum interpres curarum & conscia furo*: But not being found with an Adjective Feminine joyned to it, it is neither that, nor its being joyned with a Substantive of the Feminine Gender, as in *Hor. de Arte Poet.* *Post effert animi motus interprete lingua*, that will make it a common of two. *Voss. de Analog.* l. 1. c. 15.

*Comes* as it is found with a Masculine Adjective in *Cic. verr. 4. Comites illi tui dilecti*-- and ordinarily else. where : So it is found with an Adjective Feminine, in *Ovid. Met. 2. Data sum comes inculcata Minervæ. Valer. Max. 1. 5. c. 1. Liberalitati quas aptiores comitis, quàm humanitatem & clementiam dederim? Ovid. 17. Ep. Luna mihi tremulum lumen præbebat cantu ut comes in nostras officiosa vias. Hor. Serm. 2. Sat. 7. Nam comes atra premit sequiturque fugacem. Virg. Æn. 11. At circum lectæ comites.* So that it is reasonably allowed to be a Substantive common, whereof more afterward. *Voss. de Analog. 1. 1. c. 15. Farn. p. 7.*

*Hospes* is read in *Horace, 3. Carm. Od. 3.* with a Masculine Adjective. *Jam nec Lacææ splendet ad alteræ Famosus hospes.* And in *Lucan 1. 5.* with a Feminine Substantive, *Hospes in externis audit curia testis; Stat. Sylv. carm. 5. Hospite cymba;* But no where is it found with a Feminine Adjective. Instead thereof Authours use *Hospita. Hor. 3. Carm. Od. 7. Atqui sollicitæ nuncius hospita. Virg. Æn. 3. Bellum O terra Hospita portas.* So that *Hospes* must be a Masculine.

*Ales* sometimes is taken Substantively for a Bird, and then 'tis used both with Masculine and Feminine Adjective; Masc. in *Virg. Æn. 12. --Volans rubra fulvus Joves ales in æthra. Hor. 2. Carm. Od. 20. --Album mutor in alitem. Plin. 1. 18. c. 16. Per imitationem cantus alitis temporarii, quem cuculum vocant.* Feminine in *Hor. 5. Epod. exquilinae alites.* And mostly else-where. But in as much as the difference of its Gender doth not import difference in Sex, where it is differently used, therefore it is rather to be accounted a Doubtful than a Common; and among the doubtfuls it is set both by *Farnaby* and *Vossius. Farn. p. 14. Voss. Lat. Gram. p. 23.* Sometimes it is taken Adjectively for *velox* swift, and then it is joyned with Substantives of any Gender. Thence *Hor. 3. Epod. Serpente fugit alite Ovid. Amor. 1. 3. El. 11. alite fertur equo.* So thence *Plautus ales;* and *plumbum ales;* in *Sil. Steph. Thes. Lat. Voss. de Analog. 1. 1. c. 28.*

*Præses* is a common as to constructions joyned with Substantives both of the Masculine and Feminine Gender. Thence we read in *Quintil. Præsides bellorum deo*; *Plant. Casin. Qui locum præbet illi nunc præsidem. Senec. Hippolyt. Dea præses terræ. Stephanus*, who accounts it a common, brings no example of any Feminine Adjective joyned with it, no nor Masculine neither, but one out of *Budeus, Præsides, qui vulgo patriarum gubernatores sunt*, So that it must passe for a Masculine, especially as being the Name of a manly office, like *consul*.

*Princeps* is sometimes used Adjectively, and sometimes Substantively; Adjectively taken for chief or best, it is joyned with Substantives of divers Genders. Thence *Cic. de Clar. Orat. In Principibus patronis quinquennium fere versatus sum*— *Hor. 1. Carm. Od. 16. Fertur Prometheus addere principi limo particulam undique defectam*. Substantively taken for a person in chief place and Authority, so it is a Masculine; and not read with any Feminine Adjective. That of *Cicero Phil. 8.* is objected. *Quàm magnum est personam in republicâ tueri principis! quæ non animis solum debet, sed etiam oculis servire civium*. But there is no mention there of any woman Prince; and besides the Relative *quæ* may well enough agree with the Substantive *Persona*. That also of *Plin. 1. 8. c. 32.* is alledged, *Quasdam nos principes Feminas scimus omnibus diebus matutinis carnem eam degustare solitas, & longo æro caruisse febribus*. But where are his eyes, that sees not that *principes* there is an Adjective? Truth is the word is common as to signification, but not as to construction; and so may be spoken of a woman, but may not have an Adjective Feminine joyned to it, till there may be an Example out of some Classick Authour produced for it. *Aluar. Voss. de Analog. 1. 1. c. 15.*

*Auceps* though I finde no Adjective joyned with it, either Masculine or Feminine, yet being it imports an office properly belonging to men, and being it is not reckoned

reckoned either by *Vossius*, or *Farnaby* among those that are common, therefore I conclude it a Masculine.

*Eques* is spoken by *Horace* in the person of *Canidia* a Witch, *Vestibor humeris tunc ego inimicis eques*. But being found in *Hor. 3. Carm. Od. 2.* with a Masculine Adjective, *Et Parthos feroces vexet eques metuendus hasta*; and no where with an Adjective Feminine, it is to pass for a Common, in signification, but a Masculine in construction; and so both *Alvarus* and *Vossius* account of it. *Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 15.*

*Obses* hath many a Masculine Adjective joyned to it. *Cic. 1. Verr. A nobis multos obsides habet populus Romanus. Ovid. 1. Met. Missi de gente Molossâ Obsidis unius iugulum mucrone resolvit.* But though it hath Feminine Substantives joyned with it. *Cic. pro clu. Stalenus hanc condemnationem dederat obsidem Balbo. Cic. 1. Cat. amplecti rempublicam tanquam obsidem consulatus mei*; yet it hath never a Feminine Adjective joyned with it,\* that I can find. And therefore admitting it a common in signification, yet it must passe for a Masculine in construction: And so *Vossius* saith it is to be accounted. *De Analog. l. 1. c. 15.*

*Conjux* indeed is a common Masculine. In *Virg. Aen. 10. O pulcherrime conjux.* in *Ovid. charissimus conjux*; in *Seneca, Scelestus conjux*; *Catull. Boni conjuges.* Feminine, *Hor. 1. Carm. Od. 1. Tenera conjugis immemor.* And *3. Carm. Od. 5. conjuge barbara.*

*Judex* is read with a Masculine Adjective ordinarily. So *Cic. Si in me iniquus es Judex condemnabo eodem egote crimine.* It is also spoken in the person of a Woman. *Ovid. Met. 2. De cespite virgo se levat, Et salvenum me judice, dixit.* It looks also as if it had an Adjective Feminine (to make it a common too in construction, as well as it is in signification) joyned with it, in that of *Lucan. l. 10. where speaking of Cleopatra, he saith, Et sumus ut fatear, tam savâ judice fontes.* But even there *savâ* agrees not with *judice*



*judice* But with *muliere*, or *Cleopatra*, as if he had said, *Sumus fontes tam seua muliere existente Judice*, i. e. *fitam seua muller sit Judex*. And of this mind touching it; *Vossius* I see, is also, l. 1. de *Analog.* c. 15. So that to me it seems a Masculine. But because both *Vossius* and *Farnaby* rank it among those which they call common, if any will do so too, he may for me; only I shall wish him then to use it as a Feminine, when he hath some good example out of a Classick Authour to justify that use of it.

*Vindex* is affirmed by *Alvarus* to be a Masculine. And *Justissimus vindex* is in *Ovid.* 3. de *Arte.* *Farnaby*, *Vossius*, and *Danesh.* all rank it among the commons. *Papinius Stat.* 1. *Theb.* had said, — *Tu saltem debita vindex, Huc ades.* But what is that other then, *tu mulier, quæ deberis*, or *es debita vindex*; If this will carry it, then it is a common, not in *signification* only, but in *construction* also with them: If not, then it is a Masculine with *Alvarus*.

*Opifex* is common in *signification*, but not in *construction*: I find it joyned with an Adjective Masculine in *Hor.* 1. *Serm.* 3. *Sat.* *Sapiens operis sic optimus omnis est opifex solus.* But no where with an Adjective Feminine. All that I find is, that *Varro* de r. 3. c. 16. speaking of Bees, saith, *Sylvestres minores sunt & pilosa, sed opifices magis.* But that I doubt will not do it: It may do somewhat to prove it an Adjective, if you will; But nothing to prove it a common Substantive. For *apis* is not an Adjective. Neither *Farnaby* nor *Vossius* reckon it for a common; and therefore it is like for me to go for a Masculine. *Voss.* de *Analog.* l. 1. c. 15.

*Aruspex* hath a Masculine Adjective with it in *Virg.* *Æn.* 8. *Retinet longævus aruspex Fata canens.* But no Feminine that I meet withal. Neither *Vossius* nor *Farnaby* reckon it for a common. A word of a Feminine termination is read in *Plaut.* *Mil.* for that which *aruspex* might be supposed to signify were it used as a

Femi-

Feminine, namely *haruspica*, Saith he *De quod dem*  
*quinquatribus percantatrici, collectrici, ariola, atque*  
*haruspica*. So that this also must go for a Masculine,  
unless some body can bring us an Authority to prove it  
Feminine also; and then we will agree to let it be  
common.

Q. Is there any word that you can think of yet  
more to be added to this rule, which is not named  
in it?

Ans. To this rule may be added *municipes*, which is  
noted in the Margin of the Rule.

¶ *Municipes* is Masculine in *Cic. Fami. 13. 12. Non*  
*dubito quin scias quàm diligenter soleam meos municipes*  
*Arpinates tueri*. Feminine in *Plin. l. 35. c. 11. Ama-*  
*vit in iuventutem Glyceram municipem suam*. *Artifex* and  
*particeps* added also in the margin seem Adjectives.  
Hence *Perfius* hath *Artificemque tuo ducit sub pollice*  
*vultum*. *Cicero* *Mentis & rationis particeps pars animi*.  
Taken Substantively, I find neither of them used with  
a Feminine Adjective. He that finds them so used,  
may use them for Commons. Of *Sandyx* which being  
found both with a Masculine and Feminine Adjective,  
may be thought a Common, or more properly a doubtful,  
we have spoken before in the Addition to the first  
exception from the third special Rule.

Q. How are the words in this Exception de-  
clined?

Ans. The words in this Exception are declined thus:  
*Hic vigil vigilis; hic pugil pugilis; hic exul exulis; hic præsul præsulis; hic homo hominis; hic & hac nemo neminis; hic & hac martyr martyr; hic Ligur Ligur; hic & hac augur auguris; hic Arcas Arcadis; hic & hac antistes antistitis [hic & hac] miles militis; hic pedes peditis; hic interpret interpretis, hic & hac comes comitis; hic hospes hospitis; hic vel hac ales alitis; hic præses præsidis; hic princeps principis; hic auceps aucupis hic eques equitis; hic obses obsidis; hic & hac conjux conjugis; hic [hic & hac] judex judicis; hic [hic & hac]*

The de-  
clining of  
the words  
in commu-  
nis generis  
sunt ista  
vigil-

hec] vindex vindicis; hic opifex opificis; hic aruspex aruspice.

And thus far of the third special Rule, and the Exceptions from it.

## CHAP. XXII.

**Q.** **V**<sup>E</sup> have now gone through those Rules, which the Grammar gives for the Genders of Substantives; our proceeding is next to be to the Rules which it gives for the Genders of Adjectives; How many Rules doth the Grammar give for the Genders of all Adjectives?

**A.** The Grammar gives three Rules for the Genders of all Adjectives, which are of three sorts; namely Adjectives of One Termination, Adjectives of Two Terminations, and Adjectives of Three Terminations.

**2. Q.** What Rule doth the Grammar give for the Gender of Adjectives of One Termination?

**A.** For the Gender of Adjectives of one Termination, the Grammar gives this General Rule.

*Regula Adjectivorum generalis.*

*Adjectiva unam duntaxat habentia vocem, ut felix, audax, retinent genus omne sub una.*

*Adjectiva unam duntaxat--*

**3. Q.** What is the meaning of this Rule?

**A.** The meaning of this Rule is this: That whatever Adjective hath but One Termination in the Nominative, or any other Case, that Adjective in that Case, under that one Termination, is of all three Genders, Masculine, Feminine, and Neuter; as *hic hec & hoc felix; hic hec & hoc audax, &c.*

**4. Q.**

4. Qu. Doth this Rule hold in Adjectives declinable only? Or doth it reach also unto Adjectives undeclinable?

An. This Rule reaches not only to Adjectives declinable; but unto Adjectives undeclinable also, and that whether they be singulars or plurals, as *nequam*, *totus*, *quot*, *mille*, &c.

¶ Adjectives are not so much of any Gender in regard of themselves as in regard of their Substantives: For the substantive is not to fit it self to the Gender of the Adjective, but the Adjective is to fit it self to the Gender of the Substantive. Adjectives taken Substantively are of that Gender that the Substantive is of, which they refer unto: Thus in that of *Virgil. An. 7. Saucius at quadrupes*; *quadrupes* is of the Masculine Gender because it refers to *cervus*, understood by it: In that of *Virg. Ecl. 5. Nulla neque amnem Libavit quadrupes nec graminis attigit herbam*, it is of the Feminine Gender, because it refers to *bestia* understood by it: And in that of *Columella, Quin etiam pecus lanatum ceteraque quadrupedia tempus idoneum est castrandi*; it is of the Neuter Gender because it refers to *animalia* understood by it.

5. Qu. What Rule doth the Grammar give for the Genders of Adjectives of Two Terminations?

An. For the Genders of Adjectives of Two Terminations the Grammar gives this Rule.

*Sub gemina si voce cadant velut omnis & ovine;*

*Vox commune duum prior est vox, altera neutrum.*

*Sub gemina*

*na si voce*

*cadant--*

6. Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule?

An. The meaning of this Rule is this: That where an Adjective hath in any Case but two terminations, there the Adjective under the former of those terminations is both Masculine and Feminine, and under the latter is Neuter, as *hic & haec omnis*, & *hoc omne*.

7. Qu.

7. Qu. What Rule doth the Grammar give to the Genders of Adjectives of Three Terminations?

An. For the Genders of Adjectives of three Terminations, the Grammar gives this Rule:

At si tres  
variant  
voces--

*At si tres variant voces, sacer ut, sacra, sacrum;  
Vox prima est mas, altera femina, tertia neutrum.*

8. Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule?

An. The meaning of this Rule is this: That if an Adjective have in any case Three Terminations, under the first of those Terminations it is Masculine; under the second Feminine, and under the third Neuter; as *hic sacer, hæc sacra, hoc sacrum.*

¶ In the declining of Adjectives of three Terminations, the Terminations are accounted Three in the oblique cases; if betwixt the Masculine and Neuter there come a feminine of a Termination differing from both; as *boni, bonæ, boni; bono, bonæ, bono; bonum, bonam, bonum, &c.*

The de-  
clining of  
the words  
in Adje-  
ctiva u-  
nam--

9. Qu. How are the words in these Rules declin-  
ed?

An. The words in these Rules for the Genders of Adjectives are declined thus: *Hic hæc & hoc scilicet, scilicet; hic hæc & hoc audax, audacis; Hic & hæc omnis & hoc omne, omnis; Sacer sacra sacrum; Sacra sacra sacri, &c.*

And thus far of the Rules which the Grammar gives touching the Genders of Adjectives.

CHAP. XXIII.

1. Q. **D**oth the Grammar besides the Rules for the Genders of Adjectives, say any thing further touching the Declining of any Adjectives?

An. The Grammar gives two Rules, or rather Notes about the Declining of two sorts of Adjectives; the first is of those that in one Termination are declined with the Articles of two Genders; the second is of those that in one Gender are declined with two Terminations.

2. Q. Which is the Rule, or Note about those Adjectives that being of one Termination are declined with the Articles of two Genders?

An. The Rule or note touching those Adjectives, that being of one Termination are declined with the Articles of two Genders is this:

*At sunt quæ flexu prope substantiva vocares;  
Adjectiva tamen natura usuque reperta:  
Talia sunt pauper, puer, cum degener, uber,  
Et dives locuples, sospes, comes, atque superstes,  
Cum paucis aliis, quæ Lectio iusta docebit.*

*At sunt  
quæ flexu  
prope sub-  
stantiva.*

3. Q. What is the meaning of this Rule or Note?

An. The meaning of this Rule or Note is this: That there are some words of one Termination in the Nominative case, which are used to be declined with two Articles, as if they were Substantives of the common of two Genders, which yet in their own nature, and in the use of them also in Authours, are Adjectives; as *hic & hac pauper*.

¶ That the most of these words are Adjectives by nature appears, because they stand in need of a Substantive, wherein their signification may be determined. For having named *pauper* poor, unless some subject

subject be expressed, or understood, whereto this poverty doth agree, there can be no understanding of it, whereof he speaks that names that word. He may mean, a poor man, or a poor house, or poor land, &c. And therefore there is need of a Substantive with that word, to determine what it is that is called poor. And that they are Adjectives also in their use, that is, that they are sometimes (some of them at least) used Adjectively; I shall shew in the handling of the several particulars of them. And there are two notes of a Noun's being an Adjective, the one is if it be joyned with Substantives; the other if it forms degrees of comparison; to most of these, one, if not both these notes agree.

*Pauper* is found in Authours joyned with Substantives both of the Feminine and Neuter Gender. Thence in *Virgil. An. 12. Pauper domus*; and *An. 6. Terra pauper*. *Ovid. 2. de Ponto El. 5. Vena paupere*. Again in the Neuter Gender, *Lucan. 1. 10. Pone ducis priscos, & nomina pauperis avi Fabricios*. *Virg. Ecl. Pauperis & zuguri congestum cespitem culmen*. *Hor. l. 1. Ep. 10. Licet sub paupere tecto, & Reges & regum vitâ præcurrere amicos*. Besides it forms both the degrees of comparison. *Pauperior* is found in *Ovid. 4. de Ponto Eleg. 2. Vena pauperiore fluit carmen*. *Pauperimus*; in *Plin. l. 24. c. 1. Quum remedia vera quotidianis pauperimus quisque cænet, &c.*

*Puber* is joyned with a Substantive Masculine, in *Cic. de Orat. Perf. Pater filium puberem habens. Id. de Offic. cum parentibus puberes filii non lavantur*. With a Feminine in *Liv. l. 1. ab urbe. Id imperium ei ad puberem ætatem mansit*. With a Neuter in *Virg. An. 12. Puberibus caulem foliis & flore comantem*.

*Degener* is joyned with a Masculine Substantive, in *Virg. An. 4. Degeneres animos timor arguit*. With a Feminine in *Tacit. l. 11. Nec irritæ aut degeneres insidiæ sacre adversus transfugam*. With a Neuter in *Gell. l. 12. c. 1. Corpusque & animum bene ingeniatis primordiis*



*mordis inchoatum infitio degenerique alimento lactis alieni corrumpere.*

*uber* is joyned with a Masculine Substantive, in *Lucret. l. 6. Sequitur gravis imber & huber*, for so 'tis read sometimes. *Cic. de Nat. Deor. Motus animi ad explicandum ornandumque uberes.* With a Feminine in *Cato 2 Orig. Ita res huber fuit, antequam vassassent legiones Cic. ad Qu. Fr. Multis locis aquam profluentem & eam uberem vidi.* Thence is formed a comparative, *uberior. Juv. 1 Sat. Et quando uberior viti-orum copia?* And a Superlative *uberrimus. Ovid. Met. 4. Morus niveis uberrima pomis.*

*Dives* is joyned with a Masculine Substantive, in *Hor. 2. Carm. Od. 18. Nulla certior tamen Rapacis Orci sine destinata Aula divitem manet herum.* With a Feminine in *Virgil. Dives triumphis terra.* With a Neuter in *Tibull. l. 1. El. 9. Aurum dives. Val. Max. l. 2. Dives & praprens natura regnum scrutatus. Ovid. 2 Trist. Divitis ingenii est ingenia Caesaris affa scribere. Id. 1 Fast. Pietas pro divite grato est munere. Id. 1 de Arte Am. Addidit externo munere dives opus.* Thence is formed a Comparative *divitior. Plaut. Aul. Quadrilibrem aulam auro onustam habeo: Quis me est divitior?* *Cic. de Orat. Inde ille licentior & divitior fluxit Dithyrambus. Martial. l. 1. Romanum propius divitiasque forum.*

*Locuples* is joyned with a Masculine Substantive: *Cic. 4 Verr. Homo domi suae cum primis locuples.* With a Feminine *Cic. 3 de Orat. Locuples oratio, dives verborum & abundans.* And saith *Priscian l. 4.* With a Neuter, but without an example. Thence is formed the Comparative *Locupletior. Hor. 1 Serm. 1. Sat. festinantii semper locupletior obstat,* and the Superlative *locupletissimis. Cic. 2 de Div. Jam Pythagoras & Plato locupletissimi authores, quoniam somnis certiora videamus, &c.*

*Sospes* is joyned with a Masculine Substantive in *Virg. An. 11. Natus sospes. Hor. Carm. Secul. Jussa pars mutare lares & urbem sospite cursu.* With a Feminine. *Ovid. Met. 10. Domus sospes ab incurfu. Hor. 1 Carm. Od. 37. Vix una navis sospes ab ignibus.* With a Neuter. *Juven. Sat. 13. Depositum tibi sospes erit.*

*Comes* rather seems to be a Substantive, being read so often both alone, without an Adjective, and with an Adjective joyned to it. See above the fourth exception from the third special Rule. In *Horace* indeed, 3 *Carm. Od. 11.* is read, *Tu potes tigres comite/que Sylvas ducere*; and in *Lucan. l. 5. Si fortuna feret, rerum nos summa sequetur, Imperiumq; comes.* But these prove it not an Adjective, because it is plain that in both places there is an Enallage of a Noun Substantive for a Participle; *Horace* saying *Comites sylvas*, for *Sylvas comitantes*; and *Lucan. Imperium comes*, for *imperium comitans*; as *Virgil* said; *Hinc populum late regem*, for *regnantem*.

*Superstes* is joyned with a Masculine Substantive in *Hor. 3 Carm. 9 Od. Si parcent puero fata superstiti*; With a Feminine, *Hor. ib. Si parcant anime fata superstiti. Id. 2 Carm. Od. 2. Illum aget penna metuente solvi Fata superstes.* With a Neuter, *Ovid. 3 Amor. Post mea mansurum fata superstes opus.*

4. Qu. The Grammar in that expression com paucis aliis, intimates that there are some other words here not named of like nature with these, can you name any of them?

An. To these words may be added *cicur, hebes, memor, compot, impos, inops, &c.*

¶ *Cicur* is joyned with a Feminine Substantive. *Festus, Cicur Sus, ex apro & scropha domestica. Cic. 2. de Nat. D. or. Quæ verò & quàm varia genera testiarum*

*arum, vel cicurum, vel ferarum.* With a Neuter. *Varr. Ling. Lat. 1. 6. Cicurare manus facere, quod enim a fero discretum id dicitur cicur: Et ideo dictum, cicur ingenium obtineo, mansuetum.*

*Hebes* is joyned with a Masculine Substantive, *Cic. 2. de Div. Videsne Epicurum quem habetem & rudem dicere solent Stoici?* With a Feminine. *Cic. 4. de Fin. Hebes acies est cuiusdam oculorum, corpore alius languescit.* With a Neuter in *Lucret. 1. 4. Cor hebes, Cic. 10. Philip. Scilicet hæc Pansa aut non vidit (hebeti enim ingenio est) aut negligit?*

*Memor* is joyned with a Substantive Masculine. *Ter. And 1. 5. Memorem me dices esse & gratum.* With a Feminine *Virg. 4 Georg. Ventura hycnis memores apes.* With a Neuter *Virg. Æn. 9. Nulla dies unquam memori vos eximet avo. Id. An. 4. Tum siquod non æquo fœdere amantes curæ numen habet iustumque memorque precatur.*

*Compos* is joyned with a Substantive Masculine. *Liv. 3. ab urbe. Prædaque ingenti compotem exercitum reducunt.* With a Feminine *Id. 1. 5. bell. Pun. In suos quæque simul corpore atque animo vix prægaudio compotes effusa.* With a Neuter, *Sæd. Agam. Tibi gradevi-lassique Senes compote voto reddunt grates.* So *Impos* is Masculine in *Plaut. Truc. Mihi que ignoscas quod animi impos vini vitio fecerim.* Fem. in *Plaut. Cassn. Eipite quæso isti gladium, quæ sui est impos animi.*

*Inops* is joyned with a Masculine. *Cic. de clar. Orat. Non Tardus sententiis, non inops verbis.* With a Feminine *Cic. 3 de Finib. Quod nobis in hac inopi lingua non conceditur.* With a Neuter *Cic. 5 Verr. Inops & exhaustum ararium.*

Hither also may be added the Compounds of *Color*, whereof some are read in the Feminine and some in the Neuter. *Decolor, Claudian. 4. Consul. Honor.*

*Decolor iratos attollat Cynthia vultus. Bicolor. Pers. Bicolor membrana. Plin. l. 10. c. 5. Intus omne ovum volucrum bicolor. Id. l. 19. c. 1. Littora versicoloria.*

5. Q<sup>1</sup>. How are the words in this Rule or Note declined?

The declining of the words in *At sunt quæ flexu prope.*

*An.* The words in this Rule or Note are declined thus: *Hic & hæc pauper, pauperis; hic & hæc puer, pueris; hic & hæc degener, degeneris; hic & hæc uber, uberis; hic & hæc dives, divitis; hic & hæc locuples, locupletis; hic & hæc sospes, sospis; hic & hæc comes, comitis; hic & hæc superstes, superstitis.* Which if any man shall decline with *hoc* too, I have nothing to say against him (*comes* only excepted) but that it hath not formerly been the use in Schools so to decline them.

## CHAP. XXIV.

1. Q<sup>1</sup>. **W**hich is the Rule, or Note touching Objectives that in one Gender are declined with two Terminations?

*An.* The Rule or Note touching the Adjectives which have two Terminations in one Gender, is this:

*Hæc propriam* *Hæc Proprium quendam sibi flexum asciscere gaudent:*  
*quendam--* *Campester, volucer, celebr, celer, atque saluber:*  
*At alacer, sylvester* *Junge pedester, equester, & acer, junge paluster,*

2. Q<sup>1</sup>. What is the meaning of this Rule or Note?

*An.* The meaning of this Rule or Note is this: That there are some Adjectives, which beside one common Termination in [ *is* ] for both Masculine and Femi-

Feminine, have another also in [er] for the Masculine only, as *campester* and *campestris*, whereof *campester* is only Masculine, *campestris* common to both Masculine and Feminine.

¶ *Acer* anciently was used as a Feminine. *Nov. in Ca. m. vel. Pub. Fames acer auget hostibus. Enn. l. 16. Astatem autumnus sequitur, post acer hyems.* But by *Priscians* time we find that [er] was grown to be the more usual termination for the Masculine, and [is] for the Feminine.

3. Q. How are these words varied?

Ans. The Grammar tells you, *At hæc tu sic variabis, Hic celer, hæc celeris, neutro hoc celere: Aut aliter sic, Hic atque hæc celeris, rursus hoc celere est tibi neutrum.*

4. Q. What is the meaning of the Grammar herein?

Ans. The meaning of the Grammar herein is to shew, that there are two waies of declining these words; the one way is as Adjectives of three Terminations, [er] [is] and [e] whereof the first is Masculine, the second is Feminine, and the third Neuter; as *hic celer, hæc celeris, hoc celere*; the other way is as Adjectives of two Terminations, [is] and [e] whereof the first is Common, the second Neuter; as *hic & hæc celeris, & hoc celere.*

5. Q. How decline you the words in this Rule or Note?

Ans. I decline the words in this Rule or note thus: N. *Hic campester, hæc campestris, hoc campestre*; Gen. *Campestris*; Or thus: N. *Hic & hæc campestris, & hoc campestre*, Gen. *Campestris*. Nom. *hic volucer, hæc volucris, hoc volūcre*; Gen. *volucris*. Or thus: N. *Hic & hæc volucris, & hoc volūcre*, G. *volucris*. N. *Hic celebris, hæc celebris, hoc celebres*, G. *Celebris*. Or thus: N. *Hic & hæc celebris, & hoc celebre*;

G. *celebris*. N. *Hic celer*, *hæc celeris*, *hoc celere*; G. *celeris*. Or thus: N. *Hic & hæc celeris*, & *hoc celere*; G. *celeris*. N. *Hic saluber*, *hæc salubris*, *hoc salubre*; G. *salubris*. Or thus: N. *Hic & hæc salubris*, & *hoc salubre*; G. *salubris*. N. *Hic pedester*, *hæc pedestris*, *hoc pedestre*; G. *Pedestris*. Or thus: N. *Hic & hæc pedestris* & *hoc pedestre*; G. *pedestris*. N. *Hic equester*, *hæc equestris*, *hoc equestre*, G. *equestris*; Or thus: N. *Hic & hæc equestris* & *hoc equestre*; G. *equestris*. N. *Hic acer*, *hæc acris*, *hoc acre*; G. *acris*; Or thus: N. *Hic & hæc acris* & *hoc acre*. G. *acris*. N. *Hic paluster*, *hæc palustris*, *hoc palustre*. G. *palustris*. Or, N. *Hic & hæc palustris* & *hoc palustre*, Gen. *palustris*. N. *Hic alacer*, *hæc alacris*, *hoc alacre*, Gen. *alacris*. Or thus: N. *Hic & hæc alacris* & *hoc alacre*, G. *Alacris*. N. *Hic Sylvester*, *hæc sylvestris*, *hoc sylvestre*, G. *sylvestris*. Or, N. *Hic & hæc sylvestris*, & *hoc sylvestre*, G. *Sylvestris*.

6. Qu. what is the meaning of the last clause of these Rules, *Sunt quæ deficiunt genere Adjectiva notanda*, De quibus atque aliis alibi tibi mentio fiet?

*Sunt quæ deficiunt genere--*

An. The meaning of that concluding clause of these Rules, *Sunt quæ deficiunt genere adjectiva notanda*, &c. is this: That there are some Adjectives which are defective in Gender, to be met with, and observed in the reading of Authours.

¶ Such are *Vestrix* and *ultrix*, which being Adjectives by nature, joyned with Substantives like Adjectives in the singular number, and found in the plural number in divers Terminations joyned with Substantives of divers Genders, yet in the singular number are only of the Feminine Gender, and in the plural only Feminine and Neuter. *Lucan. Vestrix causa Diis placuit, sed vestra Catoni. Virg. Æn. II. Hac*  
cape

*cape & ultricem pharetra deprome sagittam. Sen. Herc. Fur. Dextra ultricis fusus Lycus. Hor. 3 Carm. 3 Od. Ducente victrices catervas me. Claud. 4 Consul. Honor. Astringunt hederis victricibus Indos. In Priscian is read, Victricia tollite signa. Virg. An. 3. Res Agamemnonias victriciaque arma secutus. Sil. 1. 2. Mandabat Syriis ultricia bella futuri.* And if any man will place here those Adjectives, which a little before our Author saith *flexu prope substantiva vocares*, and call them *defective Adjectives*, as those in the Rule following may be called *Redundants*, in as much as they are rarely, and but in some cases found in the Neuter, or perhaps in the Feminine Gender, he may for me.

---



1957-1958

7-2-1968

1890-1891

... ..

1940

1. The first step is to identify the problem or question that needs to be answered. This involves understanding the context and the specific requirements of the task.

0-7698-0000-0

1. The first step is to identify the problem or question that needs to be answered. This involves understanding the context and the specific requirements of the task.

10/10/10

1. The first step is to identify the problem or question that needs to be answered. This involves understanding the context and the specific requirements of the task.

AN  
EXPLANATION  
OF THE  
RULES  
OF THE

ROYAL GRAMMAR.

Touching *Heteroclisies*, or Ir-  
regular Declining of Nouns, as  
they are delivered in Mr. Robinson's  
Rules commonly called

*Quæ genus, &c.*

By way of *Question* and *Answer*

Opening the meanings of the Rules  
with great plainness to the under-  
standing of Children of meanest  
capacity.

With choice *Critical Observations* on the  
same, from the best extant *Authors* and *Gram-  
marians*. For the amending of the *Mistakes*, and supplying  
of the *Defects* thereof.

---

By WILLIAM WALKER, B. D.

LONDON,

Printed for Robert Pawlet at the Sign of the Bible in Chan-  
cery Lane near Fleet-street, and Francis Heley at the end  
of Chancery Lane next Holborn. 1670. P 2

EXPLANATION

RULES

FOR THE

USE OF

THE

ART

OF

THE

ART

OF

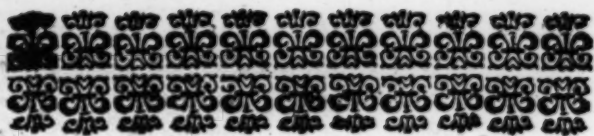
THE

ART

OF

THE

ART



To the Right Reverend  
Father in God, *Benjamin* by  
Divine Providence, Lord Bishop  
of Ely: *William Walker* Rector of  
*Colsterworth*, wisheth all  
happinefs.

*My Lord,*

**H**aving finished this ensuing Volume  
of my Grammatical Commenta-  
ries touching the Heteroclies of  
Nouns; and being to publish it to  
the world, my inclinations were strong to a  
Dedication of it to Your Name and Ho-  
nour: And good reason, any one would think:  
For your Lordship being exalted to Great Digi-  
nity in the Church, and being in a high capa-  
city to gratifie and oblige, it can be no wonder  
that courtship should be made unto you. But that's  
not my reason, but a much better, even the consi-  
deration of that great worth that is so known to  
be in you, that it may safely, without fear of  
censure for flattery, be imputed to you, and for  
which your Lordship hath had the Honours of  
Scholars, the Respects of Nobles, and the fa-

## The Epistle Dedicatory.

yours of Kings, so that you as yet live a conspicuous instance of Honoured Goodness. Now so high merit challenging, as a due tribute, respect and honour from all, I would not willingly be wanting in paying to so eminent Vertue its deserved honour and respect. And that's one Reason. But I have another still, if not a better; and that is the consideration of Particular Obligation upon me: For your Lordship is before-hand with me. You have conferred an Ecclesiastical Preterment upon me; you have placed me a Prebendary in the Cathedral Church of Lincolne (late your Honours Episcopal See) and thereby have made me honourable in mine own Country and City; in the place of my Nativity, and Education; and thereby having given me the opportunity of gratifying, if not obliging my Relations and Acquaintance: and now this is (and much more than this, were I able to do it, would be) but a necessary effect of a just Gratitude. I could not, without a brand of Ingratitude, let so great an obligation upon me go unremembered, though my condition be such, that I must be necessitated thereby to let it go unrewarded. But reward is a thing that as you look not to receive from me, so I shall not look to pay to you, but leave it to a Better, who can do it better, even to God, who one day will (and I shall pray that he may) reward your temporal Vertues with eternal Honours. And now I have given you a second Reason. There

## The Epistle Dedicatory.

is yet a third behind; and fittingly doth it come behind, as having, like all addressees else now adayes, something of design in it: and (because I like plain dealing best) I will plainly and ingenuously confess it. And it is the consideration of that Protection, which your Name will be to my Book, and that Acceptance, which the Dedication of it to your Honour will bespeak for it in the minds of all Lovers of Grammatical Learning. And now, not to trouble your Lordship with further impertinencie, I beg of you your pardon for this boldness to prefix your great and honourable Name before so little and so mean a Work; and I beg of God for you the continuance of your Life and Health, and the encrease of all Honour and happiness upon you both here, and in Heaven, and so rests

From Colsterworth  
August the 2d.  
1669.

My Lord,  
Your Honours most humble  
and most obliged  
Servant,

WILLIAM WALKER.

DE



D E

# *Nominibus Heteroclitis;*

Rob. Robinson.

---

## CHAP. I.

1. Qu. **I**s the Rule of Declining of Nouns uniformly observed in the Declining of all Nouns, or is there any deviation from it?

An. The Rule of Declining of Nouns is not uniformly observed in the Declining of all Nouns, but there are some, which in some respect are otherwise Declined than according to Rule.

2. Qu. What are those Nouns called, which are Declined otherwise than according to Rule?

An. Quæ genus, aut flexum variant, quæcunque novato Ritu deficiunt, superantve, Heteroclitæ sunt.

3. Qu. What is the meaning of that Rule?

An. The meaning of this Rule is this, that there are some words, which in respect of some Variation, Excess, or Defect, are otherwise Declined than according



gording to Rule, and that those words are called *Heteroclitis*.

¶ From *ἑτερος* otherwise and *κλιτυ* declined, is formed the Greek word *ἑτερόκλητον*, and thence the Latine *Heteroclitum*, which we English *Heteroclit*. *Heteroclitis* therefore properly and peculiarly so called, are those Nouns which do deviate from the common way of Declining, being in some respect otherwise Declined than according to Rule: As when Nouns of one Declension in the singular Number, are of another Declension in the plural; or do borrow cases from other words. For instance, some words in the singular Number are of the second Declension, in the plural of the third. As *hoc iugerum iugeri*, &c. *hæc iugera, iugerum, iugeribus* from the old word *iuger*, as *Vossius* saith, or *iugus*, as *Priscian*. And yet *Varro* de R. R. l. 1. c. 10. hath *iugeri* in the plural Number. *Nam in Hispaniâ ulteriore metiuntur iugis, in Campania, versibus: apud nos in agro Romano ac Latino iugeri*. Again, some in the singular Number are of the third Declension, in the plural, of the Second, As *hoc vas vasis, vasi*, &c. *hæc vasa, vasorum, vasis*, &c. Whence *Cicero* l. 6. ad Att. *Quid te in vasis fœtilibus appositurum tatem?* So *Cæsar* 3 v. c. *Noctu neque conclamatis quidem vasis flumen transiit*, Which yet are remains of *hoc vasum* in the singular Number antiently in use. Whence *Cato* in *Gell.* l. 13. c. 22. *Neque mihi adificatio, neque vasum, neque vestimentum ullum est manu pretiosum*. *Plaut. Truc.* 1. 1. *Aut aliquot vasum argenteum, aut vasum abeneum*. Lastly, some words are declined with cases borrowed from other words: As *Jupiter, Jovis, Jovi*, &c. from the old word *Jovis*. Whence *Cæcil.* in *Priscian* l. 6. *Nam novus quidem deus repertus est Jovis. Aëtius* also *ibid.* *Lucifera lampade exurat Jovis arietem*. Whence *Plaut* in *Casn.* *Repente ut emorianetur humani Joves*. See more in *Voss.* de *Analog.* l. 1. c. 48.

So

So *Iter itineris itineri*, &c. from the old word *itiner*, now out of use, but anciently used by *Plaut. in Merc.* *Quin tu ergo itiner exequi meum me finis?* *Navius* in *Priscian* l. 6. said *iteris*, *Ignoti iteris sumus*, *tute scis*. But both *itiner*, and *iteris* long since have been disused. Hither may be referred *jecur jecoris*, *vel jecinoris*, from the old word *jecinus*, or *jecinor*. Whence *Livie* l. 30. *Caput jecinori defuit*. But it must be observed that our Authour useth the word *Heteroclit* by a *Synecdoche* of the *Species* for any sort of irregular Nouns.

4. Qu. How many sorts of *Heteroclit*s be there?

An. There be three sorts of *Heteroclit*s; *Variantia*, *Deficientia*, *Redundantia*; *Variants*, *Defectives*, *Redundants*.

¶ A Rule is three waies deviated from; *First*, By doing otherwise than it requires a thing to be done. *Secondly*, By not doing all that it requires to be done. *Thirdly*, By doing more than it doth require. And suitably, there are three sorts of *Heteroclit*s; or words that deviate from the Rule of Declining; some that *vary* from it; some that come *short* of it; and some that exceed it.

## CHAP. II.

1. Qu. Which sort of *Heteroclit*s is first handled?

An. The first sort of *Heteroclit*s that is handled are the *Variantia genus*, those that vary from the Rule of Declining, by *varying the Gender* with which they are Declined.

### *Variantia Genus.*

¶ There are two sorts of *Variants*: Some that vary their

their Gender, and some that vary their Declining. Those that vary their Gender are properly called *Heterogenea*: Those that vary their Declining are properly called *Heteroclitæ*. But the word *Heteroclitæ* is here taken in a more large acception, so as to comprehend all sorts of irregularities in Declining.

2. Qu. Which is the general Rule for Variants?

An. The general Rule for Variants is this: *Hæc genus ac partim flexum variantia cernit.*

*Hæc genus ac partim flexum.*

3. Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule?

An. The meaning of this Rule is this, That there are some words, which vary their Gender and Declining also.

The meaning of the Authour in *partim flexum variantia*, either is, that of the words contained in these Rules of Variants, part do vary their Declining, though they vary not their Gender: Or else that those that do vary their Genders do also vary their Declining in receiving different Terminations to their cases, according to the difference of their Genders. And of these the Authour reckons up six sorts. (1) *Feminines singular and Neuters plural.* (2) *Neuters singular and Feminines plural.* (3) *Masculines singular and Neuters plural.* (4) *Neuters singular and Masculines plural.* (5) *Masculines singular; and both Masculines and Neuters plural.* (6) *Neuters singular, and both Masculines and Neuters plural.*

### CHAP. III.

1. Qu. Which is the first Special Rule of Variants?

An. The first Special Rule of Variants is this: *Pergamus, infelix urbs T. ðum, Pergama gignit, Quod ( nisi plurali careat ) facit ipsa superlex: Singula famineis, neutris pluralia gaudent.*

*Pergamus infelix urbs.*

2. Qu.

2. Q<sup>y</sup>. What is the meaning of this Rule?

An. The meaning of this Rule is this: That *Pergamus* and *Supellex* are Feminines in the singular Number, and Neuters in the plural.

¶ What our Author here saith concerning *Pergamus* and *Pergama* is said also by *Dionedes* and others. But whether *Pergamus* and *Pergama* signifie the same place, may be matter of doubt. That *Pergama* signifies *Troy*, or the Tower of that, is so ordinary, that it is unquestionable. But that *Pergamus* signifies the same, wants proof. That another Town different from that, the seat of the *Attalick* Kings, where *Gallene* was born, and whence *Velum* or *Parchment* was called *Pergamena* i. e. *Charta Pergamena*, as being there found out by King *Attalus*, proves it not. In the mean time there is proof enough, that there hath been and is such a word as *Pergamon*, or *Pergamum* signifying *Troy*, whence *Pergama* is regularly formed. *Plaut. Bacch. 4. 9. Priami patriam Pergamum divina manitum manu subigerunt. Sen. Agam. 2. 3. Pergamum omne Dorica cecidit face. Voss. Etymolog. Lat. p. 55. Danes. sch. p. 173.*

*Supellex* contracted, as *Ramus* thinks, from *Supellectilia* in use, as *Priscian* testifies, among the Ancients, wants the plural Number. Yet there is *Supellectilia* in the plural Number, but that formed from *hoc supellectile* which *Vossius* thinks they used for *Supellex*. But *Supellex* being only now in use in the singular Number, and *Supellectilia* in the plural, and the signification of both being the same, it will be no great error to let them both passe for one irregular Noun. *Ram. L. Gram. p. 58. Voss. Etym. Lat. p. 58. Danes. Schol. p. 173.*

3. Q<sup>y</sup>. May any other words of like nature be added hither?

An. Hither may be added *Hierosolyma* and *carbasus* which

which are Feminines singular, and Neuters plural.

¶ Hierosolyma in the singular Number is a Feminine in Cic. pro Flacco. Cum gurum, Judaeorum nomine, quotannis ex Italia, & omnibus nostris provinciis Hierosolymam portari solet. In Plin. l. 5. c. 14. It is a plural Neuter. In qua fuere Hierosolyma longe clarissima urbium Orientis.

Carbasus is a Feminine singular in Propert. l. 4. Exhibuit viros carbasus alba foci. But a Neuter plural in Ovid. Met. 11. Totaque malo Carbasa deducit venientesque excipit auras.

Animans hath been thought fit to be added hither. But Vossius saith, that even when it is Substantively taken, it is of all Genders: and so it is especially in the plural Number. Hence Cic. de un. A quo enim animante omnes reliquos continere vellet animantes, hunc ea forma figuravit, qua--- Again, Cic. de Nat. De Animantium alia corporeis testis sunt, alia vitiis. Id. 1. de Leg. Nam cum ceteras animantes abjecisset ad pastum solum hominem erexit. Lastly, Plin. in his Proemio his seventh Book. Denique cetera animalia in suo genere probe degunt. Alvar. p. 186. Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 3. Dancs. Schol. p. 168.

4. Qu. How are the words of this Rule declined?

Ans. The words of this Rule are declined thus. Si. The Declining of the words of this Rule.  
Hac Pergamus Pergami; P. Hac Pergama, Pergamorum.  
S. Hac supellex supellectilia; P. Hac supellectilia, supellectilium, &c.

## CHAP. IV.

1. Qu. Which Rule of Variants doth our Authour handle in the second place?

Ans. In the second place our Authour delivers this Rule.  
Dac

**Dat prior  
his nu-  
merus-**

*Dat prior his numerus neutrum genus, alter utrumque, Rastrum cum freno, filum, simul atque capistrum.*

**2. Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule?**

*Ans.* The meaning of our Authour in this Rule is this, That these four words *rastrum*, *frenum*, *filum*, and *capistrum* are of the Neuter Gender in the singular Number, and both Masculine and Neuter in the plural.

*¶* *Rastri* in the plural Number is ordinary. *Ter. Heaut. Iffos rastros interea depono. Ib. Mibi illæc v. id ad rastros res rediit. Virg. Ecl. 4. Non rastros patitur humus, non vinea falcem. Rastra* is also read in *Juven. 15 Sat. Cum rastra & sarcula tantum assueti coquere.* But it is so rare and unusual, that *rastri* is better and safer used. Of *raster* came *rastri*, as *rastra* of *rastrum*, saith *Vossius*.

*Fræni* is read in *Senec. Ep. 41. Non faciunt meliorem equum aurei fræni. Virg. 3 Georg. Et stabulo fræni audire sonantes. Plin. 1. 7. c. 56. Frænos & strataeq. quorum Pelethronium. Fræna* is read in *Virg. 3 Georg. Ac neque eos jam fræna virum, nec verbera seque. Ovid. Trist. 1. 1. El. 3. Cervicis rigida fræna remittit equo.* But *fræna* is of *frænum*; and *fræni* of *frænus* now not to be found. *Voss. de Anal. 1. 1. c. 142.*

*Fila* is ordinary. *Hor. 2 Carm. Od. 3. Dum res & ætas & scærorum Fila trium patiuntur atra.* But *filæ*, if it be any where, is rare. *Phocas* out of *Lucan* cites this. *Traxerunt torti magicâ vertigine filæ.* But *Vossius* saith that *torti filæ* there are the Genitive case singular governed of *Vertigine*. And if so, then no *filæ* in the plural Number. *Voss. de Analog. 1. 1. c. 36. Capistra* is cited by *Stephanus* out of *Cato*; *capistra quinque.* But *capistri* you will hardly meet with.

**3. Qu. How are the words of this Rule declined?**

The Declining of the words of this Rule.

*Ans.* The words of this Rule are declined thus: *Hoc rastrum, rastri; Hi rastri [ & hæc rastra ] rastrorum; Hoc*

*Hoc frænum fræni; Hi fræni, & hæc fræna, fræno-  
rum; hoc filum filii; hæc fila, filorum; hoc capistrum  
capistræ; hæc capistræ capistrorum.*

## CHAP. V.

1. Qu. **W**hat Rule of Variants is  
handled in the third place?

Ans. The third Rule of Variants that our Authour  
handles is that of Neuters singular and Masculines plu-  
ral; and it is this:

*Argos item & cælum sunt singula neutra: sed audi,  
Mascula duntaxat cælos vocitabis & Argos.*

*Argos item  
& cælum-*

2. Q. What is the meaning of this Rule?

Ans. The meaning of this Rule is this: That (though  
*frænum* have in the plural number both *fræna* and  
*frænos* [ *quopæcto & cætera formant* ] as the rest of  
the words in the former rule are supposed to have two  
terminations also in the plural number, one a Masculine  
and the other a Neuter, yet) *Argos* and *cælum* in the  
singular Number, are of the Neuter Gender, but in  
the plural are only of the Masculine Gender.

¶ Touching *Argos*, *Phocas*, *Stephanus*, *Farnaby*,  
all agree with our Authour, that it is *Hoc Argos*, &  
*bi Argi*. But I meet not yet with any example of its be-  
ing Masculine in the plural; which yet it may well e-  
nough be for all that; though the fore-named Authours  
produce no authority.

*Cæli* in the plural is from *Cælus* in the singular, which  
*Ennius* hath, as *Charysius* l. 1. tells us, *Cælusq; pro-  
fundus*. And it may seem that *cæla* hath also been used.  
Hence *Cicero*. l. 9. Ep. 26. *Ille Baro [ seu varo, aut  
varro, hoc est fatuus ] reputabat quasitum, unum cæ-  
lum esset, an innumerabilia, i.e. cæla. Voss. de Ana-  
log. l. 1. c. 37. Danes. Schol. p. 174.*

*Sifer* a Neuter in the singular is found to have *siferes*  
in



in the plural. *Plin. l. 20. c. 5. Sifer erraticum salis simile est & effectui.* and a little after *Hicetius ideo stomacho utile videri dixit, quoniam nemo tres siferes edendo continuaret.* Hence Mr. *Danef.* adds it to this sort of words, that are Neuters singular, Masculines plural. But by this authority the Gender of it in the plural cannot be known. All that can be, must be gathered from the Analogy which it holdeth with the third special Rule, according to which, those that increase flat or short in their Genitive are Masculines. *Danef. Schol. p. 174. Voss. de Anal. l. 1. c. 26.*

3. Q. How are the words of this Rule declined?

An. The words of this Rule are declined thus: *Hoc cælum cæli; Hi cæli, cælorum; Hoc Argos Argi; Hi Argi, Argorum.*

## CHAP. VI.

1. Q. **W**hat Rule of Variants doth our Authour handle in the fourth place?

An. The fourth Rule of Variants that our Authour handles is that of Neuters singular and Feminines plural; and it is this- (hæc sunt

*Nundinum Nundinum & hinc epulum, quibus addito balneum: & hinc e- Neutra quidem primo, muliebria rite secundo.*  
*epulum.-*

2. Q. What is the meaning of this Rule?

An. The meaning of this Rule is this: That these three words *Nundinum, epulum* and *balneum* are Neuters in the singular Number, and Feminines in the plural.

¶ *Nundina* is reckoned among those that are alwaies plural by *Charisius, Phocas, Diomedes, Priscian, D. Augustine, Consentius, Alcuinus, Donatus* and *Stephanus*. This true *Nundina* is read in the singular Number; but then it is the proper name of a certain Roman Goddess, which took that name a *nono nascensium die*. But that there is *nundinum*

*nundinum* in the singular *Nonius* shews out of *Varro*, and *Lucilius*. That of *Liv.* 3. *ab urbe, Comitia decemviris creandis in trinundinum indicta sunt*, some read dividedly in *trinum nundinum*, and indeed *Quintilian* l. 2. divides them, *sive non trino forte nundino promulgata, sive non idoneo die.* *Voss;* de *Anal.* l. 1. c. 43.

*Epulum* and *epula* are not only acknowledged by *Phocas* and *Diomedes*, but are ordinary in *Aurhours*. But whether they signify the same thing is inquireable. *Stephanus* thinks *epula* proper to a private feast; *epulum* to a publick. It may be much so; I suppose not always. However *epula* is formed of the obsolet singular *epula*, in *Lucil.* *Sat.* 16. *Idem epula cibus, atque epula Jovis omni potentis.* *Farnab. Voss.* de *Analog.* l. 1. c. 37. *Danef. Schol.* p. 175.

*Balneum* and *balnea* are acknowledged by *Diomedes*, and *Phocas*, *Donatus*, *Charisius*, and *Consentius*, who yet besides *balnea* will have *balnea* too, and that regularly formed. And rightly since, as *Vossius* saith, *balinea* and *balinea* signify the same thing, though they differ from *balineum*. *Balineum enim privatum erat quod singulo numero efferebant, quia domi uterque sexus eodem balineo uteretur. At balinea sive balinea erant publica: & plurative proferebantur, quia locus in quo viri lavabantur distinctus erat ab eo, in quo se feminae lavabant.* *Voss.* de *Analog.* l. 1. c. 37. *Charis.* l. 1. And however *Juvenal* hath authorized the use of *balnea* by using it himself, which our Author affirms, saying, *Balnea plurali Juvenalem constat habere.* And in his 1 *Satyr.* may be read *Et erudum paronem in balnea portas.* and in *Sat.* 12. *Nec pugillares desert in balnea raucus Testiculos.* So *Auson.* *Idyl.* 10. *Quid sulphurea substructa crepidne fumant Balnea?* *Steph. Thes. Lat. Danef. Schol.* p. 175.

One adds hither *exuvium exuvia*, but without an example of *exuvium* in the singular number, *Charisius* and *Phocas* reckon *exuvia* amongst those Feminines that are always plurals, Another adds *delicium delicie*,



Is reasonably to be thought, that the Plurals in *a* are formed of Singulars in *um*, in regard the Greeks did say *ὄρος*; *Μάωλον*; and by these terminations of *os* and *os*, they distinguished betwix Rivers and Mountains, saying, *πάρσιον* of a River, but *παρσίον* of a Mountain, as *Camerarius* on Ed. 10. observes out of *Eustath.* on *Homer Iliad B.*

Hither may be added *Pangæus*, which being a Masculine in the Singular Number, is a Neuter in the Plural. Hence *Statius*; *Ille Pangæa resultant Ismaraque.* Id. *Persuadunt inarata diu Pangæa juveni.* *Sæph. Voss.*

3. Qu. How are the words of this Rule declined? The De-

An. The Words of this Rule are declined thus, *Hic* clining of *Menalus Menali*; *Hæc Menala, Menalorum, Hic* Dindymus *Dindymi*; *Hæc Dindyma Dindymorum*; *Hic* Ismarus *Ismari*; *Hæc Ismara Ismarorum*; *Hic* Tartarus *Tartari*; *Hæc Tartara Tartarorum.* *Hic* Taygetus *Taygeti*; *Hæc Taygeta Taygetorum.* *Hic* Tenarus *Tenari*; *Hæc Tenara Tenarorum*; *Hic* Massicus *Massici*; *Hæc Massica Massicorum.* *Hoc* Gargarum *Gargari*; *Hæc Gargara Gargarorum.*

CHAP. VII.

1. Qu. Of what is the sixth Rule for Variants? and which is it?

An. The sixth Rule for Variants is of Masculines Singulars and Masculines and Neuters plural, and it is this. *At numerus genus his dabit alter utrumque, Sibilus atque locus, locus, & Campanus Avernus.* *At numerus genus his dabit;*

2. Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule?

An. The meaning of this Rule is this, that some words in the Singular Number, only Masculines are in the plural Number both Masculines and Neuters.

¶ *Sibilus* in the Masculine Singular is in *Virg. Aen. 5. Venientis Sibilus Austri.* *Sibila* in the Neuter plural

*Charifus* cites out of *Ovid*. *Sibila dant saniemque vomunt*; so out of *Cornel. sever.* *Et sua concordēs dant sibilata clara dracones*; so out of *Macer v Theriacon*, *Longo resonantia sibila collo.* *Charif. l. 1.* Of *Sibili* also in the Plural Number he gives an instance out of *Cic. 2 de Gloria.* *In Tusculanum mihi nunciabantur gladiatoris sibili.* If this will carry it for the use of *Sibili* in the plural Number, So: If not, I meet with no more. And *Phocas* hath only *hic sibilus*, and *hac sibila*, even where he hath *hic jocus*; *hi joci* & *hac joca*; *hic locus*; *hi loci* & *hac loca*. But *sibila* is from *sibilum* used by *Serenus*, as *Noxius* saith, in whom is *suave sibilum*. The word is used sometimes Adjectively: Hence *ora sibila* and *colla sibila* (in *Virg. An. 2. & Georg. 3.*) for *sibilantia*.

*Jocus* hath both *joci* and *joca* in the Plural number, as not only *Phocas*, *Charifus*, *Diomedes* and *Donatus* say, but Authors testify. *Martial. Consuevere jocos vestri quoque ferre triumphi.* *Cic. 2 de fin. At quicum joca essent, ut dicitur, quicum arcana, quicum occulta omnia?*

*Locus* appears also from Authors to have both *Loci* and *Loca*. *Virg. 1 An. Devenere locos, ubi nunc ingentia cernis-- A. Gell. l. 6. c. 6. Ex his locis in quibus periculum me tuebat in loca tutiora pervenerat.* But *loca* is from *locum* formerly in use, as it may appear by that of *Varro. l. 8. rer. divin. cited by Macrobi. l. 3. c. 4. Sicut locum, in quo figerent candelam, candelabrum appellatur; ita in quo deam ponerent delubrum appellatum.* *Dans. Farnab. Vos. de Analog. l. 1. c. 37.*

*Campanus Avernus*] *Campanus* is no example of the Rule, but an Adjective Local shewing where *Avernus* is. Of *Avernus* is read in the Plural Number *Averna.* *Virg. An. 3. & Averna sonantia sylvis.* But not *Averni*, that I yet meet withal. In the mean time this word is used Adjectively. Hence *Virg. Georg. 4. Terque fragor stagnis auditur Averni, Ovid. 10. Met. Donec Avernas exierit ualles.*

3. Q. How are the words of this Rule declined?

An. The words of this Rule are declined thus; The Declining of  
*Hic sibilus sibili*; [*Hi sibili &*] *hac sibila sibilorum*. the words  
*Hic locus loci*; *Hi loci &* *hac loca, locorum*. of this  
*Hic Avernus Avernus* Rule.  
*ni*; *Hac Averno Avernorum*.

And thus far of Heteroclits *Variants*; our proceeding is next unto Heteroclits *Defectives*.

CHAP. VIII.

DEFECTIVA.

1. Q. How many sorts of Defectives are there?

An. Properly there are three sorts of Defectives, First, such as are Defective in *Declension*, as being not declined at all; and therefore called *Actita* or *Indeclinabilia*. Secondly, such as are Defective in *Number*, as wanting the one, or the other of the two Numbers. Thirdly, such as are Defective in *Case*; as wanting some cases or cases in either or both Numbers. But our *Author* comprehending the first sort under the other two, divides the Defectives into two sorts, (1) such as are Defective in *Number*, and (2) such as are Defective in *case* saying—

*Quæ sequitur manca est numero casuum propago.*

¶ The *Actita* or *Indeclinabilia* are the same with *Aptotes*, whereof all are defective in case; and some also in number.

2. Q. What sort of Defectives doth our *Author* begin with? and what is the Rule for that sort he begins with?

An. Our *Author* begins with that sort of Defectives which are called *Aptotes*; and the Rule for them is this.

## APTOTA.

Quæ nul-  
lum vari-  
ant casum.  
Aptota  
sunt quæ à  
recto non  
variant  
casum.

*Quæ nullum variant casum, ut fas, nil, nihil, infans;  
Multa & in uisum i, ut sunt hæc cornuque genuq;  
Sic gummi, frugi; sic Tempe, tot, quot, & omnes  
Atribus ad centum numeros Aptota vocabitur.*

## 3. Q. What is the meaning of this Rule?

*An.* The meaning of this Rule is this, that such Nouns as vary not in any case from their Nominative, are Aptots.

¶ How hard it is to distinguish Aptots from Monoptots, he will find, that shall read the old Grammarians, in whom Aptots are put for Monoptots, and Monoptots for Aptots. See Cledonius, Priscian l. 5. Danes, Schel. l. 2. c. 7. Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 46. Though those are most properly to be accounted Aptots, which have no more but the one termination and signification of the Nominative, as *exer*, and *pois*, yet I account all those Aptots, which under the one termination of a Nominative Case, have the signification and construction of that and any one or more cases, and are neither varied into other terminations formed from themselves, however the signification or construction of the Noun do varie, nor do borrow for the supplying of their own defect those cases from other Nouns, which they have not of their own. *Hæc etiam à Græcis ἀπλόα dicuntur, quod à prima sui positione non cadunt.* Diomed. l. 1. de Simul. Nom. form. Casualib. For *Jupiter*, though it form no other case of its own from it self, yet is no Aptot, but an *Heteroclit*, because it borrows from *Jovis* such cases as it wants of its own, as was said before. Again those I account Monoptots, which have neither the termination, nor signification, nor construction of any more than one case, and that an oblique case, not the Ablative only, as Diomedes thinks, l. 1. but any other; and so *Sergius* in *Donati* edit. 2. defines, *Monoptota illa sunt, quibus unus tantum casus est ut sponte.* And I do



do not think the difference between *Aptots*, and *Monoptots*, to lyē in this, that *Monoptots* have one case only both of termination, and signification, whereas (what *Sergius* thinketh) *Aptots* in one case of termination have all cases of signification. For though this be so in some; *Dicimus enim* (saith *Charisius* l. 1.) in omnibus casibus, hoc nequam; huius nequam; huic nequam, hoc nequam, o nequam, ab hoc nequam. Yet in some it is otherwise. For hardly shall you read *fas* or *inſar*, or *Aſtu* in the signification of the Genitive, Dative or Ablative. And so may be judged of others. *Ex Aptotis* (saith *Daneſius*. Schol. l. 2. c. 7.) *ſas, inſar, neceſſe, git, ſrit, hir, vix alio caſu reperiuntur, quam Nominativo, & Accuſativo ſingulari.* Dr. *Hewkins* in his *Syntax*. p. 37. produces out of *Varro*, de L. Lat. l. 4. nihil joyned with the Verb *indigeo*. The Words are, *Dives à Divo, qui ut deus nihil indiget.* But his purpose in this quotation is to ſhew thereby that *indigeo* is conſtrued with an Accuſative caſe. Yea *expes* and *potis* are often read in the Nominative caſe *Hor. de Arte.--Fractis enarat expes Navibus--Tacit. l. 5. Max ubi expes vite fuit.* *Plaut. Amphit. Qui (malum intelligere qu'ſquam potis eſt?* *Ter. Adelph. 4. 1. Ita ſit, & iſtoe, ſi quid quid potis eſt rectius.* But let others that are more learned, judge and determine. In the mean time, becauſe it may be uſeful to Learners, I will give an account of the uſe of theſe words in Authours. *ut Fas]* *Cic. pro Dom. Nec enim id fieri ſas erat. Id. Tuſc. ſi hoc ſas eſt dicta. Id. pro Dom. Cum hoc mihi uni dicere ſas fuiſſet. Id. ib. Factus es filius contra ſas. Id. pro Cluent. Socrus generi ſui contra quàm ſas erat amore capta. Id. cont. Rull. ut id quoad poſſet, quoad ſas eſſet, quoad liceret, populi ad partes daret. Ovid. 2 Met. Neque enim ſuccedere teſtis Fas habet. Tacit. l. 14. Et hominum fibris conſidere deos ſas habebant. Quint. l. 3. c. 8. In judiciis enim vulgo ſas habitur indulgere aliquid ſudio ſuo.* Hither may be added, *neſas]* *Cic. de Invent. Neſas eſt legi non obtemperare. Id. de Sen. Neſas diſtu eſt, miſe-*

ram fuisse talem senectutem. Id. pro Mil. Is cui nihil unquam nefas fuit. Id. 1. Ver. Illi verò dicebant id sibi nefas esse. Id. de Nat. Deor. Mercurius quem Aegyptii nefas habent nominare. Hor. ad Pisoz. Seu capitale nefas operosa diluvis arte. Also other words of all terminations in s, viz. as, es, is, os, us. (1) In as as damnas, Quintil. l. 7. c. 10. Haec mea uxori mea damnas esto dare argenti, quod elegerit, pondo centum. Unicus it be said by a Syncope for Damnat<sup>us</sup> as Danesf. thinks, Schol. l. 2. c. 7. and Vossius, who makes damnat<sup>i</sup> the Genitive case of it. De Analog. l. 1. c. 47. As for Satias which some add (read in Ter. Eun. 5. 6. ubi satias cepit fieri commuto locum) Lucretius hath it in the oblique cases. Jam nencofessus satiate videndi l. 2. and Adjatiat<sup>em</sup> terra ferarum nunc etiam Scatet. l. 5. Of this word saith Vossius, satias *εὐχνοῦμαι* ex satietas factum est, nec aliter quàm saietas inflectitur, Charisio teste. Sed Genitivus est satietatis tantum: licet in ceteris obliquis etiam Syncope ista inveniat<sup>ur</sup>. De Anal. l. 1. c. 47. (2) In es as expes, of which before. So Caecoth<sup>es</sup> and grates (unless it may be accounted an Heteroclit, properly so called, as being declined with the oblique Genitive, Dative, and Ablative of gratia): So soboles, labes in the plural Number, and all Nouns of the fifth Declension in the plural Number, except res, species, facies, acies and dies. If any will have these to be Triptots, because in the one termination of es they have several cases of signification, he must yield the like to other Aptots, which under one termination have several cases of signification. Nor will there be any right Aptot, but that which neither hath the termination nor signification of any more than the Nominative. (3) In is, as potis, whereof before. (4) In os, as epos (5) In us, as specus of the third Declension, no such word as specoris, specori, and specore being read; so virus (viri and viro being out of use, though anciently used by Lucretius) and opus (signifying need. Cic. ad Att. Quid opus est de Dionysio tam valde affirmare? Id. de Offic.

Is quod sibi opus esse videbat, non quod rei publicæ cen-  
suerat. Id. in ep. Tu quæ istic opus erunt administrari  
prospicies. Ib. Is omnia pollicitus est, quæ tibi essent opus.  
Id. ad Attic. Dicis nuxmos mihi opus esse ad apparatus  
triumphi. Id. in Fam. ep. Sulpitii tibi operam intelligo  
non multum opus fuisse.

Nil] This Noun is contracted of the following Noun  
nihil. Cic. pro Sylla. Ego verò mihi, nil assumo. Juven. 3.  
Scit. Nil habuit Codrus: Quis enim negat? & tamen  
illud Perdidit infelix totum nil. Mart. 1. 1. Nil istic quod  
egat tertia tussis habet. Plaut. Rud. Nil agis: dare  
verba speras mihi te posse. Hor. 2. Ser. Sat. 1. Nil fa-  
ciat sceleris pia dextera. Virg. Aen. 5. Deponunt  
animos, nil magnæ laudis egentes. Ter. And. 4. 6. Nil  
istis opus est.

Nihil] This Noun is made by an Apocope of nichi-  
lum. Cic. Att. 1. 11. Proxus nihil abest quin sim miserrimus.  
Cic. Orat. Nihil enim ad rem extrema illa longa sit  
an brevis. Id. Att. 1. 1. Accidit, ut contentione nihil  
opus esset. Flor. 1. 4. Nihil tale meruentem improviso  
adori. Ter. Hec. 4. 3. Tua nihil refert, utrum. Id. He. 3. 1.  
Cum illi nihil periculi ex indicio fiet. Liv. 4. b. Mac. Per  
biduum tamen nihil aliud quam steterunt parati ad pug-  
nam. Cic. de Clar. Orat. Literarum admodum nihil  
sciebat. Plaut. Casin. Quid? nunc nihil agitis, sentio,  
nemo scit. Ter. And. 2. 6. Potin' es mihi verum dicere?  
Nihil facilius. Cic. Att. 1. 2. Sed tamen ita, ut nihil  
minus velim, quam--Vossius gives it nihil for a Geni-  
tive case. De Analog. 1. 1. c. 47. Let the learned con-  
sider. Hither perhaps may be added subtil τοῦ καὶ οὐ τῷ  
καὶ οὐ in Priscian 1. 5. for which yet Stephanns reads  
subtil subtilis, neutr.

Instar] This word Probus declines with a Genitive  
case instaris; but without Authority, and is gainfayed  
both by Charisius, and St. Augustine. Some would have  
it an Adverb; but the Construction of it evinces it a  
Noun. Liv. 1. 28. Paruum instar. Virg. Aen. 6. Quan-  
tum instar in ipso est. Ovid. Ep. 2. Sed scelus hoc meriti  
pondus

*pondus & instar habet. Justin. l. 36. Vallis ad instar castrorum clauditur. Cic. Tusc. 1. Terra ad universi celi complexum quasi puncti instar obtinet. Id. de Cl. Orat. Plato mihi unus instar est omnium. Id. in offic. Mortis instar putant. Id. ib. Vix minimi momenti instar habent. Id. ad Alc. habet instar Septuaginta. Danes. Schol. l. 2. c. 7. Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 46. Hither may for likeness of its termination in *r* be added *ir*, or *bir* the hallow of the hand.*

*Multa & in u simul i, ut sunt hæc cornuque.] Ovid. 7. Met. Flexum circum cava tempora cornu. Cic. ad Alc. Ab utroque portus cornu moles jacimus. Cas. 1. b. G. Ipse à dextro cornu prælium commisit. In the plural Number it is perfect.*

*Genuque.] Ovid. Met. 4. Genu flexum submisit. Propert. l. 3. cl. 15. Inflexu genu cadit. Anciently there was *hie* genus, and *hoc* genus, whereof Priscian l. 6. and Stephanus Thes. Shew examples out of Lucilius and Cicero; but they are grown out of use. It is Perfect in the Plural Number.*

*Sic gummi.] Plin. l. 13. c. 11. Gummi optimum esse ex Egyptia spina convepit, vermiculatum, colore glauco, purum, sine cortice, dentibus adhærens. Anciently there was *hæc* gummi. Whence Columel l. 12. c. 50: Existimârunt satius esse nova dolia liquidâ gummi perluere. Id. ib. Serias crassâ gummi liverunt. I doubt it will not now be allowed to be of that gender; and for the plural Number, it wants that.*

*Frugi.] Whether frugi be a Substantive or an Adjective is disputed. Cledonius is for its being an Adjective indeclinable. Nam dico (saith he) hic, & hæc, & hoc frugi; hujus frugi; huic frugi; hunc & hanc & hoc frugi. But Priscian l. 6. maintains it is a Substantive of the Dative case, formed from the Nominative frux or fruges. And this way both Danesius, and Vossius incline. And Authorities do favour. Plaut. Curc. 4. 2. Fac sis bonæ frugi fiet. Id. Capt. Fui ego lepidus vel bonus vir nunquam, neque frugi bonæ, neque ero unquam, neque spem*  
ponas

ponas me bonæ frugi fore. *Ulpian*, Sed si bonæ frugi ser-  
vus intra annum mutatis moribus occisus sit. *Cic. Att. l. 4.*  
*permodestus ac bonæ frugi homo*; which yet some read  
bene frugi. And yet there are forms of speaking in  
which it looks like an Adjective. *Hor. Serm. 1. l. 3. Sat.*  
*Parcius hic vivit frugi dicatur.* *Juven. 4 Sat. Miser &*  
*frugi non fecit Apicius.* *Cic. 5. l. Ep. 6. Quamquam*  
*illum hominem frugi existimabam.* *Id. 1. Verr. Homines*  
*satis sortes & satis plane frugi ac sobrii.* *Id. in Ep. Fru-*  
*gi & severa vita.* *Plin. Ep. 41. l. 2. Villa usibus capax,*  
*non sumptuosa tutela cujus in prima parte atrium frugi,*  
*nec tamen sordidum.* *Juven. 2 Sat. Canula frugi.* But  
in these there seems (as *Vossius* also thinks) to be an  
Ellipsis of the Verb *est*, or the Adjective *idoneus*. *Voss. de*  
*Analog. l. 1. c. 46.*

Hither may *gelu* be added. *Plin. l. 8. c. 28. Obser-*  
*vatum eam aure ad glaciem appositâ conjectare crassitudi-*  
*nem gelu.* So *Stephanus* reads it. Some read it *gelus*. And as  
*Stephanus* testifies *Nonius* proves at large, that *gelus* in  
the Masculine Gender was anciently used. *Lucret. l. 5.*  
hath *geli* in the Genitive case. *Affidusque geli casus.*  
*Id. l. 6. Denique sæpe geli multus fragor.* But now *gelee*  
is only in use, and as an Aptot. *Hor. Carm. l. 1. od. 9.*  
*Nec jam sustineant onus sylvæ laborantes: geluque Flu-*  
*mina constiterint acuto.* It wants the Plural Number.

*Veru* may also be added hither, and *astu* for a City.  
*Plaut. Truc. Sed veru sine dum petere: siquidem belliger-*  
*andum est tecum.* *Virg. 7. An. Et tereti pugnant mu-*  
*crone veruque Sabello.* It hath the Plural Number whole,  
unless it want *veruum* the Genitive case. *Virg. 7. An. Pars*  
*in frustra secant, verubusque tremensio figunt.* That *astu*  
*pro urbe* is an Aptot, is expressly said by *Vossius*: as hav-  
ing neither Genitive, Dative, nor Ablative. *l. 1. de Anz-*  
*log. c. 46. Ter. Eun. 5. 5. An in astu venit? Sic Athe-*  
*nienses vocabant urbem suam,* saith *Donatus* upon the  
place. *Cicero l. 2. de Leg. Vestri Attici, priusquam eos*  
*These is demigrare ex agris, & in Astu, quod appellaba-*  
*tur. omnes se conferre iussit.* --

So *Semi*, which is derived from the Greek *ἡμισ* turning the Aspiration into an *s*, which is ordinary as in *serpo* from *ἑρπω*, &c. But this word is rarely, if ever, read out of composition.

Also *Sinapi*. *Charisius* cites *Plautus* saying, *Teritur Sinapi*. Which yet *Stephannus* seems to have read *Sinapis*. Whence he cites *Plautus* saying in *Pseud.* ac. 3. sc. 2. *Teritur Sinapis scelerata cum illis*. Perhaps rather it should be *scelera*; for as *Vossius* observes, the Ancients said *scelerus* for *sceleratus*. *De Analog.* l. 1. c. 21. However in *Plin.* l. 20. c. 32. we have, *Sinapi, cujus in Sativis tria genera diximus*.

Some adde *Nauci*, which whether it signifie *putamen nucis*, as in *Priscian*, or *fabagranum cum se aperit*, as in *Charisius*, signifies a thing of no value. But that seems rather to be a *Monoptot*, if the Genitive case, formed from the disused *naucus*; in regard it is found only in the construction of the Genitive case. And of this Opinion *Vossius* is also. *De Analog.* l. 1. c. 46.

However, there are many words of other terminations that may be added hither. First in *a*: as *Alpha*, *Beta*, and the names of the other letters. So *musca*, *defruta*, *mella*, *farra*, *hordea*, *thura*, *rura*. (2) In *o*, as *pondo*, which when it signifies *pondus*, is only a Singular. *Liv.* l. 4. *Coronam auream libra pondo Jovi dicatam fuisse*: but when it signifies *libram*, though it supply the turn of several cases, yet it is only of the plural Number, as *Charisius*, *Vossius*, and *Danesius* say, *unum pondus* (saith *Charisius*) *non dicimus, sed in libram referimus, ut puta unam libram.* lib. 1. de *Monoptot.* Vide *Voss.* de *Anal.* l. 1. c. 22. *Danes.* Schol. l. 2. c. 7. The uses of it in the plural Number are frequent. *Quintil.* l. 6. c. 4. *Torque auream centum pondo.* *Cic.* pro *Cluent.* *Ami quinque pondo abstulit.* *Colum.* l. 11. c. 51. *Cum olei pondo octoginta.* But though Mr. *Farnabie* allow it a plural use, yet I find no example of it. (3) In *m* as *nequam*, *necessum*, and Hebrew names, as, *Adam*, *Cham*, *Abraham*, *Cherubim*, *Seraphim*, and the like. For *nequam* *Priscian*

*Priscian* l. 3. saith it is indeclinabile [trium generum; and l. 5. utriusque numeri. But let Authours speak. *Plaut. Bacch.* Nequam homo est, verum hercle amicus est tibi. *Id. Casin.* Quos ea pariat Potius quam illi servo nequam, armigero, nihili, atque improbo. *Cic. 2 Phil.* O hominem nequam! quid enim aliud dicam? magis propriè nihil possum dicere. *Id. pro Rab.* Servi nequam & improbi. *Id. 1 Verr.* Jus tam nequam esse Verrinum, *Colamel.* l. 3. c. 10. speaking of *Vite*, saith, quod in ipsâ matre nequam fuisset. So for *Necessum*, *Cic. de Fin.* Nam id quidem est interdum necessum. *Plaut. Stich.* Forum necessum est quicquid habeo vendere. This is a Noun of the Adjective *necessus* disused.

*Sic Tempe*] This word is a plural only. *Ovid. Met. 7.* Sublimis rapitur Subjectaque Thessala Tempe Despicis. *Virg. Georg. 2.* Frigida Tempe. *Cic. ad Att. l. 4. ep. 14.* Reatini me ad sua τέμνη duxerunt.

Hither for likenels of termination may many words more be referred, as,

(1) *Cete* from the Greek κῆτις, and *mele* from the Greek μέλη, namely in the plural Number: The former is in *Virg. An. 5.* Tum variae comitum facies, immania cete. *Plin. l. 9. c. 50.* Pisces attritu ventrum coeunt, tantâ celeritate ut visum fallant. *Delphini* & reliqua cete simili modo, & paulo diutius. The latter is in *Lucret. l. 2.* Aque Ac Musae mele per chordas organici, qua Nobilibus digitis ex pergestata figurant. This latter hath the singular Number also, whence *Persius* Cantare credas Pegasium melos. And even there too it is an Apor, having neither Genitive, Dative, nor Ablative. Unless that of *Venantius Fortunatus*, Fitque percussio dulcior aura melo, will entitle it to an Ablative case, which *Vossius* is not willing to allow. *De Analog. l. 1. c. 21.*

(2) *Volupe*, *Ter. Hec. 5. 4.* Bene factum & volup est. *Id. Phorm. 4. 3.* Venire saluum volupe est.

(3) *Necesse*. *Cic. pro Syl.* At hic etiam, quod tibi minime necesse fuit, factus esse noluisti. *Id. pro Mur.* Nibi



*Tibi necesse puto etiam adversariis prodesse. Id. pro Quint. His de rebus non necesse habeo dicere ea, quæ.*

(4) *Gausape.* Pers. Sat. 4. Tu quum maxillis balatum gausape pectas. Hor. 2. Serm. Sat. 8. Gausape purpureo mensam præterst. Plin. 1. 8. c. 48. Antiqui torus e stramento erat, qualiter nunc etiam in castis gausape. Formerly there was gausapum in the singular number, whence Cassius to Mecenas in Priscian l. 7. Gausapo purpureo salutatus. Hence regularly comes gausapa in the plural Number. Martial. 1. 14. Nobilius villosa tegant tibi gausapa citrum, and yet here Vossius had rather it should be said in the plural Number gausapa for gausapia, as in the Ablative singular is said gausape for gausapi. Gausapia is read in Varro (see Scaliger. Conjectan. in Varren. p. 69.) of the Nominative gausapium saith Danes. Schol. l. 2. c. 7. Anciently there was read hic gausapes, and hæc gausapa, say Stephanus, and Priscian, as well as hoc gausape, or gausapum. Vide Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 35.

(5) *Præsepe.* Horat. l. 1. Ep. 16. Scurva vagus: non qui certum præsepe teneat. In the plural is read præsepia. Virg. 7. Eclog. Quum primum passi repetent præsepia iauri. Id. 4 Georg. Ignavum fucos pecus à præsepibus arcent. Anciently there was hoc præsepium. Whence Appul. 1. 6. Met. Præsepium meum hordeo passim reserijubet. Yea and hæc præsepes præsepis; and hæc præsepia præsepia. Whence Plaut. Rud. Ad meum herum arbitrium vocat. me hic intra præsepes meas. Id. Curcul. Quin reciperet se huc esum ad præsepem suam. Varro de R. R. l. 1. c. 13. Illic laudabatur villa, si habebat culinam rusticam bonam, præsepes laxas; which out of an old Copy saith Stephanus is read præsepias. Vide Danes. Schol. l. 2. c. 7.

(6) *Mane.* Pers. Sat. 3. Jam clarum mane senectus intrat. Mart. l. 1. ep. 50. Mane totum dormies. Hirt. Bel. Afr. l. 5. Præsertim quum milites à mane diei jejuni steterint. Columel. l. 7. Sub obscure mane, vel etiam crepusculo,

*crepusculo.* II. l. 9. c. 15. *Postero mane.* Cic. Att. l. 5. *Multo mane.* From *mane* Servius and Vossius say there is *Mani* an Ablative case. For Playtus said, *A mani usque vespertum.* And the old Authors, as Donatus testifieth, said *mane* and *mani*, as *vespere*, and *vesperi*, *luce* and *luci*, *tempore* and *tempori*, namely from the great affinity betwixt *e* and *i*. See Tribellii Promptuar. Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 48. This word is used adverbially. Cic. Att. l. 4. *Bene manē huc scripsi.* Ter. Heaut. l. 1. *Nunquam tam manē egredior, neque tam vesperi domum revertor, quin te in fundo conspicer.*

(7) *Cape* or *cepe*, undeclinable in both Numbers. Danes. Schol. l. 2. c. 7. Plin. l. 19. c. 6. *Ergo omnibus annis separatim semper cepe causa feritur, separatim cepe seminis.* Pers. 4. Sat. *Sanicatum cum sale mordens cepe.* There is read *cepa cepæ*; and *cepe cepis*. Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 35.

(8) *Mille* the Substantive in the singular number: as when it is said, *Mille hominum occiditur*; and *mille hominum occiso*, Cic. 6. Phil. *Quis L. Antonio mille nummum ferret expensum?* Anciently it made *milli* in the Ablative case. Lucil. l. 9. *Tum milli nummum potest uno quærere centum.* Vide Gell. l. 1. c. 16. and Macrobi. l. 5. Also *mille* the Adjective in the Plural Number. Virg. 2. Eclog. *Mille meæ seculis errant in montibus agnæ.* Colum. l. 3. *Percipere debet in singulos annos mille septingentos quadraginta sestertios.* By the way we may here note the difference between *mille* the Substantive, and *mille* the Adjective. The Adjective takes to it self an Adverb, as *bis mille hominum*. So Hor. 9. Epod. *Ad hunc frementos verterunt bis mille equos.* But the Substantive requires with it an Adjective, as *duo millia hominum*. Liv. *Hominum eo die cæsa plus duo millia.* Besides *Millia* in the plural Number is perfect. Vide Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 46.

[*Tot quot*] To these are to be added their compounds *totidem*; *aliquot*, *quotquot*, *quotcumque*. And for likeness of Termination, as ending in *t*, *hither* may be added

added *Frit*, and *git*, or as some call it, *gith*. The former is in *Varro de R. R. l. 1. c. 48. Illud autem summū in spicā jam maturā, quod est minus quam granum vocatur frit*. The latter, genus *seminis*, quod *hodie* (as *Stephanus* saith) *nigella Romana à nostris vocatur*, is in *Plin. l. 20. c. 17. Gith ex Græcis alii melanthion, alii melanspermon vocant. Colum. l. 7. Interdum fastidio ciborum languescit pecus. Ejus remedium genus seminis quod gith appellatur. Auson. de Monosyllab. Est inter fruges morsu piper æquiparans git. Vide Steph. Thes. Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 34.*

-- *Et omnes A tribus ad centum numeros* ] Namely, quatuor, quinque, sex, septem, octo, novem, decem, undecim, duodecim, tredecim, &c. Viginti, triginta, quadraginta, &c. centum.

4. *Quæstio* How are the words of this Rule declined?

The Declining of Nouns cannot properly be said to be declined; so that the words in this Rule.

*An.* The words of this Rule being undeclinable all that is to be done with them is to give them their proper Article, and declare their undeclinableness; and that is done thus, *Hoc fas invariabile. Hoc nil invariab. hoc nihil invariab. hoc instar invariab. hoc cornu invariab. but Plur. hæc cornua cornuum, &c. hoc genu invariab. but Plur. hæc genua genuum, &c. hoc gummi invariab. hic, hæc, & hoc frugi invariab. if we take it for an Adjective; or else hujus frugis, (the Nominative frux being out of use) huic frugi, &c. if we take it for a Substantive. Plur. hæc semper invariab. Plur. hi, hæ, & hæc tot, invariab. Pl. hi, hæ, & hæc quot invariab.*

5. *Quæstio* It may seem by the Notes foregoing, that there are many more *Aptotes*, besides those mentioned in the Rule; can you give any account, if not of them all, yet of those taken notice of in the Notes?

*An.* In the Notes besides those mentioned in the Rule are named as *Aptotes*, all names of Letters, as *Alpha, Beta, &c.* All Nouns of the fifth Declension in the

the plural Number as *spes* and *fides*, except *ves*, *species*, *facies*, *acies*, and *dies*; all Hebrew names ending in *m*, as *Adam*, &c. (whereto may be added all proper names not Greek or Latine) and these particular words *Nefas*, *damnas*, *expes*, *cacoethes*, *grates*, *soboles*, *labes*, *poris*, *epos*, *melus*, *specus*, *virus*, *opus* [need] *subter*, *ir* or *hir*, *gelus*, *veru*, *astu*, *semi*, *sinapi*, *mulsa*, *deputa*, *mella*, *sarra*, *hordea*, *thura*, *rura*, *pando*, *nequam*, *necessum*, *neesse*, *cete*, *nece*, *volupe*, *gaufipe*, *prasepe*, *mane*, *cepe*, *multo*, *toridem*, *aiquo*, *quotquot*, *quotunque*, *frut* & *git*; unto all which may yet be added the names of Towns of the singular number that end in *i*, or *y*, as *Aixi*, *Illiturgi*, *Ayy*, *Dory*.

And thus far of the first sort of Defectives, called *Aptots*.

## CHAP. IX.

1. Q<sup>u</sup> **W**hat sort of Defectives doth our Author next treat of? and what is the Rule for them he treats of?

Ans. The second sort of Defectives that our Author treats of, are those that are called *Monoptots*; and the Rule for them is this,

### MONOPTOTA.

Estque Monoptoton nomen, cui vox cadit una  
Ceu noctu, nunc, iussu, iniussu, simul astu,  
Promptu, permisso; plurali legitima astis;  
Legimus inficis, sed vox ea sola reperta est.

Estque  
Monopto-  
ton no-  
men--

Monopto-  
ta sunt  
que unico  
in obliquo  
reperiun-  
tur.

2. Q<sup>u</sup> **W**hat is the meaning of this Rule?

Ans. The meaning of this Rule is this, That such Nouns as are found on'y in one oblique case are *Monoptots*.

¶ With *Diomedes* *ῥομβοῖσιν* sunt, quæ per *Ablati-  
vum tantum modo enunciantur*. l. i. But they are all to  
M be

be termed *Monoptots*, which are found in any one oblique case, and no more, either as to termination, or signification. *Nunc* (saith *Vossius*) *accedo ad parvas res*, sive ea quæ unius tantum sunt casus. *Ac alia quidem horum sunt gignendi casus, alia accusandi, alia auferendi.* De *Anal.* l. 1. c. 47.

*Cen noctu*] *Donatus*, *Cledonius*, and *Flavius Caper* account *noctu* to be an Adverb. *Si tota nocte junctim dico, nomen facio*, saith *Cledonius*, *si solum noctu, adverbium*. But the joyning of it in Authors with Adjectives of the Feminine gender proves it a Noun. *Macrob.* l. 1. c. 3. *Ergo noctu futurâ, cum media esse cæperit, auspiciis Saturnaliorum erit, de quibus die crastini mos inchoandi est.* *Plaut. Amph.* *Credo ego hac noctu obdormisse ebrium.* *Cic. Att.* l. 8. *Sed ecce nuntii scribente me hac ipsâ nocte in Cæno.* *Vide Macrob. Sat.* l. 1. c. 4. and *Steph. Thes.* L. L.

*Natu*] *Liv.* *Magno natu principes oratores ad Romam veniunt.* *Id.* 1. *ab urbe.* *Sed de istis rebus in patria majores natu consulemus.* *Ter. Ad.* 5. 4. *Id meâ minime refert, qui sum natu maximus.* *Cic. de Sen.* *Ququam eum colere cæpi, non admodum grandem natu, sed tamen jam ætate proæctum,* *Ter. Heaut.* 4. 1. *Quanto tuus est ac meus natu gravior.* *Cic. de Am.* *Tu verò perge Lælia, pro hoc enim que minor est natu, jure meo respondeo.* *Cic. 4 Ver.* *Nequis minor triginta annis natu,* *Id.* 4. *Acad.* *Te hominem amicissimum, & aliquot annis minorem natu.*

*Jussu*] *Plaut. Amphitr.* *Jovis jussu venio.* *Plin.* l. 16. c. 40. *Caii principis jussu.* *Cic. pro Pomp.* *Lucullus vestri jussu abiit.*

*Injussu*] *Cic. de Senect.* *Vetatque Pythagoras injussu imperatoris, id est Dei, de prædio & ratione vitæ decedere.* *Id. Att.* l. 4. *Ne injussu populi judicarent.* *Ter. Phorm.* 2. 1. *uxorem duxit injussu meo?* *Cic. 1 Tust.* *Vetat enim dominam ille in nobis deus injussu hinc nosuo demigrare.*

*Simul astu*] Ter. Phor. 1. 4. *Qua si astu non providentur.* Id. Eyn. 3. 4. *Quod si astu rem tractavit.* *Astu* for the City of Athens, is an Aptot, as we shewed before.

*Promptu*] Cic. 1. 1. Acad. *Ea dicam, quæ mihi sunt in promptu.* Ib. 1. 4. *A me enim ea, quæ in promptu erant, dicta sunt.* Id. 1. de Orat. *Quum illa patrant in promptuque sint omnibus.* Id. 4. Acad. *Oportet ea in promptu habere.*

*Permissu*] Cic. 1. Off. *Quum enim Annibalis permissu exisset castris, rediit paulo post.* Tacit. 1. 2. *Vetitis, nisi, permissu, ingredi Senatoribus.* Cic. Verr. 5. *Permissu tuo.*

*Plurale legimus astus*] Cic. 3 offic. *Quorsum hac?* ut intelligas non placuisse majoribus nostris astus. Admitting it an Aptot in the Plural number, yet it may be a Polypot in the singular. Stephanus thinks it perfect. However Silius 1. 16. saith, *Non ars aut astus belli, vel dextera deerat.* And so Valer. Flaccus in his second book saith Vossius De Analog. 1. 1. c. 47.

*Legimus inficias, sed vox ea sola reperta est*] Ter. Ad. 3. 2. *Nam si hoc palam proferimus ille inficias ibit, sat scio.* This word, saith Stephanus is only joyned with the Verb *eo*, is, &c. without a Preposition. Plaut. Curc. *Nemo it inficias.* Quintil. 1. 3. c. 7. *Nes eo inficias esse quasdam.* A. Gell. 1. 10. c. 19. *At ille non ibat inficias fecisse.* Id. 1. 16. c. 19. *Nautas stupefactor convictosque inficias ire non quisse.* The expression *inficias ire*, is like *exsequias ire*, or *ire suppetias*, in which in likelyhood the Preposition *ad* is by an ellipsis understood. Voss. Lat. Gram. p. 64. & de Analog. 1. 1. c. 47. In that clause, *sed vox ea sola reperta est*, Perhaps the Authors meaning might be, that whereas of the foregoing word *astus*, there were read other cases in the singular, yet of this word neither in the singular nor in the plural, are there any more cases.

3. Q. Are all the Latine Monoptots that are named in the Rule? or are there any more besides these here named?

An. Besides the *Monoptots* named in the Rule, there be several more that may be added to it: Some of the *Genitive*, and *Ablative* singular; and some of the *Accusative*, and *Ablative* plural: of the *Genitive* singular, are *dicis*, *nauci*; of the *Ablative* singular, are *hortatu*, *relatu*, *affatu*, *accitu*, *dispositu*, *objectu*, *monitu*, *admonitu*, *instinctu*, *concessu*, *inconcussu*, *saue* & *ambage*; of the *Accusative* plural, are *incitas* and *incita*: of the *Ablative* plural, *ingratis*.

[*Dicis*] This word *dicis* is said for *dices*, as being in Greek *δίκης* from the Nominative *δίκη*. For *dicis causa* is as much as *δίκης causa* *vera moris causa*, saith Voss. de Etymolog. Lat. p. 64. & de Analog. l. 1. c. 47. It hath usually with it *ergo*, *gratia*, or *causa* Cic. 6. Verr. Imperat ut aliquid illis, quorum argentum fuerat, numerorum *dicis causa* daret. Ulpian, Que auxilium ferre vel *dicis gratia* tulerit, nihil hoc commentum ei proderit. Vide Charis. l. 1. de Monoptotis. Scaliger. Conjectan. in Varro. p. 35. Danes. Schol. l. 2. c. 7.

[*Nauci*] Plaut. Mostell. Qui homo timidus erit in dubiis rebus, is *nauci* non erit. Cic. 1 de Divin. Non habeo denique *nauci* Marsum augurem.

Some refer hither *hujusmodi*, *cujusmodi*, *eiusmodi*. But properly they are not *Monoptots*, because in the Nominative case we say, *hic modus*, *quis modus*, *is modus*. And yet again considered as compounded words, they are conjunctly used in the Genitive case only, being divided in the other cases, and therefore do so far partake of, or imitate the nature of *Monoptots*. Of the same nature are *cuiusmodi*, and *cui-cuiusmodi* put for *cujusmodi*, or *cujusmodicunque*, A. Gell. l. 20. c. 1. Consideres gravius *cuiusmodi* sint, ea quæ reprehendisti. Ib. Quoniam satis esset invadere *cui-cuiusmodi* vestibulum. Cic. pro Rosc. Vereor enim, *cui-cuiusmodi* est Rosci, ne ita huius: videar servare, ut tibi omnino non pepercero: and so *alimodi* for *aliusmodi*, used by Paul. the Lawyer.

[*Hortatu*] Plin. l. 33. c. 1. *cujus hortatu* exceperat eos dies. Cic. pro Arch. Quod si hæc vox huius *hortatu* præ-



*præceptisque confirmata, nonnullæ aliquando salute fuit.*  
It hath the plural number, *Sit. l. 8. Blandis hortatibus implere aliquem.*

*Relatus*] *Tacit. l. 17. Neque enim relatu virtutum in comparatione Otoboris opus est.*

*Affatus*] *Virg. 4. Æn. Hæu quid agat : quo nunc reginam ambire furentem Audeat affatu ? Stat. 6. Thebaid. Mox numina supplex Affatu tacito juvenis Tegæus adorat.* It is found also in the Plur. Number. *Senec. Med. Minaxque nostros propius affatus petit.*

*Accitus*] *Cic. 5. Verr. Et quiaque primi accitu istius evocantur. Tacit. l. 2. Anal. Earum quippe accitu venire. Virg. 1. Æn. Regius accitu chari genitores ad urbem Sidoniam puer ire parat.*

*Dispositu*] *Tacit. l. 18. Dispositu, provisuque rerum civilium peritus.*

*Objectu*] *Colum. l. 3. c. 19. Qui uterque non incommode arcetur objectu vestis. Plin. l. 2. c. 10. Objectu terræ lunam occultari. Virg. 1. Æn. Insula portum Efficit objectu laterum. Tacit. l. 4. Cæli temperies hyeme mitis objectu montis, quo sæva ventorum arcantur.*

*Monitu*] *Juven. 4. Sat. Et lævo monitu pueros producit avaros. Cic. 2. de Div. Eorumque jussu ex illâ oleâ arcam esse factam, eaque conditas sortes, quæ hodie Fortuæ monitu tolluntur.* This word *Plin. in Panegy.* useth in the Plur. Number. *Monitus numinum reverere. Ovid. 1. Fast. Finierat monitus. Stat. Theb. 5. Necdum etiam responsa Deum monitusque vetusti exciderant.*

*Admonitu*] *Cic. ad Att. Hominis prudentis & amici tali admonitu. Ovid. 3. Fast. Flet tamen admonitu matris Elisa tue.*

*Instinctu*] *Cic. 1. Tusc. Sine cælesti aliquo mentis instinctu. Plin. in Panegy. Multa fecimus sponte, plura instinctu quodam & imperio.*

*Concessu*] *Cic. de Uivers. Neque datum est mortalium generi Deorum concessu atque munere, neque dabitur. Id. pro Cæl. Datur enim concessu omnium hæc aliquis ludus ætati.*

*Inconsultu*] *Plaut. Trinum. Me absente atque insectente, inconsultu meo Aedes venales hasce inscribit literis.*

Of the same nature with these would be the old *lucru* and *diu* for *luce* and *die*, were they in use.

*Fauce*] *Ovid. in Ibis. utve Syracusio praestricta fauce poetas, Sic anima laqueo sitiva clausa tua.* it is perfect in the plural number.

*Ambage*] *Plin. l. 19. c. 8. Sanguinarium illud responsum hac facti ambage reddidit. Id. l. 2. c. 9. Multiformi hac [luna] ambage torfit ingenia contemplantium. Ovid. 7. Met. Neu longa ambage morer vos. Id. l. 8. Ducit in errorem variarum ambage viarum.* In the plural number there are read *ambages* and *ambagibus*.

*Incitas*] *Plaut. Trin. 1. 6. Hem nunc hic cujus est, ut ad incitas redactus !* For which some say *ad incita* adigere, or *deducere*. In this kind of Expression *Vossius* saith, *Translatio est ab calculorum ludo, ubi ad incitas redactus dicitur, qui amplius calculus movere nequit. Ergo ad incitas cum dicitur, intelligitur fines vel calces, hoc est calculos. Nempe incitas, quia citari, hoc est moveri amplius non possunt. De Analog. l. 1. c. 47.*

*Ingratiis*] *Plaut. Casin. 2. 5. Vobis invitis atque amborum ingratiis Id. Merc. 2. 3. Tuus vult pater vendere tuam amicam tuis ingratiis. Cic. 6 Verr. Relicebunt quae poterunt, libenter; dicent, quae necesse erit, ingratiis. Ter. Heaut. 3. 1. Ea coacta ingratiis postilla cepit victum vulgo querere. Id. Eun. 2. 1. Opus faciam, ut defatiger usque, ingratiis ut dormiam. Vide Parei Lexic. Plaut.*

Unto these some do add these Datives as *Monoptots*, *despicatui*, *divisui*, *indatui*, and *ostentui*. I grant they are met with in Authors. *Cic. pro Flac. Quid porro in Graeco sermone tam tritum atque celebratum est, quam si quis despicatui ducitur, ut Mysorum ultimus esse dicatur. Liv. 3. v. Mac. Vestigalia publica partim negligentia dilabebantur, partim prae ac divisui principum qui.*

quibusdam & magistratibus erant. Tacit. l. 16. Nisi ea, quam indatui gerebat, veste detergeret. Sall. Jug. Sed quoniam eo natus sum, ut Jugurtha scelerum ostentui effens. Tacit. l. 12. Auribus decisis vivere jubet ostentui clementiæ suæ, & in nos debonestamento. The like may be said perhaps of *irrisui*, *derisui*, *arbitratui*, *ludificatus*, *frustratui*. But these have Ablatives in *u* saith Vossius. ut *sallustii est*, Quia secundæ res sunt mire vitiis obtentui, so saith he, Maronis est, Obtentu frontis obumbrat, yea, and Tacitus annal. 12. saith, Cupido auri immensa obtentum habebat, quasi subsidium regno pararetur. So that with him, that is, with the best of Grammarians, they are no *Monoptots*. See his *de Analog.* l. 1. c. 47.

Some again adde *Matte*, and *matte* Vocative cases. But *Cato* cap. 134. hath *matte* in the Nominative. Te precor, uti sis volens propitius mihi, liberisque meis, domo, familiæque meæ matte hoc ferto. And *Matte* is used for *Matteus*: as appears by that of Horace l. 1. Sat. 11, Matte virtute esto, inquit sententia dia Catonis, where saith Vossius, Horace spake in imitation of Lucilius, whose (in his l. 5.) is, Matte, inquam, virtute simulque his versibus vso. In the Roman Sacrifices, when the Wine with Frankincense mixt with it, was poured out of the Chalice (of which the people had tasted) upon the beasts head between the horns, then one cried our *Matte est hostia*, i. e. *Magis aucta*, whence this Phrase of *Matte virtute* was made by way of allusion. In the plural is *matte* in the Nominative as well as Vocative case. Eiv. l. 7. Matte virtute, inquit Decius, milites Romani esse. Plin. l. 2. c. 12. Matte ingenio este cali interpretes, rerumque natura capaces. This word by the way we may note, is set with a Genitive, as well as with an Ablative case. Mart. l. 12. Matte animi quem raris habet morumque tuorum. Sil. l. 5. O venerande pudici Doctor matte animi. Cic. At. Matte virtute, mihi quidem gratum. Stat. 1. Sylv. Matte boni animi. See *Stephan. Dines.* l. 2. c. 7. Voss. de Anal.

1. 1. c. 47. *Godwyn Rom. Antiq. l. 2. S. 2. c. 19.*

Mr. Farnaby adds *crate*. But *Stephanus* will have it a perfect word. And produces *cratem* an Accusative case of it, (which *Charisius* also l. 1 acknowledges) out of *Plaut. Pam. 5. 2. Sub cratem ut subeas sese supponi.* and *Cratis* a Genitive out of *Plin. l. 21 c. 2. Cratis & hoc genus dentatae stylis ferreis.* But these are so rare, that perhaps, for all them, it may not be altogether amiss to make a *Monoprot* of it. To be sure the Ablative is the more ordinarily to be met with. *Juven. Sat. 11. Sicci terga suis varâ pendentia crate Moris erat quondam festis (irruere diebus. Ovid. 8. Met. - Pendere putat Pellus & a spine tantummodò Crate teneri.* And in the plural it is perfect. *Farnab. Syst. Gram. p. 17. Voss. de Anal. l. 1. c. 47.*

The Declining of the words in *Esque Monoprot.*

4. Qu. How are the words of this Rule declined?

An. The words of this Rule are declined thus, Abl. *hac noctu.* Abl. *hoc natu.* Abl. *hoc jussu.* Abl. *hoc injussu.* Abl. *hoc astu.* Abl. *hoc promptu.* Abl. *hoc permissu.* Acc. plur. *hos astus.* Acc. plur. *has inficias.*

And thus far of the second sort of Defectives, called *Monoprots*.

## CHAP. X.

1. Q. What sort of Defectives doth our Authour next treat of? and what is the Rule for those Defectives?

An. The third sort of Defectives that our Authour treats of, are those that are called *Diptots*: and the Rule for them is this.

## DIPTOTA.

Sunt Diptota, quibus duplex flexura remansit; tota qui ut so s forte dabit sexto, spontis quoque sponte; bus.

Sic

*Sic plus pluris habet, repetundarum repetundis;*  
*Jugeri & sexto dat jugere; Verberis autem*  
*Verbere; Suppetiæ quarto quoque suppetias dant:*  
*Tantundem dat tantidem, simul imperis hoc dat*  
*Impete; junge vicem sexto vice; nec lego plura.*  
*Verberis atque vicem, sic plus, cum jugere cunctos*  
*Quatuor hæc numero casus tenuere secundo.*

2. Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule?

An. The meaning of this Rule is this, that some *Diptota*  
 Nouns are declined only with two cases, and therefore *quæ duo-*  
 are called Diptots. *bus casibus*

¶ The cases here are to be understood of cases of *reperiun-*  
*Termination*, not of signification; so that those are pro- *tur.*  
 perty Diptots which, as *Priscian. l. 5.* saith, *duos di-*  
*versos casus habent tantum, ut verba veribus, nam verum*  
*in uñ non invenimus.*

*ut fors forte dabit*] *Fors* in the Nominative case is  
 in *Hor. l. 1. c. 1. carm. od. 9. Quem fors dierum cunque*  
*dabit lucro appone. Sall. Jug. uti fors tulit. Ib. uti*  
*quosque fors conglobaverat. Forte* in the Abl. is read  
 in *Sall. Jug. Sed ea res forte, quam, consilio melius*  
*gesta. ib. Queritur de natura sua genus humanum, quod*  
*forte potius quam virtute regatur. Yea Fortis* in the Ge-  
 nitive case. *Ovid. Fast. 6. Quam ciud venerunt Forti-*  
*ne Fortis honores. Forti* in the Dative case, in the In-  
 scriptions of old Monuments and Moneys, saith *Vossius,*  
*de Analog. l. 1. c. 48. And Stewichius on Arnab. l. 7.*  
*adv. nation. thinks that passage ought to be read Cim non*  
*minaci Forti se obtulit, which is ordinarily read fortiter.*  
 And in the Accusative case *Fortem* is read in *Varro de*  
*L.L. l. 4. Vestam, Salutem, Fortem Fortunam. So that*  
*Dancsius* thinks it not rightly placed among the Diptots.  
*Schol. l. 2. c. 7. See Fainab. p. 17.*

*Spontis quoque Sponte*] *Sponte* is by *Charisius l. 2.*  
 taken for an *Ap. ot*; by *Diomedes l. 1.* for a *Monoptot*;  
 and said by *Phacis* to have only an Ablative case. But  
*Spontis* is read in *Columel. l. 9. c. 4. Est enim salvia*  
*[Cychisus] & altera sua spontis. Cels. l. 1. c. 1. Sanus*  
*homo,*

*homo, qui & bene valet, & sue spontis est, nullis obligare se legibus debet.* So in Varro, and Gell. see Alvar. p. 225. Stephan. Danes. Schol. l. 2. c. 7. Voss. de Anal. l. 1. c. 47. Sponte is ordinary. Tacit. l. 19. *Nec sponte Antonii properatum.* Lucan. l. 1. *Baxque fuit non sponte ducum.* Cic. pro Ros. Am. *Mea sponte.* Ter. Ad. 1. 1. *Sua sponte vestè facere.* Quint. l. 5. c. 10. *Rationes sponte quâdam sequantur.* Aufon. Idyl. 5. makes Spont to be the Nom. case of it. *Sponte ablati vi casus quis reus erit?* Spont. But that Nominative case is not in use.

*Sic plus pluris habet*] *Plus* is an Adjective in the Singular, as well as in the plural number, though rarely, if ever, found in any other but the Neuter Gender. Sall. Jug. *Neque pluris pretii coquum.* Anciently *Plure* in the Ablative was in use, as Charisius 2. saith, in whom is read that of Cicero, *Plure venit*; and that of Lucilius, *Plure foras vendunt, quod pro minore emptum*; and that of Plaut. in *Ceco, seu Prædonib.* *Plure altero tanto, quanto ejus Fundus est velim.* Yea in Scaliger Exercit. 22. is found *Pluri*, and Adjectively used; *Propterea quàm plurimo tenui succo esset opus nobis, multo sanè pluri* [i. e. *succo*] *quàm quantum ventriculo capi posset.* Yet *plus* and *pluris* are only in use in the singular Number. Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 48. *Repetundarum repetundis*] This word is an Adjective Participial, but by an Antistrophe for *repetendarum*, *repetendis*. When it is put Substantively, then *pecuniarum*, or *pecuniis* is understood; which are sometimes joyned with it. Sall. Catil. *Catilina pecuniarum repetundarum reus, prohibitus erat petere consulatum.* Cic. Clames te lege *pecuniarum repetundarum non teneri.* Cic. 1. Verr. *Legem de pecuniis repetundis tulit.* *Repetundæ* hath of it self all cases: but in accusation, you therefore find only a Genitive, and an Ablative case to be used, because words of accusing govern only those two cases. Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 48.

*Jugere & sexto dat jugere*] *Jugere* is from the old Nom. *juger*, or *jugus*. *Jugere* is read in *Pomp. Mela*. l. 3. c. 5. *Sed ultra quam canalem habet evchi plus jugeris spatia*. *Jugere* is in *Tibull*. l. 2. & 3. *Et multo innumeram jugere pascat ovem*. *Charis*. l. 1. *Tit. de Analogia*. *Voss. Erymolog.* Lat. p. 65.

*Verberis autem verberere*] *Phocas* out of *Lucan* cites *verberis*, *At saxum quoties ingenti verberis ictu Excutitur*. *Verberere* is in *Martial*. l. 14. *Colligat hunc tenui verberere cauda levis*.

*Suppetia quarto quoque Suppetias dant*] *Charisius* l. 1. reckons *suppetias* for a *Monopter*. But *suppetia* is read in *Plaut. Amph.* *Non metuo quin uxori meae lata suppetia sent*. & *Epid.* *Quicquid ego malefeci auxilia mihi, & suppetia sunt domi*. The Accusative *suppetias* is ordinary. *Plaut. Amph.* *Blepharo suppetias mihi*. sc. *feras*. *Cas.* *Nunciabantur auxilia magna Equitatus oppidanis Suppetias venire*.

*Tantundem dat tantidem*] *Cic.* 1. *Tusc.* *Undique ad inferos tantundem via est*, *Plaut. Pseud.* *Tantundem argenti, quantum miles debuit, dedit huic*. *Id. Merc.* *Decrepitus senex Tantundem est, quasi sit signum pictum in pariete*. *Ter. Ad.* 2. 1. *Ob malefacta hac tantidem emptam postulat sibi tradier*. This word seems to be a meer Adjective compounded of *tantus* and *dem*, like *idem* of *is* and *dem*; and where *tantundem* is used, there the same case of *tantum* may be used: as *tantum via est*; *tantum argenti*; *tantum est quasi*; *tanti emptam*. And *Plaut. Puen.* ac. 3. joyns it in the same case with a Substantive. *Malo benefacere tantundem est periculum quantum bono malefacere*. Of like nature is that of *Pompon. J. C.* *Tantidem ponderis petitio*. Yea, *Ulpian* hath it in a feminine termination and use, *tantundem pecuniae summam*. See *Priscian*. l. 12. and *Voss. de Analog.* l. 1. c. 24.

*Simul impetis hoc dat impete*] *Priscian* l. 6. from the verb *impeto impetis*, forms a noun *impes impetis*. But that Noun is not found read in the Nominative case in any



any Classick Author. The Ablative *impete* is ordinary. *Ovid. Met. 3. Impete nunc vasto. Stat. 7. Theb. Transiliunt campos aurigamque impete vasto.* The Genitive case *impetis* is also found in *Lucret. 1. 6. -imperis auctum est,* and in *Sil. Ital. -rapidi impetis.* Hardly elsewhere; whence *Voss Etymol. Lat. p. 65.* saith it is *Insolens.* In *Lucret. 1. 1.* is read *Impetibus crebris.* But that may come from *impetus*, as well as from *impetis.* *Voss. de Analog. 1. 1. c. 47.*

*Junge vicem, sexto vice; nec lego plura*] *Vicem* is read in *Ciut. 1. 8. saepe etiam quod falso creditum est, veri vicem obtinuit.* *Vice* in *Hor. 1. Carm. od. 4. Solvitur acris hyems gratâ vice veris.* Indeed both are ordinary. And as for more of it, though the Author met not it seems, with it, whence he saith, *nec lego, plura,* yet more of it may be met with. In *Liv. 1. 1.* is *Vicis* the Genitive case. *Regiæ vicis sacra.* And both *Charisius* and *Phocas* own it. And *vici* the Dative case is in *Quintil. 6. Declam. Substituit vici cura sua propinquas.* *Stephanus* acknowledges both *vicis*, and *vici* to be read; but yet *rariissime*: and therefore they may be noted, but not followed. *Charisius*, *l. 1.* hath *vix vicis*, so that the Nominative case is *vix*, if it were in use. *Danesh. 1. 2. c. 7. Voss. de Analog. 1. 1. c. 48.*

3. Q<sup>u</sup>. Unto these words in the Rule of Diptots may there be added any more of like nature and use?

*An.* There may be added unto this Rule of Diptots sundry words more of like nature and use with these in it: as, *Tabi, tabq; dica, dicam; chaos, chao; melos, melo; vesper, vespere; obrentui, obrentu; irrisui, irrisu; ora, aribus; ora, oribus.*

¶ *Tabi* is in *Lucan, 1. 6. Nigramque per artus Stil-lantis tabi sanicem. Tabo* in *Ovid. Met. 2. Invidia nigro squallentia tabo Testa petit.* *Dica* is in *Cic. 4. Verr. Scribitur Heraclio dica. Dicam* in *Ter. Phor. 2. 2. Dicam impingam tibi grandem.* There is read also in the plural *dicas.* *Cic. 4. Verr. Advenit dies, quo die sese*

ex instituto ac lege Rupiliâ dicæ sortiturum Syracusis iste edixerat. Chaos is in Lucan l. 5. Extremum natura chaos. Chao in Virg. 4. Georg. Atque Chao denjas divum numerabat amores. Melos is in Horace 3 l. Carm. Longum melos, and in Pers. Prol. Pegaseum melos. Melo is in LaFont. Carm. de Resurr. Christi. Fitque repercusso dulcior aura melo. Vesper is in Virg. 1. Georg. Denique quid vesper serus vihat. Vespere in Virg. An. 5. Vespere ab atro consurgunt venti. As they said (uci in the Ablative as well as luce; so they said in the Ablative vesperi as well as vespere: but vesperi is mostly, if not always, used as An Adverb. Obtentui in Sall. Orat. Lepidi. Secundæ res mirè sunt vitiis obtentui. Obtentu, in Gell. l. 10. c. 12. Qui obtentu Philosophiæ nominis inutile otium, & linguæ vitæque tenebras sequuntur. Irisui is in Plin. l. 12, c. 5. Imò verò plerisque altro etiam irrisui sumus. Irrisu, in Tac. l. 3. Non sine irrisu audientium postulavit. Ara. is in Hor. l. 1. ep. 7. Quid dissent æra lupinis? Aribus in Cato, as Priscian l. 7. saith, Fundum aribus suis centum possidebant. Arnob. l. 3. In making de Curetibus saith, Qui occultasse prohibentur Jovis aribus aliquando vagitum. Both are in Lucret. l. 2. Armate in numerum pulsarent aribus æra. Yea, Vossius saith, Virgil, Ovid, Pliny, many others use them. Cato also, as he saith, used ærum, in the Gen. Plural. But that is so singular, that it may for all that pass for a diptot; if nor, let it be as the Learned please, for me. Ora is in Flor. 4. 12. Infantes ipsos in ora militum adversa miserunt. Every where almost. Oribus is in Arnob. l. 1. Bellum agrestium ritu cruentis oribus mandere. And saith Voss. in Virg. An. 8. and 10. Voss. Etymol. p. 35. and 66. Farnab. p. 17. Danes. Schol. l. 2. c. 7. Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 46.

4. Qu. Is that altogether so, as is said in the last clause of the Rule—quatuor hæc numero casus tenere secundo, that verberis, vicem, plus, and jugere have all their cases in the Plural Number?

The Declining of the words in this Rule.

*An.* *Vicem* wants the Genitive plural, no such word as *vicium* being read. *Voss. Etymol. Lat. p. 66.*

5. *Qu. How are the words of this Rule declined?*

*An.* The words of this Rule are declined thus: N. *Hæc fors*; *hujus fortis*; *huic forti*, *hanc sortem*; o *fors*, *hac forte*. G. *Hujus spontis*; Ab. *hac sponte*. *Hoc plus*, *pluris*. Plur. *hi* & *hæ plures* & *hac plura vel pluvia*, &c. Plur. *hæ jugera*, *jugenum*, &c. Gen. Plur. *Harum repetundarum*. Ab. *his repetundis*. Gen. Sing. *Hujus jugeris*. Ab. *hoc jugere*. G. *Hujus verberis*. Ab. *hoc verbere*. Plur. *hæ verbera verberum*, &c. No. Plur. *hæ suppetiæ*. Acc. *Has suppetias*. N. *hoc tantundem*: Gen. *hujus tantidem*. Gen. *hujus impetis*. Ab. *hoc impete*. [Gen. *hujus vicis*; D. *huic vici*] Acc. *hanc vicem*. Ab. *hac vice*. Plur. *hæ*, & *has vices*; *his*, & *ab his vicibus*.

And thus far of the third sort of Defectives called *Diptots*.

## CHAP. XI.

1. *Qu. VV* What sort of Defectives doth our Author treat of next? and what is the Rule for them.

*An.* The fourth sort of Defectives treated on are those that are called *Triptots*; and the Rule for them is this.

### TRIPTOTA & TETRAPTOTA.

Tres quibus inflectis casus, Triptota vocantur:  
ut precis atque precem, petit & prece blandus amicam:  
Sic opis est nostra, fer opem legis, atque ope dignus.  
At tantum recto frugis caret, & ditionis:  
Integra vox vis est, nisi desit forte dativus:  
Omnibus his mutilus numerus prior integer alter.

2. *Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule?*

*An.*

*Ans.* The meaning of this Rule is this, that there are some words, which in the singular number are declined but with three cases, which yet have all their cases in the plural Number.

¶ In what our Authour saith of *Triptots* he must be understood according to what is usual : else there will scarce be found a word exactly of three cases, unless it be *vis*, which our Authour makes to want only the Dative case : for speaking of cases of *termination*, it hath exactly no more than three in the singular Number ; namely *vis* in the Nominative, Vocative, and Genitive also, if it have any ; *vim* in the Accus. and *vi* in the Ablative ; or perhaps *opis*, which though some make a *Tetraptot*, yet it will be hard to find it to have such a Dative as *opi*. Perhaps *sordis* may be one, in as much as *sordis* in the Gen. *sordem* in the Accus. and *sorde* in the Ablative, are all the cases of it, that are read in *Classick* Authours, *Plant. Pæ. In medio oculo parum sordis est. Cic. Att. l. 1. ep. 15. Apud sordem urbis & facem. Hor. l. 1. ep. 2. Auriculas ciubarum collectâ sorde dolentes*, and only *St. Ambrose* is produced using *sordis* in the Nominative. But speaking of what is usual, and there are *Triptots*.

*Preces, precem, prece*] A Dative case of this *precî* is found in *Terence And. 3. 4. Nihil est precî loci relictum, & Phorm. 3. 3. ut nullus locus relinquatur precî*. Whence *Vossius* reckons it for a *Tetraptot*. But that case being not found any where else, but in that Authour ; it may pass if it please the *Learned*, for a *Triptot* ; if not, let it be a *Tetraptot*, for me. The old disused Nominative case of it is said to have been, *prex*, or *precis*. *Danesh. Schol. l. 2. c. 7. Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 43.*

*Sic opis, opem, ope.*] *Ops* is read in the Nominative case : but not in the signification of these oblique cases. But either it is the name of a *Goddesse*, a *Heathenish* Deity so called ; or else it signifies the same that *opulentus* signifies, whence perhaps the contrary to it is *inops* ; and so *Festus* saith it signified among the *Ancients* ; or  
else

esse it signifies as much as *opifer*; in which sense *Accius* in *Priscian* l. 7. speaking of *Hercules* saith, *Quorum genitor fertur ops esse gentibus*. It is conceived that in the singular Number it signifies *wealth*, as well as *help*. Whence upon that of *Hor.* l. 1. *Serm.* 2. *Sat.* *Dives opis natura suæ*, there is this gloss set by one Commentator; *i. e. Natura suis opibus contenta*. Bond. in loc. But *Vossius* saith here it is taken, *laxe*, *pro omnibus quibus opulatur natura*; and that the meaning of the Poet is no more but this, *sufficere sibi naturam ad omnia*. They that tell us of *opi* in the Dative case should do well to give us some good example of it: till then, let it be a Triptot. *Voss.* de Analog. l. 1. c. 43.

*At tantum recto frugis caret*] If it want the Nominative, then undoubtedly it wants the Vocative too. But doth it want the Nominative? *Priscian* l. 6. finds us one in *Fannius* 17. *Annal.* namely *frux*. *Si luci, si nox, si mox, si jam data sit frux*. And *Auson* *Idyl.* 5. makes use of it. *Ave equidem campis quam spicea suppetet, et frux*. But he is by himself all alone, in the using of it: and therefore it may pass with its four cases, *frugis*, *frugi*, *frugem*, and *fruge*, for a Tetraptot, so as *Vossius* reckons it. *Etymol.* L. p. 66. *De Anal.* l. 1. c. 46.

*Et ditionis*] For this word *Nizolius* and *Stephanus* find a Nominative case, *ditio*; and even in *Voss.* *Etymolog.* Lat. p. 19 amongst the rest of the Verbals in *io*, comes *ditio*. But no example have we of it. And the old Grammarians, *Diomedes*, *Donatus*, *Priscian*, and *Cledonius*, as *Vossius* himself tells us, do disown it: and therefore let it be, as Mr. *Shirley* reckons it, a Tetraptot, or a word of four cases, *ditionis*, *ditioni*, *ditionem*, *ditione*; which are ordinary; whence *ditionis terminum*, *ditioni permittere*, *in ditionem concedere*; and in *ditione esse* ye may read familiarly in Authours. *Voss.* de Analog. l. 1. c. 48. Hither for like number of cases, and as wanting their Nominative case may be referred, *Jovis*, *Jovi*, *Jovem*, *Jore*; the old Nominative *Jovis*

*Jovis* being out of use, and *Jupiter* used in the stead of it. So *proceris*, *proceri*, *procerem*, & *procere*.

*Integra vox vis est nisi desit forte Dativus.*] But what if it want the Genitive too? True *Charisius*, l. 1. *Priscian*, l. 6. and 7. and *Probus* l. 2. give us one, namely *vis*. But no authority for it, but their own say so: But in as much as *Vossius* tells us, that amongst the Civilians it hath a Genitive case; and that the Writer of the *Dialogue de Oratoribus*, (who is commonly thought to be *Tacitus*) hath, *Quantum in magna parte librorum suorum plus vis habeat, quam sanguinis*: therefore it may pass for a word of four or five cases; but then cases also of *signification* must be taken in to make up that number, else it will have but three cases, namely *vis*, *vim*, and *vi*; which if it be allowed, then some *Diptots* will become *Triptots*, &c. The ordinary plural number of this word is *vires virium*, &c. But anciently they said *vis* also in the plural number. *Lucret.* l. 2. *Quo quisque magis vis multas possidet in se Atque potestates.* *Sall.* 3. *Histor.* *Male jam ad suetum ad omnes vis controversiarum.* *Voss.* *Etymolog. Lat.* p. 66. *De Analog.* l. 1. c. 48.

Amongst the *Triptots* some reckon *dapi*, *dapem*, and *dape*; and rightly too, reckoning only the usual cases of it. It is true *daps* is read; in *Cato de R. R.* c. 132. *Daps Jovi assaria pecuina urna vini Jovi caste.* lb. c. 50. *ubi daps profanata comestaque erit, arare incipito.* *Priscian.* l. 7. out of the *Odyssea Liviana* cites, *Qua hac daps est? quis festus dies?* *Vossius* saith *daps* is read in the *Epitome of Festus*; and *Charisius*, that the Ancients did use it. But the after Writers left of to use it, and so it is grown out of use. Again *Cato de R. R.* c. 132. hath *dapi* the Dative case; -- *Culignam vini dapi ejus rei ergo.* but that also is so unusual, that *dapis* may well pass for a *Triptot*, as having a Genitive, Accusative and Ablative usual in Authors. *Dapis* is in *Hor.* l. 4. *od.* 4. *Egit amor dapis atque pugnae.* *Dapem* in

*Liv. l. i. ab u. C. Tum sacrum factum, adhibitum ad Ministerium, dapemque Porcibus ac Pinariis. Dape in Cato de R. R. c. 132. Malle istace dape polucenda esto. Ib. Postea dape facta, serito mil. um, &c. Voss. de Analog. l. i. c. 43.*

The Declining of the words of this Rule.

3. Qu. How are the words of this Rule declined.

Ans. The words of this Rule are declined thus : Gen. *hujus precis* [D. *huic preci.*] Acc. *hanc precem*. Ab. *hac prece*. Gen. *hujus opis* ; Accus. *hanc opem* ; Abl. *hac ope* ; Gen. *hujus fragis* ; Dat. *huic frangi* ; Acc. *hanc frangem*. Abl. *hac frange*. Gen. *hujus ditionis*, Dat. *huic ditioni* ; Acc. *hanc ditionem* ; Abl. *hac ditione* ; Nom. *huic vis* ; Gen. *hujus Vis*. Acc. *hanc vim* ; Voc. *o vis* ; Ab. *hac vi*. They are perfect in the plural number.

And thus far of the fourth sort of Defectives called Triptots ; amongst which also we have spoken of some Tetraplots.

## CHAP. XII.

1. Qu. **W**hat sort of Defectives doth our Authour next proceed to speak of ? and what is the Rule for them ?

Ans. The Defectives that our Authour next proceeds to speak of, are the last of those that are defective in Case, which, as having five cases, and wanting none but the Vocative case, may be called Pentaplots ; and the Rule for them is this,

### PENTAPLOTA.

*Quæ referunt ut qui ; quæ percontantur, ut equis : Et quæ distribuunt, ut nullus, neuter, & omnis : Infinita solent his frangi, ut quilibet, alter. Quanto hæc saepe carent ; & Pronomina, præter Quatuor hæc infra, nos, vos, me, & tu.*

2. Qu.



2. Qu. ~~What~~ What is the meaning of this Rule?

Ans. The meaning of this Rule, is this, That *Relatives, Interrogatives, Partitives, and Indefinite Nouns*; and also all *Pronouns*, except *noster, nostras, meus, and tu* are Defective in their Vocative case, or do want their Vocative case.

¶ Our Authour seems to intimate, as if those whom he calls *Relatives, Interrogatives, Distributives, and Indefinites* were no *Pronouns*, because after all he adds *Pronouns*, as a distinct branch of his Rule, or as an Appendix to it, whereas others take them all to be *Pronouns*; and not without some probability. But that not being the proper business of this place, I shall leave the discussion of it to others.

*Quæ referunt*] *Relatives* properly are *qui*, and *sui*; but others also, besides these, are used Relatively sometimes, as *hic, ille, iste, ipse, is, and idem*.

*Quæ percontantur*] *Interrogatives* are *quis, ecquis, numquis, uter, qualis, quantus, quotus, cujus, and cujas*.

*Si quæ distribuunt, ut nullus, neuter, & omnis*] By *quæ distribuunt*, our Author is not to be conceived to mean those that are so properly called, which we are told by our Grammar, are *singuli, bini, terni, quaterni*; but *Partitives*; both because one of his instances namely *neuter* is a proper *Partitive*, and the other two, though they be universals, the one a Negative, the other an Affirmative, yet they are construed sometimes *Partitive-ly* (as *Possius* tells us, *Syntaxis Lat. p. 19, 20.*) so that the particular words, whereof we are to understand our Authour here to speak, are *ullus, nullus, solus, uter, alter, neuter, nemo, alius, aliquis, quidam, quispiam, quilibet, quisque, unusquisque, quotusquisque*, and if we should add *cæterus, reliquus, and cunctus* perhaps we may not do much amiss, Vocative cases of these words, being not very ordinary, if at all they may be found.

*Infinita solent his jungi ut quilibet alter* ] *Indefinites* properly are such words (whichever you will call them *Nouns* or *Pronouns*) as do not determine any certain person, as *quis*, *cujus*, and *cujas*; but even those that are *Relatives*, as *qui*, and those that are *Interrogatives*; as *quis* are sometimes used *Indefinitely*: as *Ter. Eun.* 2. 3. *Nunc Parmenote ostendes qui vir sis.* *Cic. 6. Verr.* *sanxerunt ne quis emeret mancipium.* But how *alter*, which signifies determinately the one of two, should be called an *Indefinite*, is hard to say.

*Quinto hæc sæpe carent casu* ] The word *sæpe* was warily put in: and the Authours meaning in it, as I conceive was this, that of the forenamed sorts of words few, if any, are found to have a *Vocative* case, and if any are found to have a *Vocative* case, yet it is very seldom that they are found to have it. Whereof some instances yet are produced; as *Aliquis*, in that of *Virg. An.* 4. *Exoriare aliquis nostris ex ossibus ultor.* and *Ter. Ad.* 4. 4. *Aperite aliquis ostium.* So *Omnis* in that of *Virg. Georg.* 1. *Dique deaque omnes, studium quibus arva tueri, &c.* And *quilibet* in that of *Ovid.* *Quilibet huc, dixit, confuge: tuus eris.* *Alvar.* p. 225.

*Et pronomina præter Quatuor hæc infra, noster, nostras, meus, &c. in.* ] The Authours wary word *sæpe* must come in here too. For other *Pronouns* besides the four here named, are found sometimes, though not *sæpe*, to have a *Vocative* case: as *Ipse*; *Ovid.* in *Ibin.* *Ipse meas æther accipe summe preces.* *Virg. Ecl.* 10. *Nec carmina nobis ipsa placent: ipsæ rursus concedite sylvæ.* So *hæc* in *Virg. An.* 12. *Eslo nunc sol testis, & hæc mihi terra precanti.* *Illæ* also in *Cic. pro Flacc.* *O nox illa, quæ penè æternas huic urbi tenebras attulisti.* *Ib.* *O nonæ illæ Decembres, quæ me consule, finis.* Yea, saith *Vossius*, *Ravius* quidem, *obscuriusque*, attamen præter *sul* (quod etiam *resto* caret) penè omnia *vocativum* habent. *De Analog.* l. 4. c. 3.

3. Q. How are the words of this Rule declined?

Ans.

*An.* The words of this Rule are declined thus. N. *Qui, quæ, quod.* G. *Cujus, &c.* N. *Ecquis, ecqua, ecquod.* G. *Eccujus.* N. *Nullus, a, um.* G. *Nullius.* N. *Neuter, ra, rum.* G. *neutrius.* N. *Hic & hæc omnis & hoc omne.* Gen. *Omnia.* N. *Quilibet, qualibet, quodlibet vel quidlibet.* G. *Cujuslibet.* N. *Alter, a, um.* G. *Alterius.* N. *Noster, ra, rum.* G. *Nostri, æ, i.* N. *Hic & hæc nostras, & hoc nostrate.* Gen. *Nostratis.* N, *Meus, a, um.* G. *Mei, æ, i.* N. *Tu, G. Tui.*

And thus far of the fifth sort of Defectives, called Pentaptors : and indeed of the whole Species of Defectives in case.

CHAP. XIII.

1. Qu. **What Defectives doth our Authour next proceed unto ?**

*An.* Our Authour having done with one Species of Defectives, namely with those that are Defective in case, next proceeds unto the other Species of Defectives, namely those that are Defective in number ; touching which he gives seven Rules.

2. Qu. **What doth the first rule for Defectives in Number concern ? and which is it ?**

*An.* The first Rule for Defectives in Number, concerns six (not single words, as in the following rules mostly, but) sorts of words that are Defective in Number ; whereof the first are Proper names, and the rest are Common Names : and it is this.

*Propria cuncta notes, quibus est natura coercens,  
Plurima ne fuerint : ut Mars, Cato, Gallia, Roma,  
Ida, Tagus, Lælaps, Parnassius, Bucephalusque.  
His frumenta dabis, pensa, herbas, uda, metalla.*

*Propria  
cuncta no-  
tes.*

3. Qu. **What is the meaning of this Rule ?**

*An.* The meaning of this Rule is this, that there be six sorts of words, that are Defectives in the Plural Number, or do want the Plural Number. Which are

*Propria, Frumenta, Pensa, Herba, uda, Metalla*; that is (1.) Proper names of all sorts. (2.) Common Names of Grain; (3.) Names of things sold by weight; (4.) Names of Herbs; (5.) Names of things of moist nature; (6.) Names of Metals.

¶ *Propria cuncta*] All proper names, whether they be the names of *Persons*, Divine or Humane, as *Mars*, and *Cato*; or of other living *Creatures*, *Dogs*, *Horses*, &c. as *Lelaps*, and *Bucephalus*; or of *Countries*, as *Gallia*; or of *Cities*, as *Roma*; or of *Hills*, as *Ida*, and *Parnassus*, or of *Rivers*, as *Tagus*, are singulars, and want the Plural number, *exceptis exiipiendis*.

*Hic frumenta dabis*] as *Triticum*, *siligo*, *ador*.

*Pensa*] Such things as are sold by weight; as *piper*, *saccharum*, *zinziber*, *resina*, *sebum* or *sebum*, *butyrum*, *lardum*, &c.

*Herbas*] as *ruta*, *salvia*, *crocus*, *hyssopus*, *linum*, *apium*, &c.

*uda*] as *lac*, *oleum*, *nectar*, *arctum*, *halec* for pickle, and for the juice of *Lobster*, or the fish *Garus*, &c.

*Metalla*] as *aurum*, *argentum*, *chalybs*, *orichalcum*, *ferrum*, *plumbum*; to which for nearness of nature we may add *Minerals*, as *sulphur*, *nitrum*, *stibium*, *minium*.

4. Q. How are the words of this Rule declined?

An. The words of this Rule are declined thus, *Hic Mars*, *Martis*; *Hic Cato*, *Catonis*; *Hec Gallia*, *Gallia*; *Hec Roma*, *Roma*; *Hec Ida*, *Ida*; *Hic Tagus*, *Tagi*; *Hec Lelaps*, *Lelaps*; *Hic Parnassus*, *Parnassi*; *Hic Bucephalus*, *Bucephali*.

5. Q. Is this Rule so universally true, that there are no exceptions from it?

An. This Rule hath its exceptions, one Indefinite, and one more particular.

6. Q. Which is the Indefinite exception, which the Author gives to this Rule?

An. The Indefinite exception, which the Author gives to this Rule, is this,

In quibus Authorum quæ sint placita ipse requirit; In quibus  
Est ubi pluralem retinent hæc, est ubi servant. Autho-  
rum--

7. Q. What is the meaning of this Exception?

Ans. The meaning of this Exception is this, that of the forenamed six sorts of words there are some particulars that have the plural Number, to the knowledge of which their use in Authors is to be our guide.

Proper names then have the plural Number First, when several persons or things have given to them the same name: as, There were *two Scipio's, twelve Cæsars, many Socrates's and Alexanders; eighteen Alexandrias, &c.* also, secondly, when they have respect unto similitude or likeness; as in Ovid. *Et multos illic Hectora's esse puta.* So, *Sint Mæcenates non deerunt Flacci Marones.* So, *non omnes possunt esse Honori aut Pindari.* Thirdly, when they have no singulars, which happens in the proper names of places very oft, as *Delphi, Athenæ, Artaxata, &c.* Fourthly, when several parts of the same Country are called by the name of the whole in the Plural number, as *Galliæ, Hispaniæ, Britanniæ.* Daves. Schol. l. 2. c. 8. Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 38.

And of Common names, *Hordeum*, and for names of corn are found in the plural number, as our Author afterward acknowledges; of this sort also ye may read in the plural number *fabas, lupinos, pisa, xiania and avenas.* Virg. 1. Georg. *Vere fabis satio.* Hor. l. 1. ep 7. *Quid d'sent a'a lupinis.* Virg. Ecl. 5. *Infelix lalium & steriles nascuntur avenæ.* I though perhaps the Poet there had not in his mind, as Vossius saith, *avenam, quæ est frumenti genus, sed segitis vitium.* De Analog. l. 1. c. 38. Daves. l. 2. c. 8. Of things sold by weight here called *penſa*, beside *thura* in our Author; *pices* and *cera* are read Virg. Georg. 3. *Ideasque pices, & pingues unguine ceras.* Of Herbs many are read in the plural number, as *cardui, urtica, malva, cicuta, papavera, &c.* to which may be added names of flowers, as *rosa, lilia, &c.* which have the plural number. Of moist things, besides *mella, mulsæ, and defruta*, named after

by our Authour, *aqua*, and *vina*, and *musta* are read in the plural number. *Cas. O ubi mors non est si jugulatis aqua?* Virg. *Vina bonus que deinde cadis onerarat Aestes.* Ovid. 4. *Fast. Præmia de lacubus proxima musta tuis.* And of Metals and Minerals *ara*, *Orichalca* & *Electra* are read plurals. Ovid. *Met. 2. Stillataque sole rigescunt De ramis electra novis.* Claud. l. 1. *de Rapt. Proserp. In celsas surgunt electra columnas.* See Danes. & Voss. *supra.* Of *ara*, and *aribus*, and *arum* we have spoken before in the Additional to the Diptots.

8. Qu. which is the Particular Exception to this Rule?

An. The Particular Exception given by our Author to this Rule is this,

Hordea  
farra fo-  
rum--

*Hordea, farra, forum, mel, mulsum, defruta, thusque, Tres tantum similes voces pluralia servant.*

9. Qu. what is the meaning of this Exception?

An. The meaning of this Exception is this, That these words *hordeum*, *far*, *forum*, *mel*, *mulsum*, *defrutum*, and *thus* have three like cases (viz. the Nom. Accus. and Voc.) in the plural number, but no more but those three.

¶ How *forum* came in here, having no relation to the foregoing rule, I cannot say, unless it be that the Authour having in his mind things sold in the Market, bethought himself also of the Market where they were sold; or else that he put it in among the rest, because that it, like the rest, had only three like cases in the Plur. Number. And yet Beza in *Math. 11. 16. & Marc. 12. 38.* reads *foris*. Some for likeness of declining do add other words, namely *jus*, and *mare*, *as*, and *os*. But though very seldom, once or twice perhaps, there are read other cases of these words in the plural number besides these in *a*: *Jurium* is in *Plaut. Epid. 3. 4. Qui omnium legum, atque jurium fector oluit.* *Juribus* is ordinary in the Civilians. *Ulpian ad Edict. l. 27. Quia debita juribus non est pecunia.* *Maribus* is in *Cas. l. 5. b. G. Naves paulo latiores, quam quibus in reliquis usimur*

*utimur maribus.* Of *es* and *os* whence are formed *aribus*, and *oribus* we have spoken before.

9. Qu. **How are the words in this Exception declined?** The Declining of the words in this Rule.

An. The words in this exception are declined thus. S. *Hoc hordeum*, *hordei*. Pl. Nom. Acc. Voc. *hæ hordea* only. S. *Hoc far farris*. Pl. N. Acc. Voc. *Hæ farra*. S. *Hoc forum*, *fori*. Pl. No. Ac. Voc. *Hæ fora*. S. *Hoc Mel*, *Mellis*. Pl. No. Ac. Voc. *hæ mella*. S. *Hoc mulsum*. Pl. No. Ac. Voc. *hæ malsa*. S. *Hoc defrutum*, *defruti*. Plur. No. Ac. Voc. *hæ defrusa*. S. *Hoc thus*, *thuris*. Plur. No. Acc. Voc. *hæ thura*.

And thus far of the first Rule of Defectives in number, and the Exceptions to it.

# CHAP. XIV.

1. Qu. **What doth the second Rule of Defectives in Number concern? and which is it?**

An. The second Rule of Defectives in Number concerns some particular words of the Masculine gender, which do want the plural number; and it is this, *Hesperus & vesper*, *penus*, *limusque*, *fimusque*, *Sic penus*, & *sanguis*, *sic ather*, *nemo* : *sed ista Masculula sunt numerum vix excedentia primum.*

*Hesperus & vesper.*

2. Qu. **What is the meaning of this Rule?**

An. The meaning of this Rule is this, that these are some words of the Masculine gender in the singular number, which have no plural, as *Hesperus*, *vesper*, &c.

¶ *Hesperus* is the proper name of a man, the brother of *Atlas*, who going to the top of Mount *Atlas* to observe the course of the Stars, and appearing no more, was reckoned of by the Vulgar as a God, and had a bright Star called by his name : no wonder therefore if it want the plural number.

*Vesper*



*Vesper* is *Cic.* in *Arat.* *Hunc legit obscurus subter praecordia vesper.* *Ces.* 2. b. c. *Magistris imperat navium, ut primo vespere, omnis scaphas ad litus appulsas habeant.* *Stephan* is gives it a *Fem.* gender, citing for it *Virg. Georg.* 1. *Illic sera rubens accendit lumina vesper.* But that seems a mistake: *sera* agreeing not with *vesper*, but with *lumina*. This word hath in the Ablative *vespere*, and *vesperi*. *Cic.* ad *Att.* *Ad octavum Iduum Martii vespere.* *Id.* 2. de *Orat.* *Quum ad me in Tusculanum, inquit, heri vesperi venisset.* This Ablative in *i*, some call a Dative used Adverbially, how rightly let them consider. Hither may be referred also *vesperus*, used for the same. *Cic.* 2 *Phil.* *Atque ibi se occultans perpotavit ad vesperum.* *Id.* *Tusc.* *Ab hora octava ad vesperum secretis collocuti sumus.* There is also read *Vespera* a *Fem.* *Cic.* 2. *Catil.* *Si accelerare volent, ad vesperam consequentur.* But that is not proper for this Rule.

*Pontus* is a proper name sometime of a Countrey, and some of a Sea (and Synecdochically put for any Sea;) and thence it wants the plural number.

*Sic penus*] *Penus* the Masculine is read in *Plaut.* *Pseud.* *Nisi mihi annuum penus hic ab amatoribus congeratur.* *Priscian.* 1. 5. de *Generib.* *Charis.* 1. de *Analog* From *penus* the Neuter *columella* formes *penora*.

*Et Sanguis*] *Diomedes*, and *Donatus* reckon *sanguis* as a perpetual Singular. But the Hebrews use דָּמָי [Sangines bloods] in the plural number. *Psal.* 5. 6. And the Hellenists, follow them therein, whence we read (ib) ἀνδρα ἀνδρών; and the *Vulg.* *Interpreter* follows them; whence in him, *Sanguinum vir*. But in any Classick Authour I presume it appears not in the plural Number. See *Voss.* de *Analog.* 1. 1. c. 39.

3. Qu. May any more words be added to this Rule?

*An.* To this Rule may be added *pudor*, *fosfor*, *ceffus* [for a belt, or womans girdle] *hic vifcus*, bird-lime, *muscus*, *meridies*, and *mundus* for womens decking or adorning.

¶ *Caftus* for a Whorelebat hath the plural number: *vifcus* the Neuter for the flefh between the skin and the bone, or an entrail, hath the plural number. Instead of *Meridies* in the plural number *Ovid* by way of Paraphrase ufeth *medii dies*. *Eueniant mediū sic mihi ſepe dies*. *Mundus* for the Univerſe hath the plural Number. *Cic. 1. de Nat. Deor. Cur non ſexcenta millia mundorum, ſed innumerabilia auſus es dicere* >

Many more words are reckoned as Masculines wanting the plural number, of which yet we may find a plural number though ſeldome uſed, which it may not be amiſs in paſſing to take notice of. Such is *Fumus* which *Phocas* miſtakes for a Masculine ſingular wanting the plural number, and therefore reckoned by him with *limus*, and *ſimus*. But *Martial. l. 4. ep. 5. hath, Ven- dere nec vanos circum palatia fumos*; though again it may be granted, that there the word is uſed not in its proper, but in a Metaphorical ſenſe, and the Grammarian meant it in the proper ſenſe, wherein perhaps it is not uſed at all in the plural number. And ſuch are *pulvis*, *genius*, *ſol*, *aer*, *ros*, *carcer*, *adept*, *autumnus*, *clavus*, *crur*, *ſitus*, *metus*, *terror*, *timor*, *pallor*, *ſilex*, ſuppoſed by ſome to want the Plural number, but found in that number alſo ſometimes] *Pulveres* is read in *Hor. Epod. 17. No- vendiales diſſipare pulveres.*] *Geniōs*, and *Geniis* are read in *Plantus*, *Cenſorinus*, *Feflus*, &c.] *Soles* in *Plin. l. 2. c. 31. Plures ſoles ſimul cernuntur.* *Virg. Georg. 1. Pulverulenta coquat maturis ſolibus aſtas.*] *Aeres* in *Lucret. l. 4. Aeribus binis quoniam res conſiſt utraque.* *Vitruv. l. 1. c. 1. Noſſe oportet acres locorum, qui ſunt ſalubres, aut peſtilentēs.*] *Rores* in *Virg. 1. Georg. certatim largos humeris infundere rores.* *Claud. de Nupt. Honor. & Mariæ. Hac largo matura die ſaturataque vernis Roribus.* Yet hardly ſhall you read *Rorum.*]

*Carceres*

*Carceres* as well when it signifies a Prison, as when the place where the Horses in a race do start, (whence the phrase *a carceribus ad metam* from the start to the staff, i. e. from the beginning to the ending) is of the Plural number, contrary to what *Servius* (on *Virg. An. 5.* imagined, whence *Vossius* from *Seneca* cites *plenos carceres*; and from *Julius Firmicus*, *Carcerum squaloribus premitur.*] *Adipes* is in *Plin. 1. 8. c. 36.* *Illi sunt adipes medicaminibus apti.* *Colum. 1. 6. c. 2.* *Non adipibus obesa.*] *Autumni* is in *Ovid. Met. 1.* *Perque hyemes æstusque, & in æquale Autumnos.*] *Clavi* is in *Liv. 1. 9.* *Lati clavi annuli aurei positi.* *Hor. 1. 1. od. 35.* *Clavos trabales & cuneos manu Gestans ahenâ.*] *Cruores* is in *Virg. An. 4.* *Atros siccabat veste cruores* *Valer. Flacc. Argonaut. 1. 7.* *Terga mihi diros servant infecta cruores.*] *Situs* in the plural is in *Virg. An. 3.* *Nec revocare situs, aut jungere carmina gestat.* *Ovid. Met. 7.* *--Demtor Ascoris esse situs.*] *Metus* in the plural is in *Virg. Georg. 2.* *Atque metus omnes & inexorabile fatum Subjecit pedibus.* *Bur metuum* or *metibus* you shall hardly read.] *Terrores* is in *Hor. 1. 2. ep. ult.* *Somnia terrores magicos, miracula, sagas.* *Ib. ep. 1.* *Irritat, mulcet, falsis terroribus implet.*] *Timores* is in *Hor. 1. 1. ep. 4.* *Inter spem curamque, timores inter & iras.* *Lucan. 1. 1.* *Quos ille timorum Maximus baud urget lestri metus.*] *Pallor* is in *Lucret. 1. 4.* *Quæ contagæ tuâ palloribus omnia pingunt.*] *Silices* is in *Lucret. 1. 2.* *Et validi silices, ac duri robora ferri.* *Ovid. Met. 1. 9.* *rigidi silices.* *Voss. Etymol. Gram. p. 57.* *De Analog. 1. 1. c. 39.* *Danef. Schol. 1. 2. c. 7.* Of all which yet it will do well to use those only that are found in *Classick Authours*, and no further than they are found used.

The Declining of the words of this Rule.

3. Qu. How are the words in this Rule declined?

An. The words in this Rule are declined thus, *Hic Hesperus, Hesperî*; *Hic vesper, vespersis*; *Hic Pontus, Ponti*; *Hic limus limi*; *hic finus fini*; *hic penus penâs*; *hic sanguis sanguinis*; *hic æther ætheris*; *hic nemo neminis*;

And

And thus far of the second Rule of Defectives in Number.

## CHAP. XV.

1. Qu. **W**hat doth the third Rule of Defectives in number concern? and which is it?

An. The third Rule of Defectives in Number concerns some words of the Feminine Gender, which want the Plural number: and it is this,

*Singula feminei generis, pluralia raro,  
Pubes, atque salus, sic talio, cum indole tussis,  
Pix, humus, atque lues, sitis, & fuga; iuxta quietem,  
Sic cholera atque fames, bilisque, senectus, juventus;  
Sed tamen hæc, soboles, labe, ut & omnia quinta  
Tres similes casus plurali sæpe tenebunt:*

*Excipe res, species, facies, aciesque, diesque;*

*Quas voces numero totas licet esse secundo.*

*Istis multa solent muliebrianectere: ut hæc sunt,  
Stultitia, invidia, & sapientia, desidia, atque*

*Id genus innumera voces, quas lectio præbet:*

*Quam tibi præfixam ceu certum collige flum.*

*Rarius his numerum, quandoque sed adde secundum.*

2. Qu. **W**hat is the meaning of this Rule?

An. The meaning of this Rule is this, that there are some Nouns of the Feminine gender, which are seldom or never found used in the plural number.

3. Qu. **W**re there any that are never found plurals?

An. Of the words here named in the Rule, these are never found used as plurals, *Pubes, indoles, humus, sitis, cholera, fames, senectus, and juventus, stultitia, invidia, sapientia, and desidia*; the rest though seldom, yet are found used in the plural number.

¶ *Salus* is used in the plural number by the *Vulgar Interpreter of the Bible Psal. 17. 51. Magnificans salutes regis*

*Singula feminei generis pluralia raro.*

*regis sui.* In imitation hereof *Marcellus Ficinus* made bold to say, not *salutes* only, but *salutibus*. But no *Classick* Authour hath so used it. Whence *Charisius* denies it the plural number : and is rather to be hearkened to therein.] *Talio* hath a plural number in *Gell.* 1. 20. c. 1. *Taliones illa tuæ reciproca argutiores profecto, quàm veriores fuerunt.*

Again, *Infinita quadam reciprocatio talionum.*] *Tussis* is used in the plural number by *Plin.* 1. 22. c. 25. *Contra deploratas tusses.* So 1. 23. c. 2. 1. 24. c. 8. and 1. 28. c. 4. *Supini cubitus oculis conducunt, ac proni tussibus.*] *Pix* is used plurally by *Virgil.* *Georg.* 3. *Idæasque pices, & pingues unguine ceras.*] *Lues* is used as a plural in *Prudentius.* *Et confer alternas lues.* Hardly doth any *Classick* Authour so use it.] *Fuga* hath a plural use, (contrary to *Charisius*) in *Virg. Æn.* 5. *Impediunt texumque fugas.* So *Sil.* 1. 14. *Mortesque fugaque.* Yea, *Tacitus* refuses not *fugas.*] *Quies* is found used plurally by *Cicero* 1. *Offic.* *Ludo & jocanti quidem licet, sed sicut somno, & quietibus ceteris.* *Sall. Catil.* *Namque animus impurus diis hominibusque infestus, neque vigiliis neque quietibus sedari poterat.*] *Bilis* *Pliny* useth in the plural number 1. 20. c. 9. Speaking of *B. assicâ*, he saith, *Biles detrahare non percolitam putant.*] *Soboles* is a plural in *Cic.* 3. de *Leg.* *Censores populi crotates.* *Soboles, familias, pecuniasque consento.* *Colum.* 1. 9. c. 14. *Ne novæ soboles diffugiant.* Id. 1. 5. c. 5. *Nemo iam ferit exfamerâ [i. e. ulmi semine] sed ex sobolibus.*] *Labes* is a plural in *Cic.* 1. de *Divin.* *ut multa oppida corruperint, multis locis labes factæ sint, terræque desciderint.* Id. 2. *Offic.* *Hunc tu quas conscientie labes in animo censes habuisse?* But these two last our Authour allows to have the three like cases in the plural number ; but no more, though *Columella* did use *Sobolibus*. And the same allowance he gives to all Nouns of the fifth declension, together with the same restraint ; *res, species, facies, acies*, and *dies* excepted, which by our Authours leave, may have the plural whole : Though of these

some cases will hardly be found in any Classick Authour : And Cicero in his *Topicks*, saith, *Nolim, ne si Latinè dici possit specierum & speciebus dicere*. But besides these excepted ones *Sidonius* l. 3. ep. 6. used *specibus*. *Simul & animorum spebus erectus fas est de cetero sperare meliora*. But though *Obsopaus* and *Liunctavius* follow him therein, yet he is adjudged by *Vossius* to be no Classick Authour. *Farnab.* L. Gr. p. 18. *Voss.* de *Analog.* l. 1. c. 40. & 48.

4. Q. Our Authour speaks of many words of like sort that may, and are used to be added unto these; can you give any account of them?

Ans. Of those that are not used in the plural number, besides the formerly named, there are these following, *castitas*; *elegantia*; (*fides* (for faith) *galla*; *impietas*; *inertia*; *justitia*; *injustitia*; *lux*, (for light;) *mæstitia*; *pietas*; *pigrinia*; *pituia*; *pueritia*; *rabies*; *requies*; *sanctitas*; *sanies*; *segnitia*; *sacordia*; *supellex*; *rabes*; *terra* (for the element of earth;) *recordia*; and *velocitas*.

¶ *Fides* for a Musical instrument hath the plural number: whence those phrases, of *fidibus* scire; and *fidibus* canere, but not when it is put for faith.] *Iustitia* and *Injustitia* are ordinary in the Plural number in the Scriptures, and Ecclesiastical writers: but are not found in Classical Authours.] *Luces* for *dayes* is read in *Ovid.* 6. *Fast.* *Post septem luces Junius ætus erit.* Id. 2. *de Ponto.* El. 1. - *multis lucibus ante.* Hor. 4. *Carm. od ult. profectis lucibus.* *Martial* l. 10. ep. 72. *Alba leone flammeo calent luces.* But for *light* I no where meet with it plurally used. And upon that account *Charisius* reckons it for a singular.] *Sanctitates* is used by *Arnobius* l. 5. *Sanctitates querere & efficere.* But by no Classick Authour.] *Supellectilia* wherever it be read is not the plural of *Supellex* the Feminine, but of *Supellectile* a Neuter, so that *supellex* as a feminine wants the plural number.] *Terra*, as it is taken *pro regione*; hath the



the plural number, whence *orbis terrarum*, and *loca terrarum ultima* : but as it is taken *pro toto elemento*, so *Charifus* deprives it of the plural number. *Elegantia* is said by both *Charifius* and *Diomedes* to want the Plural number. Late Writers have their Sermons *veneris*, & *elegantias* ; *Erasmus*, *Inelegantium elegantia* ; but by what warrant from any *Classick Authority* may be matter of Inquiry. *Voss. de Analog.* l. 1. c. 40.

5. Qu. Are there any words besides those formerly named, which for their being seldom met withall in the plural number, have been taken to want that number, which yet have the plural number ?

Ans. Besides those words named in the Rule these have been taken to want the plural number, in regard the most of them are seldom met withall in that number, in which yet some are found to have used them. *Arena*, *avaritia*, *barba*, *benevolentia*, *caritas*, *cera*, *cervix*, *contagio*, *culpa*, *cuius*, *fama*, *gaza*, *gloria*, *halex*, *hara*, *impunitia*, *infamia*, *insania*, *inimicitia*, *ira*, *luculentia*, *mors*, *nex*, *oblivio*, *olivitas*, *paupertas*, *pax*, *perfidia*, *perniciēs*, *pestis*, *plebs*, *proles*, *prosapia*, *salubritas*, *sors*, *spei*, *sterilitas*, *tellus*, *valetudo*, *vis*, *vita*.

¶ *Arena* is thought by *Cæsar* to be used amiss, if put in the plural number : but yet in Poets it is found used in that number. *Virg.* 2. *Georg.* Quam multæ Zephyro  
turbentur arenæ *Ho.* l. 3. od. 4. Tentabo & arentes  
arenas *Litoris Assyrii viator.* *Propert.* l. 3. El. 13. Qualis  
& Eurota Pollux & Castor arenis. *Senec. Med.* Serpens  
*Libyci arenis* concidit *Mosus.* ] *Avaritia* is used in the plural by *Cic.* l. 4. de *fig. bon. & mal.* Nec enim omnes  
*avaritias*, si æquè *avaritias* esse dixerimus, sequitur  
etiam, ut æquas esse dicamus ] *Barba* hath the plural number as well signifying the beard of a man, as of a beast. Of a man, *Virg.* 3. *Georg.* Stiriæque impexis induruit horrida barba. Of a beast. *Id.* ib. Nec minus interea barbas incanaque menta, cynthii tondent hirci. Some have thought that of a beast it is only used in the plural



plural: but so *Hor. l. 1. 8. Sat.* useth it in the singular. *Utque lupi barbam varia cum dente colubæ*] *Benevolentia* is in the plural number in *Arnobius l. 6. Benevolentias cunctis individuas exhibere.* But his Authority is hardly good enough to go upon in imitation: and therefore till a better Authority appear, this had best go for a singular only.] *Caritas* is used plurally by *Claudius Mamertinus* in his Oration to *Julian.* *Ceterorum regam atque imperatorum caritates admodum raræ, nec unquam diuturnæ fuerunt.* But how far his Authority may be relied on may do well to consider, before we follow him and use the word so.] *Cera* is used plurally by *Virgil. Georg. 3. Ideasque pices & pingues unguine ceras.* *Column. l. 9. c. 15. At si cera dependentes in longitudinem decurrunt.* -lb. *ceterum figura cerarum talis est* -lb. *separentur ea partes cerarum, quæ* -lb. *queque plebs morem figurandi ceras observat.* lb. *Liquore completi, & superpositis ceris tanquam operculis oblit-*] *Cervix* for the hinder part of the neck, as well as when it betokens pride or contumacy, is used plurally by *Cic. 1. Phil. Post autem caput cervicibus abscidit.* *Id. 1. Ver. Frange cervices.* So the old Copies read that, which is now read *cervicem*, and the old reading is better liked of by *Vossius.*] *Contagio* is plurally used by *Cicero, 2. Offic. Etiam reliquam Graciam evenit contagionibus malorum.*] *Culpa* is found having a plural in *Cic. Verr. 7. In hoc uno omnes in esse culpas.* and in *Auson. Palmas, non culpas esse putabo meas.* *Id. Inquetuis culpis tu tibi da veniam.*] *Cutis* is used plurally by *Cælius Aurelianus l. 1. 1. 4. Abactum tamen cutibus ad cerebrum, & ejus membranas revocat.* *Arnob. l. 2. Peticulis relevatis, & cutibus.*] *Fama* hath a plural number in *Sallust. Aqu boni famas petit.* *Arnob. l. 7. In honestas vos famas adungere Diis vestris.* *Aruntius, Ingentes esse famas de Regulo.* Yet this being a rarity in *Sallust*, and *Aruntius* being condemned by *Seneca* for following him in his singularities, it will not be safe to use this word so.] *Gaza* is found having a Plural number in *Lucan.*

1. 2. *Eosque premunt tentoria gazas.* Seneca Herc. Oct. *Cupit hic gazis implere famem.* Id. Herc. Fur. *Componit opes gazis inhians.*] *Gloria* is read having the plural number in *Cic. pro Planc. Honorum gradus summis hominibus & infimis sunt pares, gloriæ dispares.* Tacit. 3. *Annal. Memorare veteres Gallorum glorias.* Eumenius in his *Panegyric. Gloriarum templa constituere.*] *Halex* for a fish is used by Scaliger exercit. 226. Sect. 2. as having the plural number, saying, *Ad insulam maris Baltici halex cum ingentem vim capi.* *Ericius Cordus* intimates his own using it so, when he writes an Epigram to him that blamed him for it. *Quod tres halices dixi, me Sexte, reprehendis.* These are late Writers; and yet *Vossius* saith, he sees no reason why we may not speak so; and he could see as far as most men, if he out saw not all men, in these things.] *Hara* contrary to what *Charisius* teacheth, hath a Plural number in *Varro de R. R. l. 3. c. 10. Faciendum haras quadratas. & Cum sunt inclusi in haras.* *Columel. l. 8. c. 14. Sub porticibus quadrata haræ exsternuntur.*] *Impuritia* is used plurally by *Plaut. Pers. 5. 1. Tricentis versibus tuas loqui impuritas nemo potest.*] *Infamia* hath a plural use in *Plaut. Pers. 3. 1. Nam si ad paupertatem admigrant infamiæ.*] *Infamia* is used as having a plural in *Plaut. Aulul. Larvæ hunc, atque intemperie, insanieque agitant senem.*] *Inimicitia* is plurally used by *Cic. pro Rab. Post. Nec me pœnitent mortales inimicitias, sempiternas amicitias habere.*] *Ira* is found having a plural number in *Ter. And. 3. 4. Amantium iræ amoris redintegratio est.* *Liv. l. 40. Deslagrare iras.* *Ving. Aët. 4. Magnoque irarum fluctuat æstu*] *Luculentia* is in *Arnob. l. 3. Luculentias verborum*; we have spoke of him before.] *Mors* is found in most cases of the plural number. *Cic. 2. de Finib. Præclarae mortes sunt imperatoria.* Tacit. 3. *Hist. Omni imagine mortium.* Senec. l. 10. *Controvers. Mortibus vivimus.* Id. in 1. *Histor. Et laudatis antiquorum mortibus pæres exitus.* Id. l. 14. *Annal. Plerique liberorum ac parentum mortes deflebant.* Senec. l. 10. *Controvers. Aut illud*

illud quod de subitis mortibus meminī eum dicentem. Petron. Mille jam mortibus frigida.] Nex hath *neces* in the plural number. Cic. 1 Cat. Multorum civium *neces*.] *Oblivio* is used by Horace Od. l. 4. in the plural number, where you may read *Obliviones lividas*. But *oblivia* is far the more usual word.] *Olivitas* in *Colūmella* l. 1. c. 1. hath a plural Number. *Largissimis olivitatibus, Liberique vindemiis exuberent.*] *Paupertates* you may find in *Varro* l. 1. de vita pop. Rom. *Quid potes anxio advertere inter horum temporum divitias, & illorum paupertates?*] *Paces* of *pax* is in *Sall. Jug. Bella, atque paces penes paucos erant.* *Plaut. Rud. a. 1. sc. ult. A patronā paces meā ex petessunt.* *Id. Pers. 5. 1. Civibus salvis, re placida, pacibus perfectis.*] *Perfidia* is accounted by *Charisius* for a singular, yet *Plautus* stuck not to write *perfidias*, saith *Vossius*.] *Pernicies* is used as a plural by *Arnobius* l. 2. *Quid formicarum, & vermium genera in varias lates pernicesque nascentia?*] *Pestis* hath most cases in the plural number. *Claud. 3. de rapt. Proserp. Glomerantur in unum Innumerae pestes Erebi.* *Sil. l. 14. Et posuere avidae mortis contagia pestes.* *Prudent. hym. 2. in passione Laurentii, Committe formas pestium.* *Cic. Tusc. 2. Illachryma patris pestibus.* *Senec. Med. Amonius illas contulit pestes Athos.* *Columel. In morbis & pestibus.*] *Plebs* is said to have *plebes* in the Plur. Number. For saith *Voss.* *plebes urbanae* may be read *L. 111. Cod. de feriis.* *Prudent. in Romano: scribas & ipsas, & coronam plebium*] *Prolum* of *proles* *Vossius* cites from *Capella* in 3tio.] *Prosapias* of *Prosapia* was used by *Cato*, though *Charisius* and *Diomedes* deny it to have any plural number. These three last are scarce warrantable in the plural number.] *Salubritates* of *Salubritas* is in *Censorinus de die Natal. c. 18. In eo [sc. anno] dicunt--Morbos salubritatesque provenire.* The Authority is hardly Classick enough to imitate. *Sors* hath *sortes* in the plural number. *Cic. 2. de Divin. Dicendum igitur putas de sortibus. Quid enim sors est? Idem propemodum quod micare, &c.*] *Spes* is a plural

plural as well as a singular. *Ter. Adelpb. 3: 2. In quo nostræ spes opesque omnes sitæ erant. Ovid. Met. 13. f. 1. Per spes nunc socias casuraque menia Trojæ.* But no such word as *sperum* is read in the Genitive case. Nor *Spebus* in any Classick Authour. Onely *Sidonius L. 3. ep. 6.* hath it *simul & animorum spebus erectis fas est de cætero sperare meliora.* And after him others. Instead thereof *Varro* used *speribus* of *speres*, which is in *Ennius Annal. l. 1.* Neither of them therefore can safely be used. ] *Sterilitates* is in the above cited place of *Censorinus c. 18. de Die Natali. Quod in eo (anno Chaldaico) dicunt tempestates, frugumque proventus, ac sterilitates, item morbos salubritatesque provenire.* ] *Tellus* is used by *Cornelius Gallus* (he whom *Virgil* writes of *Ecl. 10.*) in the plural number, but so as signifying divers continents, *Asia* and *Europe*: *uno tellures dividit amne duas.* ] *Valetudines* is used in the plural number by *Censorinus cap. 15. Hippocrates quoque, alique Medici. in corporum valetudinibus non aliud ostendunt.* ] *Vis* was anciently a plural as well as a singular, as we shewed in the Rule of *Triptots*. Now *vires* whereof *vis* is the contraction, is only in use. ] *Vita* is read in the plural number. *Ter. Ad. 3. 3. Inspecere tanquam in speculum in vitas omnium jubeo.* - *Virg. Æn. 4. Vitasque & crimina discit.* And by this thread of reading, the learner may much, according to our Authours advice, guide himself in the right using of these words, and those expressed in the Rule *Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 40.*

The Declining of the words of this Rule.

5. Qu. How are the words in this Rule declined?

Ans. The words in this Rule are declined thus?

*S. hæc pubes, pubis. Pl. caret. S. hæc salus salutis. Pl. car.*  
*S. hæc talio talionis. Pl. hæc taliones talionum. S. hæc*  
*indoles indolis. Pl. car. S. hæc tussis tussis. P. hæc tusses.*  
*S. hæc pix picis. Pl. hæc pices. S. hæc humus humi. Pl.*  
*car. S. hæc lues luis. Pl. car. S. hæc sitis, situs. Pl. car.*  
*S. hæc fuga fugæ. Pl. hæc fugæ. S. hæc quies, quietis.*  
*Pl. hæc quietes. S. hæc cholera cholera. Pl. car. S. hæc*  
*fames famis. Pl. car. S. hæc bilis bilis. Pl. hæc biles.*  
*S. hæc*

**S.** *hæc senectæ senectæ.* Pl. *car.* **S.** *hæc juvenus juvenu-  
tis.* Pl. *car.* **S.** *Hæc soboles sobolis.* Plu. *hæc & hæc so-  
boles ; his sobolibus.* **S.** *hæc labes labis.* Plur. *hæc & hæc  
labes.* **S.** *hæc res rei.* Plu. *hæc res, &c.* **S.** *hæc species  
speciei.* Pl. *hæc species.* **S.** *hæc facies faciei.* P. *hæc facies.*  
**S.** *hæc acies aciei.* P. *hæc acies.* **S.** *hic vel hæc dies diei.*  
P. *hi dies.* **S.** *hæc Stultitia Stultitiæ.* P. *car.* **S.** *hæc  
invidia invidiæ.* Pl. *car.* **S.** *hæc sapientiæ sapientiæ.*  
Pl. *car.* **S.** *hæc desidia desidiæ.* Plu. *car.*

And thus far of the Third Rule of Defectives in  
Number.

## CHAP. XVI.

1. Qu. **VV** What doth the fourth Rule of De-  
fectives in Number concern ? and  
which is it ?

Ans. The fourth Rule of Defectives in number con-  
cerns Neuters in the singular number, which have no  
plural number : and it is this,

*Nec licet his neutris numerum deferre secundum  
Delicium senium, lethum, cœnumque salumque,  
Sic barathrum, virum, vitrum, viscumque penumque,  
Justitium, nihilum, ver, lac, gluten, simul hæc :  
Adde gelu, solium, jubar. Hic quoque talia ponas  
Quatibi, si observes, occurrent multa legenti.*

Nec licet !  
his neutris  
numerum

2. Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule ?

Ans. The meaning of this Rule is this, That there  
are some words of the Neuter gender, which have no  
plural number.

¶ There is read *deliciæ* in the plural number :  
but that is not the plural number of *delicium*, but of  
an old singular of the feminine gender, *delicia*, now out  
of use, though yet remaining in *Plautus*, as was shewed  
before, where we spake of *Nundinum*, and *Epulum*.

*Lac* was comprised before under the name of *uda*.

*Hæc* was also comprised before under the name of  
uda,

*uda*, as signifying in the Neuter gender, *Pickle*, or the liquor of a *Lobster*, or at least of the fish called *Garus*. As for *balex* a fish, *Scaliger*, and others have used it in the plural number, as we have shewn before.

*Gelu* is by *Charisius* intimated to have the plural number: but *Cledonius* affirms the direct contrary; and till example be brought to overthrow it, his affirmation may stand good.

*Solium* is found having a plural number in *Pliny*. l. 33. c. 12. *Solis argenteis*. l. 35. c. 12. *Fistilibus solis*. l. 36. c. 19. *Quippe in balineis solia temperabantur humore sanguine, ad medicinam Elephantia.* *Voss.* de *Analog.* l. 1. c. 41.

3. Qu. *Our Authour speaks of many like words, that in reading, may be met withal, which are to be referred hither, can you name any more such?*

An. Besides those Neuters named in the Rule, which have no plural number, there are these more of like nature, *album*, *callum*, *crocum*, *ebur*, *fas*, *fascinum*, *fel*, *hepar*, *hilum*, *nil*, *nihil*, *nectar*, *nefas*, *nitrum*, *pelagus*, *pus*, *sal*, *sinapi*, *siler*, *siser*, and *vulgus*.

¶ *Lucretius* indeed l. 1. hath *pelagea*, *severa*, but that is the Greek word *πῆλαιν* of *πῆλαι* written in Latine Letters; so l. 6. *At pelage multa & late subtrahenda videmus.* *Sal* the Masculine hath *sales*; but *sal* the Neuter hath no plural. *Despauterius* to prove *vulgus* to have a plural number, cites *Cic.* 3. de *Nat. Deor.* *Saturnum maxime colunt vulgi.* But the better books have *vulgo* saith *Vossius.* De *Anal.* l. 1. c. 4.

4. Qu. *Are there not some Neuters more, which have been taken for Defectives in Number, which yet have the plural number, though that number, in some of them especially, be rarely to be found.*

An. There are other Neuters, which have been thought to want the plural number, whereof yet some are found to have that number very ordinarily, though others

others very rarely, so as that they are hardly, if at all, to be used in that number; namely *ævum*, *allium*, *altum*, *cælum*, *gaudium*, *ingenium*, *jus*, *lutum*, *macellum*, *mare*, *murmur*, *pascha*, *pedum*, *rudus*, *rus*, & *solum*.

¶ *Ævum* was thought by *Phocas* to want the Plural number: but *Ovid* 1. *de Ponto* el. 4. hath it in the plural number.--*Nulli datus omnibus ævis Tam procul à patria est, horridiorve locus.* *Plin.* l. 14. c. 1. *Simulachrum tot ævis incorruptum.*] *Allium* with *Diomedes* l. 1. is a singular: but *Virgil* *Ecl.* 2. hath in the plural number. *Allia, serpyllumque, herbas contudit olentes.*] *Altum* thought to be a singular only is used by *Virgil.* *Æn.* 1. in the plural number. *Tranquilla per alta:* and no marvel being an Adjective, and referring to *Maria* understood.] *Cælum* was thought by *Charisius*, and *Cæsar* too to be a singular only. Yet *Lucretius* l. 2. hath it in the plural, *Quis pariter cælos omnes convertere.* Yet *Vossius* thinks this spoken *per licentiam Poeticam*, and saith he durst hardly imitate him in it to use *cæli* in the plural, because *Cicero* l. 9. *ep. ad Pætum*, wrote, *Ille barote putabat quæsiturum, unum cælum esset, an innumerabilia.* For if *cæli* might have been said, probably he would have said *innumerabiles*. But the use of it is now grown ordinary, if not as following *Lucretius*, yet as imitating the Greeks, who have *ὕψους* in the plural number ordinarily.] *Gaudium* thought by *Charisius* to want the plural number, is most ordinary. *Virg. Æn.* 4. *Latona tacitum pertentant gaudia pectus.* *Cic.* 1. *Cat.* *Quibus gaudiis exultabis?*] *Ingenium* thought a singular by *Diomedes* is used plurally, and that very ordinarily by *Cicero*, and others. *Cic. pro Corn. Balbo*, *O ingenia metuenda!* *Id. Pro Arch Ingeniorum acies,* & *ingeniorum celeritas.* *Id. de Clar. Orat.* *Ardor animi, qui etiam ex infantium ingeniis elicere voces & querelas solet.* *Quintil.* l. 1. c. 3. *Prætor genus ingeniorum*] *Jus* thought by *Phocas* to be a meer singular, is by *Charisius* confessed to have *jura*, which is ordinary, though



though denied to have *jurium*, and *juribus*, whereof yet we have shewn examples before, in the Notes on *Hor-dea, farra, forum*.] *Lutum* thought by *Phocas* to want the plural number is said by *Nonius* to be found used by *Cicero* Plurally in his Epistles to *Hirtius* : *Luta & limum aggerabant*, and so *Caper*, acknowledgeth *Cæsar* to have used *Luta*.] *Macellum* said by *Caper* to be a singular only, was used by *Memmius* in the Plural number, as he confesses : *Ista macella*. These two last would be warily used, if at all, in the plural number.] *Mare* accounted a singular by *Charisius*, save that in the plural number there be found of it cases in *a*, we have shewn before (in the Notes on *Hordea, farra, forum*), by an example from *Cæsar* to have also the cases in *bus*. And when *Curtius* l. 6. saith, *Mare Caspium dulcius cæteris*, what can he understand in *cæteris*, but *maribus*?] *Murmur* reckoned by *Charisius* amongst the perpetually singulars, is found to have *murmura* very ordinarily. *Cic. 3. de Orat. Ponti murmura. Senec. Oed. Arcana murmura. Virg. 1 Georg. Secreta murmura vulgi.*] *Pascha* *Vossius* thinks may have *Paschata*, though *Ald. Manutius*, and *Simon Verpeus* think no; or else *Pascha*, taking *pascha* for a feminine of the first declension.] *Pedum* also *Vossius* thinks may have a plural *peda* though *Phocas* was of another opinion. And truly where things in nature are more then one, there is reason that the words signifying those things should be capable of a plural number. And where we are destitute of Authority, if yet there be reason to suppose, that if a *Roman* in the best times, would have used a word upon like occasion in the plural number, why may not we now use it in that number? And the same may be said for case, &c. To tie us up strictly in all points to what hath been said by *Romans* may seem hard, unless all that ever was spoken by *Romans* had been written; and all that ever was written had still been extant; and also that they had spoken and written all that there can be any occasion to write or speak; where they have spoken, there

it is necessary that we do speak as they did speak; but where they have not spoken, there it is fit we have liberty to speak as they would have spoken. And what Roman would not have said upon occasion, *duo pedites*? But this by the by.] *Rudus* thought by *Charisius* and *Diomedes* to want the plural number, hath *rudera* in *Liv.* 1. 6. *bell. Pun. Aris acervi, quum rudera milites religione inducti jacerent, post profectiorem Annibalis magni inventi.* And *rudribus extractis* I fancy my self somewhere to have read, though I now remember not where.] *Rus* was thought by *Charisius* to be defective in the plural number; but *rura* is most ordinary. *Virg.* 1. *Æn. per floria rura.* *Hor.* 3. *Carm. aprica rura.* *Ovid.* 13. *Met. Obstita pomis rura.* *Colum.* 1. 9. c. 16. *Dum adhuc rura passionibus abundant.* Other cases of it, are not so easie to meet withall, if at all they be to be met with.] *Solum* thought also to be a perpetual singular, hath *sola* ordinarily. *Cic. pro Corn. Balbo. Vos denique mutæ regiones, imploro, & sola terrarum ultima.* *Virg. Georg.* 1. *Ne saturare fimo pingui pudeat sola.* *Voss. de Analog.* 1. 1. c. 41.

5. Q. How are the words of this Rule declined. The Declining of the words of this Rule.

Ans. The words of this Rule are declined thus : *Hoc delictum delicti.* c. p. *hoc senium senii.* c. p. *hoc lethum, lethi.* c. p. *hoc cœnum cœni.* c. p. *hoc salum sali.* c. p. *hoc barathrum, barathri.* c. p. *hoc virus* (and if it have any Gen. it is) *viri.* c. p. *hoc vitrum vitri.* c. p. *hoc viscum visci.* c. p. *hoc penum peni.* c. p. *hoc justitium justitii.* c. p. *hoc nihilum nihili.* c. p. *hoc ver veris.* c. p. *hoc lac lacis.* c. p. *hoc gluten glutinis.* c. p. *hoc hœc hœc hœc.* c. p. *hoc gelu invariable.* c. p. *hoc solium solii.* P. *hac solia, his soliis, hoc jubar jubaris.* c. p.

And thus far of the fourth Rule of Defectives in number; and indeed of all the Rules touching words which want the Plural number; the next process must be to those Defectives that want the singular number.

## CHAP. XVII.

1. Qu. **W**hat doth the fifth Rule of Defectives in number concern? and which is it?

As. The fifth Rule for Defectives in number concerns such words as are of the Masculine gender in the plural number, but have no singular number: and it is this, *Mascula sunt tantum numero contenta secundo, Manes, majores, cancelli, liberi. Et antes, Menses [profluvium] lemures, fasti, atque minores. Cum genus assignant natales: adde penates, Et loca plurali, quales Gabique, Loirique. Et quæcumque legas passim similis rationis.*

2. Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule?

As. The meaning of this Rule is this, that there are some plural Masculines, which have no singular number.

¶ *Manes* is accounted by *Phocas*, *Diomedes* l. 1. and *Priscian* l. 5, a perpetual plural. But *Appuleius* speaking of *Deo Socratis* saith; *Cum incertum, utrum lar sit, an larva, Deum manem vocant.* The word is an Adjective saith *Vossius*, and signifies good. And as for *sacri* the Ancients said *sacres*; As *Varro* de R. R. l. 2. c. 1. *Porci duo, equeis, quoniam puri sunt ad sacrificium, ut immolentur, olim appellati sacres. quos appellat Plautus, cum ait, Quanti sunt porci sacres? vide Plaut. Rud. 4. 6. Menachm. 2. 2.* so for *mani* they said *manes*. And of *Manis* in that use remains the compounded contrary to it *immanis*. In *manes* therefore *Dii* is understood, as it is in *superi*, which is sometimes expressed with it. *Flor.* l. 1. c. 13. *Dii manibus se consecrant.* Which two words *Dii manibus*, is that which is meant by the *D. M.* that is read in old inscriptions. But for all this I do not Authorize to use *manis* in the singular number: only I declare the nature and use of the word *manes*, from *Voss.* de Analog. l. 1. c. 42.

*Majores,*

Mascula  
sunt tan-  
tum nume-  
ro.

*Majores*, and so *Minores* are by nature Adjectives, but Substantively used, when they refer to *Ancestors* and *Posterity*, so as in this Rule they stand: in which sense they are plurals, because they are many from whom we descend, and that may descend from us. From the word *Majores* in the acception of *Elders*, the month of *May* took his denomination, as *Macrobius* l. 1. *Saturnal.* tells us. *Postquam Romulus Pop. Rom. in majores minoresque divisit, ut altera pars consilio, altera armis remp. tueretur, in honorem utriusque partis, hunc Majum, sequentem Junium vocavit.* The Authors also of any Sect are called *Majores*. So *A. Gell.* l. 19. c. 1. useth it. *Majores nostri conditores sectæ Stoicæ, Appul. in Apolog. Jam pridem majores meos Aristotelem dico, & Theophrastum, & Eudemum.* The same Authour in *Floridis* useth the word in this sense in the singular number, *Major meus Socrates. Voss. de Anal.* l. 1. c. 42.

*Cancelli* was thought by *Calepine* to have a singular *cancellus*, because there is *κατὰ* in Greek. But no example of a singular use of it appearing; and *Charisius* and *Diomedes* reckoning it for a perpetual plural; so let it passe. *Voss. de Anal.* l. 1. c. 42.

*Liberi* is taken by *Charisius*, *Diomedes*, and *Phocas* for a plural only. But it is sometimes found to have *liber* in the singular number. *Quintil. Declam. Cæci. Liberi ac parentis, non alius mihi videtur affectus, quam quo rerum natura, quo mundus ipse constitutus est. Justinian. Instit.* l. 3. tit. 7.—*Si quis in servili constitutus consortio liberum vel liberos habuerit*—*Bachus* is in *Tacitus* l. 2. *Annal.* called *Liber*. The account of which appellation *Vossius* saith is no other but this that he was *Cerere's Liber*, that is *filius*, her son. Yet, though *Tacitus* say, *tres liberos*, instead of *ternos liberos*, which he would have said, had he thought it an only plural, it will not now sound well to use *Liber* in the singular number for a Son, especially since *A. Gellius* hath told us, l. 2. c. 13. that *Antiqui Oratores, historieque que carminum*

*carminum scriptores, etiam unum filium, filiam-ve, liberos multitudinis numero appellarunt.* Which again yet, whither we may so use, I make a doubt, and leave it others to resolve. *Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 42.*

*Et antes.* As *postes* is derived from *post*, so *antes* from *ante*. Yet though we may use *postis* in the singular, because ye may read *postem* and *poste* in *Cicero*, and others; yet we may not say *antis* in the singular, because we have no example for it, *Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 42.*

*Menses profluvium.* *Menses* properly a word of time is here by a Metonymic put for a thing [*menstrua*] that happens in that time; and to be understood only in the notion of that thing. Which whether it may not be said also singularly that of *Plin. l. 17. c. 28.* is an occasion of doubling. *Privatim autem contra erucas ambiri arbores singulas à muliere incitati mensis nudis pedibus recinctâ.* Had not some books read it *incitatis mensibus*, the singular use of it had been more passable. *Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 42.*

*Lemures* is by *Charisius* and *Diomedes* held a plural. Yet *Appuleius* called *Socrateses Dæmon Lemurem.* *Voss. ib.*

*Fasti* was accounted by *Agræius* and *Beda* to have a singular *fastus*. But examples are wanting. For *fasti* *Varro* and *Columella* used *fastus* a plural of the fourth declension. But *fasti* is far more usual. *Voss. de Analog. l. 2. c. 20.*

*Minores* see above in *Majores*.

*Cum genus assignant natales* ] *Natalis* of its own nature is an Adjective often put Substantively in the singular, or plural number, accordingly as it is understood. As it refers to the day on which one is born, so it is a singular. As it refers to the persons from whom one is descended, it is always a plural in the account both of *Charisius* and *Diomedes*, *Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 42.*

*Adde Penates* *Charisius* and *Diomedes* account *penates* a plural. Yet in *Liv. l. 28.* there is read *Penatem.*

And

And *Priscian* l. 7. saith, that there is found a singular Nominative case of it, *Penatis*, of which again being contracted is made *Penas*, as of *nostratis* by the like contraction is made *nostras*. Which inscription of *Penas* *Dionys. Halicarn.* saith he found upon some old Statues of Household Gods. *Voss. ib.*

*Et loca plurali*, quales *Gabique Locrique*. These and the like plural names first and properly agree to the people, and from them are transferred to the place.

3. Qu. Our Authour by that expression of his in the last clause of the Rule, *Et quæcunque legas passim similis rationis* seems to intimate that there may be more words of like nature to these in the Rule added to the Rule: can you give any account of any such words?

An. Many words of like nature to these in the Rule, are spoken of in Grammarians; as *annales*, *artus*, *cœlites*, *cani*, *carceres*, *casses*, *codicilli*, *fascēs*, *finēs*, *foci*, *fori*, *freni*, *furfures*, *Garamantes*, *gemi*, *grumi*, *horti*, *indigetes*, *inferi*, *lares*, *lendes*, *loculi*, *ludi*, *lumbi*, *magistratus*, *mores*, *Nomades*, *nostrates*, *optimates*, *panni*, *plerique*, *plures*, *poster*, *primores*, *proceres*, *pugillares*, *Quirites*, *sales*, *sentes*, *singuli*, *spiritus*, *superi*, *triplices*, *vepres*: but the most of these are such as either are Adjectives taken Substantively as *annales*, &c. or are Substantives taken figuratively, as *spiritus* for pride; or are words used, though more rarely, in the singular number also.

¶ *Annales* is an Adjective taken Substantively, *libri* being understood, when it is used plurally, and *liber* when it is used singularly; as it is by *Cicero Att.* 12. 24. *Scriptum est in annali tuo.* Id. de *Clar. Orat.* *Est igitur apud illum [Ennium] in nono ut opinor annali.* So *Plin.* l. 7. c. 23. *Propter eos sextum annalem adjecit.* *Gell.* l. 2. c. 2. *Posuimus igitur verba ipsa Quadrigarii ex annali ejus sexto transcripta.* *Artus* is used by *Lucan.* l. 6. in the singular number. *Tunc artus palpitat omnis.* *Cœlites*

*lites* with *Charisus* is a plural. But *Ovid* hath in the singular number *Cæite*. l. 4. de *Ponto*. eleg. 19. *Pervenient istuc & carmina forsitan illa. Quæ de te missæ cælitæ facta novo.* *Tertull.* l. de *Passio* c. 4. hath -- *Qui se cælitæm delirârat.* And *Baudius*, *Mixtus beato cælitum cæles choro.*] *Cani* is an Adjective used Substantively. *Cic.* de *Sen.* *Non cani, non rugæ repente auctoritatem asferre possunt.* *Capilli* is understood in it. *Cicero* applyed it to other things *De Div.* *Saxæque cana salis niveo spumata liquore.* *Id.* in *Arat.* *Nec metuunt canos minitanti murmure fluctus.* *Martial* hath *Barba cana.* *Senec.* *coma cana.* *Ovid*, *Caput canum.* *Virg.* *cana fides.* *Tibull.* *amator canus.* But with reference to *Capilli* perhaps it is alwayes used plurally; and that made *Charisus*, *Diomedes*, and *Phocas* deliver it for a perpetual plural.] *Carceres* for the place where horses start in a race, *Diomedes* and *Phocas* suppose to want the singular number. But so the sense of it being the same with it, when it is taken for a prison, a coercendo from keeping in the horses from running forward till their time, as a prison is from keeping persons committed to it from going farther than their bounds, there is reason it should have the singular in that sense, as well as it hath it in the other, which is most ordinary. And indeed so some have used it. *Virg.* 5. *Æn.* -- *ruuntque effusi carcere currus.* *Ovid.* *Met.* 10 *Sigua tuba dederant, cum carcere pronus uterque emicat.* *Cic.* ad *Heren.* l. 4. -- *Ipse intra carcerem stet.*] *Casses* hath a singular number in *Senec.* *Agam.* *Ac.* 5. *Sc.* 1. *Aper cum casse vinculus, tentat egressus tamen.*] *Codicilli* in its own nature hath a singular, as being a diminutive from *codiculus*, which also is from *codex*; but in the strict signification for a company of little Books or Papers, or a Packet of Letters it is only a plural, as referring to more then one. Amongst the *Civilians*, *Codicillus est scriptura vel litera in qua testator suam figurat voluntatem.*] *Fasces* taken for the Imperial Ensigns of the Roman Kings and Consuls is only a plural, because there were twelve of those rods bound up



up together and born before them as the *Pro-consuls* and *Prætors* had six. But in more general and proper acception *fascis* is found a singular. *Charisius* cites *Cicero* saying, *Fascem unum si natus esses. Virg. Ecl. 9. Ego hoc te fascce levabo.*] *Fines* strictly for the borders and bounds of countries and fields, is mostly if not perpetually, used as a Plural, and ye shall hardly produce an instance to the contrary. *Cic. pro Muren. Regeve fines Id. de Leg. Man. Nec Manilia lege singuli, sed ex his tres arbitri fines regemus. Id. ad Qu. Fr. Qui earum civitatum fines incolunt. Id. in 1. Offic. Itaque illorum agri fines, sicut ipsi dixerant terminavit.* Thence Metaphorically. *Id. pro Quint. Ceros mihi fines terminosque constituam, extra quos egredi non possim. Id. de Orat. Crassus mihi visus est oratoriam facultatem, non artis illius terminis, sed ingenii sui finibus immensis describere.* But in other sense for the measure, end, or last part of any thing, the singular is most ordinary.] *Foci* put *pro sedibus patriis* is plurally used as referring to many hearths. *Cic. 3. de N. Deor. Pro aris & focis certare. Id. pro S. Rosc. Focis patriis diisque penatibus præcipitem exturbare.* But put for one hearth, the singular use of it is most ordinary. *Cic. de Sen. Curius ad focum sedens.*] *Fori* is said by *Charisius*, *Diomedes*, and *Phocas* to be a plural only. Yet *Ennius* used it singularly. *Multa foro ponens, and A. Gell. l. 15. c. ult. Stans in summo puppis foro.*] *Freni* is said by *Charisius* and *Diomedes* to want the singular number; and rightly, *frenus*, of which it should come, not being read: but *frenum*, whose plural is *frena*. *Cic. Partit. equa, quæ frena recipere solet. Id. de Clar. Orat. Alteri calcaria, adhibere, alteri frenos.*] *Furfures* for the scurf of the head is a plural only say *Diomedes* and *Phocas*. Whence in *Plin. l. 20. c. 9. furfures capitis*. But for brauze it is a singular, *Plant. Captiv. qui alnat fursure sues.*] *Garamantes* is found singularly used by *Senec. Herc. Oet. ac. 3. Quicquid per Lybiam jacer, Et sparsus Garamas tencit. Claud. Stilic. l. 1. Velox Garamas.*] *Geminis*

is naturally an Adjective, and therefore used plurally, because two brothers are understood by it. Yet *Plaut. Menæch. s. ult.* used it singularly together with *frater. Geminus est frater tuus.*] *Grumi* is taken by *Charisius* for a perpetual plural: but *Nonius* cites *Accius* saying, *Quemcumque infiteram grumam, aut præcisum jugum.*] *Horti* is used plurally for gardens of pleasure. *Cic. de Fin. In hortis Epicuri, quos modò præteribamus. Id. Qu. Fr. Nunc domus supeditat mihi hortarum amœnitatem.* But it is used singularly also. *Cic. in ep. Phædrum excitata, ut hortum ipse conducat. Id. de Sen. Jam hortum ipsi agricolæ succidiam alteram appellant.*] *Indigetes* some would have a plural only. But *Priscian l. 6.* hath *indiges indigiis.* And *Jul. Frontin. Romana urbs indiges, terrarumque Dea, cui par est nihil, & nihil secundum.*] *Inferi* is an Adjective referring unto *Dii* or *homines*, or *loci* understood with it, whence it is used plurally. Whence *Cic. laith Impiis apud inferos pœnas esse præparatas, and excitare ab inferis, and revocare ab inferis, and inferorum animas elicere, and ad inferos pœnas parricidii luere.* Yet *Liv. Andron. in Odyssæa.* useth it singularly with reference to *Deus.* *Inferus an superus, tibi fert Deus funera Ulysses?*] *Lares* was thought by *Charisius* and *Diomedes* to be a plural only. But it is used not only figuratively for a house in the singular number; whence *Horace, Parvo sub lare* in a little Cottage: and *Id. l. Carm. od. 12. Et avitus apto cum lare fundus. Id. l. Serm. 2. Satyr. Qui patrum mimæ donat fundumque laremque;* and *Senec. in Med. Homo incerti laris*, a man that hath no certain dwelling; but also properly. Whence *Cic. in Verr. Relinquere larem familiarum suum, and Redire ad suam larem familiarem;* And the Proverb *Lari sacrificat*, of which see *Godw. Rom. Antiq. p. 41. Plaut. Trin. a. 1. sc. 2. Larem corona nostrum decorari volo. Id. in Aulular. Ego Lar sum familiaris ex hac familia. Virg. An. 9. Per magnos Nist penates Assuracique Larem & cane penetralia Veste.*] *Lendes* is said to be a plural only by *Charis.* and *Diomedes*

des and of the Masculine Gender. But *Holyoke* makes it a singular, and of the Feminine gender. *Tribellius* doth the same; and cites two places out of *Plin.* but they are both of the plural number; and by neither of them can be known the gender, l. 28. *Quo cum aceto calefacto & lentes tolluntur.* l. 29. *Lentes tolluntur adipe canino.* - But why it may not be a singular, I see not: unless the want of an example hinder it.] *Loci*, sc. *muliebris ubi nascendi initia consistunt*, sh. c. *vulva*: is a plural only in that sense.] *Loculi* is mostly plural; yet *Varro de R. R.* l. 3. c. hath, *Quendum deprichensum tesserulas conjicientem in loculum*, and *Cesar ad Pison*: *Locellum tibi resignatum remisit*] *Ludi* for publick shews and playes is only used plurally. *Cic. pro Mur.* *Populus ac vulgus Imperitorum ludis magnopere delectatur.* But for a School; or for a Game, a Sport, or a Jest, it is used singularly *Cic. de Orat.* *Cujus è ludo tanquam ex equo Trojano innumeri principes exierunt.* Id. 10. *Ludus pla vel tesserarum, vel talorum.* Id. *Ludus calarius; gladiatorius; campestris.* Id. de *Fin.* *Illa peraiscere ludus est.* Id. de *Offic.* *Nec enim ad ludum & jocum facti sumus.*] *Lumbi* is much more usual in the plural number; yet *Mart.* l. 13. ep. 5. hath *Lumbus* in the Singular number. *Cerea qua patulo lacerat fcedit a lumblo*] *Magistratus* may be more used in the plural: but it is found also in the singular number even for the *Magistrate*, as well as for the *Magistracy.* *Cic. 1 Offic.* *Et igitur proprium munus magistratus, intelligere se gerere per se nam civitatis.* Id. pro *Quint.* *Magistratum aequum adhuc reperire non potui.*] *Mores* taken by *Charisius* and *Diomedes* for a plural, is also a singular ordinarily. Hence *Cic. pro Cael.* *More meretricio vivere.* Pro *Flac.* *O morem præclarum & disciplinam!* *Nomades* supposed a mere plural, is found to have a Singular in *Mart.* l. 8. ep. 55. *Cui diadema daret marmore picta Nomas.* Et l. 9. ep. 77. *Quod Phrygia, sive Asra quod Nomas vultit.*] *Nostrates* is reckoned by *Charisius* for a Plural: but it is a Propoun Adjective; and used both singularly and

plurally, as the Substantive is, that it is joyned with, or referred to. Hence Cicero in *Ep. Capior faciliis maxime nostratibus.* and *Tusc. Anacharsis potuit pro nihilo pecunia ducere, nostrates Philosophi facere non potuerunt?* And hence *Plin.* speaking of the Myrtle l. 15. c. 29. saith *Tarentinam folio minuto, nostratem patulo.*] *Optimates* is supposed by *Charisius*, *Diomedes*, and *Phocas* to be a plural : yet is used singularly also, sometimes. *Calius ad Ciceron. Att. lo. 10. ep. 11. Pudet te parum optimate esse. Ib. l. 9. ep. 6. Id mandavi Philotimo, homini forti ac nimium optimati.*] *Plerique* in *Charisius* is a plural. *Vossius* shews that *plerus* is used singularly, out of *Pacuvius* and *Cato*. But in *Sall. Catilin.* We have *pleraque* in the singular number. *Namque antea pleraque nobilitas invidia aestuabat. Ib. Contra eos summâ ope nitentur pleraque Nobilitas Senatus. Id. Jugurth. Qua tempestate Carthaginenses pleraque Africa imperitabant. Ib. Pleraque oratione majores suos extollunt.*] *Plures* is taken for an only plural, and rightly, there being no singular Masculine answering to it; as *plus* the Neuter answers to *plura* and *pluria*.] *Posteri* as it respects those many that shall be of & after us, so it is an only plural Adjective used Substantively. *Cic. pro Dom. ut apud posteros nostros conjurationis autor fuisse videar.* Applied to other things it is used singularly. Hence *Cicero*; *Postero anno*; *die*; *mane*, and *posteri temporis* in his *Partit.*] *Primores* is taken by *Charisius*, *Diomedes*, *Phocas*, and *Servius* for an only plural. But though the Nominative Case singular of it, be not found, yet other cases are, Hence *Lucret. l. 6. Nas primoris acumen. A. Gell. l. 16. c. 5. Vestibulum esse partem domus primorem. Id. l. 10. c. 19. Quod in primori pueritiâ legerim Tac. 3. Hist. Primo i in acie. Sueton in Tib. Adsidebat in parte primori. Sil. l. 11. primori Marte.*] *Proceres* also, they say is an only plural : but *Juven. Sat. 8. saith, Agnosco procerem : salve Gatulice.*] *Pugillares* is an Adjective referring to *libri* like *Annales* : and therefore used plurally : yet *Auson. Ep. 137. hath Bipatens pugillar*

*pugillar expedi.* and the *Vulg. Interpreter*, *Luf. 1. 63.*  
*Et postulans pugillarem, scripsit, Catullus Carm. 43.* hath  
*pugillaria*, but as referring to *Schedia*.] *Quinquatrus*,  
 if it be a Masculine, is only a plural. There is read also  
*Quinquatria*. *Suet. Dom. c. 4.* Celebrabat & in Albano quo-  
 tannis *Quinquatria Minerva*.] *Quirites*, said to be an  
 only plural, is found used as a singular in *Hor. l. 2. od. 6.*  
*Quis te redonavit Quiritem Diis patriis; Pers. Sat. 5. Qui-*  
*bus una Quiritem vertigo facit.* But none but Poets use it  
 singularly. The Nominative singular is *Quiris*, or *Qui-*  
*ritis*; uncertain which; sometimes one, sometimes the  
 other being writ.] *Sales* for wit, or conceits, is thought a  
 plural only; but *Cice o* in that sense useth it singularly.  
*l. 2. de Nat. Deor. Salem istum, quo caret vestra natio,*  
*in irridendis nobis nolite consumere.* *Id. ep. 1. ad Qu.*  
*Fr. Dicendi sat facetiæque valuissent.* *Id. 2. de Orat.*  
*Nullam artem esse salis.*] *Sentes* though supposed to  
 have no singular number, yet is found having one in  
*Colum. l. 11. c. 3. Nos sentem canis appellamus.* Who  
 also useth it plurally. *l. 6. c. 3. Liberantur antea senti-*  
*bis*] *Singuli* to which the old Grammarians deny a  
 singular number, hath it in *Plant. Cifel. ac. 4. Sc. Nisi*  
*quid--Atat singulum video vestigiunt;* And *Nonius* cites  
*Varro* in several places sayings; *Semel unum singulum*  
*esse.* *A. GeB. l. 18. c. 13. Nisi dixerat, nummo singula*  
*multabatur.*] *Spiritus* for loqueness of mind, is oitner  
 used in the plural number. *Cic. p. o Syll. Res gestæ credo*  
*mea me nimis extulerunt, & mihi nescio quas spiritus*  
*attulerunt.* Yet in that sense it is used singularly also;  
 and by *Cicero ad Qu. Fr. l. 1. ep. 2. L. Cæcilium nonne*  
*omni ratione placavi? quem hominem? quâ irâ? quo*  
*spiritu?*] *Superi* when it is referred to *Dii* (like *Inferi*)  
 is a plural; yet no more destitute of a singular number,  
 than that; being used with other things in the singular  
 number. *Plaut. Bacchid. Limen superum.* *Cic. in Phil.*  
*Mare superum, & inferum?* and with reference also to  
*Deus.* See *Inferus* above.] *Triplices* is an Adjective  
 referring, like *annales*, to *libelli*; and therefore a plu-

ral; so as *duplices* is, in the like sense. *Mart.* l. 7. ep. 52. *Bis senos triplices, & dentiscalpia septem.*] *Vepres* was thought by *Charisius* to want the singular number; but *Ovid Met.* 5. fab. 10. hath it in that number. *Aut lepori, qui vepre latens hostilia cernit Ora cœnum.* *Columnel.* l. 11. c. 3. *Hunc veprem manifestum est interim non posse.* The Nominative is *vepres*, *veper* not being read. *Voss. de Analog.* l. 1. c. 42.

The Declining of the words in Masculula sunt tantum.

4. Qu. How are the words of this Rule de-

*Ans.* The words of this Rule are declined thus :  
*P. hi manes manium. P. hi majores majorum. P. hi cancelli cancellorum. P. hi liberi liberorum. P. hi antes antium. P. hi menses mensum. P. hi lemures lemorum. P. hi fasti fastorum. P. hi minores minorum. P. hi natales natalium. P. hi penates penatium. P. hi Gabii Gabiorum. P. hi Locri Locrorum.*

And thus far of the fifth Rule for Defectives in Number.

## CHAP. XVIII.

1. Qu. **W**hat doth the Sixth Rule for Defectives in Number concern? and which is it?

*Ans.* The sixth Rule for Defectives in number concerns plural feminines which have no singular number; and it is this.

Hæc sunt  
feminei  
generis—

*Hæc sunt feminei generis numerique secundi Exuvia, phalera, gratesque manubia & idus, Antia & inducia, simul insidiaque, minaque, Excubia, nona, nuga, tricaque, calenda, Quisquilia, therma, cuna, dira, exequiaque, Feria, & inferia, sic primitiaque, plagaque Retia signantes, & valva, divitiaque, Nuptia item & lactes: addantur Theba & Athenæ. Quod genus invenias & nomina plura locorum.*

2. Qu.

2. Q<sup>y</sup>. What is the meaning of this Rule?

An. The meaning of this Rule is, That there are some Nouns of the Feminine gender in the plural number, which have no singular number.

¶ *Exuvie* is a perpetual plural say both *Charisius* and *Diomedes*. As for *Exuvium*, though *exuvie* be by one reckoned one of the Feminines, *quæ servant neutra priori*, I find no such word in *Aschour*, *Lexicon*, or *Grammarians*, beside.] *Phalera* is by some written *falera*; and though in the Glosses of *Philostratus* there be read *phalera*; yet both in *Charisius* and *Vossius* it hath no singular number.

*Grates* as being contracted of *χαλκεις* is generally acknowledged for a mere plural. As for those Grammarians which give this word a Genitive case, *gratum*, I only wish they had given us their warrant as well as their word. Our *Lexicographers* give it none. And *Cooper* or rather *Stephanus*, whom he transcribed and abbreviated, set this word down thus, *Grates, numero tantum plurali, & in hac tantum terminatione*. I remember in our School of *Lincoln*, we borrowed a Genitive and a Dative from *gratie* to decline it with.

*Manubie* is rendred by the Construer of the Grammar, *spoils taken in war*. *Favorinus* in *Gellius* proves a distinction betwixt *manubie* and *præda* from *Cicero* who in his *Orat. de Leg. Agrar. contra Rull.* twice puts these words together as signifying distinct things. *Prædam, manubias, sectionem castra denique Cu. Pompeii sedente imperatore decemviri vendunt.* Again, *Ex præda, ex manubiis, ex auro coronario.* The distinction that he makes is this, *præda dicitur corpora ipsa rerum, quæ capta sunt, manubie verò appellatæ sunt pecuniæ à quaestore ex venditione prædæ redacta.* But whether this distinction be nicely to be stood upon, let others judge. In the mean time *Gellius* tells us, *Est non nusquam invenire ita scripsisse quosdam non ignobiles scriptores* (and *Magius* in his *Miscellanies* names *Suetonius* for one) *ut aut temeri, aut incuriose prædam pro manubiis, &*



*manubias pro prædâ posuerint: aut tropicâ quadam figurâ mutationem vocabuli fecerint.* Gell. l. 13. c. 23. Theodorus Marcilius in his Notes on Sueton. *Vespas.* c. 16. where that Authour useth this word, saith, *Vespasianus procuratores suos tanquam spongas exprimens, eis detrahebat manubias.* Quippe ut est in Glossis. *Manubiae οὐδα ἀπὸ ζώων ἀπαίμαται.* i. e. *Spolia viventibus detracta.* But however that be, the word is granted by all Grammarians to be a plural only.

*Et Idus.* *Idus* is the plural number, though it be but one that is properly called the day of the Ides, because (saith *Vossius*) & dies, qui antecedunt idus, ab idibus nominantur. If any man like not the reason, *Vossius* bids him seek a better. *De Anal.* l. 1. c. 43.

*Antia* a kind of Adjective by nature referring unto *coma* understood, is yielded by all to be a plural only, namely saith *Vossius*, quia significationi multitudo naturæ inest. *Voss.* ib.

*Et induciæ.* *A. Gellius* l. 19. c. 8. saith, *Induciæ & ceremonias scriptores veteres nunquam singulari numero appellaverunt.* But it is taken for a plural only, by *Charisius*, *Diomedes*, and *Photas*, so as *Institia* also is.

*Minaeque.* *Mina* pro comminatione, vel pro munerum eminentia is made by *Charisius*, and granted by *Vossius*, a plural only. And yet *Cato* in *suasione*, used it singularly in the first sense. *Minâ cogi nullâ potuit.* But when it is put *pro librâ æris, seu pondo*; also when *mamma altera lacte deficiens*, or *oris glabro venire*, is meant by it, then *mina* in the singular number is said.

*Nonæ*, saith *Vossius*, is an Adjective, referring unto dies. Nam etsi propriè nona dies unicus, qui proxime VIII. idus antecedit; tamen nunc quatuor, nunc sex dies præcedentes ab nonis accipiunt nomen: eaq; ut puto, causa, cur pluriatv. dixerint nonas, non nonam. *Voss. de Anal.* l. 1. c. 43.

*Trica* is a perpetual plural; though *Trica* be found in the singular: because *Trica* is the name of a Town whence *trica* had its name. Id. ib.

*Calendæ*, or as some rather write *kalendæ*, is like *idus* and *nonæ*, properly the name of one day, yet used plurally, *quia dies qui inter idus & calendæ sunt interjecti à calendis nominantur*. Id. ib.

*Quisquilia* of old was read singularly also. Hence *Nævius* in *Togulariâ*; *Abi, abi, deturbate saxo, humo non quisquilia*. But is now only a plural; *quisquilia* being long since worn quite out of use.

*Therma*, seems a Latine Adjective made of the Greek *ῥημα*, *ἀqua* being understood. Thence *Therma* a Town in *Siciliæ*, where were hot waters, had its name of *Therma*. It is only plural in its use.

*Dire* is an Adjective used Substantively and referring unto *imprecationes* or *execrationes*.

*Feria* is a plural only in *Diomedes*, *Charisius*, *Phocas*, *Gellius* l. 10. c. 8. however without warrant from any Classick Roman Authour, some Ecclesiastical Writers are pleased to use the word *feria* in the singular number.

*Inferia* a plural only in *Charisius*, *Diomedes*, *Phocas*, *Gellius* l. 19. c. 8. is thought by *Vossius* to be an Adjective referring unto *res*, or some such like. *Inferabant enim* (saith he) *sepulchro, lre, mel, aquam, vinum, olivas: etiam flores spargebant. Atque ex eo quod hæc inferrentur, inferia vocabantur. Similiter adjective dixere inferium vinum: ut verbis istis, mæste hocce vîno inferio esto. Quibus utebantur, cum solum culpa inferrent, quod idcirco inferium vinum dixere. Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 43.*

*Sic primitiaque. Primitia* a plural only appears to be an Adjective by nature, by *Ovids* using it adjectively in the singular number. *Met. 12. f. 5. Ecce rapit mediis flagrantem Rhætus ab aris Primitium torrem*. Therefore where it is used simply, and absolutely it hath reference unto *fruges*, as if it were *primitia frugum*.

*Plague*, For a wound, stripe, or blow; or for a region or climate *plaga* is found in the singular number, but as here it stands for a *marsh* or *net*, so it is an only plural say both *Charisius* and *Diomedes*.

*Lactis* thought a Masculine by *Probus*, but proved a Feminine by *Priscian* l. 6. is now a plural only, though anciently it had a singular *hac lactis*, which *Priscian* cites out of *Titinnius*, *Craticula*, *cerebellum*, *lactis agnina*.

*Addantur Thebe*; And yet *Stat. Theb.* 8. useth it singularly. *Vive superstes ait, diraque ad mœnia Thebes Solus abi*. But so it is that divers places besides have had names both singular and plural; so they said *Cyrene* and *Cyrene*; *Cuma* and *Cuma*; *Mycena* and *Mycena*; *Fidenæ*, and *Fidena*, intending saith *Priscian* by both the names but one and the same place. l. 5. Hence, though it be rare, we read in *Virgil. Aen.* 5. *Argolicove mari depressus & urbe Mycenâ*. and in *Plin. l. 16. c. 4. Fidenam primus irrupisset*, and *Sil. Ital. l. 15. Roma minanti impar Fidenæ*; though the one in *Cicero*, and the other both in *Livy*, and others be plurally used.

*Et Athenæ*; this is the clearer instance of the Rule: *Athenæ* being not any where read, that I know of in the singular number. *Quod genus* (as our Authour saith,) *invenias & nomina plura locorum*; as *Fæsulæ*, *Taphræ*, *Esquilæ* or *Exquilæ* (a hill in Rome) *Fregellæ*, *Gades*, *Tralles*, &c.

3. Q<sup>u</sup> Are there any more Words that may be added to this Rule?

*An.* To this Rule, besides those named in it, there may these words also be added; *apinæ*, *caulæ*, *salæ*, *fortunæ* (for estate) *gerræ*, *opes* (for wealth) *nundinæ*, *salinæ*, *scopæ* (for a besome) *stativæ*, *suppetitæ*, *tenebræ*.

¶ *Falæ* signifies many Towers or Turrets of wood together, and so is a plural; yet *Vossius* denies not, but *fala* may be said singularly if one Turret be meant; yet there wants Authority.] *Fortuna* for a heathenish Goddess;

*ides*; or for *chance* or *fortune* as we say, is a singular; but for ones *estate* or *means*, it is never but used plurally; as signifying at once many fortunes, that is gifts of fortune as they heathenishly called their possessions.] So *Ops* as a Substantive may signifie a Deity, or may adjectively signifie one that is helpful, or wealthy; Also *opis* may largely signifie any thing wherewith one is helped, but for *wealth* or *riches* it is not used in the singular number. See before *opis* in the Rule of *Trip-tots*.] *Nundina* is read in the singular number, but it signifies not that which *nundina* signifieth, but a certain Roman Goddess; and so *nundina* is a plural only, see before *nundinum*, in the fourth Rule of *Variants*.] *Scopa* may be read in *Plin.* l. 21. c. 6. signifying an herb, called *Scoparegia*. But in the proper signification of it, for a *broom* or *besom*, you will hardly find it in any good Authour, in any other but the plural number. *Stativa* is by nature an Adjective referring to *aqua* understood, which *Varro de Admirand*, joyned with it. *Secundo de stativis aquis, ut sunt lacus, stagna, &c. Voss. de Analog.* l. 1. c. 43.

4. Qu. Are there no more words but these that may be added to the Rule?

An. There be many more words that have been used to be added to this Rule, which yet are such as have been used singularly, or else might have been rightly so used. Such are *aedes*, *alpes*, *ambages*, *angustia*, *antra*, *antennae*, *ara*, *argutia*, *barba*, *bigae*, *blanditia*, *cere-monie*, *compedes*, *copiae*, *crates*, *dapes*, *decimae*, *deliciae*, *Dryades*, *epulae*, *Eumenides*, *facetiae*, *fauces*, *fides*, *fores*, *genae*, *gingivae*, *grossi*, *habenae*, *illecebrae*, *ineptiae*, *inimicitiae*, *larebrae*, *literae*, *minuix*, *naxia*, *nares*, *effucix*, *palex*, *Parcæ*, *partes*, *præstigia*, *preces*, *quadrigæ*, *reliquix*, *retes*, *salebrae*, *sarcinx*, *scalæ*, *sordes*, *sortes*, *symplegades*, *vigilix*, *vindiciae*, *vires*.

¶ *Aedes* is supposed in the singular number to signifie a Temple: in the plural a house: but that distinction is not universally true. For *Horace* hath *aedes* in the plural

plural number where he speaks of temples. 1. 3. *Carm.* 6. *od.* *Donec templa refeceris xdesque labentes deorum.* and for a house *Plaut. Asin. ac. 1.* hath *xdis* in the singular number. *Adis nobis area est, auceps sum ego.* So *Curt. 1. 8.* *Excubabant, proximi foribus ejus xdis, in qua rex acquiescebat.*] *Alpes* though mostly a plural, yet is read in the singular. *Claudian 1. 3. de laudib. Stilicor. Dixit, & extemplo frondosa fertur ab Alpe.* *Sil. 1. 4.* *Equitemque per ardua vectum insultasse jugo, & fremuisse hiansibus Alpib.* *Juv. 10. Sat.* *Opposuit natura Alpemque nivemque* *Ovid. 1. 3. de Arte Am.* *Nec quot apes Hyblæ, nec quot in Alpe feræ.* The singular use of it is mostly Poetical, though too it be used in Prose by *Sidon. Apollinar. 1. 5. ep. 16.* *Cum primum tetigit Alpe transmissa Gallix solum.*] *Ambages* often a plural, yet is sometimes used singularly. *Ovid. Met. 7. 25.* *Nec longa ambage morer vos.* *Claud. 1. de bello Ger.* *O semper tacita sortes ambage malignæ.* *Senec. Oedip.* *Ambage nexa Delpico mos est deo Arcana tegere.* *Tacit. 6. Annal.* *Namque Macroni, non abdita ambage, Occidentem abeo deseri, Orientem spectari exprobravit.*] *Angustix* is mostly a plural, yet used singularly too. *Plin. 1. 14. 6. 6.* *Quod jam intercidit & incuria coloni locique angustia.* *Cic. 2. de N. Deor.* *Angustia conclusæ orationis non facile se ipsa tutatur.*] *Antæ* which signifies *ostiorum Calera* is only used plurally now because they are two. But *Vitruvius* used it singularly, saith *Calepine*; And if any one shall say *dextram vel sinistram antæ*; in the opinion of *Vossius*, he shall incur no blame.] *Antennæ* is by *Charisius* and others taken for a plural only: But *Ovid. Trist. 1. 3. el. 4.* hath *antennæ* in the Singular number, *Effugit hybernæ demissa antenna procellas.* *Plin. 1. 7. c. 56.* *Vela Icarus, malum & antennam Dædalus.*] *Aræ* when it is taken *pro penatibus*, as when we say *pro aris & focis certare* is a plural only, because it is not one, but many that are contended for: But for one altar, it is used singularly. *Virg. Ecl. 1.* *Illius aram sæpe tener nostris ab ovilibus imbuet agnus.*] *Argutix*

*Argutix* taken by *Charisius* and *Phocas* for a plural only *Gell.* 1. 3. c. 6. useth Singularly, *Tam importuna tamq̃ audaci argutia fuit.* *Id.* 1. 12. c. 2. *Levi & quasi dicace argutia.* *Appul.* 1. *Met.* *Argutia Nilotici calami.*] *Barbæ* of a beast hath been thought only a plural : but in that sense it is Singularly also used. *Plin.* 1. 28. c. 13. *Primumque omnium, rabiem hircorum, si mulceatur barba, mitigari.* See before the Additions to the Rule of *Feminines Singular* wanting the plural] *Bigæ* accounted by *Diomedes*, *Phocas*, and *Charisius* a plural only, is used in the Singular number. *Senec. Herc. Oet.* *Lassa nocturnæ levat ora bigæ.* *Suet. in Tiber.* *Vix unius bigæ adjunctione honorari passus est.* *Stat.* 1. 1. *Thebaid.* *Rorifera gelidum tenuaverat aera biga.*] *Blanditix* by the same Authours was thought an only plural : But *Cic. pro Planc.* useth it Singularly. *Facitis est illa occurfatio & blanditia populares.* *Id. de Rep.* 1. 4. *In cive excelsa, atque homine nobili, blanditiam ostentationem.* *Plaut. Bacchid.* 1. 1. *Viscus merus vestra est blanditia.*] *Ceremoniæ* taken for a perpetual plural by *Charisius* and *Diomedes*, is Singularly used by *Cic. pro Rosc. Amer.* *Peisfidia legationis ipsius ceremoniam polluerunt.* *Cæs.* 1. 7. *Quod more eorum gravissimâ ceremoniâ continetur.* See *Gell.* 1. 19. c. 8.] *Compedes* the same Authours took also for a perpetual plural. But *Columel.* 1. 8. c. 2. hath *Eâque quasi compede cohibentur feri mores.* *Juvén.* *Sal.* 4. *Squallidus in magnâ fastidit compede fossor.* *Hor.* 1. *Carm. od.* 33. *Gratâ detinuit compeda Myrtale.* *Id. Epod.* 4. *Ibericis perussæ funibus latus, & crura durâ compede.* Yet saith *Vossius*, *Extra auferende casum haut temere reperias.*] *Copix* for military forces was accounted by *Charisius* a plural only. Yet *Plaut. Amphitr.* 1. 1. useth it Singularly. *Postquam utrinque exitum est maximâ copiâ.* *Cic. Att.* 1. 8. ep. 17. *Ut ipse cum omni copiâ ad nos veniret,*] *Crates* was accounted by *Charisius* and *Diomedes* a plural only : Yet *Plaut. Pæn.* 5. 2. *Sub cratim ut sese jubeas supponi.* See before in the Additions to the *Monoptots.*] *Dapex* thought by *Charisius* and *Phocas* to be a plu-

plural only, is found to have the Singular number also at least in some cases. *Hor. l. 2. od. 7. Ergo obligatam redde Jovi dapem.* See more examples before, after the Notes on the *Triptots.*] *Decimæ* supposed a plural, is an Adjective referring unto *partes* understood: and used Singularly also, both with a Substantive, as *Plaut. Stich. ut decimam partem polluceam*; and without one. *Cic. 3. de Nat. Deor. Nec Herculi quisquam decimam vocit unquam, si sapiens factus esset.*] *Deliciæ* though taken for a plural only by old Grammarians, had once in use, though it be now disused, a Singular *delicia*: whereof see Examples before, in the Notes upon *Nundinum & hinc epulum.*] *Dryades* accounted a plural is used singularly by *Mart. l. 9. ep. 62. Sæpe sub hac latuit rustica fronde Dryas.*] *Epula* now a plural, had once *epula* a singular in use; of which see before in the Notes on *Nundinum, & hinc epulum.*] *Eumenides* generally a plural, is used as a Singular by *Stat. l. 8. Necdum illum aut truncâ lustraverat obvia taxo Eumenis, aut--*] *Facetiæ* mostly a plural is used Singularly by *Gell. l. 3. c. 3. Adductus stylo atque facetiâ sermonis. Appul. in Apo'og. Scio nonnullos, facetiæ sibi habere.*] *Fauces* in *Charisius* a plural, is used Singularly by *Horace Epod. 13. Arente fauce traxerim.* See before the Additions to the *Moroptots.*] *Fides* for a Fiddle is mostly a plural, yet sometimes used Singularly: as, *Cic. in Arateis, Cedit clara fides Cyllenia. Pers. 6. Sat. Atque marem strepitum fidis intendisse Latinæ. Hor. Epod. 13. Et fide Cylleneâ Levare diris pettora sollicitudinibus.*] *Fores* taken for a meer plural, hath most cases in the Singular number. *Ter. Ad. 2. 3. Quidnam concepuit foris? Ovid. ep. Medæ. Constitit ad geminæ limina prima foris. Cic. pro Balbo. Aperuit forem Scalarum. Ovid. l. 2. Fast. Custos in fore nullus erat.*] *Genæ* a plural in *Charisius* and *Phocas* hath a Singular in *Plin. l. 11. c. 37. Palpebræ in genis utrinque: sed quadrupedum superiori tantum genâ, volucribus in inferiore. Ib. Graviore alitum inferiore gena convivent.*] *Gingivæ* by ancient Grammarians taken for a plural,



is Singularly used by Juvenal. 10. Sat. *Frangendus mi-  
sero gingivâ panis inermi.* Catull. Carm. 40. -- *Russam  
defricare gingivam.*] *Grossi* mostly a plural, yet is also  
used in the Singular number. Plin. l. 13. c. 7. *Sed grossus  
ejus non maturefcit.* Macrobi. l. 2. c. 16. *In millibus tot  
ficorum non videbitis grossum.*] *Habeus* much a plural,  
is also Singularly used. Hor. l. 1. ep. 15. *Lævâ stoma-  
chosus habenâ.* Id. l. 2. ep. 2. *In scâlis latuit metuens  
pendentis habenæ.*] *Illecebræ* though reckoned by old  
Grammarians for a plural, hath also a Singular. Cic. in  
1. Catil. *Jam verò quanta in ullâ unquam homine juven-  
turus illecebra fuit!* Gell. l. 13. c. 11. *Cum quadam ille-  
cebrâ & voluptate utiles.*] *Ineptiæ* a plural with *Chari-  
sius* is used Singularly by Terence *Enn.* 4. 6. *Ego illius  
ferre possum ineptiam.* Id. Ad. 4. 7. *Video ego tuam  
ineptiam.*] *Inimicitæ* a plural only with *Diomedes* and  
*Phocas* is used singularly by Cicero *pro Deiot.* *Parvâ  
inimicitæ culpam.* Id. 4. Tusc. *Ira, inveterata inimi-  
citiâ.*] *Latebræ* taken by *Charisius* and *Phocas* for a plu-  
ral, is singularly used by Cic. 3. *Offic.* *Videant ne quæ-  
ratur latebra perjurio.* Plin. l. 10 c. 29. *Oenanthe qui-  
dem etiam statos latebræ dies habet.* Virg. *Æn.* 12. *Te-  
lique latebram Exscindunt penitus.* Gell. l. 12. c. 11. *Impu-  
nitatemque ex eâ latebrâ sperarent.*] *Literæ* for an  
Epistle or Letter, as it is called, supposed a plural only,  
is also a Singular in Ovid. *Ep. Briseid.* *Quam legis à  
raptâ Briseide litera venit.* Id. *Met.* 9. *Litera cælator  
arcana fatebitur ignes.* Id. *Trist.* l. 3. El. 7. *Vade sa-  
lutatum subito perarata Perillam Litera sermonis fida  
ministra mei.*] *Minutiæ* mostly a plural, is a Singular  
in Senec. ep. 91. *Donec in minutiam frequenter trita re-  
digatur.* Appul. l. 9. *Ad summam minutiæ contere.*] *Naxiæ*  
a plural with some old Grammarians, hath a  
Singular in Hor. l. 1. ep. 1. *An puerorum naxiâ.* Id. l.  
3. od. 28. *Dicetur meritâ non quoque naxiâ.*] *Nares*  
also with them a plural, is oft found a Singular. Ovid.  
*Met.* 7. *Defluxêre comæ, cum quibus & naris & aures.*  
Hor. *Epod.* 12. *Nec naris obfæ.* Claud. l. 3. *de laudib.*  
Stilicor.

*Stilicor. Hæ pedibur, hæ nare sagaces.* ] *Officiæ* mostly a plural is Singularly used by *Plaut.* in *Mossell.* -- *Neque ullam aliam officiam.* ] *Palex* chaff, is supposed a plural only, yet *Cicero* useth it Singularly in *Parad.* *Auri navem evertat gubernator, an paleæ:* as well as he doth plurally in *l. 4. de Finib.* *Gubernator æq. peccat, si palearum navem evertit, & si auri.* Again *pilea* for the Gills or Wattles of a Cock is supposed only a Singular; but that also is used as a plural by *Columel.* *l. 8. c. 2. Palex ex albo rubicantes, quæ velut incanæ barbæ dependent.* ] *Parcæ* supposed a plural, is Singularly used by *Ovid.* *l. 3. de Trist. El. 4. Nubila nascenti seu mihi Parca fuit.* *Hor. l. 2. Caym. od. 16. Spiritum Grææ tenuem Camænx Parca non mendax dedit.* ] *Partes* for a party, side, or faction is mostly a plural, yet sometimes is used Singularly. *Ter. Nostræ parti timeo. Suet. C. Cæs. c. 29. Et designatos etiam Consules è parte diversâ. Cic. Att. 2. 23. Deinde omnes illius partis autores ac socios nullo adversario consensescere.* ] *Præstigiæ* in the opinion of old Grammarians a plural, hath a Singular in *Quintil.* *l. 4. c. 1. Hujus velut Præstigiæ plausum perit.* ] *Preces* in their opinion also a plural, is found Singularly used in the Acc. by *Plaut. Captiv. 2. 1. Nunc te oro per precem.* in the Abl. by *Cic. l. 1. de Invent. Si prece & observatione humili ac supplici utemur* In the Dative by *Terence.* See the *Triptors* above. ] *Quadrigæ* with them also a plural, is a Singular in *Plin. l. 26. c. 5. In summo est quadriga marmorea, quam fecit Pythias. Val. Max. l. 1. c. 8. Pausanias in capulo gladii quadrigam habuit exlatam.* ] *Reliquiæ* in *Charisius* and *Photus* a plural is used Singularly by *Plautus Mil. Glor. 1. 1. At pedites tibi reliquia erunt, si viverent. Appul. in Apolog. Converritorem pridianæ reliquix. Vossius* probably supposes it an Adj:ctive referring to *res* or *partes.* ] *Retes* with *Charisius* hath no Singular; but in *Plautus* it hath *Rud. 4. 2. Nisi hoc quod fero in rete,* and *Sc. 3. Ut demisi retem atque hamum.* ] *Salebræ* reckoned a plural, hath a Singular in *Cic. 4. de Fin. Hæret in Salebrâ.*

*Val. Max. l. 6. c. 11. Semel duntaxat vultum mutavit perquam brevi tristitiz salebrâ succussim.*] *Sarcinæ* in *Charisius* a plural, is found a Singular in several Authors. *Hor. l. 1. ep. 13. Si te forte meæ gravis uret sarcina chartæ. Senec. de Consol. ad Polyb. c. 3. Sufficite ille huic sarcinæ. Plaut. Moliell. 2. 1. unde advenienti sarcinam imponam seni.*] *Scala* as well signifying a ladder, as stairs, is mostly a plural. Yet *Vossius* saith, *Recte Scala dicitur.* And *Caj. Fure cons. said, Vel scalam sciens accommodaverit ad ascendendum.* Yet the plural is rather to be used as having that warrant from the best Authors, which the singular wants.] *Sordes* said to want the Singular number hath three cases in it. See the *Triptots.*] *Sortes* for the *Oracles*, or *Answers* of the Gods, though taken for a plural, hath a singular. *Cic. l. 2. de Div. Nam cum fors illa edita est opulentissimo regi Asiæ. Appul. Met. 4. Apollo sic Latinâ sorte respondit. Ovid. Fast. 5. Obscura sortis ambages.*] *Symplegades* therefore a plural because there were two Islands of that name, yet is used singularly, when one of them is meant; as *Senec. Herc. Fur. ver. 1209. Illa quæ Pontum Scythæ Symplegas arttat.*] *Vigilia* as comprehending all the watches of the whole night is a plural: but speaking of any single watch of the night, as the first, second, third, fourth, *Cæsar* ordinarily useth it in the singular number. *Cic. 1. Philip. Quasi in vigiliâ quadam consulari ac Senatoriâ.*] *Vindiciæ* a plural in *Charisius*, hath a singular in the 12 *Tables*: *Si vindiciam falsam tulit. Servius Sulpitius ad Flisum* saith, *Vindiciam esse, quâ de re controversia est.*] *Vires* accounted a plural by *Charisius* hath *vis* and *vim*, and *vi* in the singular. *Cic. pro Marc. Nulla est tanta vis, quæ Id. in Offic. Ad hanc rationem maximam vim natura habet, fortuna proximam. Id. de N. Deo. Mentis infinitæ vi ac ratione designari & conscribi omnia. Vires,* saith *Vossius*, either comes of *vieris* the Genitive of *vis*; or else of *viris* the Nominative whereof by contraction is made *vis*, de *Anal. l. 1. c. 43. Dures. Schol. l. 2. c. 9.*

The Declining of  
the words  
of this  
Rule.

5. Q<sup>u</sup>. How are the words of this Rule de-

*Ans.* The words of this Rule are declined thus. P. *hæ exuvix exuviarum*. P. *hæ phaleræ, phalararum*. Pl. *hæ grates; hasgrates; ogrades*. Pl. *hæ manubix manabiarum*. P. *hæ idus iduum*. P. *hæ antiæ antiarum*. P. *hæ induciæ induciarum*. P. *hæ insidiæ insidiarum*. P. *hæ minæ, minarum*. P. *hæ excubiæ excubiarum*. P. *hæ nonæ nonarum*. P. *hæ nugæ nugarum*. P. *hæ tricæ tricarum*. P. *hæ calendæ calendarum*. P. *hæ quisquilæ quisquiliarum*. P. *hæ thermæ thermium*. P. *hæ cunæ cunarum*. P. *hæ diræ dirarum*. P. *hæ exequiæ exequiarum*. P. *hæ ferix feriarum*. P. *hæ inferiæ inferiarum*. P. *hæ primitiæ primitiarum*. P. *hæ plagæ plagarum*. P. *hæ valvæ valvarum*. P. *hæ divitiæ divitiarum*. P. *hæ nuptiæ, nuptiarum*. P. *hæ lactes lactium*. [Sing. *hæc Thebe Thebes*.] P. *hæ Thebæ Thebarum*. Plur. *hæ Athenæ Athenarum*.

And thus far of the sixth Rule for Defectives in Number.

## CHAP. XIX.

*Ravius hæc primo, plurali--*

1. Q<sup>u</sup>. **W**hat doth the seventh Rule concerning Defectives in number concern? and which is it?

*Ans.* The seventh Rule for Defectives in Number concerns Plural Neuters, which want the singular number and it is this,

*Ravius hæc primo plurali neutra leguntur*  
*Mœnia, cunctesquis, præcordia, iustraferarum,*  
*Arma, mapalia, sic bellaria, munia, castra;*  
*Funus iusta petit, petit & sponsalia virgo,*  
*Rostra diservus amat, puerique crepundia gestant:*  
*Infantesque colunt cunabula: consulit exta*  
*Augur & absolvens superis Effata recantat.*

*Festa Deum, viderunt, seu Bacchanalia jungi.*

*Quod si plura leges, licet hac quoque classe reponas.*

2. Q<sup>u</sup>. *What is the meaning of this Rule?*

*Ans.* The meaning of this Rule is this, that there are some words of the Neuter Gender in the plural Number, which have no singular Number.

¶ *Mænus* though used, as *Festus* testifieth in the singular number by *Ennius*, *Apud emporiam in campo hostium per mæne*; yet by Grammarians both old and new is taken for a plural only. Some decline this word after the second declension, some after the third: I suppose it hath cases of both, and that is the reason of it. Whether *Mæniorum* be read in the Genitive case I cannot say, but yet believe it is; and if for nothing else, yet even for this; not that the Englisher of *Lillie's Grammar* so declines it, but that that excellent Scholar *Dr. Gregory* at the end of his *Nomenclator Edit. 1654.* so declines it as *Mr. Burles* in his *Grammar, p. 16.* reads it *Mænium*. But *Mænibus* in the Ablative I am sure is read in *Virg. An. O terque quaterque beatis, Quis ante ora patrum Troja sub mænibus altis Contigit oppetere.* *Mr. Farnabie* reckons it among the *Anomala* of both declensions.

*Lustra ferarum.* *Lustra* signifying either the dens of beasts, or a Brothell house, (which two is but a den of beasts) is only a plural. *Virg. 2. Georg. Non al sunt illis saltus ac lustra ferarum.* *Plaut. Agn. Te cuculum ex lustris rapti.* But for the space of four or five years; or for a Sacrifice offered for the purging of a City, it is of the singular number. *Cic. Att. l. 6. Populi autem nullo gemitu publicanis, quibus hoc ipso lustris nihil solverant, etiam superioris lustris reddiderunt.* *Liv. l. 2. sue, ove, tanto caesis immolarant, quod lustrum dictum, sicque a sacrificio illo census obtinuit nomen lustris.* *Voss. de Anal. l. 1. c. 44. Danes. Schol. l. 2. c. 9.*

*Arma* is a word that comprehends several sorts and pieces of arms, and weapons, namely *scutum, gladius, galea, lorica, fustis, lapides*, and thence it is a plural.

Q

*Mapalia*

*Mapalia* was used by *Valer. Flac. l. 2.* in the singular number, *Coit è sparsa concita Mapali Agrestium manus.*

But it is now a plural only in the account of Grammarians old and new. *Voss. ib.*

*Castra* as it signifies the place where an Army doth encamp, together with the Fortifications of that place, is only a plural. But as it is the name of a Town so it is a singular, *Ving. 6. An. Pomerios Castrumque Inui.* *Voss. ib.*

*Iusta* though used Substantively by *Ovid. Met. l. 2.* *In iustaque iusta peregit*, yet in the nature of it is an Adjective, referring unto *funera, quæ*, saith *Vossius*, *iusta dicuntur, quia ius est attribui defunctis*, and so for the nature of it doth not want the singular number; yet in this use of it it is only a plural. *Liv. l. 1. ab æbe, Nec Cælestes modò ceremonias, sed iusta quoque funebria placando quæ manes, ut idem pontifex doceret. Cic. 2. de Leg. Sepultura & iustis exequiarum caruerunt.* *Voss. ib.*

*Rostro* as it notes that part of the *Forum Romanum* where the Orators made their Orations to the people, is only used plurally; the reason is because that place was beautified with many beaks or Stems of Ships taken in Battel from the *Antiates*. *Cic. Phil. 1. In rostris curiam, in Senatu populum defendi.* But when it is put for the single beak of any bird, or snout or nose of other creature as a Sow, Dog, or Camel, or for the Stemme of a ship, it is used Singularly. *Cæs. 36. G. Rostro enim noceri non posse cognoverant. Vide Nizol. Steph. Thes. Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 44. Godw. R. Antiq. l. 1. f. 1. c. 13.*

*Effata* the last prayers of the Augurs without the City, after the end of their auguries, is by nature an Adjective. Hence in *Gell. l. 13. c. 14. Effatum agrum*, and *effatas urbis fines.* *Cic. 2. de Leg. Tempia effata:* Yet Substantively used in the forenamed sense it is a plural only. *Cic. ib. Alteram, quod interpretetur fatidicorum & vatum effata incognita.*

*Festa*

*Festa Deum poterunt seu Bacchanalia jungi. So Orgia, Dionysia, Saturnalia, Genitalia, Compitalia, Floralia, Terminalia, Palilia, Vulcanalia, Neptunalia, Carmentalia, Cerealia, Liberalia, &c. So also the names of Games, or Exercises, as Isthmia, Pythia, Olympia, Nemea, Palatia, Batualia: in which and the like words, Festa, or Certamina is understood.*

3. **Qu.** *Are there any other words of like nature with these, that may be added hither?*

*An.* To these words may also be added these, which are Neuters in the plural number, and have no Singular. *Cete*; *Comitia* (for the Assembly of the people;) *Lautia*; *Magalia*; *parapherna*; *præbia*; *rapicia*; *reposita*; *serua*: also several names of places, as *Artaxarta*, *Bastara*, *Cythera*, *Susa*, &c.

*¶ Cete comes from κῆτος, whence in the plural number κῆτα κῆτων; and so is of the plural number. Plin. l. 32. c. 1. hath Cetos sexcentorum pedum longitudinis in flumen Arabie intrasse. But that is of hic cetus which is in Plaut. Aut. 2. 8. Vitulinam, cetum, porcina, cara omnia, Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 24. Dancs. l. 2. c. 5.] Comitium is read in the singular number, but then it signifies the place where the assembling of the people together was, Plaut. Curc. Qui perjuram hominem vult convenire, mitte in comitium. Cic. pro Sest. Quum forum, comitium, curiam, multâ de nocte occupassent. But the assembly in that place it is plural. Liv. 3. ab. Expectabant quàm max consuliis creandis comitia adicerentur.*

4. **Qu.** *Have no other words been used to be referred to this Head of words?*

*An.* To this Head or Sort of words many more have been used to be referred, which yet either are Adjectives put Substantively, or else such Substantives, as Authors have used Singularly, or might rightly so have used. Such are *acta*, *astuta*, *adversaria*, *avia*, *bona*, *brevia*, *cibaria*, *diaria*, *Genitalia*, *hyberna*, *mellaria*, *multicia*, *natalicia*, *nutricia*, *parentalia*, *præbenda*,



*sorta, stativa, verenda, vinacea, utensilia; So apiaria, aplustra, arbitria, compita, donaria, flabra, frogæ, gesa, intestini, ilia, juga, jugera, lamenta, licia, lumina, oblivia, palearia, pascua, spectacula; spolia, subsellia, tempora, vada, verbera, viscera, vivaria.*

■ *Acta* is used plurally by *Cic. 2. Phil. Acta enim Cæsaris pici causâ confirmata sunt a Senatu.* It is by nature an Adjective; and used also Singularly. *Cic. Phil. 1. Ecquid est, quod tam propriè dici possit actum ejus?* *Astiva* is by nature an Adjective referring to *castra*, or *loca*. But it is used Substantively in the plural number. *Liv. 3. bel. Maced. Educto in astiva milite. Cic. ad Treb. l. 7. Sin astivorum timor te debilitat, aliquid excogita.* *Adversaria* so called, *quod adversâ etiam parte scriptis implerentur, & per transversum quoque*, is by nature an Adjective used Substantively in the plural number. *Cic. pro Rosc. Comed. Quid est quod negligenter Scribamus adversaria?* *Avia* is an Adjective referring unto *loca*, yet used Substantively in the plural number. *Claud. 7. Paneg. Mirantem, æge novas ignota per avia valles Jusserat!* *Bona* by nature an Adjective, is used Substantively in the plural number for *estate*, *goods*, or *fortunes*, *Hor. 1. Serm. Sat. 1. Horum semper ego optarim pauperrimus esse bonorum.* *Brevia* an Adjective by nature referring unto *loca*, is Substantively used in the plural number, to signify *Fords*, or *Shallows* in the water. *Virg. 1. Æn. In brevibus Syrtis urget.* *Cibaria* is by nature an Adjective. Whence in *Columella l. 12. c. 50 Oleum cibarium*; in *Cic. Tuscul. 5. panis cibarius.* in *Plin. l. 14. c. 3. Nova cibaria* Yet Substantively used for *viçtuals* it is only a plural say both *Diomedes* and *Charisius. Cunctantes ad objecta cibaria pecudes perducant. Colu. l. 9. c. 1. Cic. pro Rosc. Amer. Anseribus cibaria publice locantur, & canes aluntur in capitalio; ut significent si fures venerint.* *Diaria* by nature an Adjective, (whence *diaria febris* is used as a plural Substantive, *Hor. l. 1. ep. 14. Cum servis*

*servis urbana diaria rodere maxis* Martial. l. 9. ep. 109. *puerique diaria poscat.* But saith Vossius, *his locis de pluribus diebus agitur: ut fortasse rectius dicatur, Hodie servo diarium non deat: quam diaria.* Lexicographes give it a Singular number; but without example that I see. *Vid. Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 44.* *Genitalia* is an Adjective referring unto *membra* when it is used as a plural Substantive. But it is used Substantively also in the singular number. *Plin. l. 28. c. 11. vulpis mascula genitalie circumligatum.* Id. l. 11. c. 44. *Præter genitale & hoc in maribus tantum.* *Hyerna* is by nature an Adjective referring unto *loca*; but used Substantively in the plural number for *winter quarters.* *Cic. ad Caton l. 15. Exercitum in Hyberna dimisi.* *Multitia* by nature an Adjective, whence *Flavius Vopiscus* hath *tunicas multitias*, is used Substantively in the plural number, *Juver. 2. Sat. Quæro an deceant multitia testem* *Natalitia* is by nature an Adjective referring unto *sidera, festa, convivia*, or some such like, but used plurally like a Substantive: *Cic. 2. de Divin. Sic isti disputant, qui hac Chaldeorum natalitia prædicta defendunt.* Id. *Phil. 2. Hodie non descendit Antonius? cur? dat natalitia in hortis.* *Nutricia* by nature an Adjective referring unto *stipendia, dona*, or the like, is used Substantively in the plural number; by *Ulpian l. 1. Sec. penult.* *Parentalia* an Adjective by nature referring unto *opera convivia*, or the like, (whence *parentales dies* in *Ovid. 2. Fast.* and *umbra parentales* Id. 4. *Trist. el. 9.*) is used Substantively as a plural Neuter, *Cic. 1. Philip. An me censeatis P. C. quod vos inviti seculi essis, decreturum fuisse, ut parentalia cum supplicationibus miscerentur?* *Præbenda* an Adjective in Nature, is used as a plural Neuter Substantive. *Gell. l. 15. Comparandis multis & vehiculis magistratibus qui sortiti provincias forent præbenda publicè conduxisse.* i. e. saith *Trebellius*, *ea quæ à Parochiis præbenda erant; de quibus Horatius, 1 Serm. Præbuit, & Parochi quæ debent, ligna, saleque.* Vide *Steph. Thes.*

*Serta* by Nature an Adjective (whence *Lucan*. l. 10. *Accipiunt sertas nardo florente coronas*) is used as a Neuter Substantive plural *Virg. Ecl. 6. Sertae procul tantum capiti delapsae jacebant.* For the same *sertum* is also said, saith *Servius* in *Ar. 1.*] *Stativa* by nature an Adjective referring unto *Castra* (joyned with it by *Cic. 1. Verr. Iste novus imperator pulcherrimo Syracusarum loco Stativa sibi castra faciebat*) is used in the plural number as a Substantive Neuter, *Liv. 1. 9. Stativa nostra munimenta satis tuta sunt. Id. 3. ab urbe. Qu. Servilius in Latino agro Stativa habuit.*] *Verenda* is an Adjective referring unto *Membra*; yet used as a Neuter Substantive plural. *Plin. 1. 3. ep. 14. Alius pectus & ventrem, atque etiam (scdum dictu) verenda contundit*] *Vinacea* an Adjective by nature (whence saith *Vossius* we say *acinum vinaceum*) is used as a Neuter Substantive plural. *Colum. 1. 6 c. 3. Licet etiam si sit leguminum iropia, & eluta & siccata vinacea, quae de lora eximentur, cum paleis miscere.*] *Ustensilia* by Nature an Adjective, is used as a Substantive plural of the Neuter gender. *Columel. 1. 8. c. 4. Vocant utensilia, quae apes in alvearia conferunt.* But yet *Varro 1. 1. de R. R. c. 2.* useth it as a singular alto. *Contra quod in Italia utensile, modò non nascitur, sed etiam non egregium sit.* And thus far of Adjectives used as plural Substantives, and taken to want the Singular number. Go we on now to Substantives. *Apiaria* is read used singularly. *Col. 1. 9. c. 3. Ne hoc in toto apiario fiat, semper propoganda erit soboles. Id. ib. c. 7. Debebit suggestus lapideus extendi per totum apiarium.*] *Aplustya* is read singularly in *Lucan* l. 3. *Gravumque audax aplustre retentat. Id. -- Hi tortum valedis aplustre lacertis Avulsasque rotant excusso remige sedes.*] *Arbitria* is used singularly *pro arbitri sententia*, and not only *pro judicio. Cic. 3. offic. Reliquorum autem judiciorum hac maxime excellunt, in arbitrio rei uxoriae, Melius, aequius.*] *Compita* is now not used but plurally; but *Vossius* saith *compitum* was anciently used; and cites *Cacilius*

*Cæcilius* and *Varro* using *Compitus* in the singular number: which now are out of use. *De Analog.* l. 1. c. 36. and 44.] *Donaria* plurally used, mostly, if not only when it signifies ἀναθήματα, *Dona quæ Deo offeruntur*: *Ovid* 3. *Fast.* *Situa contigimus manibus donaria puris*, is both singular and plural, when it signifies the place where those gifts are layed up. *Appul.* *Flor.* 2. *Idi donarium dea perquam opulentum.* *Serv.* in *Al.* 12. *Donarium est, ubi collocantur oblata.* *Virg.* 3. *Georg.* *Ductos alta ad donaria currus.* *A. Gell.* l. 2. c. 10. *Et alia quedam religiosa donariis consecratis.*] *Flabra*, as it signifies the winds, is used by *Virg.* 2. *Georg.* plurally. *Ergo non hyemes illam, non flabra neque imbres convellunt.* And in that signification *Servius* saith it is a plural only. Yet *Cyrill* in his Glosses, and *Papias* have *flabrum* a Singular, saith *Vossius.* *supra.*] *Gesa* supposed by *Charisius* a perpetual plural, and mostly so used by Authours, is found Singularly used by *Liv.* l. 6. *Sub laevo humero summum pectus geso laesum est*; and so it is found in *Festus*, and *P. P. as.*] *Intestina* supposed to be a perpetual plural is singularly used by *Celsus* l. 2. c. 1. *Tenuioris intestini morbus, quem ileen naminant.* *Plin.* l. 11. c. 37. *A ventre protinus recto intestino transeunt sibi.* *Ib.* *Est autem plerisque toto intestino, sicut accipitvi, miluo*] *Ilia* supposed a plural only is used Singularly also in *Plin.* l. 11. c. 32. *Ab hoc ventriculo lactes in homine & oves per quas labitur cibus, in cæteris ile.*] *Juga* hath a singular in *Virg.* *Æn.* 6. *Hoc superate jugum.* *Cæs.* 7. b. *Gall.* *Ab dextro latere summum jugum nacti hostes lico depellant.*] *Jugera* is used singularly in *Tibul.* l. 2. el. 3. *Et multo innamcram jugeri pascat ovem.*] *Lamenta* is used mostly plurally; yet *Papias*, and our *Lexicographers* have *lamentum*] *Licia* mostly used as a plural, is yet singularly used in *Gell.* l. 11. c. 18. *Ea quoque furta, quæ per lancem liciumque concepta essent.* *Id.* l. 12. c. 3. *Licio enim transverso, quod linum appellatur, qui magistratibus, inquit, præministrabant, cincti erant.*] *Lumina* when it is taken for both the eyes, or for more dyes

then one is plurally used. *Virg. 2. Æt. Ad cælum tendens ardentia lumina frustra. Catull. de Coma Berenices. Placabis festis luminibus Venerem.* But for one eye it is used Singularly. *Plin. l. 11. c. 37. Ab iisdem qui altero lumine orbi nascerentur, Coclites vocabantur.* So for one day *Virg. Æt. 6. Vix lumine quarto Prospexi Itali- am* ] *Oblivia* mostly a plural is used Singularly as a Substantive *pro oblivione* by *Tacitus l. 3. Hist. Eam sententiam modestissimus quisque silentio, deinde oblivio transmisit.* ] *Palearia* taken for a plural only is found having a singular in *Scæc. Hippolyt. ac. 4. Musco tenaci pectus, ac palear virt.* ] *Pascua* said by some Grammarians to want the Singular number, is found to have it in *Varr. de R. R. l. 2. c. 11. Ad perpurgandum, id quod à viridi pascuo, & eo magis fluxit ex herbâ. Colum. l. 7. c. 1. Nam etiam eo rure, quod pascuo caret, contineri potest exiguo--* ] *Spectacula* accounted by *Charisius* and *Diomedes* for a plural only, is found to have a singular in *Liv. l. 1. Indici deinde finitimis spectaculum jubet.* So *Plin. in Panegy. hact. pantomimorum spectaculum.* ] *Spolia* is by the same Grammarians spoiled of its singular number; but *Vigil* gives it one, *Æt. l. 10. Quo nunc Turnus ovat spolio, gaudetque potitus.* and *Ovid. Trist. l. 1. el. 4. Tu facis ut spoliū non sim, nec nuder ab illis.* ] *Subsellia* taken indeed for all the seats in the Theater together, is a plural; but for one of those seats it is used in the singular number *Plaut. Captiv. sc. 6. Nihil morantur jam Laconas imi subsellii viros.* ] *Tempora* for the Temples, *Charisius* makes a plural: but yet *Virg. Æt. 9.* useth it singularly, *It hasta Tago per tempora utrumque. Catull. Epithalam. Fulix & Manlii; usque dum tremulum moriens Cæna tempus anilitas Omnia omnibus annuit* ] *Vado* supposed a plural is used singularly by *Cæs. l. 1. 6. Gal. Rhodanus nonnullis vado transitur. Liv. l. 8. b. Maced. Pontem, quia vado nusquam transitus erat, facere instituit.* ] *Verbera* accounted by ancient Grammarians a perpetual plural, is found used singularly. *Virg. 3. Georg. Illi, insans verbere torce,*  
Et

Et proni dant lora. & An. 7. Cen quondam torto volitans sub verberibus turbo. Ovid. Met. 14. Et istu verbera increpuit.] Viscera they also said wanted the singular number. But Ovid. Met. 6. hath, Equibus una trahens hexentia viscere tela. & Suet. Vuell. c. 13. Nec temperavit, quin inter altaria ibidem statim viscus, & farræ pene rapta è foco manderet.] Vivaria is much used plurally: Dausius doubteth not but that it may be used Singularly also, licet non occurrat auctoritas. Why but Columella, if his word be of any Authority in l. 9. c. 1. hath the word in the Singular number, five times over, Munire vivarium. and quæ pervagata totum vivarium. and quàm non expediat conferre in id vivarium. and In circum vivarii. and Custos vivarii frequenter speculari debet. See Haynes Gram. p. 33. Farnab. p. 17. Daus. l. 2. c. 9. Voss. Etymolog. Lat. p. 62, 63. and de Analog. l. 1. c. 44.

5. Q. How are the words of this Rule declined? The De-  
An. The words of this Rule are declined thus; Plur. clining of hæc mœnia, mœniorum, mœnibus. Plur. hæc tesquæ, tes- the words quorum; Plur. hæc præcordia, præcordiorum, præcor- of this diis. Pl. hæc lustra, lustrorum. Pl. hæc arma, armorum, Rule. Plu. hæc mapalia, mapaliorum, mapalibus. Plu. hæc bellaria, bellariorum; Plur. hæc mania, muniurum. Pl. hæc castra, castrorum. Plu. hæc iusta, iustorum. Plu. hæc sponsalia, sponsaliorum, sponsalibus. Plur. hæc rostra rostrorum. Plur. hæc crepundia, crepundiorum. Plu. hæc cunabula cunibulorum. Plur. hæc exta extorum. Plur. hæc effata effatorum. Plur. hæc Bacchanalia, Bacchanalium & Bacchanalium Bacchanalibus.

And thus far of the seventh and last Rule of Defectives in Number; and indeed of all the Rules of Defective Heteroclits; our last step is to those that are Redundants,

## CHAP. XX.

## REDUNDANTIA.

1. Q<sup>u</sup>. **W**here now come to the Third and last sort of Heterocli's called Redundant, how many sorts be there of them ?

*Ans.* There be two sorts of Redundant Nouns, some be Substantives, and some be Adjectives.

2. Q<sup>u</sup>. How many sorts of Redundant Substantives be there ?

*Ans.* There be two sorts of Redundant Substantives, Some are Redundant in the *Nominative* also as well as in other cases ; others are Redundant only in the oblique cases, and not in the *Nominative*.

3. Q<sup>u</sup>. How many sorts of Substantives are there, that are Redundant in the *Nominative Case* ?

*Ans.* There be two Sorts of Substantives, that are Redundant in the *Nominative* case : Some according to difference of Terminations are of different Genders. Others under difference of Terminations are of the same Gender.

4. Q<sup>u</sup>. How many sorts be there of those Redundant Substantives, which according to different terminations, are of different genders ?

*Ans.* Of the Substantives, that according to different terminations are of different genders, there be two sorts: for in some the differing Terminations are both *Latine*, but in others one of the differing terminations is *Greek*, from whose Accusative case in *a* is formed a *Nominative* case in *a* of a *Latine* Termination.

5. Q<sup>u</sup>. Which is the Rule for those Redundant Substantives, which according to different Terminations, are of different genders, yet both the Terminations are *Latine* ?

*Ans.*



*An.* The Rule for those Redundantive Substantives, which under different Terminations, though both Latine are of different Genders, is this,

*Hæc quasi luxuriant varias imitantia formas :*  
*Nam genus & vocem variant tonitrus tonitruque,*  
*Sic clypeus clypeum, baculus baculum atque bacillum,*  
*Sensus, & hoc sensum, tignus tignumque tapetum,*  
*Atque tapete tapes punctus punctumque sinapi,*  
*Quod genus immutans fertur scelerata sinapis :*  
*Sinus & hoc sinum, vas lactis, mendaq; mendum;*  
*Viscus & hoc viscum, sic cornu & flexile cornum,*  
*At Lucanus ait, Cornus tibi cura sinistri :*  
*Eventus simul eventum. Sed quid moror istis ?*  
*Talia doctorem tibi lectis mille ministrat.*

*Hæc quasi luxuriant.*

**6. Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule ?**

*An.* The meaning of this Rule is this, that some words agreeing in their signification; but differing in their termination, do differ in their genders accordingly as their terminations do differ: as *tonitrus tonitru*; *clypeus clypeum*; *baculus baculum*; *bacillus bacillum*; *sensus sensum*; *tignus, tignum*; *tapes tapete* and *tapetum*; *punctus punctum*; *sinapis sinapi*; *sinus sinum*; *menda mendum*; *viscus viscum*; *cornus cornu* and *cornum*; *eventus eventum*; whereof the first is Masculine or Feminine, the second and third (if there be any) is Neuter.

¶ *Tonitrus* is Masculine; and read in *Plin.* l. 8. c. 47. *Tonitrus solitariis ovibus abortus inferunt.* *Tonitru* is Neuter, Whence *Ovid.* *Ingens tonitru.* *Stat.* *Rancum tonitru.* There is also read *tonitruum* in *Cic.* *Fam.* l. 8. ep. 2. *Hic tibi strepitus, flemus, clamor, tonitruum.* *Juven.* *Sat.* 4. hath in the plural number *tonitrua.* *Et facient optata tonitrua canas.* *Liv.* l. 1. ab urbe, hath *tonitribus.* *Subito coorta tempestas cum magno fragore tonitribusque.*

*Sic clypeus clypeum.* The first is in *Virg.* *Æn.* 2. *Arduentes clypeos, atque æra micantia cerno.* The second ib l. 9. *Dat tellus gemitum, & clypeum superintonat ingens,*

*Baculus*

*Baculus*, *baculum*, atque *bacillum*. The first is in Ovid. Met. 2. *Baculus tortus*. The second in Sil. l. 13. *Pastorale deo baculum*. The third in Cic. 2. de Fin. *ut bacillum aliud est inflexum & incurvatum, aliud ita natum*.

*Sensus & hoc sensum* as they express the thought of the mind, they are of the same signification, though differing in gender. Cic. in Phil. *Omnes illius sensus cognitos habeo*. Id. de Orat. *Exprimere dicendo sensa possumus*. But as *sensus* refers to the outward senses, or faculties of sense, so there seems to be a difference; *sensus* being used to express them, but not *sensa*, that I meet with.

*Tignus tignumque*. Our Lexicographers have both these words. *Tignum* is ordinary. I wish they had given an example of *tignus*.

*Tapetum atque tapete tapes*. *Tapes* is in Virg. An. 9. *Craterasque simul pictosque tapetas*. *Tapete* in Plaut. Stich. *Tum Babylonia peristromata, sellas, & tapetia Advexit*. *Tapetum* in Virg. An. 7. *Instratos ostro alipedes pictisque tapetis*.

*Punctus punctumque*. The first is in Plin. l. 2. c. 68. *Non aliud est terra in universo, quam mundi punctus*. The second in Horat. de Arti. *Omne tulis punctum, qui miscuit utile dulci*.

*Sinapi Quod genus immutans fertur scelerata sinapis*. *Sinapi* is in Plin. l. 20. c. 22. *Sinapi, cujus in sativis tria genera diximus*. *Sinapis* in Colum. l. 10. *Sequie lac sinit stetur factura sinapis*. Plin. l. 28. c. 11. *Laudatur & sel & sinum, cum sinapis pari modo illitum*. Colum. l. 11. c. 3. *Planta quoque sinapis prima hyeme transita plus cyma ve d afferuat*. Voss. de Analog. l. 2. c. 10. cites *Sinapim* from Columella. Varro de R. R. l. 1. c. 59. hath *Sinaps servare rapa Consecta in sinape*. Plaut. Pseud. ac. 3. *Teritur sinapis scelerata cum illis qui terunt*. In the vulgar Copies it is *sinapis scelerata*; but anciently they said *scelerus* for *sceleratus*. Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 21. In Columella l. 11. c. 3. is read *Sinape* a Nominative

gative Neuter. *Sinape* atque *coriandrum*, ita uti *sata* sunt sua sede *immota* permanent. *Priscian* l. 6. *Steph. Thes.*

*Sinus* & *hoc sinum* (both of the second declension, for *sinus* *sinus* of the fourth is another thing.) *Plaut. Cure.* *Hic cum vino sinus fertur.* *Varr.* l. 1. de *vita P. R.* *ubi erat vinum in mensa positum, aut galeola, aut sinum.* *Priscian* l. 6. *Voss. de Analog.* l. 1. c. 36.

*Mendaque mendum*; The first is in *Ovid Amor.* l. 1. el. 5. *In toto nusquam corpore menda fuit.* The second in *Cicero Fam.* l. 6. *Nam quum mendum Scripturæ literâ tollatur.*

*Viscus* & *hoc viscum.* *Plaut. Bacch.* *Viscus merus vestra est blanditia.* *Plin.* l. 16. c. 44. *Viscum confit ex acinis, qui colliguntur messium tempore immaturo.*

*Sic cornu & flexile cornum*; At *Lucanus* ait *cornus tibi cura sinistri.* *Cornu* is in *Ovid Met.* 7. *Flexum circum cava tempora cornu.* *Cornum* *Id. Met.* 5. *Oppositoque genu curvavit flexile cornum.* *Plin.* l. 28. c. 11. *Dentes mobiles confirmat cervini cornus cinis.* From *cornus* in this Gender, but in a Metaphorical sense *Lucan.* l. 7. saith *cornus tibi cura sinistri.* and *Cic. Co-* *bortes dextri Cæsaris cornus.*

*Eventus simul eventum.* The first is in *Liv.* l. 10. ab *urbe eventus comitiorum incertus.* *Ovid. ep.* 2. *Careat successibus opto, Quisquis ab eventu facta notanda putat.* The second in *Lucret.* l. 1. *Eventum dici poterit quodcumque erit actum.* *Cic. in Partition.* *Si cujusque facti & eventus causa ponetur.*

*Sed quid moror istis?* *Talia doctorum tibi lectio mille ministrat.* Hither therefore refer those that end (1.) in *a* and *um*, as *acetabula acetabulum.* (2.) in *a* and *us*, as *aranea araneus.* (3.) in *us* and *um*, as *antidotus antidotum.* (4.) in *er* and *um*, as *alabastrer alabastrum.* (5.) in *a* and *as*, as *hæc tiara, hic tiarias.* (6.) in *a* and *e*, as *hæc cepa, hoc cepe.* (7.) in *o* and *um*, as *postulatio postulatum.* (8.) in *io* and *us*, as *concurfio, concursus*; and many more, of which see *Voss. Etymolog. Latin.* p. 69. 71. de *Analog.* l. 1. c. 35. *Danef. Schol.* l. 2. c. 10.

7. *Quæ hæc are the words of this Rule declined?*

*An.*

The Declining of the words in this Rule.

*An.* The words of this Rule are declined thus, *S. Hic tonitrus tonitrūs, &c. S. hoc tonitru invariab. Pl. hæc tonitrua tonitruum, &c. S. hic clypeus clypei. S. hoc clypeum clypei. S. hic baculus baculi. S. hoc baculum baculi. S. hic sensus sensūs. S. hoc sensum sensū. S. hic tignus tigni. S. hoc tignum tigni. S. hoc tapetum tapeti. S. hoc tapete tapetis. S. hic tapes tapetis. S. hic punctus puncti. S. hoc punctum puncti. S. hoc sinapi invariab. S. hæc sinapis sinapis. S. hic sinus fini. S. hoc sinum fini. S. hæc menda mendæ. S. hoc mendum mendi. S. hic viscus visci. S. hoc viscum visci. p. c. S. hoc cornu indeclin. S. hoc cornum corni. S. hic cornus cornus. S. hic eventus eventus. S. hoc eventum eventi.*

And thus far of the first Rule of Redundants.

## CHAP. XXI.

1. Qu. **W**hat doth the second Rule of Redundants concern? and which is it?

*An.* The second Rule of Redundants concerns such Substantives as have in their Nominative cases two Terminations, whereof one is framed of the Accusative case of a Greek word ending in *a*; and it is this.

*Sed tibi præterea quædam sunt Græca notanda*

*Sed sibi præterea quædam sunt Græca notanda*

*Quæ quarto casu fixum peperere Latinum:*

*Nam panther panthera creat, crateraque crater;  
Cassida cassis habet, sed & æther æthera suadit  
Hinc cratera venit, venit æthera; sic caput ipsum  
Cassida magna tegit: nec vult panthera domari.*

2. Qu. **W**hat is the meaning of this Rule?

*An.* The meaning of the Rule is this, that some Nouns of a Greek Derivation have two Nominatives, whereof the one is originally Greek, the other Latine, which is as it were made of the others Accusative case ending in [*a*] according to the Greek way of declining: as *N. hic panther, A. hunc panthera*, and thence *N. hæc panthera, æ. N. hic crater, A. hunc cratera*; and thence *N. hæc cratera, æ.*

¶ *Panther*

¶ *Panther* the Masculine is rarely found in that termination. Yet the Authour of *Philomela* hath it, as *Trebellius* saith, *Panther canit amans*. *Panthera* the feminine is ordinary *Hor. 2. Epist. Diversum confusa genus panthera camelo Virg. 8. Æn. Panthera terga retorquens. Liv. 1. 9. b. Maced. Et venatio data leonum & pantherarum.*

*Cratera*que crater. That crater hath *cratera* in the Accusative case, appears from *Virg. Æn. 3. magnum cratera coronâ Induit, implevitque mero.* Thence *cratera* in the Nominative *Hor. 1. 3. Carm. od. 8. Larga nec desunt Veneris sodal. Vina crateræ, Cic. Fam. 7. 1. Craterarum tria millia.*

*Cassida* *cassis* habet. I cannot find that *cassis* is a Greek word. And *Vossius* saith, that the Accusative case of *cassis* is *cassidem*, not *cassida*, *De Analog. 1. 1. c. 29.* This word therefore belongs not to this Rule, but to the following Rule, in regard it hath different terminations in the Nominative case, and yet both the signification and the gender is one and the same. For as *hec cassis* is ordinary: so *hec cassida* is also read. *Propert. 1. 3. el. 10. Aurea cui postquam nudavit cassida frontem. Virg. Æn. 11. Aureus ex humeris sonat arcus, & aurea vati Cassida.*

*Sed & ather æthera* fundit. *Æthera* the Accusative of *æther* is in *Virg. Æn. 9. Oneravitque æthera votis.* Thence the Nominative case *æthra* (said by a Syncope for *æthera*) *Cic. 2. de Nat. Deor. Aerem complexa summa pars cæli, quæ æthra dicitur.*

¶ Hither may be referred *Attagen* (*ατταγεν*) a Greek Masculine. *Hor. Epod. 2. Od. Non attagen Ionicus jucundior.* From the Accusative whereof *attagena* a feminine Nominative is formed. *Mart. 1. 13. Inter sapes fertur alium rimus Ionicarum gustus attagenarum.* Hither also might be referred *hebdomas* *hebdomads*, *solampas* and *lampada*; but that the gender is the same in both the terminations, so that they rather seem to belong to the next rule, part whereof is, -- *Sunt quoque multa*

*multa Accepta à Græcis geminam referentia formam*; there being *hebdomada* read as well as *hebdomas*; *Cic. Fam. l. 16. Lysonis velim vitasses Symphoniam, ne in quartam hebdomadam incideres*; and *lampada* being read as well as *lampas*, say both *Stephanus*, and *Vossius*, but without example. See *Voss. de Analog. l. 1. c. 29.*

3. Q. How are the words of this Rule declined.

The Declining of *panther pantheris. S. hæc panthera pantheræ. S. hic crater crateris. S. hæc cratera crateræ. S. hæc cassis cassidis. S. hæc cassida cassidæ. S. hic æther ætheris. S. hæc æthra æthræ.*

And thus far of the second Rule of Redundants.

CHAP. XXII.

1. Q. What doth the Third Rule of Redundants concern? and which is it?

An. The Third Rule of Redundants concerns Substantives, which have Nominative cases of different terminations, yet of one gender: and it is this;  
*Veritur his rellus, sensus manet, & genus unum*;  
*his rellus-Gibbus & hic gibber, cucumis cucumer, stipis & stips*;  
*sic cinis atque ciner, vomis, vomer, scobis, & scobs*;  
*Pulvis item pulver, pubes puber, quibus addes*  
*Quæ variunt or & os, honor & labor, arbor, odorque,*  
*His & apes & apis, plebs plebis: sunt quoque multa*  
*Accepta à Græcis geminam referentia formam*  
*ut Delphin Delphinus, & hic Elephas elephantus*  
*Sic congrus conger, Melegrus sic Meleager,*  
*Tencrus item Teucer: Dabis huc & cætera cuncta*;  
*Quæ tibi par ratio dederint & lectio casta*

2. Q. What is the meaning of this Rule?

An. The meaning of this Rule is this, That there are some Substantives as well of a Latine, as of a Greek Original, which have two Nominative cases apiece of different

different terminations, which yet are both of one Gender; as *hic gibbus* and *hic gibber*; *hic delphin* and *hic delphinus*.

¶ *Gibbus* is in *Juv. 6. Sat. Attritus galea, mediisque in naribus ingens Gibbus*. *Gibber* in *Plin. 1. 8. c. 45. Syriacis non sunt palearia, sed gibber in dorso*. About the declining of *gibber* some dispute there is, *R. Stephanus* makes it of the third declension, and cites this out of *Juvenal* for it, *Attritus gibbere nasus*. But *Vossius*, who saith it is of the second declension, saith there is no such place to be found in all *Juvenal*. And it is the more probable, that the Substantive *gibber* is of the second declension, because the Adjective *gibber* of the same termination is of that declension. *Varr. de R. R. 1. 3. c. 9. Gallinae Africanae sunt grandes, varia, gibbera*. *Plin. 1. 10. c. 26. Gallinarum genus gibberum*. Yea, *Vossius* cites *gibberi* a Substantive out of *Varro de R. R. 1. 2. c. 5. Sint compressis malis submissive, gibberi spina leviter remissa*. *Voss. de Analog. 1. 2. c. 20.*

*Cucumis cucumer*. *Cucumis* is in *Virg. Georg. 4. Cresceret in ventrem cucumis, nec sira comantem*. And it is ordinary; But *cucumer* not so: insomuch that *Vossius* saith, *sanè quid prohibet cucumer quoque reponi inter obsoleta?* *Priscian lib. 6.* hath it. And in *Plin. 1. 19. c. 5.* is read *Cucumerum Graci tria genera fecere*. But that proves not that the Nominative singular was *cucumer*. For *Servius* notes that though those Authors, whom he calls *Idoneos*, declined *cucumis* thus, *hic cucumis, hujus cucumis*, yet others, *Neoterici*, as he names them, declined it *hujus cucumeris*, like *pulvis pulveris*; and thence might come *cucumerum*. *Voss. de Analog. 1. 1. c. 26.*

*Stipis & stipi*. Whether there be any such word as *stipis* in the Nominative case, is a doubt: but that it is a Genitive of *stips* *Charisius 1. 1.* doth testifie. *Stips* (saith he) *non dicitur in significatione trunci, sed stipes, & facit stipitis. Ceterum in a is significatione correptè stips dicitur, & facit hujus stipis*. *Plin. Ep. 104. numerare jactas*



*stas stipes & velucentes calculos possis.* Cic. 2. de Leg. Co-  
gere *stupem*

*Sic cinis atque ciner.* *Cinis* is read in *Virg. Æn.* l. 4.  
*Namque suam patris antiqua cinis ater habeoat.* *Catull.*  
*Carm.* 69 *Troja virum & virtutum omnium acerva ci-*  
*nis.* *Ciner* is hardly, if at all to be read, any where  
else but in *Priscian* l. 6.

*Vomis vomer.* *Vomis* is in *Virg.* 1 *Georg.* *Vomis &*  
*inflexi primum grave robur aratri.* *Vomer* is read there  
too *Depresso* incipiat jam tum mihi *taurus arato Inge-*  
*mere,* & *sulco attritus splendescere vomer.*

*Scobis & scobs.* *Scobis* is in *Columel.* l. 7. c. 10. *Nau-*  
*seantibus quoque salutaris habetur eburnea scobis sale-*  
*fricto,* &c. *Id.* l. 4. c. 29 *Scobis nunquam sic exime-*  
*batur, ut non inhaereret foramini* *Id.* l. 12. c. 43. *Qui-*  
*dameâdem ratione arida populnea, vel abiegna scobe vi-*  
*vides uvas custodiunt.* But *Scobs* in the Nominative  
case I find not. Yet I suppose it may be read, because  
not only *Stephanus*, but *Vossius* too hath it, yet without  
example. *De Analog.* l. 1. c. 33.

*Pulvis item pulver.* *Pulvis* is not only in *Ennius Annal.* 8.  
*Jamque fere pulvis ad cælum vasta videtur.* But in *Pro-*  
*pert.* l. 1. *Et ult.* *Sit mihi præcipue pulvis Etrusca do-*  
*lor.* *Pulver* is in *Priscian* l. 6. but without an example;  
and hardly elsewhere to be found. *Vossius* counts it ob-  
solete. *de Analog.* l. 1. c. 26.

*Pubes puber.* *Pubes* is in *Seneca Ep.* 118. *Infans fuit,*  
*factus est pubes: alia ejus proprietas fit: ille irrationalis*  
*est, hic rationalis.* So in *Cic. pro C. Rabir.* *Neminem esse*  
*dico ex omnibus iis, qui illo die Romæ fuerint quem tu in*  
*idem judicium vocas, pubesq. tum fuerit, quin arma ce-*  
*perit, quin consules secutus fuerit.* For this *hæc pubes*  
*pubis* by a Metonymic of the Adjunct sometimes is put.  
*Whence Cic pro Mil. Cn. senatus DEMP. omnem Italix*  
*pubem commisit.* But it is not the same with this, which  
is a Masculine, and all one at least in gender and sig-  
nification with *Puber* which is a Masculine *Cæf.* 5. b.  
*Gall. Hoc more Gallorum est initium belli, quo lege com-*  
*muni*

*munī omnes puberes armati convenire coguntur.* And no marvel, *puer* being by nature an Adjective, and *puer* referred to by it, when it is Substantively used. Of its Adjective use these instances will convince. *Cic. 1. Offic. Nostro quidem more cum parentibus pub-eris filii, cum soceris generi non lavantur.* *Liv. l. 1. ab urbe. Id imperium ei ad puberem ætatem incoleume mansit.* *Virg. Æn. 12. Puberibus gaulem foliis, & flore comantem.*

Quibus addes *Qua* pariunt or & os, honor, & labor, arbor, odorque. Honor, labor, arbor, odor, are ordinary. Not so those that end in or; which yet are found *Honos* in *Hor. 2. Carm. od. 11. Non semper idem floribus est honos.* *Labos* in *Plaut. Trin. Quanquam ibi animo labos grandis capitur.* *Arbos* in *Hor. 2. Carm. od. 15. Ille nefasto te posuit die, Quicumque primum & sacri-lega manu Produxit arbos.* *Odos* in *Plaut. Captiv. Quorum odos Subbasilicanos omnes abigit in forum.*

His & *apes* & *apis*. *Apes* is ordinary; not *apis*, which saith *Valla* is *perrarum*; yet it also is read in *Ovid. Met. 7. Non apis inde tulit collectos sedula flores.* *Id. Trist. 5. el. 5. Dulcior illo Melle, quod in ceris Actica ponit apis.* *Colum. l. 9 c. 3. Nam quanto grandior apis, atque rotundior, tanto pejor.*

*Plebs plebis*; rather it should be read *plebs plebes*, as I suppose the Authour writ it, though now it be misprinted *plebs plebis*: for *plebs* and *plebes* (of which by contraction is made *plebs*) are very ordinary, but *plebis* in the Nominative case, no where that I meet withall, but here. *Cic. de Clar. Or. Cum plebs prope ripam Anienis consedisset.* *Gell. l. 10. c. 20. Plebiscitum est lex, quam plebes, non populus accipit.* This word hath *plebei* as well as *plebis* in the Genitive case saith *Vossius*. *Gell. l. 4. c. 14. Manilia ad tribunus plebei provocavit.*

Hither may be added these Latine Nouns; *juventus juvenita*; *senectus senecta*; *buris bura*; *avarities avaritia*; *materies materia*; and the like.

*Sunt quoque multa Accepta à Græcis geminam referentia formam, ut delphin delphinus.* Here our Authour

having done with Latine words comes to Greek ones ; which likewise many of them, when made Latine, have two Terminations in the Nominative case ; as, *Delphin*. which is in *Ovid. Met. 2. Nec se super aquora curvi Tollere Consuetas audent delphines in auras.* And *Delphinus*, which is in *Plin. l. 9. c. 8. Velocissimum omnium animalium, non solum Marinorum, est delphinus.*

*Et hic elephas elephantus.* *Elephas* is read in *Pl'n. l. 8. c. 1. Maximum est Elephas, proximumque humanis sensibus.* *Elephantus* in *Cic. 1. de Nat. D'or. Elephantu belluarum nulla prudentior.*

*Sic congrus conger.* *Charifus* allows *congrus* to be said, but not *conger*. Yet *conger* is found in *Plin. l. 9. c. 20. Alii longi, ut muræna, conger.* Id. ib. c. 62. *Mugil & lupus viuis odio flagrant, conger & muræna, caudæ inter se prærodentes.* But *congrus* I meet not yet with in any Classick Authour ; though Lexicographers have it.

*Melegrus sic Meleager, Teucrus item Teucer dabis huc & cætera cuncta.* Quæ tibi par ratio dederint & lectio casta Such are *Achilles Achilleus, Ulysses Ulyssens; Adonis, Adoneus; Agamemnon, Agamemno; Amazon, Evander, Evandrus; Geta, Getes; Ligur, Ligus; Menander, Menandrus; Palæmo, Palæmon; Perfes, Perseus; Simo Simon; Thymber, Thymbrus, &c.* So *ode oda, lampas lampada, hebdomas hebdomada*, and the like.

The Declining of the words of this Rule.

3. Q. How are the words of this Rule declined ?

Ans. The words of this Rule are declined thus : *Hic gibbus gibbi. Hic gibber gibberi. Hic cucumis cucumis [Hic cucumer (if there be any such word) cucumeris.] Hæc stipis [Hæc stipis (if there be any such word) stipis.] Hic cinis cineris. [Hic ciner (if there be any such word) cineris.] Hic vomis vomeris, Hic vomer vomeris. Hæc scobis scobis [Hæc scobs (if there be any such word) scobis.] Hæc pulvis pulveris [Hic pulver (if there be any such word)]*

word) *pulveris*] *Hæc pubes pubis. Hic puber puberis. Hic honor honoris, Hic homos honoris. Hic labor laboris. Hic labos laboris. Hæc arbor arboris; hæc arbos arboris. Hic odor odoris. Hic odos odoris. Hæc apes apis. Hæc apis apis. Hæc plebs plebis [hæc plebis (if there be any such word) plebis.] Hæc plebes plebis & Plebei. Hic delphin delphinis. Hic delphinus delphini. Hic elephas elephantis. Hic elephantus elephantii. [Hic congrus (if there be any such word) congrii.] Hic conger congrui. Hic Meleagrus Meleagri. Hic Meleager Meleagri. Hic Teucrus Teucri. Hic Teucer Teucri.*

And thus far of the Rules for Redundants in the Nominative case.

CHAP. XXIII.

1. Qu. **W**hat sort of Redundants doth our Author next proceed unto? and what is the Rule for them?

Ans. Our Author having done with the Rules for those *Substantives*, that are Redundant in the *Nominative* case, next proceeds to those that are Redundant in the *oblique* cases; and for them he gives one Rule, which is this,

*Hæc simul & quarti flexus sunt atque secundi:  
Laurus enim lauri facit, & laurus genitivo:  
Sic quercus, pinus pro fructu ac arbore ficus;  
Sic colus atque penus, cornus quando arbor habetur;  
Sic lacus atque domus; licet hæc nec ubique recurrant.  
His quoque plura leges, quæ priscis iure relinquant.*

*Hæc simul  
& quarti  
flexus--*

2. Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule?

Ans. The meaning of this Rule is this, That there are some words which in their declining have the oblique cases of several Declensions, namely the second and the fourth.

¶ *Laurus enim lauri facit & laurus Genitivo. Lauri* the Genitive case is read in *Plin. l. 2. c. 55.* Where

Speaking of what things are not stricken with thunder he saith, *Ex iis qua terra gignuntur lauri fruticem non icit.* Grammarians and Lexicographers say that it hath *laurus* also, and so I suppose it to have, but have no example for it. In the Ablative it hath *lauro* and *lauru*. *Hor. l. 3. Carm. od. 4. ut premere sacra Lauroque collataque myrto.* *Id. 2. Carm. od. 7. Longaque fessum militria latus Depone sub laura mea.* In the Nominative and vocative plural, it hath *lauri* and *laurus*. *Virg. Ecl. 2. Et vos à lauri carpam.* *Stat. 4. Sylv. Et amantes carmina laurus* in the Acc. plural it hath *lauros* and *laurus*. *Virg. Aen. 3. Qui tripodas, clarij lauros, qui fide, a sentis.* *Id. Ecl. 8. Incende bitumine lauros.* Of *laurus* in that case I have no example; but there being that termination read in the Nominative, it is most likely it is read also in the Accusative. Whence *Mr. Farnabie, Laurus habet Genit. lauri & laurus. Abl. lauro & lauru. Nom. plur. lauri & laurus. Accus. lauros & laurus. Ceteros casus tantum secundæ.* *Farn. p. 19. Voss. de Anal. l. 2. c. 20.*

*Sic quercus.* This word hath a Genitive both singular and plural of the second declension, as well as of the fourth, *querci & quercus, quercorum & quercuum.* But all the rest of its cases are of the fourth declension only. *Pristian l. 6. cites from Cicero in his chorographia this for quercorum: Ibi quercorum rami ad terram jacent, ut fues quasi capra ex ramis glande vescantur.* *Farnab. p. 20. Voss. ibid.*

*Pinus* hath in the Ablative case singular *pinu*. *Virg. 7. Ecl. Hic arguta sacra pendebit fistula pinu.* In the Nominative, Accusative and Vocative plural *pinus*. *Virg. 1. Ecl. Ipsæ te Tiryre pinus, -- vocabant.* *Id. Aen. 11. evertunt ætas ad sidera pinus.* The same Authour *Ecl. 8.* hath in that case *pinosque loquentes.* *Farnabie* saith it rather follows the fourth, than the second declension. *p. 20.* But *Vossius* having said, that it hath the cases in *u* and *us* of the fourth, forms the rest of the cases from the Second. *Etymol. p. 68.* where Grammarians differ, let example decide.

Pro

*Pro fructu atque arbore ficus*, That *ficus* in this sense hath some cases of both the Declensions is evident, but whether all, I make some doubt. However our Grammarians without exception deliver it, *Ficus pro fructu ac arbore feminin. Secunda & quartæ declin. pro morbo masculin. & secundæ declinationis tantum* FARR. p. 20. *Quædam sunt secunda & quarta ut ficus pro arbore, aut fructu, Voss. Atymolog. Lat. p. 67.* I will give you what cases of both I have met with, and you may add the rest, as you meet with them. In the Genitive singular of the second declension, it is found in *Juven. 10. Sat. — ad quæ Discutienda valent sterilis mala robo a fici. Cic. in Catone. Ex tantulo grano fici. Id p. o Flac. Homini enim Phrygi qui arborem fici nunquam vidisset fiscinam fidorum objecisti. Colum. l. de Arborib. c. 21. Cacumina fici sculissimo ferimento summa amputare prolest. Varro de R. R. l. 1. c. 41. Fici enim semen naturale intus in ea fico, quam edimus. In the Ablative Singular of the second Declension it is read in *Varro* in the example last named. and *ibid. Contra in fico & malo punica.* In the same case of the fourth declension it hath *ficu* in *Quintil. l. 6 c. 4. Querenti, quod uro sua è ficu se suspendisset.* Yet there *Trebellius* reads *fico*.*

In the Nomin. plural of the second Declension it is read in *Plin. l. 16. c. 31. Quidam brevitate radicum celerius senescere arbores putant: quod congruunt fici, quarum radices longissima, & senectus occissima.* In the Gen. Plu. it is read in *Varro de R. R. l. 1. c. 41.* of the second declension. *Sic genera fico um chiæ ac chlidicæ, &c. Colum. l. de Arborib. c. 21. Fico um genera etiam si sapore & habitu differunt, tamen — Cic. pro Flacco. — Fiscinam fidorum objecisti.* In the Accusative Plural it is read of the second declension in *Varro de R. R. l. 1. c. 41. Tumenim vesiculas per ficos, quas edimus maturas perferunt.* Of the fourth declension in that case it is read in *Martial. l. 1. ep. 65. Dicemus ficus, quas scimus in arbore nasci.* In the Ablative plural  
it

it is read of the second declension in *Plin. l. 16. c. 15. Inficis mirabiles sunt & abortus, qui nunquam maturescunt.*

*Sic colus,* This word saith *Danefius* in the Genitive and Ablative singular in the Nominative and Accusative plural is of both the second and fourth declension, in the rest of the cases only of the second. In the Ablative singular it is found of the second declension in *Virg. An. 8. Cui tolerare colo vitam tenuique Minerva.* *Propert. l. 4. el. 10. Et Lydo pensa diurna colo.* Of the fourth declension in that case it is found in *Plin. l. 21, c. 15. Itaque & colu antiqua mulieres utebantur.* *Stat. Theb. 6. verse 380. Sed hujus extremâ jam fida colus, datur ordo senectæ.* Yet there *Bernartius* reads it *colo.* In the Nom. plural it is read of the second declension in *Senec. Hecc. Fur. Parcarum colî irrevocabiles.* In the Accus. Plur. it is read of the second Declens. in *Stat. l. 3. Sybo. Parcarum fila tenebo Extendamque colos.* Of the fourth in *Valer. l. 6. Argonaut. Rumpit Atropos supremas colus.* *Vossius* having said, *Colus, hujus colî & colus, Abl. Colo & colus,* saith the rest of its cases are of the second declension. So *Farnabie.*

*Atque penus.* That *penus* is of the fourth declension is plain. *Plaut. Captiv. Quibus sunt verba sine penu & pecunia.* *Pers. Sat. 3. In locuplete penu.* But whether it be of the second is a doubt. *Charisius* and *Cledonius* make it to be both of the second and the fourth. *Alvarus* saith he hath read no such word as *penus* of the second declension. *Donatus* saith the Ancients said both *hoc penu,* and *hic penu,* and *hec penu.* But still examples are wanting. Possibly those that thought it of the second declension might be deceived with *peni* the Genitive case of *penum,* which *Phoras* rightly, as *Vossius* saith, acknowledgeth, taking it for a Genitive case of *hic genus.* *Priscian* cites both *Afraninus,* and *Terence* using *penum.* *Ter. Eun. 2. 3. 18. Cum in cellulam ad te patris penum omne congerebam clanculum.* So *Stephanus* and *Danefius* read it. The latter editions by Mr. *Farnabie* and *Schreyvelius* read it *penum omnium.* *Donatus* saith it



is read *& omnem, & omne*. However it be *Vossius* saith he would not use *pene* in the Vocative case, and placeth *penus* in that rank of words, which are of the third and fourth declension, because of *penus penoris*, and *penus penus*. I should advice not to proceed in the use of it beyond the warrant of clear example. He that will may see a Discourse of this word in *Gell.* l. 4. c. 1. This word hath been of the Feminine gender in the fourth declension, but that gender is grown out of use. See the Rule *Incerti generis sunt tampa & dama*.

*Cornus quando arbor habetur*. This word is said to have *corni* and *cornus* in the Genitive; *Cornu* and *Corno* in the Ablative singular, and in the plural the cases in *us* of the fourth; all the rest of the second declension. In *Statius* is read *Cornu depressus* *Activâ* *Serenus Sammonicus* hath *Corno*.

*Sic lacus*. *Stebanus* declines this word, *Lacus, huius lacus vel lacî masculini generis, secundæ & quartæ declinationis*. But of the second declension he gives no example. Of the fourth there be many examples. *Virg.* 8. *Æn.* *Alto lacuse condidit fluvius*. *Hor.* 2. *Carm.* *od.* 15. *Undique latius extensa visentur Lucrino stagna loci*. *Colum.* l. 12. c. 29. *De lacu quàm recentissimum addito mustum in amphoram novam*. *Id.* l. 12. c. 18. *Tum lacus vinarii & torcularii, & fora*. *Ovid.* 4. *Fast.* *Premia de lacubus proxima musta tuis*. *Colum.* l. 1. c. 6. *Lacubus distinguuntur granaria, ut separatim quæque legumina ponantur*. But as not in *Authors* so neither in any of the better sort of *Grammarians*, old or new, do I find any cases of *Lacus* of the second declension; so that till good Authority be produced, it may be best to abstain from that declining and use of it.

*Atque domus*. For the declining of this word there is a memorial verse that will guide well. *Tolle me, mi, mi, mi, si declinare domum vis*. In the Genitive Sing. I find *domi*, and *domus*. *Ter. Eun.* *Domi socique sac vicissim ut memineris*. *Id.* *Ad.* 3 3. *Domi habuit hude disceres*. *Virg.* *Æn.* 6. *Hic labor illa domus, & in extrinsecis*

*cabilis error.* As for *domus* though Gell. (l. 4. c. 16.) tell us that *Varro* and *Nigidius* very learned Romans used to speak so, yet it is grown out of use. In the Dative *domo* & *domui.* *Hor.* l. 1. ep. 10. *Ponendæq. domo quærenda est aræ primum.* *Ovid Met.* 4. fab. 4. *Patres domui communis utrique* in the Accus. *domum.* *Ter. Eun.* 1. 2. *Et is hodie venturum id me constituit domum.* In the Vocat. *Cic.* l. 1. *Offic.* *O domus antiqua, heu, quam dispari domino dominaris!* In the Ablat. *domo.* *Ter. Eun.* 3. 5. *Perii, nam domo exsulo nunc.* There was anciently also used *domu.* Whence *Plaut.* (*ἀρχαῖον* as *Vossius* saith) useth *domu.* *Mil. Gior.* 2. 2. sc. *At sese Athenas fugere cupere ex hac domu.* So *Trajan.* l. 10. ad *Plin.* *Possimus apud P-usenses arcæ istâ cum domu collapsa quam vacare scribis, ad extru- tionem b-inciuri.* But herein they are not to be imi- tated: In the Nom. Plur. *domus.* *Ovid. Met.* 1. *domus intra fuerunt.* In the Genit. Plur. *domorum* & *domuum.* *Ter. Eun.* 4. 7. *Fortiter pugnant, qui sunt memores domorum.* *Auson.* *Monosyllab.* *Nec Genius domuum La- runda progenitus Lar.* *Tacit.* l. 20. *Initium perfrigen- darum domuum.* In the Accus. Plur. *domos.* *Plin.* l. 7. c. 56. *Domos constituerunt primi Euryalus & Hyperbius.* *Ovid.* 1. *Met.* *Tum primum ubi erant domos.* Anciently *domus* in the Accus. plural was used. Whence *Claudianus* l. 1. *Annal.* in Gell. l. 17. c. 2. *Domus suas quemque ire jubet.* But now *domos* is the mostly used word. In the Abl. *Sen.* 1. *Controv.* l. 2. *Quinetiam montes syl- væque in domibus marcidis & umbra fumoque viridibus.*

By this view of the words we see that *few*, or rather none, have all the oblique cases of both declensions. And this it is to be supposed the Authour meant by that clause in the Rules, *Licet hæc nec ubique recurrant.* We will now (for as much as our Authour saith, *Hic quoque plura leges*) consider of other words of like nature, which have, or have had (though now they be grown out of use) cases of both the declensions more, or less. *Arcus* now of the fourth declension (whence *Hor.* l. 1.

od. 22. *Non eget Mauri jaculis nec arcus*) anciently was used by Varro. as Nonius testifieth, in the second declension. *Eoque pecuniam magnam consumisset, quod arci, quos summo opere fecerat, fessi pondere, diu facti, celeriter corruissent.* Lucret. l. 6. *Tum color in nigris existit nubibus arqui.*] *Cibus* now of the second, formerly hath been of the fourth declension. *Plant. Capt. 4. 2. tantus veneri commeatus meo adest in portu cibus.*] *Fagus* now of the second formerly hath been of the fourth declension. *Virg. Georg. 2. vers. 71. & steriles platani malos gessere volentes Castaneas fagus.*—which reading Mr. Farnaby approves. So *Id. in Culice. umbrosæ fagus.*] *Fastus* hath several examples extant of its having been of the fourth declension. *Lucan. l. 10. Nec mens endoxi vincetur fastibus annus.* *Sidon. Apollinaris, sic lustris imperii perennis octo, Quinquennalia fastibus dicuntur.* *Claud. l. 1. in Eutrop. Inter Arinthei fastus & nomen herile Servus erit.* *Varro in Priscian. Postea honoris virtutum causâ Julii Caesaris, qui fastus arrexit, mensis Julius appellatus est.* *Columella l. 9. c. 14. Sequor nunc antiquorum fastus astrologorum.* Yet *Fastus* of the second declension is far more usual. *Sil. l. 8. Marcellum fastis labem suffragia cæca Addiderant.* *Ovid.* intitled his book *Fastorum libros*, not *Fastum*. *Voss. de Analog. l. 2. c. 20.*] *Humus* now of the second, formerly was of the fourth declension; whence Nonius cites Varro saying, *Contra coactus cervus latratu canum. Fertur bisulcis angulis nitens humu.*] *Lectus* now only of the second declension had of old a Genitive of the fourth. Whence *Plaut. Amphit. a. 1. sc. ult. Prius abis, quàm lectus ubi jacuisti, concoluit locus.*] *Pannus* now only of the second, had once an Ablative plural of the fourth declension. whence Pompon. in Nonius *Bono animo es, video: erepisti primum de pannibus.* *Somnus* now only of the second Declension. once had an Ablat. Sing. of the fourth. Whence *Varro de R. R. l. 1. c. 2. Æstivo die si non diffinderem meo institio somnu, vivere non possem.* So *Petrus Victorius* saith it is read in optimis suis MSSis,

as *Vossius* tells us; But in the edition of the Authour by *Josepb. Scaliger* it is *somno*, who ascribes that restitution to the *exemplar* also of the most learned *Victorius*, as he styles him *Voss. de Anal.* l. 2. c. 20. *Jos. Scalig. Conjectanea in Varion.* p. 195.] *Sonus* now of the second only, formerly had an Ablative of the fourth declension. Whence *Sisenna* l. 3. *Hist.* *Postquam in sonu signorum prælium magno cum clamore vinorum commissum.*] *Succus* now of the second declens. only, hath had both a Genitive Sing. and Plur. of the fourth. Whence *Appul.* l. 9. *Ad instar scoparum in amarum ex-nosi succus cariem exolescunt.* Id. l. 10. *Coquus sapidissimus nutrimentis succuum pulmenta vapore mollibat.*] *Susurrus* now of the second only, had once an Abl. Sing. of the fourth. Whence *Appul.* l. 3. *Florid. Tibia questu delectabilior, & fistula susurru jucundior, & buccina significatu longinquior.*] *Ventus* of the second had an Abl. Sing. of the fourth. *Plaut. Cistel.* 1. 1. *Qui secundo ventu veltus est Tranquillo mari.*] *Versus* now of the fourth, hath had a Nom. Gen. and Abl. Plur. of the second. *Lxl. in Polymetris.* *Omnes sunt denis Syllabis versi.* *Laber. in Lacu Averno.* *Versorum, non numerorum numero studuimus.* *Valer. in Phormione.* *Quid hic cum tragicis versis, & symâ facit?*] *Vulgus* of the second is quoted by *Charisius* out of *Varro*, as having an Ablative singular of the fourth. *A vulgu condemnaretur.* But these, or the most of them are such (as our Authour discreetly saith) *quæ triscis jure relinquantur.*

3. Q. Are there not Redundants in declining, of other declensions besides the second and the fourth?

An. Besides these Redundants of the second and fourth declension, there are others of other Declensions: for some are of the first and third declension, some of the second and third, some of the third and fourth, and some of the third and fifth.

¶ Some are of the first and third; as *N. Orestes*, Gen. *Orestæ* & *Orestis*. *N. Orontes*, G. *Orontæ* & *Orontis*.

*Orontis*. In Greek some are of the first and fifth, as, *ῥέμνις ῥέμνις* & *ῥέμνις*. *Δάφνις Δάφνις* & *Δάφνις*. So in imitation of these they said in Latine *N. Laches*. *G. Lacha* & *Lachetis*. *N. Thales*. *G. Thalx* & *Thaletis*. *N. Calchas*. *G. Calcha* & *Calchantis*. *N. Pascha*. *G. Pascha* & *Paschatis*, &c. (2.) Some are of the second and third, as *N. Sequester*. *G. Sequestri* & *Sequestris*. *N. Oedipus*. *G. Oedipi* & *Oedipodis*. *N. Polypus*. *G. Polypi* & *polypodis*. *N. Glomus*. *G. Glomi* & *glomeris*. *N. Vesper*. *G. Vesperis* & *vesperis*. *N. Mulciber*. *G. Mulciberi* & *Mulciberis*. Nouns in *eus* have *ei* and *eor*, as *N. Typhreus*. *G. Typhxi* & *Typheos*. So *Tydemus*, *Perseus*, &c. In the Gen. Plur. we say *Saturnaliorum* & *Saturnalium*; *Compitaliorum* & *Compitalium*. *Bacchanaliorum* & *Bacchanalium* *Anciliorum* & *Ancilium*. *Vestigaliorum* & *Vestigalium*. *Sponsaliorum* & *Sponsalium*. Hinc decentissimum sponsaliorum genus est. Sence. l. 1. de Benefic. c. 9. See *Macrob.* l. 1. *Saturnal.* c. 4. (3.) Some are of the third and fourth : as *penus* and *specus* whence the Ablatives *penu* and *specu*. but *penus* and *specus* of the third are Neuters. As *Gell.* l. 20. c. 11. *Eaque mihi ad subsidium memorie quasi quoddam literarum penus recondebam*. See also his l. 4. c. 1. *Virg. An.* 7. *Hic specus horrendum*. So *hoc acus aceris*, and *hæc acus acis* *Varro* l. 4. de L. L. *Incus* (sc. *culcitas*) *acus*, aliudve quid inculcabant. as *Joseph Scaliger* reads that place, *Colum.* l. 2. de R. R. c. 10. *Ac durissima quidem acus refectæ, separatæque crunt acidentibus*. (4.) Some are of the third and fifth : as *N. requies*. *G. requictis* & *requiei*. *N. Plebes*. *G. plebis* & *plebei*. And *fames* once had in the Gen. case both *famis* and *famei*, whence yet remains *fame* the Ablative case with *e* long, as of the fifth declension. *Voss.* *Etymolog.* Lat. p. 67, 68. and de *Analog.* l. 2. c. 20.

4. Qu. How are the words of this Rule declined? The De-  
An. The words of this Rule are declined thus. *N. hæc* clining of *laurus*. *G. Lauri* & *laurus*. Abl. *laur* & *lauru* *N. Pl.* the words *lauri* & *laurus*. Accus. *Lauros* & *laurus* the rest of the of this cases Rule.

cases of the second. N. *hæc quercus*. G. *querci & quercus*. G. Plur. *quercorum & quercuum*. The rest of the cases of the fourth. N. *hæc pinus*. Abl. S. *pinu*. N. Pl. *pinus*. Acc. Plur. *pinus & pinos*. The rest of the second. N. *hæc ficus*. G. *fici & ficus*, &c. N. *hæc colus*. G. *coli & colus*. Abl. *colo & colu*. N. Pl. *coli & colus*. Ac. Pl. *colos & colus*. The rest of the second. N. *hic penus*. G. *penus*. &c. N. *hæc cornus*. Abl. *cornu & cornu*. N. Pl. *corni & cornus*. Ac. Pl. *cornos & cornus*. The rest of the second. N. *hic lacus* Gen. *lacus*, &c. N. *hæc domus*. Gen. *domi & domus*, &c. only *dome* in the Voc. *domi* in the Abl. *domi* in the N. and Voc. Plur. and *domis* in the Dat. and Ab. Plur. are not said.

And thus far of the Redundant Substantives.

## CHAP. XXIV.

### 1. Qu. **W**hat is the Rule for Redundant Adjectives?

An. The Rule for Redundant Adjectives is this,

*Et quæ luxuriant sunt Adjectiva notanda.*

*Et quæ luxuriant sunt Adjectiva notanda*  
*Multa, sed in primis quot & hæc tibi nomina fundunt,*  
*Arma, jugum, nervus, somnus, clivusque, animusque*  
*Et quot limus habet, quot frenum, & cera, bacillum,*  
*A quibus us simul is formæ, ut inermus inermis.*  
*Rarior est bitarus, vix est hilaris bene nota.*

### 2. Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule?

An. The meaning of this Rule is this, that there are many Adjectives which have other Adjectives besides themselves, differing in termination from them, both formed from the same original, and being of the self and same signification with them; especially those that come of the Substantives named in the rule *arma*, *jugum*, &c. whereof some end in *us*, others in *is*.

¶ *Arma*, of this word come *inermus*, and *inermis*. The first is in Sall. *Jug ubi paulo asperior ascensus erat, singulos præ inermos mittere*. Ib. *Nec decere, quem manus arduaverit;*

*armaverit, ab inermis pedibus auxilium pretere.* The second also is in *Sall. Jug. Postremo cuncti armati inermesque.* *Ib.* *Eorum plerique inermes cadunt.*

*Fugum.* Hence come *bijugus*, and *bijugis*. The first in *Virg. Æn. 3. Præcípites bijugo certamine campum Corripuere.* *Martial. l. 1. ep. 13. Gestatus bijugis Regulus effec equis.* The second in *Claud. Atq. uno bijuges tolli de limine fasces.* *Suet. in calig. Postridie quadrigario habitu, curriculoque bijugi famosorum equorum.*

*Nervus.* Hence *Enervus* & *Enervis*. The former in *Appul. l. 1. Aur. Afr. Puer in molitiem decorus insurgit inque flexibus tortuosis enervum & exosam saltationem explicat.* The latter in *Quin. l. 9. c. 4. Duram potius atq. asperam compositionem malim, quam effeminatam & enervem.*

*Somnus* Hence *Semisomnus*, & *semisomnis*. The former in *Cic. ep. l. 7. Quum illi interea qui te istuc reliquerunt, spectarent communes mimos semisomni.* *Tacit. l. 1. Sine vulture milites qui semisomnos inermos, aut palantes ceciderant.* The latter in *Cic. ver. 7. Cum is etiam tum semisomnis superet, arma capiunt.* *Liv. l. 7. b. Mac. Pedites vero ordinati & præparati sparsos per negligentiam & semisomnes prope adorti sunt.* *Insomnis* is also in *Hor. 3 Carm. od. 7. Frigidæ noctes non sine multis insomnis lacrymis agat.* *Insomnus* then use, when you have example for it.

*Clivusq.* Hence *acclivus* and *acclivis*. The first in *Ovid 2. Met. Quo simul acclivo Clymeneâa limite moles venit.* The latter in *Cic. ad Qu. Fr. Ea viæ pars valde acclivis.*

*Animusque.* Hence *Exanimus* & *Exanimis*. *Semianimus* & *Semianimis*. *Virg. Æn. 6. Exanimumq. auro corpus vendebat Achilles.* *Suet. Jul. Cæs. c. 8. Exanimis diffugientibus cunctis aliquoadiu jacuit Eus.* in *Cic. l. 1. de Div. Feris transfgens ungibus anguem Semianimum.* *L. v. l. 1. ab urbe. Ipse prope exanguis quum semianimis regio comitatu domum se receperit.*

*Et quor limus habet.* Hence *illimis* & *sublimis* & perhaps *illimus* and *sublimus*. But of the two former I have examples. *Ovid. Met 3. Fons erat illimis nitidis argentius undis.* *Hor. de Arte Poet. sublimis cupidusque & amata*  
relia-



*relinquere pernix.* Of the latter I want examples.

*Quæ frenum.* Hence *effrenus* and *effrenis*. The former in Liv. 4. *ab urbe.* *Ipse princeps calcaribus subditis effrenus effreno equo in medios ignes effertur.* The latter in Dictionaries.

*Et cera.* Hence *sincerus* & *procerus*. Hor. 1. ep. 2. *sincerus est nisi vas, vos, quodcunque infundis acescit.* Plin. in ep. *In procero corpore mæsta & squalida senectus.* But *sincerus* and *proceris* I read not, though by the Adverbs *sinceriter* & *proceriter*, which are read in Dictionaries it may be concluded that such words have been.

*Bacillum.* Hence *imbecillus* and *imbecillis*. Sall. Jug. *Falsò queritur de naturâ suâ genus humanum, quòd imbecilla atque ævi brevis.* Id. ib. *Equidem ego regnum vobis trado firmum, si boni eritis, sin mali, imbecillum.* Id. ib. *Juxta boni, maliq; strenui, & imbecilles multi obtruncati sunt.* Thence *imbecilliter*.

*Rarior est hilarus, vox est hilaris bene nota.* The former is in Ter. *Adelph.* 5. 3. *Hodie modò hilarum te face.* Id. ib. 2. 4. sc. 7. *Hilarum ac lubentem fac te in gnati nuptiis.* Plaut. *Stich.* 2. 11. *Fac nos hilares hilariores.* Cic. de Fin. 5. *Igitur si semel tristior effectus est, hilara vita amissa est?* The latter in Hor. l. 1. ep. 19. *Oderunt hilarem tristes, tristemque jocosus.* Cic. ad Qu. Fr. l. 2. ep. 15. *Risi nivem atram, teque hilari animo esse & prompto ad jocandum valde me juvat.*

### 3. Q. How are the words of this Rule declined?

*An.* The words of this Rule are declined thus: Pl. N. *hæc arma amorum.* N. *hoc jugum jugi*; N. *hic nervus nervi*; N. *hic somnus somni*; N. *hic clivus clivi*; N. *hic animus animi*; N. *hic limus limi*; N. *hoc frenum freni*; N. *hæc cera cera*; N. *hoc bacillum bacilli*; N. *inermis, inermis, inermum*; G. *inermi, inermis, inermi*; N. *hic & hæc inermis*, & *hoc inermis*; Gen. *inermis*; N. *hilarus, hilara, hilarum*; G. *hilari, hilare, hilari*; N. *hic & hæc hilaris*, & *hoc hilare*; G. *hilaris*.

The Declining of the words of this Rule.

Finis Heteroclitorum.

A N  
EXPLANATION  
Of the RULES of the  
ROYAL GRAMMAR;  
Touching the *Preterperfect tenses* and  
*Supines of Verbs* as they are delivered in  
LILLIE'S RULES,

Commonly called

*As in Præsenti, &c.*

By way of *Question* and *Answer*,  
Opening the meanings of the Rules  
with great plainness to the under-  
standing of Children of meanest  
capacity.

With choice *Critical Observations* on the  
same, from the best extant *Authors* and *Gram-  
marians*. For the amending of the *Mistakes*, and supplying  
of the *Defects* thereof.

By WILLIAM WALKER, B. D.  
Author of the *Treatise of the English Particles*.

LONDON,

Printed for Robert Pawlet at the Sign of the Bible in Chan-  
cery Lane near Fleet-street, and Edward Pawlet Book-  
seller in Grantham.

1670. p 2

STANLEY

1871

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

P  
d  
L  
M  
t  
a  
t  
c



To the Right Reverend  
Father in God, *John* by Divine  
Providence Lord Bishop of *Roche-*  
*ster*, and Dean of *Westminster*; *William*  
*Walker* Rector of *Colsterworth* wisheth all hap-  
piness.

*My Lord.*

**I** Do humbly make bold to  
Dedicate this Volume of  
Explanations of Lillies  
Rules for the Preterperfect tenses  
and Supines of Verbs to your  
Lordships Name and Honour.  
Many are the reasons inducing me  
thereunto: whereof it may not be  
amiss briefly to hint at two or  
three. And it were enough to  
claim as great a respect as this from

## The Epistle

*me to You, that You and I were once Scholars together in the same School of Lincoln, under the same Master, and in the same Seat; and so it cannot but become me by some honourable reflection to express that affection towards you, which being begotten in youth, is not lessened by age, but ripened by continuance. But there are more perswading inducements than this by far. Your Lordships great Eminency not only for most honourable Places in the Church, but also for most noble Endowments, and high Improvements, worthily recommending You to those Places of honour, do justly challenge from all, that Respect and Honour, and those Remarks and Testimonies thereof, which use to be given*  
to

## Dedicatory.

*to Persons of greatest Note for  
Vertue and Goodness. And there-  
fore it cannot mis-become me, but  
rather is incumbent as a Duty up-  
on me, to be paying, in such a  
way as I am able, my due Respects  
unto your so Eminent Merits. But  
over and besides what the desert of  
your many and great Vertues,  
(vertues to be lov'd and admir'd  
by all, that have in them any true  
sense of Vertue or Goodness) doth  
in common challenge from me to-  
gether with others, there are al-  
so Singular Obligations unto all  
respects towards you lying upon me  
by my self, from several Particular  
Favours and Kindnesses done un-  
to me by You. So that all the Ho-  
nour and Respect I were able any  
way to put upon You, were it much*

## The Epistle

*more than I am able, would be no other from me, but the just tribute of a worthily deserved Gratitude. And under that notion as I pay, so I humbly beg of you to accept of this Respect, and withal to pardon this so poor an expression of it. I add not, because I need not add, how welcome an Entertainment, a Name so lov'd and honour'd as Yours, standing in the fore-front of my Book will bespeak for it in the breasts of all unbiast Persons. And therefore not to encrease your Lordships trouble any further, I do earnestly desire, that the Lord would long continue your Life and Health, for his own honour and his Churches Service upon Earth, and after Crown you with a blessed immortality, and a glorious Eternity*



## Dedicatory.

nity in the Heavens: and so heartily recommending both your Lordships Person, and Relations, and Concernments unto the Divine Protection, and Benediction, I rest,

From Colsterworth  
December the 8th.  
1669.

My Lord,  
Your Honours most humble and most obliged  
Servant,

WILLIAM WALKER.



**I**F any one would be satisfied touching any thing designed by the Authour in this performance; It is his desire, that the General Preface set before the first Volume of these Explanations may be consulted.





An Explication of the Rules of the  
*Royal Grammar* touching the *Preter-*  
*perfect Tenses* and *Supines* of Verbs,  
 as they are delivered in *Lillies Rules*  
 commonly called *As in presenti, &c.*  
 by way of Question and Answer.

## CHAP. I.

Q<sup>1</sup>. **V**hat Order doth the Grammar  
 observe in its treating of the  
*Preterperfect Tenses* and *Supines* of Verbs?

An. In its treating of the *Preterperfect Tenses*  
 and *Supines* of Verbs, the Grammar observes this order:  
 First, it treats of Verbs Regular, and then of Irregular  
 ones.

Q<sup>2</sup>. In what order doth it treat of Verbs Regu-  
 lar?

An. In treating of Verbs Regular, this order the  
 Grammar observes: First it treats of Verbs in *o*, and  
 then of Verbs in *or*.

Q<sup>3</sup>. What is the order that the Grammar observes  
 in treating of Verbs in *o*?

An. The Grammar in treating of Verbs in *o*, observes  
 this order: First it treats of the *Preterperfect* tenses of  
 Verbs, and then of their *Supines*.

**Qu.** In treating of the Preterperfect tenses of Verbs, what is the order that is observed by the Grammar?

**An.** The order that is observed by the Grammar in its treating of the Preterperfect tenses of Verbs is this: First it treats of the Preterperfect tenses of Verbs *simple*, and then of the Preterperfect tenses of Verbs *compound*.

**Q<sup>1</sup>.** In what order are the Verbs *simple* treated of?

**An.** The Verbs *simple* are treated of in the order of the Four Conjugations: First, those of the first; then those of the second; Thirdly, those of the third; And lastly, those of the fourth.

**Qu.** What Rule doth the Grammar give for the Preterperfect tenses of Verbs of the First Conjugation?

**An.** The Rule which the Grammar gives for the Preterperfect tenses of Verbs of the First Conjugation is this,

G. Lil. *De simplicium verborum prima Conjugationis communi praterito.*

*As in presenti perfectum format in avi,*  
*ut no nas navi, vocito vocitas vocitavi.*

*As in praesenti.*

**Qu.** What is the meaning of this Rule?

**An.** The meaning of this Rule is this: That Verbs in *o*, of the first Conjugation do form their Preterperfect tense of the Present tense, by changing *as* in the second person singular of that tense into *avi*: As of *no nas* by such change is made *navi*.

¶ The Preterperfect and Present tense here spoken of, are the Preterperfect and Present tense of the Indicative mood: The former of which is formed from the latter, by the change of *as* in the second person singular into *avi*, as of *vocitas* by the change of the last syllable *as* into *avi*, is made the Preterperfect of that Verb *vocitavi*.

Q<sup>1</sup>. Are there any Exceptions from this Rule ?

Ans. From this Rule there are two Exceptions.

Q<sup>1</sup>. Which is the first Exception from this Rule ?

Ans. The first Exception from this Rule is this :

*Deme lavo lavi, juvo juvi, nexoque nexui,*  
*Et seco quod secui, neco quod necui, mico verbum*  
*Quod micui,, plico quod plicui, frico quod fricui dat,*  
*Sic domo quod domui, tono quod tonui, sono verbum*  
*Quod sonui, crepo quod crepui, veto quod vetui dat :*  
*Atque cubo cubui ; raro hæc formantur in avi.*

*Deme lavo*

Q<sup>1</sup>. What is the meaning of this Exception ?

Ans. The meaning of this Exception is this : That there are some particular Verbs of the first Conjugation, which do not usually form *as* in the Present tense into *avi* in the Preterperfect tense; but do form it either into *i*, as *lavo* and *juvo*; or into *ui*, as *seco*, *mico*, *frico*, *domo*, *tono*, *sono*, *crepo*, *veto*, *cubo*.

¶ *Lavo lavi*] *Lavi* is properly the Preterperfect tense of the Verb, *lavo lavis* of the third Conjugation : read in *Hor. 3 Carm. Od. 12. Miserarum est neque amori dare ludum, neque dulci mala vino lavare.* So 1 *Serm. 5 Sat. Ora manusque tuâ lavimus Feronia lymphâ.* So *Virg. 3 Aen. Luminis effossi fluidum lavit inde cruorem.* So *Cato c. 96. Deinde in mari lavito.* But of *lavo lavas* of the first Conjugation, the genuine Preterperfect is *lavavi*, which though now out of use yet antiently was used. Thence the Supine *lavatum* ordinarily read : As in *Ter. Eun. 3. 5. Abeunt lavatum.* So *Hor. 1 Serm. 6 Sat. Ast ubi me fessum Sol acrior ire lavatum Admonuit.* Id. ib. 3 *Sat. Dum te quadrante lavatum Rex ibit.* And thence also the Participle of the Future *inrus, lavaturus.* *Ovid. 3 Fast. Sacra lavaturus mane precebat aquas.*

*Juvo juvi*] *Juvavi* is now out of use, yet formerly used : Whence some even yet write *adjuvarunt* for *adjuverunt.* *Juvaturus* formed thence, is read in *Sall. Jug. Ratu id quod res monebat, frequentiam negotia-*

*torum & comitatum juvaturum exercitum.* And thence the compound *adjuvaturus* in *Petron. Arbit. Adjuvatos nos divinam providentiam vel periculo nostro.* And yet though *Vossius* affirms *adjuvatum* also to be read, yet he would not dare to say *juvavit*, however *Manilius* a contemporary with *Theodosius* did not stick to use it. Both of *juvavi*, and *juvaturus* thence formed *Alvarus* saith, *priscum est.* *Voss. de Analog.* l. 3. c. 20. *Alvar. de Institut. Gram.* p. 234.

*Nexoque nexui* ] That there is such a Verb as *nexo* of the first conjugation if no way else, is evident from that of *Ving. Æn.* 5. *Nexantem nodis seque in sua membraplicentem.* Also from that of *Lucr.* l. 2. *Pars etiam brevibus spatiis nexantur ab istu.* But whether that Verb have any such Preterperfect as *nexui* may be doubted. *Vossius*, *Alvarus*, *Farnaby*, *Danès*, *Barles*, deny it to have any. Their reason is, because *nexui* is of *necto*, or *nexo* of the third conjugation. But if a verb of the first conjugation, may have a Preterperfect in *ui* as well as a verb of the third conjugation, as *crepo* hath; then how doth it prove, that *nexo* of the first conjugation hath not *nexui* for his Preterperfect tense, because *nexo* of the third hath the same for his Preterperfect tense: Unless it were that verbs of several conjugations must all, and alwaies have several Preterperfect tenses. As well may *lavo* *lavas* be said to have no Preterperfect, because *lavi* is the Preterperfect of *lavo* *lavis*; and so in others: And how shall he that reads *nexui*, be sure that the Authour meant it of *nexo* *nexis*, rather than of *nexo* *nexas*? But as not willing to oppose so great Authours, whilst I would vindicate our Grammar, which herein follows *Priscian*, I leave it to the Reader to determine as he thinks best. *Alvar.* p. 236. *Voss. Etymolog.* p. 104. *De Analog.* l. 3. p. 123. *Danès. Schol.* l. 2. c. 11. p. 215.

*Et seco quod secui* ] *Secavi* is now out of use, although once it were used. Thence *Secaturus* in *Colum.* l. 4. c. 9. *Supra quam ramum secaturus est.* Thence *Secatio* in *Cels.*

*cels.* ( though *scellio* be more usual ) and *secator*, and other like verbals. And thence also *præscata gula*, in *Appul. Met.* 1.

*Neco quod necui*] If this be meant of the simple verb, it is a mistake to think *necui* the usual preterperfect of that: For *necavi* is most ordinarily used. Thence *Cic. pro Mil. Quæ patris ulciscendi causâ matrem necavisset.* & *ib. Nisi forte magis erit parricida, si quis consularem patrem, quàm si quis humilem necaverit.* *Sall. Jug. Amisissis amicis, quorum plerosque ipse necaverat.* *Curt. l. 4. Quem tuorum propinquorum necavi?* *Senec. Med. Neptuno genitum necavit.* *Cic. 1 Verr. Partim in vinculis necavit.* *ib. Cum tot innocentes necavit.* And thence the Participle *necatus.* *Suet. Claud. c. 27. Qui traderent fraude a Sejano necatum.* *Sall. Jug. Alter eorum necatus.* *ib. Si Jugurtham vivum, aut necatum sibi tradidisset, fore—* Whereas *necui* is only read in *Priscian l. 9.* and from *Ennius*, out of whom he cites this, *Hos pestis necuit, pars occidit illa duellis.* Which makes me wonder much to see, that some Grammarians should give *necavi*, and *necui* indifferently for the Preterperfect tenses of *neco*: as the Grammar of *Gryphiswald*, *Duisburgensis* on *Despauterius*, and our own Mr. *Harris*: but more that any should give *necui* for the only Preterperfect of it; as *Despauter*, *Haine*, *Buyles*: and something that any should speak faintly of *necavi*, as of a word rarely used, but in this, or that Authour. So Mr. *Bird* saith of it, that it sometimes makes *avi*. So a nameless Authour intituling his Book *the Rudiments of the Latine Tongue*, points us to *Sallust*, as one that had used *necavi*. So our own Authour; For, *raro hæc formantur in avi*, must be extended unto this, as well as to other verbs. And even Mr. *Farnaby* having delivered *necui* for the Preterperfect of it, in his Margine notes, that *Cic. in Verr. 1.* and *Senec. in Med.* had used *necavi*. Whereas *Vossius*, *Alvarus*, *Richertus*, *Ramus*, *Rhenius*, and Mr. *Shirly* do make no other but *necavito* be the Preterperf.



of it: only *Rhenius* and *Alvarus* telling us, that anciently it made *nequi*, which saith *Vossius*, *vix extra compositionem invenitur*. *Etymol.* p. 103. But in the compounds of *neco*, *nequi* is more usual, at least in the derivatives of it. Thence *Suet. de Illust. Gram.* c. 3. *Veneno sibi perunxit pedes, & enecuit ita, ut parte eâ corporis quasi præmortui vixerit.* *Enecutus* ordinarily in *Cic.* as, *Avis fame enecta in ossa pulvis invadit.* *Enecatorum*, of *enecatus* is read in *Plin.* l. 18. c. 13. Whence *Alvarus*, and so *Rhenius* concludes *eneco* to make both *enecui*, and *enecavi*, though *Richerius* be only for *enecui*. Thence also *internecutus* is said by *Vossius* and *Stephanus* to be in *Cic. Phil.* 14. *Interneculi nota testamenta credo subjiciunt.* And though I find it not there, yet it may be somewhere else. *Plaut. Amphit.* ac. 1. sc. 1. *Duello extincto maximo, atque interneculis hostibus.* Yet some there read it, *internecatis*. *Rhenius* indeed and *Alvarus* name not any other *Preterperfect* of *interneco*, but *internecui*, nor *Supine* but *internectum*.

*Mico verbum quod micui* ] *Solinus* in his 56. chap. hath *micaverit* of *micavi*. *Si repente micaverit coruscatio, intempestivo metu comprimantur.* But because that *Author*, as *Alvarus* saith, *non omnibus satisfacit*, therefore till the Authority of more *Classick* Authors be had for it, it may be best to abstain from the use of it: Though undoubtedly it hath antiently been in use. Whence the compound verb *dimico* forms *dimicavi*, as well as *dimicui*; the former whereof is far more usual than the latter, which *Ovid* used l. 2. *Amor. Eleg.* 13. *Hæc tibi sit pugna dimicuisse satis*: but none else that I meet with. And whence also *Seneca*, l. de *Consol. ad Albiæ*. hath *emicaturus* of *emicavi*; as *Alvar.* and *Farn.* cite him. *Sincerus animus ac naturæ suæ memor, levis & quandocunque emissus fuerit ad summa emicaturus.* Though *Vossius* would rather use *emicui*, of *emico*, than *emicavi*, perhaps because *Quintil.* l. 1. c. 6. blames those that had rather use *emicavi* than *emicui*. *Inherent tamen quidam molestissimâ diligentia per-*  
re sitate,

veritate, ut emicavit dicant, non emicuit. And Farnaby would use none else, how much soever emicaturus is of force with Ramus, with whom though emico hath only emicui, and sine Supino, attamen emicaturus valet. Gram. Lat. l. 2. c. 2.

*Plico quod plicui* ] Photas, Diomedes, Hayne, make *plicui* the only Preterperfect of *plico*: which Alvarus saith he could never find. Vossius gives it no other Preterperfect but *plicavi*. Etymol. p. 103. nor Farnaby nor Burles. And these I should chuse to follow, if I would use any simple Preterperfect tense of this obsolete verb *plico*, as Richerius calls it. Ramus allows *plicui* sometimes, sed (saith he) *sæpius est analogum*. Duisburgensis is for *plicui*, & aliquando *plicavi*. So Mr. Bird, and the Rudiments. Mr. Harris is indifferent for *plicui*, or *plicavi*: and the Gryphisw. Gram. for both. These differences I presume proceed not from any Authorities any of them have for either *plicui* or *plicavi* (though if there be any, I fancy, not find, it is of this latter) but from the different Preterperfect tenses of the compounds of this Verb: Whereof some have only *plicavi*, some both *plicavi* and *plicui*, though none *plicui* only, that I can find: of which see more in the Rules for the Preterperfect tenses of compounded Verbs.

*Frico quod fricui dat* ] About the Preterperf. of this Verb, Grammarians (which is a wonder) are at great agreement, all for *fricui* save that one, or two, allow of *fricavi aliquando*. I doubt, whether either of the one, or the other, any example can be shewn. Vossius in his Etym. gives *fricui* for the Preterperfect of it. Yet in his Anat. l. 3. c. 20. he saith of it, *non modò fricui frictum habuit, sed & fricavi fricatum*. The *habuit*, it hath had seems to intimate, as if now it had it not. Authority when it can be shewn, will dissolve the doubt. In the mean time that both have been, is evident by the derivatives from both. Such from *fricui*, as *frictio*, read often in Cels. as, *In ipso quoque itinere frictio*. l. 1. and in Plin. l. 23. *Frictiones inhibeat oculorum*. From *fricavi*

*fricavi* is *fricatio*, read in *Plin.* l. 38. c. 4. *Vehemens enim fricatio, spissat, lenis mollit.* and also in *Columel.* l. 6. c. 11. *Si sanguis adhuc supra ungulas in cruribus est, fricatione assiduâ discutitur.* So also the same is evident from the compounds of both. As from *fricui* is *defriculus*: Whence *Colux.* l. 6. c. 12. *Scabies extenuatur trito alio defriculo.* And as *perficiuisti* in *Cic. Tusc.* q. 1. 3. And *perfictio* in *Plin.* l. 20. c. 14. So from *fricavi* is read *defricatus* in *Plin.* l. 28. c. 12. *Prius defricatis maculis*: in whom also is read *perfricatus*, l. 8. c. 27. *Pantheras perfricata carne aconito (venenum id est) barbari venantur.* Also *infricatus* l. 20. c. 3. *Infricata Polemonia.* And in *Cic. Attic.* l. 11. Ep. 19. *refricaturus.* *Quæ res forsitan sit refricatura dolorem meum.*

*Sis domo quod domui*] *Domavi* is not now in use, though it be read in *Accius*; *Olim quod viros domavi.* And *Vossius* cites out of *Florus.* *Copias ejus domaverunt.* Whence in *Tibul.* l. 14. *domator*, for *domitor*; and in *Tertullian.* de *Pallio*, *Edomator primus vocis*; So *domatio* and *edomatio* (Whereas *dimitio*, and *edomitio* are not said) and *edomabilis*. But from *domui.* *Virgil* 4 *Georg.* hath *domiturus.* *Et durum Baccho domitura Saporem.* *Stat.* 3. *Theb.* *Sylvas amor unus humumque Edomuisse manu.*

*Tono quod tonui*] *Tonui* is now the current *Preterperf.* of this verb, but *tonavi* also anciently was in use. Thence *Voss.* *Etymolog.* p. 103. hath *tonaturus*: and both he and *Alvar* cite *tonatio* out of *Senec.* l. 2. *Nat. Quæst.* if it be not a mistake of *tonatio* for *conatio*, (in *Senec.* l. 2. *Nat. Qu.* c. 12.) First made by *Alvarus*, and from him taken up by *Voss.* *Anal.* l. 3. p. 81. However thence *Paulinus* in his *Epistles* speaking de *extremo judicio*, saith *Cum prima signum suscitandis mortuis cælo tuba intonaverit.* And *Horat.* a more classick Author. l. *Epod. Od.* 2. *Si quis Eois intonata fluctibus, Hyems ad hoc vertat mare.* Some have thought *tono* to have been anciently of the third conjugar. because of that in *Plaut. Amph.* 5. 1.

*ut subidè, ut properè, ut validè tonit.* But other copies have *tonuit*: and accordingly so *Vossius* quotes it. *de Analog.* l. 3. c. 20.

*Sono verbum quod sonui* ] *Sonui* is now only in use: but *sonavi* also once was used. Thence *Manilius* l. 5. *Aura per extremas resonavit flebile rupes.* Yea *Tertullian* l. ad scap. c. 3. *Et pristina tonitrua quid sonaverint, sciunt qui obdormuerunt.* And even *Hor.* l. 1. Sat. 4. *Magna sonaturum des nominis huius honorem.* Whence *Ramus* saith of *Sonaturum* and *intonaturum* *Latina sunt.* Gr. Lat. l. 2. p. 79. And so *Appul.* *Met.* l. 5. *Ac similiter classicum personavit.* *Lucret.* l. 3. hath *Sonere* of the third conjugation. *Caligare oculos, sonare aures, succidere artus;* and thence though it self be out of use, yet might remain *sonui*. See *Priscian* l. 10. *Voss.* *de Analog.* l. 3. c. 20. *Alvar.* p. 235.

*Crepo quod crepui* ] *Crepui* in the simple verb is now only used: but that *crepavi* also hath been in use appears, because both *increpo* and *discrepo* the compounds of this verb, have preterperfect tenses in *avi*, as well as in *ui*, though the first make *ui* often, and *avi* seldom, the second seldom makes *ui*, but *avi* often. *Increpui* is in *Plin.* l. 3. Ep. 9. *Reliquos legatos graviter increpuit.* *Sueton.* in *Vespas.* *Voce etiam gravissimâ increpuit.* *Increpavi* is in *Plaut.* *Mosel.* 3. 2. *Nunquid increpavit filium?* *Sulpit. Sever.* l. 1. *Histor. Sacr.* *Quamquam plerumque eos pater increpasse referatur.* *Discrepo* is in *Cic.* 2. *de Orat.* *Nihil sane ad rem pertinet, si quâ in re discrepaverit ab Antonij divisione nostra partitio.* *Discrepui* in *Hor.* *de Arte Poet.* *Sortilegis non discrepuit sententia Delphis.* Hardly elsewhere. This finding of these two compounds thus used with *avi* also, as well as *ui*, I presume was that, which drew *Richerius* to say, *Sed crepo generalem quoque regulam sequitur, & proinde crepavi crepatumque habet.* I wish he had given us his authority, as well as his word. *Gram. Obstit.* fol. 58. b. of *concrepo* I meet only with *concrepui*.

*Veto quod vetui dat* ] *Vetui* is the current preterperfect tense

tenſe of this verb. In *Perſ. Sat. 5. vetavit* is read in ſome Editions, as *Farnabius* and *Lubins. Excepio ſi quid Maſuri ribrica vetavit.* But *Voffius*, who alſo cites this verſe for the proof of *vetavi*, yet tells us that *in aliis libris pro vetavit eſt notavit* : as alſo doth *Trebell. Pollio* in his *Promptuarium*. Yet *Ramus* and *Renius* own that reading of *vetavi* there. In *Stat. 3 Theb.* there is ſaid to be read *vetatus*. Thither both *Farnaby* and *Voffius* ſend us for it. And there in *v. 624.* I find *vetitum* indeed ; and in *ver. 550. vetanti* : But no *vetatus*. Perhaps in their books that was *vetato*, which in mine is *vetanti*. However it remains that it is uncertain,, whether *vetavi*, or *vetatus* be rightly read in any Authour : And then ſome of our Engliſh Gram. Writers might have done well not to have delivered it by way of Rule, either that *veto* doth make indifferently *vetui* and *vetavi*, as *Mr. Harris* ; or ſometimes *avi*, as *Mr. Bird*, and the *Rudiments*. And the uſe of *vetavi* would be forborn, until it may be juſtified by an uncontroverted genuinely read example. Yet that *vetavi* hath been uſed is likely enough, for in *Valſa. l. 1. vetaturus*, and *vetatio* is read : which latter *Voffius* owns as rightly ſaid, and not *vetitio*. *De Analog. l. 3. c. 20.*

*Atque cubo cubi* ] Though *Quintil.* be the only Authour I find produced, for the uſe of the ſimple preterperfect tenſe *cubavi*, ſaying *l. 8. c. 2. Fingitur in Scholis ſupra ſe cubaſſe.* Yet by the derivatives from it, *cubatio* and *cubatus*, to be found in our Lexicographers (and the latter cited by *Cooper* from *Pliny*, and ſo by *Stephanus*, who cites *Plin.* ſaying *l. 10. c. 57. Medicina in fame, & cubatus in fumo*) and by the compounds of it, it doth appear to have antiently been in more requeſt. Thence in *Plin. l. 11. c. 16. Nam niſi incubavere, favos lividos faciunt.* *ib. l. 29. c. 3. Cum triduo incubata tolluntur.* *l. 10. c. 56. Sed quibus certa ſæcunditas, rara, & incubatio Ovis noxia,* &c. *c. 59. Incubationi datur initium poſt novam lunam.* *ib. Si incubatu* (perhaps in *cubatu*) *conſuerit, ova pereunt.* Where alſo is read, *Quædam*

*dam autem & citra incubitum sponte natura gignunt.*  
 Thence also *supercubavi*, in *Appul. Met. l. 6. Crede-*  
*mus etiam exemplo, tua veritatis & Europam securo super-*  
*cubasse.* And thence also *accubatio* in *Cic. de Sen. nisi*  
*accubationem scribendum putes*, saith *Vossius, de Anal.*  
 l. 3. c. 20.

**Qu. Which is the second Exception from the General Rule?**

*An.* The second Exception from the General Rule is this:

*Do, das vite dedi, Ho stas formare steti vult.*

*Do, das*

**Qu. What is the meaning of this Exception?**

*An.* The meaning of this Exception is this: That these two Verbs *do*, and *sto*, do not form their Preterperfect tense by changing *as* of the Present tense into *avi*: but into *edi*, and *eti*: as, *do, das, dedi; sto, stas, steti.*

¶ *Do das vite dedi*] Though *davi* of *do* be no where to be found, yet *ditum* formed as of *davi*, is the only Supine of *do*, whence also are other verbals formed, *dator*, and *datio*.

*Sto stas formare steti vult*] Yet that antiently it formed *stavi*, is evident both from the Supine of this verb *statum*, and the derivatives of it *stator*, and *statio*, &c. and also from *prastavi*, and *restavi* used by *Propertius*, and *Ammonius*, &c. Of which see afterward in the Rule for the preterperfect tenses of compounded verbs, *Natum a sto stas.*

**Qu. How are the words of this Rule, and the The Declining of Exceptions from it declined.**

*An.* The words of this Rule, and the exceptions from the words it are declined thus.

*No, nas, navi, nare, natum.*

*Vocito, vocitas, vocitavi, vocitare, vocitatum.*

*Lavo, lavas, lazi, lavare* { *lavatum,*  
{ *lautum,*  
{ *lorum.*

*Juvo, juvas, juvi, juvare, [jatum.]\**

*Nexo,*

Nexō, nexas, [nexui] nexare.  
 Seco, secas, secui, secare, sectum.  
 Neco, necas, necavi, necare, necatum.  
 Mico, micas, [micui] micare.  
 Plico, plicas, plicavi [plicui] plicare, plicatum.  
 Frico, Fricas, friui, fricare, frictum.  
 Domo, domas, domui, domare, domitum.  
 Tono, tonas, tonui, tonare, tonitum.  
 Sono, sonas, sonui, sonare, sonitum.  
 Crepo, crepas, crepui, crepare, crepitum.  
 Veto, vetas, vetui, vetare, veritum.  
 Cubo, cubas, cubui, cubare, cubitum.  
 Do, das, dedi, dare, datum.  
 Sto, stas, steti, stare, statum.

\* *Futum* is not read but in composition, as *adjutum* :  
 So *juvatum* is in *adjuvatum*, whence *adjuvaturus*.  
*Voff. Etymol. p. 102.*

And thus much of the Rule for the Preterperfect tenses of Verbs of the first Conjugation.

## CHAP. II.

**Qu.** **W**hat rule doth the Grammar give for  
 the Preterperfect tenses of Verbs of  
 the second Conjugation?

**An.** For the Preterperfect tenses of Verbs of the  
 second Conjugation the Grammar gives this Rule.

*Secundæ Conjugationis commune præteritum.*

Es in præ- *Es in præsentī perfectum format ut dās*  
 senti *ut nigreo, nigres, nigri.*

**Qu.** what is the meaning of this Rule?

**An.** The meaning of this Rule is this: That Verbs  
 of the second Conjugation do form their Preterperfect  
 tense of the second person singular of their Present tense,  
 by changing *es* into *ui*; as of *nigreo nigres* by such  
 change is made *nigri*.

*Es*



**Es in presenti** ] Not all Verbs in *eo* are of the second Conjugation ( for *beo*, *creo*, *seruo*, *meo*, *calceo*, *laqueo*, *nauseo*, and *enucleo*, and those that are compounded of any of them, as *recreo*, *permeo*, *illaqueo*, &c. are of the first Conjugation; and again *eo* and *queo*, and their compounds, as *abeo*, *veneo*, *nequeo*, &c. are of the fourth Conjugation ) but those only which have *es* in the second person, as well as *eo* in the first.

**Ut nigreo nigres nigrui** ] *Nigrui* is read in *Colum. l. 12. c. 48. Olive cum nigrucrint, nec adhuc tumpræmatura fuerint; sereno cœlo distringere manu convenit.* But for *nigreo* Authours more familiarly use *nigresco*. *Ovid. Trist. El. 3. Aquora nigrescunt ventis.*

**Qu. Is there any Exception from this General Rule?**

**An.** From this General Rule there is this one large Exception: *jubeo excipe jussi*, &c.

*jubeo excipe*

**Qu. What is the meaning of this Exception?**

**An.** The meaning of this Exception is this: That there are verbs of ten several terminations, which do not from *es* in the Present tense form a Preterperfect in *ui*.

**Qu. Which are these ten Terminations?**

**An.** Those ten Terminations are *beo*, *ceo*, *deo*, *geo*, *leo*, *neo*, *queo*, *reo*, *veo*, and *ieo*.

**Qu. What Verbs in *beo* do not form a Preterperfect in *ui*?**

**An.** In *beo*, *jubeo* doth not form its Preterperfect in *ui*, but hath *jussi* for its Preterperfect tense: So our Authour -- *jubeo excipe jussi*.

**Qu. What Verbs in *ceo* do not form a Preterperfect in *ui*?**

**An.** In *ceo* two Verbs, *mulceo* and *luceo*, do not form a Preterperfect in *ui*, but *mulceo* hath *mulsi*, and *luceo* hath *luxi*: So our Authour — *Mulceo mulsi, Luceo vult luxi.*

**Qu. What Verbs in *deo* do not form a Preterperfect. *Sedeo sedi* *legi* in *ui*?**

**An.**

**An.** There are eleven Verbs in *deo* here reckoned up by our Authour, which do not form their Preterperfect by changing *es* into *ui*: but some of them form it in *di*, by changing *des* into *di*, and some form it in *si*, by changing *des* into *si*.

**Qu.** What Verbs in *deo* form their Preterperfect in *di*?

**An.** In *deo* here are named eight verbs that form their Preterperfect in *di*, viz. *sedeo sedi*, *video vidi*, *prandeo prandi*, *stideo stidi*, *pendeo pependi*, *mordeo momordi*, *spondeo sponsondi*, and *tondeo totondi*. So our Authour — *Sedeo sedi videoque*

*Vult vidi. Sed prandeo prandi, stideo stidi, &c.*

¶ To these Verbs that form their preterperfect in *di*, Mr. Farnaby adds *friendeo*, which maketh *friendi*.

**Qu.** What Verbs in *deo* form their Preterperfect in *si*?

**An.** There be three Verbs in *deo* which form their Preterperfect in *si*: viz. *suadeo suasi*, *video risi*, and *ardeo arsi*. So our Authour —

*Suadeo suasi, video risi, habet ardeo & arsi.*

**Q<sup>1</sup>.** What is the meaning of that note annexed to this branch of Exception —

*Quatuor  
s infra*

*Quatuor bis infra geminatur syllaba prima:*

*Pendeo namque pependi, mordeo vultque momordi, Spondeo habere sponsondi, tondeo vultque totondi.*

**An.** The meaning of that Note is: That these four Verbs *pendeo*, *mordeo*, *spondeo* and *tondeo*, besides their changing *des* into *di*, do also double the first Syllable of their Present tense in their Preterperfect tense, so that of *pendeo* is made *pependi*, of *mordeo* *momordi*, of *spondeo* *sponsondi*, and of *tondeo* *totondi*.

*L, vel R  
post Geo*

**Q<sup>1</sup>.** What Verbs in *geo* do not form their Preterperfect in *ui*?

**An.** Such Verbs in *geo* as have *L* or *R* before *geo*, do not form their Preterperfect in *ui*, but in *si* as *urgeo urxi*, *mulgeo mulxi* of which also is formed *mulxi*. So our Authour —

*L* vel *R* ante *geo* si *bet*, *geo* vertitur in *fi*,  
*urgeo* ut *urfi*, *mulgeo* *mulfi*, *dat* quoque *mulxi*.

**¶** To these we may add *algeo* *alfi*, *fulgeo* *fulfi*, *indulgeo* *indulfi*, *tergeo* *terfi*.

**Qu.** Are there any Verbs in *geo* not having *L* or *R* before *geo*, which form a Preterperfect not in *ui*?

**An.** Besides those Verbs which have *L* or *R* before *geo*, these three *frigeo*, *lugeo* and *augeo* do form their Preterperfect not in *ui*, but in *xi*: as *frigeo* *frixi*, *lugeo* *luxi*, and *augeo* *auxi*. So our Authour.  
*Frigeo* *frixi*, *lugeo* *luxi*, *habet* *augeo* & *auxi*.

**Qu.** What Verbs in *leo* do not form their Preterperfect in *ui*? Dat *fleo*

**An.** There be three Verbs in *leo*, which do not form their Preterperfect tense in *ui*, but in *evi*: Which are *fleo*, and the two old obsolete Verbs *leo* and *pleo*, with their compounds *desleo*, *deleo*, *impleo*, &c. So our Authour.

*Dat* *fleo* *fles* *flevi*, *leo* *les* *levi*, *indique* *natum*  
*Deleo* *delevi*, *pleo* *ples* *plevi*.

**Qu.** What Verbs in *neo* do not form their Preterperfect in *ui*? A *maneo*  
*manfi*

**An.** There are two Verbs in *neo*, which have not *ui* in their Preterperfect tense, namely *neo*, which hath *nevi*, and *maneo* which hath *manfi*: So our Authour,  
*Neo* *nevi*. A *maneo* *manfi* *firmatur*.

**Qu.** What Verbs in *queo* do not form their Preterperfect in *ui*? Torqueo  
*torfi*

**An.** There is one Verb in *queo*, which doth not form a Preterperfect in *ui*, but *fi*; and that is *torqueo*, whose Preterperfect tense is *torfi*: So our Authour.—*Torqueo* *torfi*.

**Qu.** What Verbs in *reo* do not form a Preterperfect in *ui*? Hareo *vult*  
*hafi*

**An.** There is one Verb in *reo*, which doth not form its Preterperfect in *ui*, but in *fi*: and that is *hareo*, whose

whose Preterperfect tense is *hæsi*: So our Authour  
 — *Hæreo vult hæsi.*

*Q.* what Verbs in *veo* do not form a Preterperfect in *ui*?

*Ans.* No Verbs in *veo* do form a Preterperfect in *ui*, but all that end in *veo* in the Present tense have *vi* in their Preterperfect tense: as *ferveo servi*, *niveo nivi*, and so the compound thereof *conniveo connivi*, which also anciently hath had *connixi*: So our Authour—  
*Veo fit vi, ut ferveo servi*

*Niveo et inde satum possit conniveo nivi*  
*Et nixi.*

*Q.* what Verbs in *ieo* do not form their Preterperfect in *ui*?

*Ans.* There be two Verbs in *ieo* which do not form their Preterperfect in *ui*, but in *ivi* and *eui*; namely *cieo* which hath *civi*, and *vieo* which hath *vievi*: So our Authour — *Cieo civi, vieque vievi.*

[*Sorbeo sorbui habet sorpsi quoque*] That *sorbeo* hath *sorbui* appears from *Plin. l. 22. c. 18. His qui coagulum lactis sorbuerint.* But *sorpsi* it hath not. That Preterperfect tense if it be any where read out of composition (as hardly it) is of *sorbo* of the third conjugation from whence yet remains the Supine *sorptum*, read as *Vossius* saith, in *Plin.* though *sorbitum* also, from whence *sorbitio* the verbal, is allowed of amongst most Grammarians. That, I presume which drew our Authour to give this verb these two Preterperfect tenses *sorbui*, and *sorpsi*, is because the compound verb *absorbeo* is read with them both (unless we will allow of *absorbo* too, as well as *absorbeo*;) With *sorbui* in *Cic. in Brut. Sed hunc absorbuit astus quidam non insolita adolescentibus glorie.* With *sorpsi* in *Lucan. l. 4. Absorpsit penitus rupes & testa ferarum.* Though not only *Valerius Probus*, and *Vetius Longus* condemn the simple *sorpsi*, but *Caper* also mislikes *absorpsi*, though in *Lucan.* Some have gone about to confirm the use of *sorpsi* by a place in *Plin. Et vernatio utilis erit, si postquam sorpta fuerit, deinde*

deinde rejicitur. But *Alvarus* tells us, he could never find any such place, nor any body that named Book, or Chapter, where it was to be read. Other compounds of *Sorbeo*, as *exsorbeo*, and *resorbeo*, are by Grammarians allowed the same formations with *absorbeo*. But though I find many instances of *exsorbu*; as *Cic. Phil. 2. Gustas vilem sanguinem vel potius exsorbuas* Id. 2. *Tuscul. Jam decolorern sanguinem omnem exorbu*. Id pro *Muran. Difficultatem exorbu*: Yet I find none of *exsorpsi*, as yet. And if the old Grammarians had much ado to allow *absorpsi* with an authority, much less would they have allowed *exsorpsi* without one. But I shall not contend with any about it. See *Voss. Etymolog. p. 104. Rhen. p. 173. Richer. p. 60. Gram. G yphism. p. 39. Alvar. p. 237.*

Hither, for likeness of termination of present tense, may be referred what is observed of *habeo*, namely, that it is found in *Plaut. Asin. ac. 3. sc. 2. & ac. 4. sc. 1.* to have *habavi*, or *habivi*. But that is only to be noted, not to be imitated: it is so very obsolete.

*Mulceo mulsi* ] See below in *mulgeo*.

*Luceo vult luxi* ] See below in *lugeo*.

*Strideo stridi* ] *Senec. Herc. Oct. Morior, nec ullus per meum stridit latus Transmissus enst.* *Stridi* is of *strido*: *stridi* of *strideo*, is to be found in *Priscian*: but it is now out of use.

*Habet ardeo & arsi* ] *Ardi* antiently was in use: whence *arducunt*: but that now is become obsolete: and only *arsi* remains in use.

*Quatuor his infra geminatur syllaba &c.* ] It was usual amongst the Ancients (saith Mr. *Dares*) to write and speak those verbs with an *e* in the first syllable, which in the declining had the first syllable of their Present tense doubled in the Preterperfect tense: as *memordi*, *spospondi*, &c. Inasmuch that *memordi*, *sepugi*, *spospordi*, are words used even by *Cicero*, and *Cæsar*. The reason of this we have given us by *Gellius*, namely *quoniam Græci in quâdam specie tem, oris, quod παραρτίζουσι* appellat,

*appellant, secundam verbi literam in e plerunque vertunt, ut γράφω γέγραφα, &c.* And no doubt (saith *Vossius*) quia huiusmodi präteritorum geminatio facta sit exemplo Græcorum. That way of writing is long since laid aside, only it remains as yet in some verbs of the third conjugation: as *cecidi* of *cado*, *cecidi* of *cædo*, *peperci* of *parco*, *peperi* of *pario*, *feselli* of *fallo*, *tetegi* of *tango*, &c. See *Gell.* l. 7. c. 9. *Voss.* de *Analog.* l. 3. c. 19

*Spondeo habere spondendi* ] So it is usually now written: but *spondendi* is the writing antiently in use. So *Cic.* *Pansa, aut vñd, aut morte se satisfacturum reipublicæ spondit.* Id dependendum tibi est, quod mihi pro illo spondisti. Analogy indeed requires it should be *spondendi*: but (saith *Priscian*) ob *εὐκταίαν* alterum s. o. mittitur. *Priscian* l. 5. *Voss.* de *Etymolog.* p. 105.

*Mulgeo mulsi, dat quoque mulxi* ] *Mulceo* and *mulgeo* (as *Alvarus* tells us) have the same Preterperfect tenses and Supines. Thence *mulsi* of *mulceo*, in *Ovid.* *Terque manu permulsi eum.* And thence the same from *mulgeo* in *Plin.* l. 10. c. 40. *Caprisque cæcitas, quas ita mulcere, aboritur.* Some for distinctions sake, as *Priscian* l. 9. noteth, said *mulxi*, when they would be understood to mean their word from *mulgeo*. And *Diomedes* delivers *mulxi* for the Preterperfect tense of *mulgeo* only, whereas *Focas* makes *mulsi* the common Preterperfect of both. But as *mulctra*, *mulctrum*, and *Mulctrale* shew there was *mulxi* of *mulgeo*, so that the same was also of *mulceo* is shewed, not only by that passage of *Sall.* l. 4. *Histor.* recited by *Priscian*, wherein he hath *verbis permulsi*, but also by that of *Gellius* l. 1. c. 11. *Nihil adeo in congregiendis hostibus, atque in principiis præliorum ad salutem virtutemq; aptius rati, quam si permulsi sunt metioribus non immodicè ferociverint.* From *mulsi* of *mulceo* comes *permulsus*, whence *Cic.* ad *Heven.* *Laduntur arteriæ si ante quam leni voce permulsa sunt, æri clamore compleantur.* But whether the like come of *mulgeo*, I cannot say. *Alvar.* p. 230, 240. *Voss.* *Anal.* l. 3. c. 23. *Danes.* *Schol.* l. 2. c. 11.

*Frigeo frixi*] An instance of *frixi* perhaps may not be ealie to give: but as *Alvarus* saith, it is understood by the compound of it, *refrigeo*, seu *refrigesco*; we may add *perfrigeo*; or *perfrigesco*. So *Cic.* 1. 9. *Fam. Ep. Ego cetera, qui animo aquo fero, unum vercor, ne hasta Cæsaris refrixerit, Id pro Planc. Nunc in causâ refrixit. Ter. Adelph. 2. 2. ubi illinc rediero, altum agam. Nihil est, refrixeritres. Corn. Cels. 1. 1. c. 3. At ei qui perfrixit, opus est Balneo primùm involuto sedere, donec insudet tumangi. Priscian 1. 9. hacten frigi: but without an example: So that the use of that Preterperfect tense now *refrixit*: But yet as *frigi* was of *frigo*, so no doubt *frixi* is of *frigo*. *Alvar.* p. 240. *Voss. Analog.* 1. 3. c. 23.*

*Lugeo luxi*] *Lugeo* then and *luceo* have the same Preterperfect tense, and that both in the singular and compounded Verbs. Hence *Agræcius*, *Eluxit qui luctum deponit: illuxit cum lumen apparuit.*

*Leo les levi*] The simple verb *leo* is grown out of use, though formerly used: from the Supine whereof, *Death* (as *Vossius* saith) is called *letum*, quia *let, hoc est delet omnia.* Yet it remains in the compound of it, *deleo*. *Voss. Anal.* 1. 3. c. 23.

*Pleo ples plevi*] This old Verb derived from the Greek *πλέω*, and anciently in use (whence that of *Festus*, *Plentur antiqui etiam sine præpositione dicebant*) is now not used, remaining only in the compounds of it, *impleo, compleo, depleo, expleo, repleo*. *Voss. Analog.* 1. 3. c. 47.

*Ferveo fervi*] *Fervi* is rather the Preterperfect of *fervo* anciently used (insomuch that in *Ter. Ad. 4. 1.* is read, *Cum fervit maxime, tam placidum quam avem reddo.* So in *Virg. An. 4. Jam littora fervere flammis.*) Yet grown out of use in *Quintillian's* time; insomuch that if any one *antiquos secutus fervere brevi mediâ syllabâ dicat, deprehendatur vitiose loqui*, as he saith, *Institut.* 1. 1. c. 6. Thence *Ter. Ad. 1. 2. Sperabam jam defervisse adolescentiam.* Of *ferveo fervi* changed by



reason of the affinity of *b* and *u* into *ferbeo ferbui* is read in Cic. *deserbui. Cum adolescentiæ cupiditates deserbuissent* : So he, *Orat. pro Cal.* Thence also in *Horace. 1 Serm. Velatumque stola mea cum confertuit ira.* And in Cic. *pro Cal. Si unum esset buisse videtur hujus in gerendis inimicitius vis*—*Voss. Etymolog. p. 109. and Analog. l. 3. c. 24. Alvar. p. 242. Schrevel. in Ter. Ad. l. 2. 72.*

*Niveo & indefatum.*—] *Niveo* is an old antiquated word, instead whereof the compound *conniveo* is in use, and taught in *Grammars*. This is read with two Preterperfect tenses ; the one more usual, which is *connivi* ( which yet *Rhenius* saith is formed of *connizo* of the third conjugation. ) *Plaut. Manceb. 4. 3. Quia connivi, ut me defrudes, ad eam rem affectas viam.* Thence *Appul.* hath *conniverat* : The other less used, namely *connixi*, cited by *Priscian. l. 9.* from *Turpilius* an old Comedian. *Dum ego connixi somno, hic sibi prospexit vigilans Virginem.* *Voss. Analog. l. 3. c. 24. Etymolog. p. 109. Alvar. p. 241. Rhen. p. 180.*

**Q.** How are the words of this Rule, and the Exception from it declined ?

**An.** The words in this Rule and the Exception from The declining of it are declined thus :  
the words.

*Nigreo, nigres, nigrui, nigrere.*

*Jubeo, jubes, jussi, jubere, jussum.*

*Sorbeo, sorbes, sorbui, sorbere, sorptum.*

*Mulceo, mulces, mulsi, mulcere, mulsam.*

*Luceo, luces, luxi, lucere.*

*Sedeo, sedes, sedi, sedere, sessum.*

*Video, vides, vidi, videre, visum.*

*Prandeo, prandes, prandi, prandere, pransum.*

*Strideo, strides, stridi, stridere.*

*Suadeo, suades, suasi, suadere, suasum.*

*Rideo, rides, risi, ridere, risum.*

*Ardeo, ardes, arsi, ardere, arsum.*

*Pendeo, Pendes, pependi pendere.*

*Mordeo, mordes, momordi, mordere, morsum.*

*Spor.*

Spondeo, spondes, spondendi, spondere, sponsum.  
 Tondeo, tondes, totondi, tondere, tonsum.  
 Urgeo, urges, urssi, urgere, multum.  
 Mulgeo, mulges, mulsi, mulgere, multum.  
 Frigo, friges, frixi, frigere.  
 Lugo, luges, luxi, lugere, luctum.  
 Augeo, auges, auxi, augere, auxum.  
 Fleo, fles, flevi, flere, fletum.  
 Deleo, deles, delevi, delere, deletum.  
 Impleo, imples, implevi, implere, impletum.  
 Neco, necs, nevi, nere, netum.  
 Manco, manes, mansi, manere, mansum.  
 Torqueo, Torques, toxi, torquere, tortum.  
 Harco, heres, haxi, haxere, haxum.  
 Ferreo, ferres, ferri, fervere.  
 Connivio, connives, connivi, [connixi] connivere.  
 Cico, cics, civi, cire, citum.  
 Vico, vies, vevi, viere, victum.

And thus far of the Rule of the Preterperfect tenses of Verbs of the Second Conjugation.

### CHAP. III.

Q<sup>1</sup>. **I**S there any one General Rule for the Preterperfect tenses of Verbs of the third Conjugation?

Ans. There is no one General Rule for the Preterperfect tenses of Verbs of the third conjugation: but according to the different termination of the Present tense, so there is a different formation of the Preterperfect tense; which is the meaning of that Prefatory verse, wherewith the Rules for the Preterperfect tenses of verbs of that Conjugation are ushered in; viz.

#### *Tertia Conjugatio.*

*Tertia prateritum formabit ut hic manifestum.*

Q<sup>1</sup>. **I**F a Verb of the third Conjugation end-  
 ba,

**bo, what Rule is there for the Preterperfect tense of that Verb?**

*An.* The Rule for the Preterperfect tense of Verbs of the third Conjugation ending in *bo* is this--

*Bo fit ut lambo lambi.*

*Bo fit bi.*

**Qu.** What is the meaning of that Rule?

*An.* The meaning of the Rule is this: That if a verb of the third Conjugation end in *bo* in the Present tense, the Preterperfect is formed of it by changing *bo* into *bi*, as of *lambo* by such change is made *lambi*.

**Qu.** Is there any Exception from this Rule?

*An.* From this Rule there is this Exception:

*— Scribo excipe scripsi.*

*Et nubo nupsi; antiquum cumbo cubui dat.*

**Qu.** What is the meaning of this Exception?

*An.* The meaning of this Exception is this: That these two usual Verbs *scribo* and *nubo* do not form their Preterperfect tense of the Present tense by changing *bo* into *bi*, but by changing of it into *psi*: and the old verb *cumbo* his, by changing *bo* into *bui*, and losing *m* from out of the middle of it. And to this Exception may be added *glubo* which makes *glupsi*.

**¶ ut lambo lambi** ] *Calpurn. Ecl. 10. Nulla lambe-  
runt ore liquores. Lucr. 1. 23. Jucundasque puer quas  
lamberat areplacentas.* For those that talk of *lambo lam-  
bui*, or *lambio lambiui*, we read, but follow not what  
they say in that.

**Antiquum cumbo** ] Though the simple Verb *cumbo* be  
not in use, yet the compounds of it *accumbo*, *incumbo*,  
*discumbo*, *procumbo*, *recumbo*, *succumbo*, &c. are  
usual.

**Qu.** How decline you the words of this Rule?

*An.* The words of this Rule are declined thus:

The De-  
clining of  
the words.

*Lambo, lambis, lambi, lambere.*

*Scribo, scribis, scripsi, scribere, scriptum.*

*Nubo, nubis, nupsi, nubere, nuptum.*

*Cumbo, cumbis, cubui, cumbere, cubitum.*

*Qu.*

**Q.** When a Verb of the third conjugation ends in *co*, what is the Rule for the Preterperfect of that Verb?

**Ans.** The Rule for the Preterperfect tense of Verbs of the third Conjugation ending in *co*, is this: *Co fit ci.* *Co fit ci*

**Q.** What is the meaning of this Rule?

**Ans.** The meaning of this Rule is this: That of a Verb of the third Conjugation ending in *co*, the Preterperfect tense is formed from the Present tense by changing *co* into *ci*: as of *ico* by such change is made *ici*; and so of *vinco vici*; save that this Verb beside the change of *co* into *ci*, loseth also *n* out of the middle of it.

**Q.** Hath this Rule any Exception?

**Ans.** This Rule hath this Exception:

*Vult parco peperci*  
*Et parsi, dico dixi, duco quoque duxi.*

*Vult parco  
peperci.*

**Q.** What is the meaning of this Exception?

**Ans.** The meaning of this Exception is this: That *parco*, *dico*, and *duco* do form their Preterperfect tense differently from the Rule; the first by reduplicating the first letter of the word with *e* in the beginning, and changing of *a* into *e* in the middle, the two other by changing *c* into *x*.

**¶** *ut vinco vici*] *Vinco* forms *vici* from the old verb *vico*: from which verb, saith *Vossius* is derived *Vicapota*, the name of a Goddess, *Quæ dat vincere & potiri*; and also *pervicax, qui ad victoriam perseverat.* *Voss. Etymol. p. 110.*

*Vult parco peperci & parsi*] *Peperci* is ordinary; *parsi* more rare, yet read in *Ter. Hec. 3. 1. Hancine ego v. tam parsi perdere?* So *Plaut. Pen. 5. 3. Qui sit, enjatis, ne parseris.* *Vossius* also saith *parcisset* is in *Gell. 1. 5. c. 15.* But there, at least in my Book, it is *pepercisset*. Anciently it had *parcui* for a Preterperfect tense; thence the Supine *parciturum*; and thence the Participle *parcitus*, read in *Plin. 1. 30. c. 4. Italiæ parciturum est vetere interdicto Patrum ut diximus*; If that be the right reading

of the place: of which see after in *Hæc raro aut nunquam*. And thence *parcitas* in *Sen. l. 1. de clementia. Civitatis mores magis corrigit parcitas animadversorum* Alvar. p. 244. and from him *Voss. Analog. l. 3. c. 25.*

**Q1. How are the words of this Rule, &c. declined?**

*An.* The words of this Rule and Exception are declined thus:  
The declining of *Vinco, vincis, vici, vincere, victum.*  
the words. *Parco, parcis, peperi & parsi, parcere, parvitum & parsum*  
*Dico, dicis, dixi, dicere, dictum.*  
*Duco, ducis, duxi, ducere, ductum.*

**Q1. What is the Rule for the Preterperfect tense of a verb ending in do?**

*An.* The Rule for the Preterperfect tense of a verb ending in *do* is this: *Do fit di, ut mando mandi.*

**Q1. What is the meaning of this Rule?**

*An.* The meaning of this Rule is this: That of a verb ending in *do* in the Present tense, the Preterperfect tense is formed by changing *do* into *di*; as, of *mando* by such change is made *mandi*.

**Q1. Are there any Exceptions from this Rule?**

*An.* There are three Exceptions from this Rule.

**Q1. Which is the first?**

*An.* The first is of some, that beside the change of *do* into *di*, *do* also lose *n* out of the middle, as — *Secundo scidi, dat Findo sidi, fundo fudi.*

**Q1. Which is the second?**

*An.* The second is of some, that admit of a reduplication in the beginning, as — *Tundo tutudique Pendo pependi, tendo tetendi, podo pepedi, fingo cado cecidi, pro verbo cado cecidi.*

**Q1. Which is the third?**

*An.* The third is of some, that change *do* into *fi*: as *Cedo pro d. secde. e. five locum dare cessi*:  
*Vado, rado, ludo, ludo, divido, trudo,*  
*Claudo, plando, rado, ex do semper faciunt fi.*

[ *ut mando mandi* ] Liv. in Odyss. Cum socios nostros mandisset impius Cyclops. By this testimony Priscian proves *mando* to have anciently made *mandi*, not *mandai* nor *mandidi*, as some thought, which yet with him wants a Preterperfect tense. And however not only *Phocas*, but later Grammarians, *Vossius*, *Farnaby*, &c. do allow of *mandi*, yet it appears by this, that it is a word rarely met withal: though *mansus* the Participle derived from it be more frequently found. Cic. 2. de Orat. Atq; omnia minima mansa, ut aiunt; nutrices infantibus in os inferat. So Quint. l. 10. c. 1. hath *cibos mansos*; and Plin. l. 26. c. 12. *Imponatur trita vel mansa*.

[ *Sed scindo scidi dat* ] Plaut. in Pseud. 3. 2. 42. hath *scindidi*: Nam ego cicileadyum quando in patina scindidi. Which yet *Obertus Giffanius* thinks should be read *sciscidi*; and perhaps might rightlier be read *scescidi*, in as much as in *Gellius* from *L. Attius* is read *scesciderat*. His words are these l. 7. c. 9. *Præterea inveni a verbo, scindo simili ratione, non sciderat, sed scesciderat dictum esse. Lu. Attius in Sotadicorum libro primo scesciderat dixit; Verba hæc sunt. Non ergo aquila ita, ut prædicant, scesciderat pectus*. But neither *scindidi*, nor *scescidi*, nor *sciscidi* are now in use. Suffice it that these be noted (and so the rest of like nature throughout these Tractates) in order to the reading of ancient Authours. Nor is it a marvel if *scindo* make *scidi*, which was it self made of *Scido*, (derived of the Greek verb *σχιδέω*) by putting into it *n*, even as of *pago*, by the same interposition, was made *pingo*, derived of the Greek *παγῖν* of *πάω*. Voss. de Analog. l. 3. c. 26.

[ *Pendo pependi* ] Liv. l. 4. d. 5. hath *pendissent* without the reduplication. *Dimidium ejus, quod regi pendissent*. But that now is out of use.

[ *Tendo tetendi* ] *Tetendi* is found in Sen. Here. Fur. Et quæ plura rates carbasæ tenderant. Propert. l. 3. Eleg. 7. At tibi qui nosto tendisti retia lecto. But that is not enough to make it passible now.

[ *Cedo cecidi* ] *Cecidi* is put for *cecidi*: thence the first

first *ce* short, and the second syllable *ci* long. *Juven. Sat. 3. Ebrius ac petulans qui nullum forte cecidit...*

*Cedo pro discedere... cessi* ] And yet in the *Pandects* *accedisse* is read for *accessisse*; the Ancients declining *Præterperfect* tenses after the manner of *Present* tenses, as *Vossius* notes. *Analog. l. 3. c. 26.*

*Vado* ] The *Præterperfect* tense of this verb is hardly to be met with, but in the compounds of it, as *evasisit* in *Cic. Catil. 3.* &c. Unl's in *Tertullian* who *l. de Pallio c. 3.* saith, *Eâ tempestate Ovidis, quâ ad illum ex Lybiâ Hammon vasisit ovium dives.* For that of *Martial* as *Aldus* reads it, *l. 12. ep. 5. Arctatus labor est, & breve vasisit opus*, others read *vasit*. And having no *Præterperfect* tense, it will have no *Supine*: Yet the compounds have both.

*Appulcius* hath *rudivi*, but that is not enough to exempt *rudo* from the Rule, especially since it may be of *rudio* of the fourth Conjugation.

**Qu. How are the words of this Rule and excep-**  
**The Declension declined?**  
 clining of *An.* The words of this Rule, &c. are declined the words thus:

*Mando, mandis, mandi, mandere, mansum.*

*Scindo, scindis, scidi, scindere, scissum.*

*Findo, findis, fidi, findere, fissum.*

*Tundo, tundis, tundi, tundere, tusum & tussum.*

*Pendo, pendis, pependi, pendere, pensum.*

*Tendo, tendis, tetendi, tendere, tensum & tentum.*

*Pedo, pedis, pepedi, pedere, peditum.*

*Cado, cadis, cecidi, cadere, casum.*

*Cedo, cedis, cessi, cedere, cessum.*

*Cedo, cedis, cessi, cedere, cessum.*

*Vado, vadis, [vasi,] vadere, [vasum.]*

*Rado, radis, rasi, radere, rasum.*

*Lado, ladis, lasi, ladere, lasum.*

*Ludo, ludis, lusi, ludere, lusum.*

*Divido, dividis, divisi, dividere, divisum.*

*Trudo, trudis, trusi, trudere, trusum.*

*Claudo,*



*Claudo, claudis, clausi, claudere, clausum.*

*Plaudo, plaudis, plaufi, plaudere, plaufum.*

*Rodo, rodīs, rofi, rodere, rofum.*

**Q1. Which is the Rule for the Preterperfect tenses of Verbs ending in Go?**

**An.** The Rule for the Preterperfect tenses of Verbs ending in *go* is this: *Go fit xi, ut jungo junxi.*

*Go fit xi.*

**Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule?**

**An.** The meaning of this Rule is this, That if a Verb of the third Conjugation end in *go* in the Present tense, then the Preterperfect tense is formed of it by changing *go* into *xi*: as of *jungo* by such change is made *junxi*.

**Qu. What Exceptions are there from this Rule?**

**An.** From this Rule there are two Exceptions.

**Q1. Which is the first?**

**An.** The first is more general, of all words, which have in them *r* standing before *go*: for they change *go* into *fi*: as our Authour saith. -- *Sed R ante go vult fi, ut spargo sparsi.*

**Qu. Which is the second?**

**An.** The second is of some particular words which do change *go* into *gi*: and that either without any other alteration, addition, or diminution, as in *lego legi*: or else with some other alteration; as of *a* into *e*, as in *ago egi*; or addition of reduplication to the beginning, as in *tango tetegi*, *pungo*, which beside the regular *panxi*, hath also *pupugi*, and *pango* or rather (as indeed it should be) the old verb *pago pepigi*; or else diminution, as in *frango*, which besides the change of *a* into *e* also loseth *n* out of the middle, making *fregi*; and so *pango*, which, besides the regular *panxi*, hath also *pegi*: for so our Authour

— *Et ago facit egi*

*Dat tango tetegi, pango pupugi,*  
*Dat frango fregi: cum signat pango pacisci,*  
*Vult pepigi, pro jungo segi, pro cano panxi.*

*Go*

[ *Go fit xi* ] So also *gud* in the compounds of *stinguo*, viz. *exstinguo*, *distinguo*, *restinguo*, *exstinxi*, &c. For the simple verb *stinguo*, though formerly used by *Martius* an old Poet in *Liv.* l. 25. *Namq; ollus dius stinguet perduelles vestros*, as *Vossius* reads it; and also by *Lucretius* and *Cicero* in *Arateis*, as *Priscian* l. 10. shews it, yet as *Vossius* saith of it, *pene exolevit*. *Voss. de Analog.* l. 3. c. 27.

[ *Dat tango tetigi* ] This is from the old Verb *tago*, Whence is *tagax*, saith *Vossius*, *Etymolog.* p. 116. Hence *Plaut. Truc.* 3. 2. *Ne attigas me*. See *Quatuor his infra*, &c. in *Conjug.* 2.

[ *Pungo punxi pupugique* ] Though *Punxi* be regularly formed of *pungo*, yet as saith *Alvarus* (p. 247.) *pupugi* is the ordinary Preterperfect tense, and *punxi* is hardly to be found, unless in the Verbs compounded of it.

[ *Dat frango fregi* ] *Frango* is of the old Verb *frago*, whence *fragilis*: and thence it is *fregi*, and not *ficugi* in the Preterperfect tense.

[ *Cum signat pangopacisci vult pepigi* ] *Vossius* plainly saith, *Inepte docent pangoin praterito facere pepigi & panxi, cum tantum habeat panxi*. Whence then is *pepigi*? Why from *pigo*, saith *Saturnius*, l. 1. c. 29. And so *Vossius* expressly. *Quare pepigi non a pango est, sed a pigo; pro quo posteriores dixere paciscor*. Which word *Priscian* l. 10. cites out of *Cic.* l. 2. *ad Herenn.* *Pacta sunt quae legibus observanda sunt: hoc modo rem ubi pagunt, oratione pagunt*. And it is to be found in *Quintil.* l. 1. c. 6. cited both by *Alvar.* and *Voss.* *Prima quoque aliquando positio ex obliquis invenitur, ut memoria repetit contritos a me, qui reprehenderant, quod hoc verbo usus essem pepigi. Nam id dixisse, summos auctores constebantur, rationem tamen negabant permittere: quia prima positio paciscor, cum haberet naturam patiendi, faceret, tempore praterito pactus sum. Nos prater auctoritatem Oratorum, atque Historicorum, Analogia quoque dictum tuebamur. Nam cum in XII Tabulis legerimus Ni ita pagant; inveniebamus simile huic cadunt: unde non erat*  
d i-

*dubium, sic pepigi nos dicere, ut cecidi. Aluar. p. 247.*  
*Voss. de Analog. l. 3. c. 27.*

*Pro jungo pegi, pro cano panxi* ] That *pango* hath *panxi* appears from *Colum. l. 11. c. 2. Oleorum taleam oportet cum panxeris, fimo & cinere mistis oblinere.* And that it hath had *pegi*, appears not only from *Pacuvius* cited by *Priscian*, *Tonsillam pegi larvo in litore*; but also from *Cic. 1. de Leg. Requiri placere terminos, quos Socrates pegerit*; where saith *Vossius*, *pegerit nihil aliud est quam panxerit.* But of this distinction of our Authours, *pro jungo pegi, pro cano panxi*, I see no ground. When *pango* is applied to *Verses* or *Poems*, as where *Cicero* saith to *Tiro*, *Pangis aliquid Sophoclaem*, I suppose it refers to the composition of them, and not to the singing, and however in that sense hath no more propriety to this one *Preterperfect* tense, than in any other.

**Qu. How are the words in this Rule and exceptions declined?**

**An.** The words in this Rule and Exceptions are declined thus:

*Jungo, jungis, junxi, jungere, junctum.*  
*Spargo, spargis, sparci, spargere, sparsum,*  
*Lego, legis, legi, legere, lectum.*  
*Tango, tangis, tetigi, tangere, tactum.*  
*Pungo, pungis, pupugi, [ & punxi, ] pungere, punctum.*  
*Frango, frangis, fregi, frangere, fractum.*  
*Pango, pangis, panxi, [ & pegi, ] pangere, pactum.*

The declining of the words.

**Qu. What is the Rule for the Preterperfect of verbs ending in ho?**

*Ho fit xi.*

**An.** The Rule for the *Preterperfect* tense of Verbs ending in *ho* is this:

*Ho fit xi; traho cen traxi docet, & veho, vixi.*

**Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule?**

**An.** The meaning of this Rule is this: That verbs of the third conjugation ending in *ho*, do form their *Preterperfect* tense of the Present tense, by changing *ho* into *xi*, as of *traho* by such change, is made *traxi*, and of *veho*, *vixi*.

Q.

The declining of  
the words.

**Q<sup>1</sup>. How are the words of this Rule declined?**  
**Ans.** The words of this Rule are declined thus :  
*Traho, trahis, traxi, trahere, tractum.*  
*Vebo; vehis, vixi, vehere, vectum.*

**Q<sup>2</sup>. What is the Rule for the Preterperfect tense of Verbs ending in lo?**

**Ans.** The Rule for the Preterperfect tense of Verbs ending in *lo* is this : *Lo fit ui, colo seu colui.*

**Q<sup>3</sup>. What is the meaning of this Rule?**

**Ans.** The meaning of this Rule is this : That Verbs of the third Conjugation ending in *lo*, do form their Preterperfect tense of the Present tense, by changing *lo* into *ui*, or *o* into *ui* : as of *colo* by such change, is made *colui*.

**Q<sup>4</sup>. Is there any Exception from this Rule?**

**Ans.** From this Rule are Excepted some particulars ending in *llo* [ with two *l* ] which change *lo* into *li*, either without any other addition, or change, as *Psallo psalli* ; *sallo salli* ; *vello velli* ; which hath had, and whose compounds yet have *vulsi* : or else with some change, and addition, as *sallo fefelli* ; *cello* (in the compound of it *percello*) *ceculi*, *pello pepuli* ; For so our Author :

————— *Psallo excipe cum p,*  
*Et sallo sine p, nam salli format utrumque :*  
*Dat vello velli, vulsi quoque, sallo, fefelli ;*  
*Cello pro frango ceculi ; pello pepulique.*

**¶** *Psallo excipe cum p, & sallo sine p* ] Both these verbs form *salli* : yet *salli* of *psallo* hath *p* before it in the Preterperfect as well as in the Present tense, say both *Dares*, and *Voss*, and before them both, *Alvar.* *Sallo facit salli salsum : dat psallere psalli*, saith he, pag. 247. Thence as *Priscian* l. 10. cites *Sall.* l. 3. *Hist.* saying, *Parte consumit reliqua cadaverum ad diuturnitatem usus sallerent.* Whereby *Sallo* of the third appears to be a distinct verb from *salio* of the fourth, so he also cites *Bassus* l. 2. *Lyriar.* saying, *Calliope princeps sapienti psallerat ore.* By which *Psalli* of *psallo* appears distinct

distinct Preterperfect from *salii* of *sallo*.

*Dat vello velli, vulsi quoque* ] *Velli* is in *Cic. 6. Verr. Tum illa ex patellis & thuribulis quæ vellerat, ita scitè & in aureis poculis illigabat*. But *Servius* denies any such word as *vulsi* to be read, though *Chavissius* and *Priscian* give to this verb both *vulsi* and *veli*; who are followed by *Despauterius*, *Alvarus*, *Vossius*, *Richerius*, *Ramus*, *Farnaby*, *Burles*, *Hayne*, *Harris*, *Jasx.* *Berengie*, &c. Yet *Rhenius*, *Bird* and *Shirley*, take the part of *Servius*, and are only for *veli*. I suppose the difference may be easily compounded, the one side meaning that *vulsi* is not read in the simple verb; the other side, that it is read in the compounds. That *vulsi* hath been read, appears by the Participle *vulus* derived from it, and used by *Livie*, l. 6. b. *Pun. Aræ, soci, deum delubra, sepulchra majorum vulsa, temerata, ac violata*. So *Quintil.* l. 8. *Corpora squis vulsa atque fucata muliebriter comat, fedissima sunt ipso formæ labore*. So *Martial.* *Mens est Pannice vulsa tibi*. And *Lucan.* l. 6. *Non eget ingessis, sed vulsis pectore telis*. But yet that it is now in use, I yet see not proved by any example. Even *Vossius* himself when he goes to prove it by the Authority of *Ovid. Met.* l. 8. produceth but an example of *revulsi*. *A sylvis sylvas, & ab arvis arva revulsi*. Who elsewhere hath, *Aurea Phryxæ terga revulsi arvis*. Whence *Cic.* 13 *Phil. In quibus tu es, videlicet consularis, cujus torus Consulatus est ex omni monumentorum memoria revulsus*, or *evulsus*, as some read. And so *Lucan* is said to have *avulsi*. But still no example of the simple *vulsi*. When it appears, then let it be owned and used. And even in the compound *Cicero* is confessed by *Vossius* to prefer *veli*; which he useth *Attic.* 5. l. 20. --- *Honoris facis verbis omnes injurias revellimus superiores*. And l. 3. *Ep.* 15. *Quæ me convellerunt de pristino Statu*. And the use of the same in *Ovid* and *Virgil* is shewed by *Vossius* l. 3. de *Analog.* c. 28.

*Cello pro frango ceculi* ] This Verb *cello*, which here is

is said to have *ceculi* for its Preterperfect tense, and afterwards intimated to have *cellui*, where in the Rule for the Supines from Preterperfect tenses in *ui*, *cellui* is said to have *celsum*; I say this Verb *cello* is by *Alvarus* said to be utterly obsolete. The meaning then of our Authour herein is, not that *cello* the simple Verb hath *ceculi* or *cellui* (as if any of those words were to be used) but that the compounds thereof do form Preterperfect tenses, ending in those terminations. And so indeed one of them, viz. *percello* hath *perculi*. *An. 5. Perculit, & sulva moribundum extendit arena.* So *Plaut. Epid. 4. 2. Perij, planstrum perculi.* *Ter. Eun. 2. 3. Percuteris jam tu me.* Of which verb yet the Supine is *perculsum*. Whence the Participle *perculsus* read in *Sall. Jug. Ita perculsa nobilitate post multas tempestates novo homini consulatus mandatur.* So *Lucan. l. 7. Gelidusq; in viscera sanguis Perculsa pietate coit.* As if it were from *perculsi*, which some labour to establish from the Authorities of *Terence*, *Horace*, *Cicero*, and *Lucan*. But in all the cited places learned Criticks read *percessit*. But other compounds of it, as *antecello*, *excelllo*, *præcello* have *antecellui*, *excellui* and *præcellui* for their Preterperfect tenses: from the two latter, whereof are formed the Supines *excellsum* and *præcellsum*, the former having no Supine. This Preterperfect tense in *ui* *Priscian* would have formed from verbs in *eo*, viz. *excellleo*, &c. and goes about to prove it from *Plaut* and *Cicero*. And *Aufonius Popma, de usu Antiq. Locut. l. 1. c. 11.* names three places in *Cicero* for *excellleo*. *De Orat. in Oratoribus verò Græcis quidem admirabile est, quantum inter omnes unus excellat.* ib. *Non quod sola ornament, sed excellant.* and in *Lael. Quamvis licet excellas.* But the more certain evidence is for *excelllo*, which beside what is said for it in *Oratours*, is evinced by that of *Lucret. l. 1. v. 27. Omnibus ornatum voluisti excellere dictis.* See *Voss. de Analeg. l. 3. c. 28.* So then, what our Authour saith of *cello*, *ceculi* and *celsum* he means of *percello*: and what he saith of *cellui* and *celsum*, he means of *excelllo* and

*præ-*

*pracello*; and also of *antecello*, so far as it is capable of it.

*Pello pepulique* ] Of *pello* they seem anciently to have said *pulsi*: whence regularly is the Supine *pulsum*, and thence the Participle *pulsus*. For so *Ulpian*. l. 70. ad *Edictum*. *Marcellus autem ait, si quis ius habens pecoris ad aquam appellendi, plura pecora adpulserit*. But now it is out of use. See *Voss. Analog.* l. 3 c. 28.

**Qu.** How are the words of this Rule and Exception declined? The declining of the words.

**An.** The words of this Rule and Exception are declined thus:

*Colo, colis, colui, colere, cultum.*

*Psallo, psallis, psalli, psallere.*

*Salvo, fallis, falli, fallere, falsum.*

*Vello, vellis, velli [ & vulsi, ] vellere, vulsum.*

*Fallo, fallis, fefelli, fallere, falsum.*

[ *Cello, cellis, ceciti, & cellui, cellere, culsum* ]

*Percello, percellis, perculi, percellere, percusum.*

*Excello, excellis, excellui, excellere, excelsum.*

*Pello, pellis, pepuli, pellere, pulsum.*

**Q.** What Rule is there for the Preterperfect tenses of Verbs ending in *mo*?

**An.** For the Preterperfect tenses of Verbs ending in *mo* there is this Rule: *Mo fit ui, vamo ceu vomui. Mo fit ui.*

**Q.** What is the meaning of this Rule?

**An.** The meaning of this Rule is this: That Verbs of the third Conjugation which end in *mo* do form their Preterperfect tenses of their Present tense by changing *o* into *ui*: as of *vomo* by such change, is made *vomui*.

**Q.** Is there any Exception from this Rule?

**An.** From this Rule diverse words are excepted: As (1) One that changes *o* into *i*, viz. *emo emi*; (2) Four which change *o* into *si*, or (as we now corruptly write) *psi*, which are *como compsi, promo prompsi, demo dempsi, sumo sumpsi*: (3) One that changes *mo* into *si*, viz. *premo prepsi*. So our Author goes on



*Sed emo facit emi*

*Como petit compsi, promo prompsi, adjice demo*

*Quod format dempsi, sumo sumpsi, premo pressi.*

[*Como petit compsi*] This and the other three words are written in their Preterperfect tenses, and so in their Supines with *p* interpoled, not only by many of our own Grammar Writers, as the *Aubour* of the *Rudiments*; *Harris*, *Bird*, *Shirley*, *Hayne*, *Jasq-Berengy* (if that learned English writing *Transylvanian* may be accounted ours) but also by Forraigners as *Richerius*, *Rhenius*, *Ramus*, yea, by *Alvarus* and *Despauterius*: and no marvel, since, as *Ramus* tells us, some in *Priscian's* time, or before it, yea, and *Priscian* himself thought good so to write them, and that *Euphonia gratiâ*; and so in old Books ye may read *emptum* and *temptum*. But in the judgement of *Vossius* this faultry writing, done as he saith *vitiosè ac præter talium naturam* *Etymolog.* p. 118. who also there tells us, that *Ter. Scaur. liv. de Orthographia* left out the *p*, and so did *Victorinus*: and according to this writing do both the *Gryphisw. Gram.* and our own *Farnab.* and *Burles* write them: whose judgement and way I should prefer before the other, if obstinately corrupt custom would but permit us to take up the new *sumsinus*, and lay down the old *mumpsinus*.

[*Premo pressi*] Yet *Cato*, as if the preterperfect tense of it were *premi* (or as loving, like some other of the Ancients, to keep the consonant of the present tense in the preterperfect tense) hath *premerint* formed from thence. *ubi factores vestibus premerint*. So he cap. 66.

The Declining of the words.

**Qu. How are the words in this Rule, and its Exceptions declined?**

**Ans.** The words in this Rule and Exceptions are declined thus.

*Vomo, vomis, vomui, vomere, vomitum.*

*Emo, emis, emi, emere, emum.*

*Como, comis, comsi, comere, comum.*

*Synon:*

Samo, sumis, sumsi, sumere, sumum.

Demo, demis, demsi, demere, demum.

Premo, premis, pressi, premere, pressum.

**Qu.** What is the Rule for the Preterperfect tenses of Verbs ending in *no*?

**An.** The Rule for the Preterperfect tenses of Verbs *No fit vi.* ending in *no* is this:

*No fit vi, sino ceu sivi.*

**Qu.** What is the meaning of this Rule?

**An.** The meaning of this Rule is this, that of a Verb of the third conjugation ending in *no* the preterperfect is formed from the present tense by changing *no* into *vi*: as of *sino* by such change is made *sivi*.

**Qu.** Are there any Exceptions from this Rule?

**An.** From this Rule there are four Exceptions.

**Q.** Which is the first Exception?

**An.** The first is of one word which changes *no* into *si*, viz. *temnotemsi* (corruptly also written *tempfi*.)

**Qu.** Which is the second Exception?

**An.** The second is of three words, which though they change *no* into *vi*, yet do admit of a Metathesis, or transposition of the *r*, and vowel before that, which goes before *no* (and whereof the first also changes *e* into *a*) viz. *Sterno stravi*, *sperno spreui*, *cerno creui*.

**Q.** Which is the third Exception?

**An.** The third is of one word, viz. *lino*, which besides its regular preterperfect tense *livi*, forms two irregular ones, viz. *lini* and *levi*.

**Q.** Which is the fourth Exception?

**An.** The fourth Exception is of *gigno*, *pono*, and *cano*, which in their preterperfect tenses have *genui*, *posui*, and *cecini*. So our Authour--

—*Temno excipe tempfi*

*Dat sperno stravi, sperno spreui, lino levi,  
Interdum lini, & livi; cerno quoque creui;  
Gigno, pono, cano, genui, posui, cecini dant.*

¶ *Sino ceu sivi* ] Anciently there was also read *sini*.

Thence *Ter. And. 1. 2. Sini, animum ut explece suum.* So *Schrevelius* now reads it (though *Farnaby* reads *Sivi*) and so *Donatus* saith it 'was read antiquè - who observes the Authour in *Adelph. 1. 2. used sivit*, which some read *sit* (but that is but a Syncope for *sivit*) and some manuscripts *Sinit*, saith *Vossius. Analog. 1. 3. c. 29.* where from *Priscian* he shews, that *Varro, Rutilius* and *Scaurus* so used it. Yet it may be better to forbear it.

*Temno excipe tempsi*] For the corrupt writing of *tempsi* for *temsi* see before, upon *Como petit tempsi*. But the simple *temsi* it self, and *temptum* derived therece are hardly, if at all to be found, as say both *Farnaby* and *Vossius*; and accordingly *Alvarus* gives the Rule for it warily thus: *Dat tempsi temptum temno, si legeris usquam*: yet not only *Jasz-Berengi* and *Burles* and most other of our English Writers except *Shirley*, but *Rhenius*, yea and *Despauterius* confidently own them; I suppose because they read *contemsi* and *contemptum* in the compound frequently. But that such a preterperfect tense and Supine, as *temsi* and *temptum*, have been in use, not only the compound *contemsi* and *contemptum* doth, but the simple verbal *temptor* read (say both *Vossius* and *Stephanus*) in *Seneca's Agamemnon*, ver. 599. would clearly shew, if that reading were unquestionably right, as indeed it is not, being in *Farnabys* edition of that Authour; not *temptor*, but *contemptor*. *Solus contemptor levium decorum.* *Stephanus* read it, *Solus est temptor levium decorum*; and from him *Vossius*; I suppose, did cite it.

*Lino levi, interdum lini & livi*] *Levi* is read in *Hor. 1. 1. Carm. Od. 20. File potabis modicis Sabinum Eantharis, quod ego ipse testâ conditum levi*; and though both *Alvarus* and *Despauterius*, *Jasz-berengi* and *Harris*, *Danæsius* and the *Rudiment* writer, yea *Ramus* and *Richerius* own all the three *levi*, *lini*, and *livi*, yet *Vossius*, *Farnaby* and *Burles* own no more but the first, *levi*: The *Crypsisw. Gram.* and *Hayne*, *levi* and *livi*; *Rhenius* *lini*

vel *levi*; Shirley *levi* only in his Text, yet with *lini* and *lini* referred to by an \* in his margin. The matter I suppose, is, that as Hayne in his Margin notes, *lini* and *lini* were anciently used: and accordingly in Colum. l. 12. c. 50. we find *lini*. *Nova dolia vel series crassa gummi liverunt*; and in Cato c. 69. *Si recte liveris in dolium quinquagenarium cumini p. 1111. satis erit*. So *lini* in Quintilian's Declam. Caci Mariti inquit tui cruore parietem *linisti*: but that now they are grown out of use. Whereupon those Authorities notwithstanding, Vossius saith, *Nullum vulgo ex hisce prateritis probant: sed levi*. He had besides these three named another also, namely *linis*, whence Varro, *Cum oblinierit vasa*, So Colum. l. 6. c. 8. *Partem allio tunso, & ballicula linire*: but that he saith is from *linio* of the fourth. De Analog. l. 3. c. 29.

*Cerno quoque crevi*] All agree that *cerno* makes *crevi*, (though some look upon it as a word grown out of use, and therefore in their Rules rather use some compound of it, as Farnaby *decerno*; and Hayne saith *cerno Compositum dat crevi*, and that it doth so, when it signifies to enter upon, or possess, to judge or determine is not disputed. For Cic. Attic. 6. 1. in the first notion saith, *Debet etiam fratris Appij amorem erga me cum reliqua hereditate crevisse*. In the second notion Plaut. Cistell. 1. 1. *Cum ego antehac te amavi, & mihi amicam esse crevi mea Gymnasium, & matrem tuam: tum id mihi aperuisti, tu atque haec*. Which words Varro repeating in his l. 6. de ling. Lit. adds immediately after them (and speaking of *crevi*) that *valet constitui*: and thereupon saith, *Itaque haeres, cum constituit se heredem esse, dicitur cernere, & cum id fecit, crevisse*. Whereupon that in Plaut. Cistell. 2. 1. which is ordinarily read, *Satin' tibi istuc in corde certum est?* Scaliger, that Gyant in Critical Learning, reads *cetum est*: And Vossius saith, *Idem significant cretum & decretum, quod constitutum, aut certum*. Whence Sallust. Orat. ad Caesar. saith *Equidem mihi decretum est, nihil tam*

ex alto reperiri posse, quod non cogitanti tibi in promptu sit. But whether it have *crevi*, when it signifies to see, that is said *pro*, and *con*. Shirley and the Rudiment-Writer give it *crevi*, *cretum* in the sense of seeing, and beholding; and so the Grammar of Gryphiswald. But Burles saith, *cerno* to see wants the preterperfect tense and Supines: So Farnaby *Pro video cerno* *præterito adeoque Supino*. So Richerius, *Cerno pro video, præteritum & Supinum repudiat*. So our Authour afterwards. *A video cerno vult vidi*. And so others: for saith Vossius de Analog. l. 3. c. 29; *Cerno tum tantum crevi & cretum facere aiunt, quando de hereditate sermo est*. Yet saith he again, *contrarium evincit Priscianus illo Titinnij in Geminis: Simul ut pueras has nostris suspirare crevi*. i. e. *vidi* saith he, whence Danisius *Cerno pro video olim crevi*. And Alvarus, *crevi pro vidi, judicari, usi sunt præteriti*. And therefore Rhenius speaks more warily; *Cerno pro video ferè caret præterito & Supino*. So Sebast. Duisburgens. *Præteritum & Supinum verbi cerno extra compositionem ræventer leguntur: significat autem video; citing that of Plaut. Cistell. 1. 1. for it*. And so Vossius having in his Etymolog. p. 118. given it *crevi* and *cretum*, adds a note to shew in what sense he meant it, namely, *Cum sermo est de adeundâ hereditate. Verum in videndi notione vix præteritum ac Supinum ejus reperias*. So that if the Construer of these Rules, and the Translator of this Grammar, had rendered this word by one of the other significations, rather than by [to discern] it had perhaps done better: unless their meaning were to intimate, nor that the simple verb *cerno*, but the compound *discerno* did make that Preterperfect tense. And it may be best to forbear the use of it, till more weighty authority shall appear to justify the sousing it. See Danes. Schol. Edit. 2. p. 234.

*Gigno gigni* ] *Gigni* is ordinarily read, but rather from *gno*, than from *gigno*, which word was used by Varro, R. R. l. 1. c. 40. *Primum semen quod est principium genendi id duplex*. And ib. *Quædam enim*  
ad

*ad genendum propterea usque adeo parva, ut sin' ob-*  
*scura.* So by *Lucret.* l. 1. *Aut erit ut possint in eo*  
*res esse, genique.* So by *Censorinus* c. 15. *Hic five quod*  
*ut genamur curet, five quod una genitur nobiscum,*  
*five etiam quod nos genitos suscipit ac tuetur, certe a*  
*genendo genius appellatur.* So by *Severus, Appuleius,*  
 and many others of the Ancients, and not refused by  
*Paulus* and *Ulpian,* as *Vossius* shews, *Analog.* l. 3. c.  
 29. though now it be dilused. And therefore *Vossius*  
 saith, *Gigno praterito caret, sed mutuatur genui a geno;*  
 and so *Farnaby* and *Rhenius* say.

*Pono posui* ] *Priscian* out of *Plaut.* *Vidularia,* and  
*Appul.* in *Hermag.* shews that *pono* of old had *posui*.  
 Whence in *Plaut. Asin.* 3. 1. is now read, *Quin. pol. si*  
*reposui remum.* and *Casin.* 4. 4. *Pene exposui cubito.* and  
*Curcul.* 4. 3. *Triginta minas quas ego apud te deposui.*  
 Which *Catullus* also *Carm.* 35. hath *Quam mater prope*  
*Deliam Deposuit olivam.* But 'tis now out of use.

*Cano cecini* ] *Servius* on *Georg.* 2 saith, *Sic etiam ab*  
*eo quod est cano, non cecini, sed canui dicebant.* Thence  
*Sall.* as *Priscian.* l. 10. testifieth, hat' *Cornicines occa-*  
*nuer.* But now as *cecini* is the only used Preterperfect  
 of the simple *cano,* so is *cinui* the only usual termina-  
 tion of the Preterperfect tenses of the Verbs compounded  
 of it, *concino, incino, accino, occino, percino, precino, re-*  
*cino, succino.*

**Qu. How are the words of this Rule and the**  
**Exceptions declined ?**

The De-  
 clining of  
 the words

*An.* The words of this Rule and Exceptions are de-  
 clined thus :

*Sino, Sinis, Sivi, Sivere, Situm.*  
*Temno, temnis, [temsi,] temere, [temum.]*  
*Sterno, Sternis, Stravi, Sternere, stratum.*  
*Sperno, spernis, Spievi, Spernere, spretum.*  
*Lino, linis, levi, [lini & livi,] linere, litum.*  
*Cerno, cernis, crevi, cernere, cretum.*  
*Gigno, gignis, genui, gignere, genitum.*  
*Pono, ponu, posui, ponere, positum.*

*cano, canis, cecini, canere, cantum.*

**Q<sup>u</sup>.** What is the Rule for the Preterperfect of Verbs ending in *po*?

**A<sup>n</sup>.** The Rule for the Preterperfect of Verbs ending in *po* is this: *Po fit pfi, ut scalpo scalpsi.*

**Q<sup>u</sup>.** What is the meaning of this Rule?

**A<sup>n</sup>.** The meaning of this Rule is this: That verbs of the third Conjugation ending in *po* do form their Preterperfect of the Present tense by changing *o* into *fi*, or *po* into *pfi*: as of *scalpo* by such change is made *scalpsi*.

**Q<sup>u</sup>.** Are there any words excepted from this Rule?

**A<sup>n</sup>.** From this Rule are excepted two words: where of the first is *rumpo*, which besides that it loseth *m* out of the middle, changes *o* into *i* [ or *po* into *pi* ] as *rumpo rupi*: the second is *strepo*, which changes *o* into *ui* ( or *po* into *pui* ) of *strepo* forming *strepui*. So our Authour:

——— *Rumpo excipe rupi;*

*Et strepo quod format strepui: crepo quod crepui dat.*

*Crepo quod crepui dat*] Two Grammarians besides our Authour, viz. Desputerius and the Rud ment Writer own *crepo* as of the third Conjugation. But for those two I find twelve, that take no notice of it: and *Vossius* and *Farnaby* are two of them: and saith *Danessius*, *Crepo tertii conjugationis non lego. Schol. l. 2. c. 11.*

**Q<sup>u</sup>.** How are the words of this Rule and Exception declined?

**A<sup>n</sup>.** The words of this Rule and Exception are declined thus:

*Scalpo, scalpis, scalpsi, scalpere, scalpum.*

*Rumpo, rumpis, rupi, rumpere, rustum.*

*Strepo, strepis, strepui, strepere, strepitum.*

**Q<sup>u</sup>.** What is the rule for the Preterperfect of Verbs in *quo*?

**A<sup>n</sup>.** The Rule for the Preterperfect tense of verbs ending in *quo* is this: *Quo fit qui, ut linquo liqui.*

*Quo fit qui.*

Q<sup>u</sup>.



**Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule?**

**An.** The meaning of this Rule is this: That of a Verb of the third conjugation ending in *quo* a Preterperfect tense is formed ending in *qui*: as of *linquo*, by such change, and the loss of *n* out of the middle, is made *liqui*.

**Qu. Is no word excepted from this Rule?**

**An.** From this Rule is excepted *coquo* which forms its Preterperfect tense by changing *quo* into *xi*: So that of *coquo* by such change is made *coxi*. So our Authour: — *coquo demito coxi*.

¶ *Linguo liqui* ] Perhaps *liqui* might be made the Preterperfect tense of this verb, to distinguish it from *linqui* the Present tense of the Infinitive Mood Passive.

**Qu. How are the words of this Rule, &c. de-** The de-  
clined? clining of  
the words.

**An.** The words of this Rule, &c. are declined thus (at least in the compounds of this verb.)

*Linguo, linguis, liqui, lingvere, lectum.*

*Coquo, coquis, coxi, coquere, coctum.*

**Qu. What is the Rule for the Preterperfect tense of Verbs ending in *ro*?**

**An.** The Rule for the Preterperfect of Verbs ending in *ro* is this: *Ro fit vi, sero ceu pro planto & semino sevi. Ro fit vi.*

**Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule?**

**An.** The meaning of this Rule is this: That of a verb of the third conjugation ending in *ro* the Preterperfect tense is formed by changing *ro* into *vi*; as of *sero*, by such change, is made *sevi*.

**Qu. Are there any Exceptions from this Rule?**

**An.** From this Rule there are five Exceptions.

**Q1. Which is the first Exception?**

**An.** The first is of one which forms *ro* into *vui*, viz. *sero* in the other significations that it hath, besides that to *sow*, or *plant*; as *sero sevi*.

**Q1. Which is the second Exception?**

**An.** The second is of two which form *ro* into *vi*; viz.

*sero*

*verro verri*, and *curre* (with a reduplication of *en*) *cucurri*.

**Qu. which is the third Exception?**

**An.** The third is of two which form *ro* into *ssi*; viz. *sero* which makes *ussi*, and *gero* *gessi*.

**Qu. which is the fourth Exception?**

**An.** The fourth is of one which forms *ro* into *svi*; viz. *quero* which hath *quasi*.

**Qu. which is the fifth Exception?**

**An.** The fifth is of one which forms *ro* into *rivi*, yet with the loss of its first vowel *e*, viz. *sero* which makes *trivi*. So our Authour having named *seri* for the example of the Rule, adds an Exception of the same Verb in another sense, saying—

*Quod serui melius dat mutans significatum;*  
*Vult verro verri [ & versi ] uro ussi, gero gessi,*

*Quero quasi, tero triui, curro cucurri.*

[ *Quod serui melius dat mutans significatum* ] Our Authour speaks as if it were the same verb, that made *seri*, and *serui* whereas to *Vossius* it seems more probable, that they are two several latine verbs, derived from two several Greek verbs, *sero*, *serui* from *σέρω* *ordino*, and *sero seri* from *σέρω* or *σέρω* *sero*, the *ro* being left out. And as to *sero* signifying to order, &c. though diverse Grammarians as Despaute, Bird, Rhemius, Shirley, Jasz-Berengi, Burles, The Rudiment Writer, and Gryphisw. Grammar do positively give it a Preterperfect and a Supine, *serui sertum*, as if now in use: yet others speak more warily of it, as of a verb that anciently had that Preterperfect and Supine, and now only did retain it in the compounds of that Verb: Thus *Vossius*, *sero serui sertum antiquè*. Thus *Alvarus*, *Sero apud vetustissimos etiam serui fecit, ut ex Ennio & Catone constat apud Priscianum; Supinum sertum, &c.* Thus *Farnaby* having spoken of *sero* to plant, and coming to this *sero* saith, *In aliâ verò significatione composita serui sertum*. Thus *Hayne*, *Ro fit vi veluti sero vult pro semino seri. At composita dabunt serui cum*

*cum significatum Mutant.* Thus Harris, *sero serui sertum non usitatum nisi in compositis.* Lastly, Danesiuss saith, *Simplex autem serui sertum tunc utaris licet, quando apud classicum aliquem Scriptorem invenias.* Scol. l. 2. c. 11. It were to be wished, that the former soot had justified their assertion by some Authority: In the mean time till that be produced, it is evident that such a Preterperfect and Supine there hath been, not only by what is seen in the compounds of it, *assero, consero, infero, desero, &c.* which have *serui* in their preterperfect tense, and *sertum* in their Supine; but by *sertus* the participle remaining yet used in the simple: whence *Lucan.* l. 10. hath *coronas nardo sertas*, as *Alvarus* cites him; and also by the noun *sertum* a Garland, so called saith *Trebellius a sertis*, i. e. *digestis in vicem floribus frondibusque, ex quibus ab initio fieri corona solebant.*

*Vult verro verri & versi*] In giving *versi* also as well as *verri* for a preterperfect to this verb, I find our *Author* agreeing with *Despauter*, whose Rule for this is, *Verio vi, si, dato versum*: and *Harris*, and the *Rudiment Writer* agree with our *Author*. But *Vossius* and *Farnaby*, *Rhenius* and *Jasx-Brengi*, *Richerius* and *Burles*, *Ramus* and *Hayne*, the *Gryphisw. Grammar*, and *Shirley* own no such preterperfect as *verri*. *Priscian* of old, as both *Vossius* and *Alvarus* tell us, saith that *verro* makes *versi* according to *Servius*, but *verri* according to *Charisius*, which, saith he, speaking of this latter, *usus comprobatur.* And then from *Licin. Mater* cites, *etiam reliquias averrerunt*: and from *Publius*, *cellas servorum converri*, for the confirmation of it, I perceive that true which *Diomedes* saith, that it is no easie matter to find any Preterperfect tense of this verb. And though out of respect to the fore-named Grammarians, who deliver *verri*, though none but that, for the preterperfect tense of this verb, I presume, upon the account of what *Priscian* saith, I may allow of *verri*: yet of *versi* I shall conclude with *Alvarus*, *versi tunc licebit*

*licebit utaris, cum legeris apud Classicos. So he pag. 249. Voss. de Analog. l. 3. c. 30.*

*Terō trivi* ] Anciēly *terrui* was used. Thence *Plaut.* in *Pseud.* 3. 2. speaking of Mustard-seed saith : *Prinus quam teruerunt oculi ut exstillent, facit*, as *Priscian* l. 6. saith *Plaut.* writ that, which latter Editions have *triverrunt* And *Tibull.* l. 1. el. 4. *Aut operi insuetas atteruisse manus.* But *terui* is grown out of use, and *trivi* only remains. Inſomuch that *Virgil*, as *Veliſius Longus* obſerves, when his verſe would have given him way to have ſaid *terui*, choſe rather to ſay *trivi*, in *Ecl.* 2. *Nec te peniteat calamo triviſſe labellum.* So 2 *Georg.* *Hinc radios trivere rotis.* *Voss. Analog. l. 3. c. 30.*

*Curro cucurri* ] *Tertullian* l. *de fuga in perſec.* c. 12. hath *curri* without the reduplication. *Pedibus ſtetiſſi, curriſti nummis.* But though he *run* before, yet I ſee no body follow after him, in this uſe of the ſimple Verb; yet many *concur* with him in the like uſe of ſome of the compounds of it.

**Qu. How are the words of this Rule declined?**

**An.** The words in this Rule, &c. are declined  
The declining of thus:  
the words.

*Sero* (to plant) *ſeris, ſevi, ſerere, ſatum,*  
*Sero* (to ſet in order) *ſeris, [ſerui] ſerere [ſertum]*  
*Verro, verriſ, verri [verſi] verere, verſum.*  
*uro, uris, uſſi, urere, uſtum.*  
*Gero, geris, geſſi, gerere, geſtum.*  
*Quero, quaris, quaſiſi, quaerere quaſitum.*  
*Terō, teris, trivi, terere, tritum.*  
*Curro, curriſ, cucurri, currere, curſum.*

**Qu. What is the Rule for the Preterperfect of Verbs ending in ſo.**

**An.** The Rule for the Preterperfect tenſe of verbs ending in *ſo* is this, *So velut accerſo, arceſſo, inceſſo, atque laceſſo formabit ſivi.*

*So forma-*  
*bit ſivi.*

**Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule?**

**An.** The meaning of this Rule is this, That of a verb of the third Conjugation ending in *ſo*, a Preterperfect tenſe

terse is formed by changing *so* into *sui*, as of *accerſo* and *laceſſo*, by ſuch change, is made *accerſivi* and *laceſſivi*.

Qu. Are there any exceptions from this Rule?

An. From this Rule there are two Exceptions; The firſt is of one verb which turns *ſo* into *ſi*, viz. *viſo* which makes *viſi*; And the ſecond is of two verbs which turn *ſo* into *sui*, viz. *pinſo* *pinſui*, and the old verb *depoſo* which maketh *depoſui*. Sic *viſo viſi*, ſed *pinſo pinſui* habebit.

*Accerſo*] The writing of *accerſo* for *arceſſo*, as if it were another verb from it, as our Authour here makes it, is by an overgrown error (as *Voffius* calls it) become ſo prevalent, that it will not readily be depoſited. Many Grammarians as *Alvarus*, *Voffius*, *Ramus Daueſius*, *Farnaby*, *Burles*, *Shirley*, *Harris*, and the Rudiment Writer own no ſuch word but rather caſhier it. But what then, ſo long as our Authour, and *Richerius*, and *Sebaſt. Duisburgenſis*, and *Rhenius*, and the Grammar of *Gryphiſwald*, & *Hayne*, and *Bird*, and *Jafz-Berengy* continue it? And nor only ſo, but *Dictionaries*, and the extant Editions of Authours ſo have it: Hence *Ter. And.* 3. 3. as well in *Farnabies* as *Schrevelius's* Edition, *Si in remeſt utrique, ut ſiant, accerſi jube*. So *Ad.* 3. 1. *Non adeſt, qui accerſat Aſchinum*. and *ib.* 4. 4. *Eone obſetricem accerſat*. But ſuch a word as *accerſo* of the fourth conjugation there is (unleſs that alſo be a miſtake of *accerſo* for *arceſſo*, which alſo is read of the fourth conjugation.) *Liv.* l. 1. de. 3. *Placere itaque patrem accerſivi* (though *Voff.* *Etymolog.* p. 121. allege that to prove *arceſſo* of the fourth, and read it *arceſſiri*) *Cæſ.* l. 5. v. *Gall. Ex continenti alios accerſivi jubet*, which yet again in other books is read *arceſſi*. *Sall. Jug. Metellos proptere cunſtos Senatorii ordinis ex hybernis accerſivi jubet*. *Id. ib.* *Tamen poſtremo Syllam accerſiri jubet*.

*Arceſſo*] This verb is now of the third conjugation: Thence *Sall.* in *Jug. Metellum omnibus concionibus capitis*

*pitis arcessere.* and ib. *Quos pecunie capta arcessibant.* But antiently it was of the fourth. Thence *Vossius Etymolog.* p. 21. cites from *Plautus*, *Arcessi hostias.* And thence *arcessiri* in *Livie*, as we noted before.

*Incesso* ] I find two Grammarians agreeing with our Author herein, and not excepting *incesso* from the Rule of turning *so* into *sivi*; They are Mr. Bird, and the Rudiment Writer. But the general current of Grammarians is against them, and for *incesso* to make *incessi*. So *Alvarus*, *Vossius*, *Richerius*, *Rhenius*, *Dancsius*, *Farnaby*, *Burles*, *Harris*, &c. Again Authorities for *incessi* we have plenty of, both in *Alvarus* and *Vossius*. So *Cæs.* 3. b. Gall. *Exercitui quidem omni tantus incessit ex incommodo dolor.* *Liv.* 1. 12. Pun. *Ingens ipsum cupido inceserat Tarenti potiundi.* *Tacit.* 1. 3. *Hist.* *Fuere qui uxorem L. Vitellii Triariam incesserant.* *Id.* 1. 3. *Annal.* *Quoties valetudo adversa Flaminem Dialem incesisset.* But for *incessivi* I meet not with any one Authority. And yet I am loth that this should passe as one of the Errors of Lilly. What then shall we say for *incessi*? Why, that it is a Syncopated Preterperfect tense, put for *incessivi*; first *incessij* being put for *incessivi*, and then *incessi* for *incessij*. Such Syncopes I find in other verbs of the same termination in this Rule. Thus *Liv.* 1. 10. ab U. C. *Per biduum laceßière* (for *laceßivère*) *hostem.* *Tacit.* 1. 12. *Annal.* *Pugnam manu capeßiit,* (for *capeßivit.*) *Ter. Phorm.* in Prolog. *Vetu' si poeta non laceßisset,* for *laceßivisset*) prior. So *Tacit.* 13. *Annal.* *Qui nondum honorem capeßisset* (as of *capeßi* for *capeßivi*.) So *id.* 1. 4. *Hist.* *Nulli usquam sub Nerone periculum faceßisses* (for *faceßivisset* or *faceßivi*) as of *faceßi*. And why may not all these places which are produced to instance that *incesso* makes *incessi* be Syncopated Preterperfect tenses, of the same nature with these? Assuredly *Vossius de Analog.* 1. 3. c. 31. produces them upon that account. For having reckoned up some of them, he adds *Estque istac συνηρη molto usitatissima in incesso* and then alledges *Columella* saying 1. 12.

*Plusia*

*Pluvia incesseverunt.* Gellius in his li. 1. c. 2. saith, *In theorematibus tantum nugalibus, & puerilium isagogarum commentationibus oblectantes objurcatione ista incessevit.* Thence some gather as if *incesso* had made *incessui*. How much more probable is it, that through some mistake, *incessui* was there read, if not for *incessivi* yet for *incessij*. And the rather because *Ludovicus Carrio* in that very place reads *incessivi*. As the case is, though I should rather use the used Syncopated Preterperfect tense *incessi*, yet I should think not to use it otherwise than as a Syncopated preterperfect tense of *incessivi*, even like as *obit* is used for *obivit*. Yet this still I say with humble submission to better judgements, and Authorities.

*Atque laceffo* ] That this verb forms *laceffivi* in the Preterperfect tense is plain *Cic. pro Dom. Nos te Antoni nulla laceffivimus injuria.* *Id in Pison. Responsione me inimica homo promptissimus laceffivit.* But there are read Syncopated Preterperfect tenses of it. *Liv. l. 10. ab u. C. Per biduum laceffiere hostem.* *Cic. Phil. 2. Tu ne verbo quidem violatus, ultro maledictis me laceffisti.* *Ter. Phorm. Prolog. Vetus si poeta non laceffisset prior.* Thence *Caper* reading in *Lucil. l. 14. laceffisse* took *laceffi* to be the Preterperfect of *laceffo*. But the Supine of this verb, or rather participle derived from the Supine, sheweth *sivi* to have been the Preterperfect tense of it. *Tacit. l. 4. Hist. Nos quanquam toties laceffiti, jure victoriae id solum vobis addidimus, quo pacem tueremur.* *Claudian. l. de b. Get. Sape laceffitam, sed non impune fatemur Ausoniam.* All that can be said against this, is this: That *laceffivi* is of *laceffio* of the fourth conjugation, and *laceffi* of *laceffo* of the third. Whereto I say, that such a word as *laceffio* of the fourth conjugation hath been in use. Thence *Columnel. l. 9. c. 8.* speaking of *Bees* saith, *solent novitate caeli laceffivi.* But that it doth not follow, that this must needs be a Preterperfect tense of the fourth conjugation, because it ends in *ivi*, unless all preterperfect tenses of verbs of the third conjugation



tion that end in *ivi* be preterperfect tenses of the fourth conjugation which will not be granted, since *trivi* of *tere* was never pretended to be a preterperfect tense of the fourth conjugation. Though again I grant where the Supine of three or more syllables hath *itum* with *i* long, it is most probable. And if the case be so, as it is in this, and many more verbs, then it must be said that those verbs as they are now used, are each one verb made up of two, one of the third, and another of the fourth conjugation, both partly in use, and partly out of use, in use in the Present tense of the third conjugation, and preterperfect of the fourth: but out of use in the preterperfect of the third, and present tense of the fourth, unless in such verbs as retain both preterperfect tenses, which some do. And perhaps the same may be said of verbs of the fourth conjugation which have preterperfect tenses not in *ivi*, or other preterperfect tenses besides that in *ivi*; namely that what they have not agreeing with the Analogy of the fourth conjugation they have and retain from insignificant, sometimes used, but now disused, verbs of the third conjugation.

*Sed tolle capeſſo capeſſi, Quodque capeſſivi facit*] There was no great reason to except *capeſſo* from the Rule, any more than the rest. For this hath *capeſſivi* ordinarily. For *Cic. l. 4. de Rep.* cited by *St. Aug. de civ. dei* hath *Rempub. capeſſivit. Tacit. 15. Annal. Principium tanti facinoris capeſſivere. Ib. pugnam manu capeſſivit.* Thence by a Syncope is formed *capeſſi* used by *Tacit. l. 13. Annal. Senatorij ordinis; sed qui nondum honorem capeſſiſſet.* Unless we will say *capeſſi* to be the preterperfect of this verb *capeſſo*, and *capeſſivi* the preterperfect of *capeſſio* of the fourth now disused.

*Faciſſo faciſſi*] *Voss.* gives this verb *faciſſivi* for its preterperfect tense, as well as *faciſſi*. And so *Farnaby* making *faciſſi* to be but a Syncopeated preterperfect formed from *faciſſivi*. And so *Alvarus faciſſo itidem faciſſivi.* That of *Cic. 1 Ver. Iosepho profecto metuere incipies, ne innocenti periculum faciſſeris, Priscian* witnesseth

in some books was read *faceffieris*, which must come from *faceffivi*, and as *Alvarus* saith, *propius vero est*. And it appears to be so, becaule the Supine of this verb is *faceffitum*, which both *Vossius* and *Alvarus* insist upon, urging for proof that of *Cic. 6. Verr. Antequam audissent ei negotium faceffitum*. If this may not be admitted, becaule *faceffivi* is not punctually any where now read (at least to my remembrance) then it must be said, that as there is now *faceffo* of the third conjug. whose preterperfect is *faceffi*, whence *Tacit. 4. Histor. Nulli unquam sub Nerone periculum faceffisset*; So anciently there was *faceffio* of the fourth conjugation whose preterperfect tense was *faceffivi*, from whence *faceffieris* in the forenamed place of *Cic. 1. Verr.* if that were the true reading of it; and *faceffitum* the only remaining Supine of this verb.

*Sed pinso pinſui habebit*] This preterperfect tense *Probus* shews from that of *Pomponius*, *Neque molis molui, neque pitis pinſui*. In which Authour is also read *condepſui*. *Partem inſipui, concluſi, condepſi*, i. e. from the simple *depſo depſui*, which *Cato c. 90.* hath more than once, saying: *Id ubi extorxeris, deponito, bene oleo manum ungito, depſitoq; primum puſillum, poſtea magis depſes, oleo tangito, depſitoq; dum facere poteris turundas*.—*Catullus* hath *perdepſui*, *Epigr. 69. Patruſi perdepſuit ipſam uxorem*.

**Qu.** How are the words of this Rule, declined?

**An.** The words of this Rule, are declined thus:  
*Accerſo, acerſis, acerſivi, accerſere, acerſitum.* The declining of the words.  
*Arceſſo, arceſſis, arceſſivi, arceſſere, arceſſitum.*  
*Inceſſo, inceſſis, inceſſi, inceſſere.*  
*Laceſſo, laceſſis, laceſſivi, laceſſere, laceſſitum.*  
*Capeſſo, capeſſis, capeſſivi, & capeſſi, capeſſere, capeſſitum.*  
*Faceſſo, faceſſis, [faceſſivi &] faceſſi, faceſſere, faceſſitum.*  
*Viſo, viſus, viſi, viſere, viſum.* \*  
*Pinſo, pinſis, pinſui, pinſere, pinſitum, pinſum & piſum.*

† If *viſum* be not the only Supine of *vidco*.

**Q1. What is the Rule for the Preterperf. tenses of verbs ending in *Sco*?**

*An.* The Rule for the preterperfect tenses of verbs ending in *Sco* is this: *Sco fit vi, ut pasco pavi.*

**Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule?**

*An.* The meaning of this Rule is this: That of a Verb of the third conjugation ending in *sco* the preterperfect is formed by changing *sco* into *vi*: as of *pasco* by such change is made *pavi*.

**2<sup>d</sup> Qu. Are there any Exceptions from this Rule?**

*An.* From this Rule are excepted three words; First *pasco*, which in the formation turns *sco* into *sci* with a reduplication of *po* in the beginning. Secondly, *disco* which turns *sco* into *ei* with the like reduplication of *di*. Thirdly *quinsco* which makes *quexi*; So our Author

— *Vult po'sco poposci,*  
*Vult ei disco, quexi fo mare quinsco.*

[ *Quexi fo mare quinsco* ] Of this verb some Grammarians take no notice, that I find, in their Grammars: as *Vossius*, *Hayne*, *Farnaby*, *Burles*. Of those that do take notice of it, most read it *conquinsco*, and give it the preterperfect tense *conquexi*; as *Ramus*, *Alvarus*, *Richerius*, *Seb. Duisburgensis*, &c. Two agree with our Author in reading it *quinsco quexi*, viz. *Shirley* and the *Rudiment Writer*. But whether we should read it *quinsco*, or *conquinsco* is the doubt. Of *conquinsco* *Voss. de Analog* l. 3. c. 25. brings an example out of *Pomponius*. *Ad cum ut conquexi, interim mulieres conspiciunt.* But of *quinsco* I find no example. Yet if *Rhenius*, *Duisburgensis*, and the *Gram. of Gryphisw.* say true, that there is *acquinsco* as well as *conquinsco* (and indeed I find *Stephanus* quoting two places out of *Pomponius*, where *acquinsco* is used; the one in *Prossibulo*, — *Nisi ipsius orans ultra qui acquinsceret.* The other in *Pistore*. *Nisi nunc aliquis subito obviam occurrit mihi, qui acquinscat* ) then no doubt but *quinsco* is the simple verb, of which those two are compounded. I suppose they are all antiquated words, whence the above-named Grammarians give them

them no place in their Grammars : And it matters not much which of them is named. It may not be amiss to tell you from *Vossius*, what *conquinisco* means : and that (saith he) is, *secreturnm infestare, quod faciunt alium exoneraturi : ac venit a conquire, hoc est ex-nire*. Where by the way we may note, that it is rather a compound of *con* and *quinisco* put for *quinio*, or *cunio* than a simple.

**Qu. How are the words of this Rule de-  
clined?**

*An.* The words of this Rule, &c. are declined thus :

*Pasco, pascis, pavi, pascere, pastum.*

*Posco, poscis, poposci, poscere.*

*Disco, discis, didici, discere.*

*Quinisco, quiniscis, quexi, quiniscere.*

The De-  
clining of  
the words

**Qu. What is the Rule for the Preterperfect  
tense of Verbs in to ?**

*An.* The Rule for the Preterperfect tense of Verbs <sup>To sit ti.</sup> ending in *to* is this : *To sit ti, ut verto verti.*

**Qu. What is the meaning of that Rule ?**

*An.* The meaning of the Rule is this : That of a verb of the third Conjugation ending in *to*, the Preterperfect tense is formed from the Present tense, by changing *to* into *ti*, as of *verto* by such change, is made *verti*.

**Qu. Are there any Exceptions from this Rule ?**

*An.* From this Rule there are Excepted five words. First *Sisto* (taken actively for *to make to stand*) which besides the change of *to* into *ti*, takes in *t* before *i*, and loseth *s* after it, so that of *sisto* is made *stiti*.

Secondly *mitto*, which turns *to* into *si*, and beside loseth its first *t*, so that of *mitto* is made *mihi*.

Thirdly *peto*, which turns *to* into *tivi*, so that of *peto* is made *petivi*, and of that again, by a Syncope, *petij*.

Fourthly *Sterco*, which turns *to* into *tui*, making in its preterperfect tense *sternui*.

Fifthly *meto*, which turns *to* into *sui*, and takes in *s* before *sui*, so that of *meto* is made *messui*.

So our Authour — *Sed sisto notetur*  
*Pro facio stare activum, nam jure sisti dat.*  
*Dat mitto misi, peti; peto si ve petivi.*  
*Sterto stertui habet, meto messui.*

¶ *Sed sisto notetur pro facio stare activum-*] *Sisto* hath two significations: or rather there are two verbs of this denomination, the one *Active* signifying to *stop* or *make to stand*; and the other *Neuter* signifying to *stay* or *stand*; and the *Active sisto* hath a preterperf. tense of its own here named *sisti*: but the *Neuter sisto* hath no preterperf. of its own, but (*precarium habet preteritum steti* as *Richerius* saith) borrows *steti* the preterperfect of *sto*; whence our Authour afterward, *A sto sisto steti tantum pro stare*, *Vossius* distinguisheth the preterperfect tenses of these verbs thus: *Activum preteritum est [Antea illum illic sisti: nunc hic eum sisto:] At neutrum preteritum est [Antea illic stetit; nunc hic sistit.] Etymo'og. p. 122.* And *Analog. l. 3. c. 31.* he gives examples of the *Active* signification from *Cato* in *Agell. l. 2. c. 14.* *Quid si vadimonium capite obvoluto sitisses?* and *Paul Jurisc. Ita stipulatus sum, te sissi in certo loco, si non stiteris.* And here, which is a wonder, *Grammatici non certant.*

*Sterto stertui habet*] Thence *Pers. 6. Sat. Cor jubet hoc Enni, postquam destertuit esse Maonides.* This verb saith *Vossius*, juxta aliquos *sterti* facit; and *Rhenius* saith it makes *stertui* and *sterti*. But in *Alvarius* the Rule is exceptive to any thing else, but *stertui*. *Stertuit a sterto tantum*, saith he. Neither do *Priscian* or *Valerius Probus* own any other preterperfect but *stertui*. If any contest be, example must decide it: and till then I think we may hold us as we are, and be quiet.

*Meto messui*] I suppose the simple preterperfect of this verb is hardly, if at all, to be found, which made *Diomedes* and *Charisius* give it for a verb wanting the preterperfect tense. But that it once had one, if at least now it may not be allowed by them to have one, is evident by that of *Cato l. 2. de Origin.* cited by *Priscian l. 10.* *In campo Tyburti, ubi hordeum demessuit.* Nor do the

the latter Grammarians quarrel about this.

**Q<sup>u</sup>. How are the words of this Rule declined?** The de-

**An.** The words of this Rule, &c. are declined thus: *clining of the words.*

*Verto, vertis, verti, vertere, verſum.*

*ſiſto, ſiſtis, ſiti, ſiſtere, ſtatum.*

*Mitto, mittis, miſi, mittere, miſſum.*

*Peto, petis, petivi, petere, petitum.*

*ſterto, ſtertis, ſtertui, ſtertere.*

*Meto, metis, meſſui, metere, meſſum.*

**Q<sup>u</sup>. What is the Rule for the preterperfect tense of Verbs ending in eſto?**

**An.** The Rule for the preterperfect tense of verbs ending in *eſto* is this; *Ab eſto fit exi, ut ſeſto ſexi.*

*Ab eſto fit exi.*

**Q<sup>u</sup>. What is the meaning of this Rule?**

**An.** The meaning of the Rule is this; That of a Verb of the third Conjugation ending in *eſto* a preterperfect is formed from the Preſent tense, by changing *eſto* into *exi*: as of *ſeſto* by ſuch change is made *ſexi*.

**Q<sup>u</sup>. Are there any Exceptions from this Rule?**

**An.** There are no Exceptions from this Rule: only our Authour names two verbs, which beſides the regular preterperfect tense in *xi*, have another in *xui*, namely *peſto pexi*, and *pexui*; and *neſto* which hath *nexi* and *nexui*. So our Authour ſaith:

—*Peſto dat pexui habetque,*

*Pexi: etiam neſto dat nexui, habet quoque nexi.*

Unto which Grammarians add *pleſto*, which, they ſay, makes *plexui* and *plexi*.

**¶** *Peſto dat pexui habetque Pexi* } *Pexui* was ordinary in *Prifcians* obſervation: but *pexi* more rare, chiefly aſſerted by *Charifius*, by whom it was avouched from the Authority of *Mecenas* in his *Oſtrovia Pexiſti capillum nature muneribus gratum*. *Aſper* hath another preterperfect tense for this verb, namely *peſtivi*; which perhaps he concluded to be from *peſtitum* a Supine of it, having the middle ſyllable ſhort; whence in *Colum* l. 10.

the participle *pestitus*. *Vtrum ubi jam puto discrimine pestita tellus.* and l. 12. *Preparata sunt & pestita lana.* But *Vossius* having said of this preterperfect tense, that he hath not yet found it in any good Authour, it will be best to let it alone. *Alvar.* p. 251. *Voss.* *Etymolog.* p. 121. and *Analog.* l. 3. c. 31.

*Etiā necto* ] *Nexui* is shewn from that of *Virgil.* *Æn.* 5. *Et paribus palmas amborum innexuit armis.* *Nexi* is shewed from *Lucil.* l. 5. *Hic solus vigilavit opinor, & cum id mi visus facere est, tum retia nexit.* So *Menæas* in *Diomed.* *Nexisti retia lecto.* See *Danef. Schol.* l. 2. c. 11.

*Plecto plexui & plexi* ] *Farnaby* gives both these preterperfect tenses to this verb (So *Burles*, so *Voss.* in his *Grammar*, So *Kicherius*, The *Rudiment Writer*, & *Jasq-Berengie*.) Yet touching *plexi* he gives a note, that it gave that preterperfect tense *antiquè*, *Plecto plexui & antiquè plexi*, so he, and therein he follows *Priscian*, who gave the same note of it. Yet *Despauterius*, *Alvarus*, *Rhenius*, *Ramus*, the *Gyphisy.* *Gram.* *Hayn*, *Harris*, *Bird*, *Shirley* give it no other preterperfect but *plexi*. And of *plexi* *Priscian* himself gives an example out of *Lælius* in his *Erotopægon.* *Capiti meo, trepidans, libens insolita plexit munera.* But of *plexui* I see no example but one produced by *Voss.* out of *St. Hierome* in *lib. Jud.* c. 16. *Si septem crines capiti & melicio plexueris.* Whereupon he speaks of it by way of diminution, *Plecto plexui format, saltem in significatiōe et implicandi.* *De Analog.* l. 3. c. 31. Which one would a little wonder at, that in his *Etymolog.* p. 121. should read, *Plexui nonnullis videtur esse a plecto quando significat implico, necto: plexi verò quando significat puto.* Sed hoc discrimen non observatur. Potius eo differunt, quod plexui sit usitatus: plexi in usu esse desierit. In such difficult investigations it is easie to mistake. *Vah, cras sen' hominem me esse? erravi.* So he in the *Comedy.* *Ter. Adelph.* 4. 2. Where *Grammarians* differ either from others, or themselves, Authority must carry it, if there be any; else it is best



to let all alone, at least in my opinion.

**Q<sup>u</sup>. How are the words of this Rule declined?**

**An.** The words of this Rule are declined thus :

*Flecto, flectis, flexi, flectere, flexum.*

*Pecto, pectis, pexi, & pexui, pectere, pexum.*

*Necto, nectis, nexi, & nexui, nectere, nexum.*

*Plecto, plectis, [plexi & plexui] plectere, plexum.*

The declining of the words.

**Q<sup>u</sup>. What is the Rule for the Preterperfect tenses of verbs ending in *vo*?**

**An.** The Rule for the Preterperfect tenses of Verbs ending in *vo* is this : *Vo fit vi, ut volvo volvi.*

**Q<sup>u</sup>. What is the meaning of that Rule?**

**An.** The meaning of the Rule is this : That of a Verb of the third conjugation ending in *vo*, the preterperfect is formed from the present tense, by changing *vo* into *vi*, as of *volvo*, by such change, is made *volvi*.

**Q<sup>u</sup>. Is there any Exception from this Rule?**

**An.** From this Rule there is one word excepted, namely *vivo*, which in the Preterperfect tense changes *vo* into *xi*, so that of *vivo* is made *vixi*.

**Q<sup>u</sup>. How are the words in this Rule declined?**

**An.** The words in this Rule are declined thus :

*Volvo, volvis, volvi, volve, volutum.*

*Vivo, vivis, vixi, vivere, victum.*

The declining of the words.

**Q<sup>u</sup>. What is the Rule for the Preterperfect tense of a Verb ending in *xo*?**

**An.** The Rule for the Preterperfect tense of a Verb ending in *xo* (if there were any need of any) might be this : *Xo fit xui.*

**Q<sup>u</sup>. What is the meaning of that Rule?**

**An.** The meaning of the Rule is this : That of a verb of the third Conjugation ending in *xo*, a preterperfect is formed by changing *xo* into *xui*; as of *texo* by such change is made *texui*; and so of *nexo* (if there be any such verb of this conjugation) by such change is made *nexui*: For so our Authour, *Nexut nexui habet, sic texo texui habebit.*

¶ *Nexno nexui habet* ] Such a verb as *nexo nexis* is not to be read in *Richerius*, nor in *Gram. Gryphisw. Farnaby, Burles, Hayne, Bird, Harris, Shirley, Jag-Berengie*, nor the *Rudiment Writer*. Notwithstanding *Ramus* and *Despauterius* own it. *Alvayus* saith, if ever it were it is now out of use. *Rhenius* saith it is in *Accius*, but now disused. *Vossius*, though in his *Etymolog.* he mentions it not, yet in his *Analog.* l. 3. c. 35. he hath two instances of it, the one of *Attius* from *Priscian* and *Dionemedes*, *Nos continuo ferrum eripimus, omnibus manicis neximus*; the other from *Livius* in *Odyssea* cited in *Priscian* l. 9. *Nexebant multa inter sese flexu nodorum dubia*. It may perhaps be best to allow such a verb as this of this conjugation, yet to look upon it as an antiquated verb, and forbear the use of it.

Q. How are the words of this Rule, declined?

An. The words of this Rule are declined thus :

The de- *Nexo, nexis, nexui, nexere, nexum.*  
clining of *Texo, texis, texui, texere, textum.*  
the words.

Q. What Rule is there for the Preterperfect tense of Verbs ending in *cio*?

An. For the Preterperfect tense of Verbs ending in *cio*, the Rule is this : *Fit cio ci : ut facio feci, jacio quoque jeci.*

Q. What is the meaning of this Rule?

An. The meaning of the Rule is this : That of a verb of the third Conjugation ending in *cio*, the Preterperfect is formed from the Present tense, by changing *cio* into *ci*, and the *a* (if there be any) that goes before it, into *e* : as of *facio* by such change is made *feci*; and so of *jacio jeci*.

Q. Are there any Exceptions from this Rule?

An. From this Rule two old verbs are excepted, namely, *lacio* and *specio*, which turn *cio* into *xi*; so that of *lacio* is made *lexi*, and of *specio*, *spexi*. So our Authour : *Antiquum lacio lexi, specio quoque spexi.*

¶ *Lacio lexi, specio quoque spexi* ] These two verbs some

Some Grammarians own without any note of their being antiquated, as *Harru*, *Shirley*, and the *Rudiment* writer. Others set them down but as obsolete verbs; as *Danefius*, *Alvarus*, *Rhenius*, and *Duisburgensis*. I suppose both do it for the sake of the verbs compounded of them, to shew their composition and declining. Others not so much as mention them, but only verbs compounded of them, *allicio*, *aspicio*, &c. as *Farnaby*, *Burles*, *Richerius*, and the *Gram. Gryphisw.* I suppose this is because, as is noted by Mr. Hayne, *Hæc sæpe occurrunt composita, nunquam simplicia*. Old we find them, and as old let us leave them.

**Q.** How are the words of this Rule declined?

The declining of the words.

**Ans.** The words of this Rule are declined thus.

*Facio*, *facis*, *feci*, *facere*, *factum*.

*Facio*, *jacio*, *jeci*, *jacere*, *jactum*.

[*Lacio*, *lacio*, *lexi*, *lacere*, *lectum*.]

[*Specio*, *specis*, *spexi*, *specere*, *spectum*.]

**Q.** What is the Rule for the Preterperfect tense of Verbs ending in *dio*?

**Ans.** The Rule for the Preterperfect tense of Verbs *Fit dio di* ending in *dio* is this: *Fit dio di*, *ut fodio fodi*.

**Q.** What is the meaning of this Rule?

**Ans.** The meaning of this Rule is this: That of a verb of the third Conjugation ending in *dio* the preterperfect tense is formed from the present tense by changing *dio* into *di*: as of *fodio* by such change, is made *fodi*.

**Q.** There being no Exception from this Rule, how is *fodio* declined?

The declining of the word.

**Ans.** *Fodio* is declined thus:

*Fodio*, *fodis*, *fodi*, *fodere*, *fossus*.

[*Fodio fodi*] This verb hath also been of the fourth conjugation. Thence in *Column* l. 11. c. 2. *Runcari & adhuc fodiri possunt*. So in his *lib. de arborib.* c. 30. *Sed omnibus annis fodiri ante Calend. Mart. & interpretari oportet*.

**Q.**

**Q.** What is the Rule for the preterperfect of *Fit gio gi.* verbs ending in *gio*?

**A.** The Rule for the preterperfect tense of verbs ending in *gio* is this: *Fit gio, seu fugio, gi.*

**Q.** What is the meaning of this Rule?

**A.** The meaning of this Rule is this: That of a verb of the third conjugation ending in *gio* the preterperfect tense is formed from the present tense, by changing *gio* into *gi*, as of *fugio* by such change is made *fugi*.

**Q.** There being no Exceptions from this Rule how is *fugio* declined?

**A.** *Fugio* is declined thus: The declining of *Fugio*, *fugis*, *fugi*, *fugere*, *fugitum*. the word.

**Q.** What is the Rule for the preterperfect tense of Verbs ending in *pio*?

**A.** The Rule for the Preterperfect tense of verbs ending in *pio* is this: *Fit pio pi, ut capio cepi.*

**Q.** What is the meaning of this Rule?

**A.** The meaning of this Rule is this, that of a verb of the third conjugation ending in *pio*, the preterperfect is formed from the present tense by changing *pio* into *pi*: as of *capio* by such change (with the change also of a *u* into *e*) is made *cepi*.

**Q.** Are there any exceptions from this Rule?

**A.** From this Rule are excepted three verbs: First, *cupio* which forms *pio* into *pivi*, as *cupio cupivi*. Secondly *rapio*, which forms *pio* into *pui*, as *rapio rapui*. Thirdly *sapio*, which forms *pio* both into *pui* and into *pivi*, as *sapio sapiui*, and *sapivi*. So our Authour:

— *Cupio excipe pivi.*

*Et rapio rapui, sapio sapiui, atque sapivi.*

[ *Cupio excipe pivi* ] That is, *cupio* makes *cupivi*: *pivi* being by an *Aphæresis* put for *cupivi*. This verb anciently hath been of the fourth conjugation. Thence *Lucret. l. 1. c. 1. -- Confringere ut arcta Naturæ primus portuum claustra cupiet.* Ovid. 3. *Fast. Mars videt hanc, ubi summa cupit, foriturque cupitâ.*

*Sapio*

*Sapio sapiui atque sapiui* ] Of the old Grammarians *Asper* and *Diomedes* were for *sapiui* and *sapii*; *Charisius* for *sapiui*, or *sapiui*; *Caper* for both; *Probus* and *Priscian* for *sapiui*. The latter Grammarians mostly are for *sapiui* and *sapiui*, as *Despauterius*, *Alvarus*, *Vossius*, *Rhenius*, *Farnabie*, &c. And there are evidences that *Sapiui* was anciently in use. So *Nevius*, *quanto ego plus sapiui*, *qui* — Thence in *Martial* l. 9. Ep. 6. *Nubere vis Prisco*, *non miror paula*; *sapisti* for *sapiuisti*. So *Plant. Rud.* 4. 1. *Pol magis sapisset: si dormivisset domi*. Thence in *Cic. Attic.* 4. 5. *Vix aliquando te auctore respivi*; and thence by contraction in *Ter. Heaut.* 4. 8. *Te intelligo respisse*. But for *sapiui* which many are only for, as *Richerius* and *Hayne*, and *Bird*, and *Shirley* and *Harris* (and of those that are for both, some prefer it before *sapiui*, as being more usual; *sapiui tamen vulgo usitatus est*, saith *Vossius*; *sapio nunc sapius quidem facit sapiui*; So *Duisburgensis*. *Sapiui videtur cateris usitatus*; So *Alvarus*. *Sapio sapiui olim nunc sapiui*; *Gram. Gryphisw.*) I see no example produced, but one out of *Plant.* and that very same which we before produced for *sapi*, by contraction put for *sapiui*; which saith *Vossius* according to the Edition of *Steph. Schius* is read, *Pol magis sapuisset, si dormivisset domi*, who yet confesses *Camerarius* to have read it *sapisset, illaque ex MSS. orum fide*. I suppose the frequent use of *sapiui* in the compounds of this verb, *desapii*, *desapii*, *respiciui*, &c. is the cause of the ones being so much preferred before the other by Grammarians, I say still let use be umpire. To this verb some give two Supines, one with the middle syllable long, the other with the middle syllable short, some give but one, not determining of whether form; and some again deprive it of both its having a Supine with *i* long in the middle, proceeds from a supposition of what *Diomedes*, cited by *Daneſ.* as a witness for it, thought (but without any proof from Authority, as *Alvarus* notes) that it was also of the fourth conjugation. And to *Duisburgensis*; *Sapio sapiui sapium, penultima longa; quia olim fuerunt quarta conjugationis.*

But

But saith *Alvarus*, *sapitum media seu longa seu brevis non videtur usitatum*, and then 'tis best letting it alone unused, unless this liberty be so enlarged, that what hath been said by any one, may be said, and used by all, which yet the old Romans seem not willing to give way unto.

**Qu.** How are the words of this Rule declined?

**An.** The words of this Rule are declined thus:  
The declining of *Capio*, *capis*, *ceci*, *capere*, *captum*.  
the words. *Cupio*, *cupis*, *cupivi*, *cupere*, *cupitum*.

*Rapio*, *rapis*, *rapui*, *rapere*, *raptum*.

*Sapio*, *sapis*, *sapui*, [*et sapivi*,] *sapere*, [*sapitum*].

**Qu.** What is the Rule for the Preterperfect of *Fit rio ri*.  
**Verbs ending in rio?**

**An.** The Rule for the preterperfect tense of verbs ending in *rio* is this: *Fit rio ri, ut pario peperi*.

**Qu.** What is the meaning of this Rule?

**An.** The meaning of the rule is this: That of a verb of the third conjugation ending in *rio* the Preterperfect tense is formed from the present tense by changing *rio* into *ri*: as of *pario* by such change, (with the change also of *a* into *e* redoubled with *p* the first consonant of the word) is made *peperi*.

[ *Pario peperi* ] This is said to have made *pari* anciently: but that, if ever it made it, was of *pario* of the fourth conjugation, one example of which *Varro* in his l. 4. de L. L. produceth out of *Ennius*, *Ova parire solet genus penneis cordecoratum*. And another out of *Mannilius*, *Latona pariit casto complexu Jovis*. I am apt to think rather, that *parui* was anciently a preterperfect tense of this verb, my reason is because *paritum* with *i* short, was anciently the Supine of this verb, from whence by a Syncope is made the present Supine *partum*; and that the *i* in *paritum* was short appears, because that vowel in *pariturus*, derived immediately from it, is short. So *Ovid*. *Lucinam novies, novies paritura vocavit*. Now this could not come from *parivi*, but from *parui*. But it is not a matter worth contending for, and so I leave

for every one to think of it as he listeth.

Q1. *How is pario declined?*

An. *Pario* is declined thus :

*Pario, paris, peperit, parere, partum.*

The de-  
clining of  
the word.

Qu. *what is the Rule for the preterperfect tense of Verbs ending in tio?*

An. The Rule for the preterperfect tense of verbs ending in *tio*, is this : *Fit tio ssi geminans s, ut quatio quass-*

*Fit tio ssi.*

Qu. *what is the meaning of this Rule?*

An. The meaning of this Rule is this, that of a verb of the third conjugation ending in *tio*, the preterperfect tense is formed from the present tense by changing *tio* into *ssi* (with a double *ss*.) as of *quatio* by such change is made *quasssi*.

*Quasssi, quod vix reperitur in usu*] Many Grammarians allow this verb a preterperfect tense without any hunching it: as the most ingenious Grammatical Poet, or Poetical Grammarian Mr. Shirley, So Mr. Bird, Harris, Richerius, Ramus, Vossius, Despaunterius, Jaz-Berengie, and the Grammar of Gryphiswald. Mr. Farnaby denies it any at all. *Quatio sine præterito quassum*; So he. Others though they deny it not, yet deny it to be usual, as Sebastian Duisburgensis, and the Authour of the *Rudiments*. Others again, like our Lilly, speak warily in the business, neither well allowing, nor yet peremptorily condemning it. *Præterito caret, ut Charisius apud Priscianum docet*, saith Alvarus speaking of it. *Quatio, quasssi, quassum*, which preter tense *quasssi* is scarcely read, saith Burles. *Et quatio quasssi, quod vix reperitur in usu*, saith Hayne. *Quatio quasssi quassum* (saith Rhenius) unde *quassus & quasso. Sed præteritum quasssi in simplici vix legitur*. But if it be allowed a Supine, which Farnaby denieth not to it, that yet deprives it of a preterperfect tense, then sure it should have a preterperfect tense for that Supine to be formed from. And from whence but *quassum* can be derived *quassus*, both the participle (used in Horace, who l. i. od. i. hath *quassæ rates*; and in Ovid.



Ovid. in *Ibin*, who there hath *membra quassa*; and in *Curt.* l. 7. *Hæc quassa adhuc voce dixerat.* and in *Appul.* *Metam.* l. 9. *Dolium multifariam rimis hiantibus quassum.* and the Substantive (read in *Cic.* 2. *Tusc.* though from *Pacuvius*, *Nam attrectatu & quassu serum amplificatis colorum.*) And from whence but *quassi* can *quassum* be formed? It is to be supposed that those that deny it, or speak doubtfully of it, never read it, and so spake. But withal it may be hoped, that of the so many, as speak peremptorily for it, some at least, if not all, had example to justify what they delivered, especially considering of how little value a Grammarians word is, without an Authour to vouch it. If they had any, I wish they had given it us: If they had not, then, though no doubt they had reason yet to think it had such a Preterperfect tense; yet it will be best for us, till authority appear to back, and bear us out, and make us bolder, to shrink in, and sort our selves with the wary ones, who say with our Authour here, *quod vix reperitur in usu.*

**Qu. How is quatio declined?**

*An.* *Quatio* is declined thus:

The declining of the word.

*Quatio, quatis, [quassi] quater, [quassum.]*

**Qu. What is the Rule for the Preterperfect of verbs ending in *uo*?**

*uo fit ui.*

*An.* The Rule for the preterperfect tense of verbs ending in *uo* is this, *Denique uo fit ui, ut statuo statui.*

**Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule?**

*An.* The meaning of the Rule is this: That of a verb of the third conjugation ending in *uo*, the preterperfect tense is formed from the present tense, by changing *uo*, into *ui*: as of *statuo* by such change, is made *statui*.

**Qu. Are there any exceptions from this Rule?**

*An.* From this Rule there are excepted three words. First, one which forms *o* in the present tense into *ui* in the preterperfect, namely *pluo* which hath had *pluvi* for its preterperfect, as well as it still hath *plui*. Secondly, *evo*, which form *o* into *xi*, namely, *fluo* which

which makes *struxi*, and *fluo* which hath *fluxi*.

¶ *Pluo pluvi format* ] *Plui* of *pluo* is ordinarily read : but *pluvi* seldom, yet sometimes in old Authors. *Liv.* l. 5. dec. 3. *In Albano monte biduum continenter pluviit.* *Plaut. Menach. Pro!* *Nam rus ut ibat forte, ut multam pluverat!* Thence *Pluvia*. So that though *plui* be usual, yet as *Alvarus* saith, *verisimile est & pluvi olim fuisse usitatum.* In favour of which several places have been produced out of *Livie*; but the latter and corrector books still have *plui*, as *Alvarus* observes. *Pluvi* is thought both by *Vossius* and *Danesius* to be formed of *Pluvio*. And so let it be if the Reader think well of it, for me. The compounds of it all form *plui*.

Thus *luo* may be supposed formerly to have made *luvi*: both because *Lucil. Sat.* l. 3. hath that sense. *Tamēn qui panas ob dicta nefantia luvit*: and because thence is formed *diluvium*, *colluvies*, *interluvies*. Now, if any thing, it forms *lui*. Thence *Claudian* in *Pang.* hath *luiturus*.

*Fluo fluxi* ] Anciently it seems to have formed *flui*, whence was formed *fluvius*: but now it is out of use.

Qu. How are the words of this rule declined?

An. The words of this rule are declined thus:

*Statuo, statuis, statui, statuere, statutum.*

*Pluo, pluvis, plui, [ & pluvi ] pluere, plutum.*

*Struo, struis, struxi, struere, structum.*

*Fluo, fluis, fluxi, fluere, fluxum.*

And thus much of the Rules for the Preterperfect tenses of Verbs of the third Conjugation.

The declining of the word.

## CHAP. IV.

**Q.** **W**hat rule is there for the Preterperfect tenses of verbs of the fourth conjugation.

*An.* For the Preterperfect tenses of verbs of the fourth conjugation there is this Rule :

*Quarta Conjugatio.*

*Quarta dat is iui.*

*Quarta dat is iui, ut monstrat scio, scis, tibi scivi.*

**Q.** What is the meaning of this Rule?

*An.* The meaning of this Rule is this : That verbs of the fourth conjugation do form the Preterperfect tense of the second person of the Present tense, by changing *is* into *iui* : as of *scio* *scis* by such change is made *scivi*.

**Q.** Are there any Exceptions from this Rule?

*An.* From this Rule there are six Exceptions.

**Q.** Which is the first?

*An.* The first is of *Venio*, which changeth *is* into *i*, making *veni*, and not *venivi*, in the preterperfect tense.

**Q.** Which is the second?

*An.* The second is of *Cambio* (the old verb) which changeth *is* into *ssi*, making *campssi*.

**Q.** Which is the third?

*An.* The third is of *caucio*, *fancio*, *fancio*, *sentio*, *falcio*, and *haurio*, which change *is* with the consonant before it (whether it be *c*, *t* or *r*) into *ssi*, making *causssi*, *fanssi*, *senssi*, *falsi*, and *hausssi*.

**Q.** Which is the fourth?

*An.* The fourth is of *sepio*, which changeth *is* into *ssi*, making *sepsssi*.

**Q.** Which is the fifth?

*An.* The fifth is of *fancio*, and *vincio*, which change *is* with the *c* before it into *xi*, making *fanxi*, and *vinxi*.

**Q.**

Q1. *Which is the sixth?*

An. The sixth is of *Salio* (to leap) and *amico*, which change is into *ui*, making *salui*, and *amiciui*. So our Author,

*Excipias venio dans veni, cambio campsi,  
Raucio rausi, farcio farsii, sarcio sarsii,  
Sepio sepsi, sentio sensi, fultio fulsi,  
Haurio item hausii, sancio sanxi, vincio vixi,  
Pro salto salto salui, & amico amiciui dar.*

Qu. *What is the meaning of that Note annexed to the exception from this Rule, viz.*

*Parcius utemur cambiui, hauriui, amiciui,  
Sepiui, sancui, sarcui, atque salui.*

An. The meaning of this Note is this, that these seven words *cambio*, *haurio*, *amico*, *sepio*, *sancio*, *farcio*, and *salio*, have formerly had a preterperfect tense in *ui*, which now is mostly, if not wholly grown out of use.

[ *Venio dans veni* ] But *venio* makes *veniui*, for which they rather used *venii*. Hence Flor. 3. 21. *Municipia sub hasta venierunt*. Inasmuch, that some Grammarians, *Richerius*, *Farnaby*, *Harris*, &c. give *venii* for the preterperfect tense of it.

[ *Cambio campsi* ] Some Grammarians admit this verb without any scruple into their Grammars; as *Despaut*. *Grypbisw. Gram. Bird*, *Harris*, *Shirley*, *Jasx Berengi*, &c. Others again utterly reject it, so as in their Grammars not to make any mention of it; as *Vossius*, *Farnaby*, *Burles*, *Ramus*, *Richerius*. Others admit it into their Grammars, yet with a note of *Antiquation* upon it, as *Danesh*, *Hayue*, and *Rhenius*. *Bebelius* as *Dunsburgenfis* saith, thinks this a barbarous word. *Charisius* disowned it not: Yet if you will hear the learned *Alvarus*, you shall then use it, *cum apud bonos autores inveneris*. Thence saith *Rhenius* is *campso* as in *Ennius* i.e. *iter flecto*. I should rather think that came from the Greek *καμπω*, *inflecto*, *incurvo*: more likely it is that (what he saith) from thence should come *campso* for the Noun

i. e. *trapezita*, a banker or Changer of money.

*Raucio rausi* ] This word our English Authours generally admit of, as *Hayne*, and *Bird*, and *Shirley*, *Farnaby* and *Burles*, *Jasz-Berengi* and the *Rudiment Writer*, who therein, as I suppose, follow *Priscian* and *Despauterius*. But of *Transmarine Writers* many make not so much as mention of it, that I can find, as *Ramus*, *Gram. Gryp hiswaldensis*, and *Richerius*, with whom agrees our English *Harris*, who therein follow *Phocas* and *Diomedes*, in whom is found no mention of it. *Priscian* for *rausi* cites *Cicero*, saying in his 1. *de Orat. At Asopum, si paulum irrauserit, explodi*; which reading *Lambine* also follows. But that place, as *Alvarus* notes, is now adayes read, *Si paulum irrauerit*; and so *Vossius*, which as he and *Duinburgensis* say, may be of *rauco*: and accordingly *Alvarus* is positive in it, that the theme of that verb is *irrauco*. *Est igitur prima positio irrauco*. So he. Yet inasmuch as *rausurus* is read in *Lucilius*, for so he l. 19. *Rausuro Tragicus qui carmina perdit Oreste*, as it seemed to *Dancsius*, it may be gathered, that anciently *rausi* also hath been in use: but in regard *Phocas* and *Diomedes* did not admit of it, and none but such doubtful, or antiquated Authority is alledged for it, whether it now may be used, may do well to be considered.

*Farcio farci* ] That this verb hath formerly had a regular formation, may be supposed, in as much as in *Cic. 5 Verr.* there is read, (and in *melioribus libris*, as *Voss.* saith) *factum*, which is made of *forcitum*, and that formed from *farcivi*, whence also *farcimen*: but now in this (as in most things else right and wrong have changed names) the regular is grown irregular, and the irregular regular.

*Sepio sepsi* ] *Livie* in his l. 4. de 5. hath *sepiui*. *Ideo* (saith he) *cum munimentis ea sepiissent*. *Dancsius* thinks the place misread for *sepsiissent*. Yet *Vossius* quotes the place without any such censure; and so *Alvarus*; though *Rhenius* speak suspiciously of it. *Liv. l. 4. de 5. habet etiam*

etiam sepiſſent pro ſepſſent, quaſi a ſepiui, ſi ſcriptura mendo caret: So he, p. 224. But though St. Hieron on Iſah. c. 5. be by Voſſius cited for it, Yet I ſhall ſay with our Authour, *Parciat utemur.*

*Fulcio fulſi*] Ovid in *Deian.* hath this word, *Hercule ſuppoſito ſidera fulſit Aſlas.*

*Haurio item hauſi*] *Priſcian.* l. 10. cites *Varro* uſing *haurii* as of *hauriui.* ſc. l. 24. ad *Ciceron.* *Cum inde haurierint.* Thence *Appul.* in ſeveral places. l. 2, 3, 4. *Met.* hath *hauritum*; and thence *Iuuenius* hath *hauriturus*, as *Voſſius* teſtifies. But, as *Rhenius* ſaith, *Hauriui, hauritum antiqua ſunt.*

*Sanctio ſanxi*] *Sanxi* is now the uſual Preterperfect of this verb. Thence *Cic. pro Flac.* *Prætor ſanxit ediſto, ne ex Aſia frumentum exportari liceret.* Id. 1 *Cat.* *Si quis de ſeruis ſupplīcium quā acerbiffimum ſenxerit.* Id. in *Tuſc.* *Nec ceremonies violatas tam expiabili religione ſanxiſſent, niſi*— But *ſanciui* hath alſo formerly been uſed. Thence *Pomponius* in *Prīſcian.* *Sanctierat ius utile civitati.* *Nizolius* quotes *Cic.* in his *Orat. pro Planc.* ſaying *leges, quas Senatus de ambitu ſanciuit*: But *Lambine* reads the place otherwiſe, *legibus ipſis, quas Senatus de ambitu ſancire voluerit.* Perhaps it was ſo in *Nizolius* his Book. But howe it be with *ſanciuit*, it is confeſſed that *ſancitum* derived from it is very ordinary. Hence *Cic. de Aruſp. Reſponſ. Communi jure ſancitum eſt.* Id. 1 *de Leg.* *Id quod ne fieret lege ſancitum eſt.* Id. *de Offic.* *Sanctum eſt apud nos jure civili.*

*Pro ſalto ſalio ſalui*] That *ſaliui* was anciently the Preterperfect of *ſalio* to leap, as well as of *ſalio* to ſalt, appears from that of *Virgil.* 2 *Georg.* *Mollibus in pratibus unctos ſaliere per vires.* So *Prīſcian* read it of old, *Ramus* and *Farnaby* of late; and ſo *Pierius* witneſſeth it was read in the old Books, and *Voſſius* in his manuſcripts; and even *Servius* confeſſeth that reading, though he ſay the Poet writ there according to *Art*, not according to *uſe*, which in his time was to write *ſalui*. The like is read in *Stat. Theb.* 9. *Excuffi ſalierunt cuspide dentes.*

Whence no doubt, *Richerius* plainly delivers *salvi* for the preterperfect tense of this verb. And *Alvarus* plainly saith, *Salio etiam salii facit*, backing his saying with the aforesaid Authourity, though withal acknowledging a different reading in that of *Virgil* from the testimony of *Priscian*. *Salui* is now the more used Preterperfect of this verb. Thence *Ovid. Fastor. 1. Per flammam saluisse pecus, saluisse colonos*. Yet though *Despauterius* and two or three more of our English Writers give it no other Preterperfect but *salui*, yet *Vossius*, *Ramus*, *Rhenius*, *Farnaby*, *Hayne*, and others allow it *salii* as well as *salui*. Read what is written, use what is usual.

*Et amico amicui dat J* There is great differing amongst Grammarians about this word. *Hayne* not excepting it from the general rule, is to be supposed to comprehend it under it, and to give *amicivi* for the preterperfect of it: and therein he is alone, as far as I see. *Shirley* gives only *amixi* for the preterperfect of it. *Despauterius*, *Richerius*, *Bird*, and the *Rudiment Writer* give it only *amicui*. The *Grammar of Gryphiswald*. *amicivi* or *amixi*. *Rhenius* *amicivi* or *amicui* (as he meant, though it be written *amixi*; for he saith after, *Placet etiam nonnullis amixi*.) *Jasq-Berengi* *amicui* & *amixi*. *Ramus* and *Harri*, all three indifferently, *amicivi*, *amicui*, *amixi*. *Farnaby* and *Burles*, *amicui*, and sometimes *amicivi* and *amixi*. *Vossius* *amicui* and *amixi*, yet adding in his margin, that sometimes it gives *amicivi*: yet that *amixi* is more usual than the rest. And so *Alvarus* of the two, which he mentions, *amicui* and *amixi* prefers the latter before the former. Here we have Grammarians words and opinions. But where are their Authorities? Why, that of *Hor. l. 2. Ep. Et piper & quicquid chartis amicitur ineptis*, proves it of the fourth Conjugation: and so regularly it should have *amicivi*: and *Diomedes* cites *Brutus* saying in his *Laudat. Appij Claudij. Quæ te toga prætexta amicit*: and *Varro* in his *Cynorrhætor*, saying, *Celerius*



*Sarcivi atque salivi*] Of *Sarcivi* I meet not either Author or Grammarian saying any thing, and therefore I think we may not use it, even *parcius*, as our *Author* allows. And for *salivi*, that must be understood of it, as it is the preterperfect tense of *salio* to leap or dance, which, as was noted, is seldom read; but not of *salivi* the Preterperfect of *salio* to season with salt, for that is the usual preterperfect tense of this verb.

*An.* The words of this Rule are declined thus :

Venio, venis, veni, venire, veniunt.

*Rancio, rancis, [ransi] rancire, [ransum]*

*Sarcio, sarcis, sarcis, sarcire, sartum.*

Sentia, sentis, sensi, sentire, sensum.

Haurio, hauris, hauri, haurire, haurium.

*Vincio, vincis, vixi, vincere, victum.*

*Amicio, amicis, [amici vi, amicui, amixi] amicire, amictum*

Y 3 Before

Y 3

Before

Before we pass it may be noted that verbs in *io* are of the fourth Conjugation, except these of the First, *glacio, emacio, socio, crucio, saucio, calcio, vuncio, fascio, catamidio, radio, hio, retalis, spolio, amplio, laxio, somnio, pio, stio, vario, decurio, centurio, succenturio, furio, basio, satio, vitio*; And these of the Third, *facio, jacio, lacio, specio, fodio, fugio, cupio, rapio, sapio, pario, quatio*, as *Rhenius* reckons them up. p. 220.

And thus far of the Rule for the Preterperfect tenses of verbs of the fourth Conjugation.

## CHAP. VI

**Q.** **H**itherto we have spoken of the Rules for the Preterperfect tenses of verbs *Simple*: and are now to proceed to the preterperfect tenses of verbs *Compounded*. **What is the Rule for the preterperfect tenses of such Verbs?**

*An.* The Rule for the preterperfect tenses of compounded Verbs is this:

### *De-compositorum Verborum Præteritis.*

*Præteritum dat idem simplex.*

*Præteritum dat idem simplex & compositum, ut docui edocui monstrat.*

**Q.** **What is the meaning of this Rule?**

*An.* The meaning of this Rule is this: that the preterperfect tense of a verb, when it is compounded, is generally the same, that it had before being simple, the composition nothing altering it, in that respect. For as *daceo* being a simple verb makes *docui*, so being by composition made *edoseo* it makes *edocui*, receiving no alteration by its composition in respect of its preterperfect tense.

**Q.** **How are the Words of this Rule declined?**

*An.*

*An.* The words in this Rule are declined thus :  
*Docco, docces, docui, docere, Doctum.*  
*Edocco, edoces, edocui, edocere, edoctum.*

The declining of the words.

*Q.* I perceive that this Rule is not so general; but that there are Exceptions from it : what doth the first Exception concern, and which is it ?

*An.* Of the many Exceptions that there are from this Rule, the first concerns such verbs, as double the first syllable of the Present tense in their preterperfect tense, and it is this : ——— *Sed syllaba semper, Quam simplex geminat composto non geminatur.*

*Sed syllaba semper.*

*Qu.* What is the meaning of this Rule of Exception ?

*An.* The meaning of this Rule is this : That those verbs which being simple have the first syllable of their present tense ( wholly, or with some change of Letter ) doubled in their preterperfect tense, have not that reduplication, when they are compounded. As for example : though *mordeo* being a simple verb do double *mo* in its preterperfect tense and make *momordi*, yet being compounded with *re*, and make *remordeo*, it doth not now double *mo* and make *remomordi*, but *remordi* only.

¶ There are one and twenty verbs which double the first syllable of their present tense in their preterperfect tense, Four of the second Conjugation, *mordeo, pendeo, spondeo, and tondeo*; and seventeen of the Third, viz. *cado, cano, curro, disco, fallo, pago, parco, pario, pecto, pello, pendo, posco, pingo, tango, tendo, tundo*, and of these the Authour is to be understood to speak in this exceptive Rule.

*Q.* Is this exception universally true ? or are there not some words excepted from it ?

*An.* From this Exception there are excepted these three words *præcurro, excurro, and repungo*; and all the compounds of these four words *do, disco, flo, and posco* (according to our Authour.)

*Præterquam tribus his præcurro, excurro, repungo, Atque a do, disco, flo, posco, rise creatis.*

*Præterquam tribus his.*

**¶ Præcurro** ] The preterperfect of this word is read with a reduplication in *Plaut. Stich. 2. 3. Sed ego citius huc præcurri.* So *Amph. 2. 2. Tate ab navi aliâ vid clanculum præcurristi.*

**Excurro** ] The redoubled preterperfect of this verb is read in *Suet. Galb. c. 18. Cumque exeritus luce primâ Tusculum excurressit.* *Liv. 1. 1. ab urbe. Quum plures igni, quàm ferro armati excurressent, eade incendioque cuncta complent.* *A. Hirt. 1. 1. B. Hisp. Circiter undecim equites ad agnatores nostros excurreverunt.* But *excurri* is more usual.

**Repungo** ] All the Grammarians I have, grant *repungo* to have *repupugi*: but not one of them gives an example. Perhaps because they thought it needless. Only *Vossius* from *Capers* distinguishing betwixt *repupugi* and *repunxi* (*voluit, saith he, repupugi esse vicissim punxi repunxi verò referri ad rationes*) though he allow of his distinction, yet gathers that the Ancients gave to this verb both these Preterperfect tenses. *De Analog. 1. 3. c. 19.*

**Atque a do** ] That those compounds of *do*, which are of the first Conjugation, as *circundo, pessundo, venundo, satisdo* have *dedi* (as well as *do* hath) in their preterperfect, is not disputed: but whether *do* be declined with any reduplication. *Mr. Shirley* sees a reduplication in them, and saith they retain it. *Retinent geminationem.* So he p. 72. And so *Mr. Bird, Vossius* could see none therein. And I dare not presume to be more quick-sighted than he. And the like may be said of *sto*. And therefore saith he, *malè addunt do & sto; in quibus nullam geminationem cernere est.* *De Analog. 1. 3. c. 19.*

**Sto** ] Of the no reduplication in this word, and consequently not in the compounds of it, I have newly shewn the judgement of *Vossius*, who could see as far into a Millstone, as any man I ever met with. *Resto* a compound of this verb hath been used with a preterperfect tense according to the regular formation of verbs of the first conjugation. Thence *restaverit* in *Propert. 1. 2.*

*Eleg.*

*leg. ult.* But now it is out of use.

**Qu.** But may not some other words be named besides these here produced, which have the reduplication of their simple verb in their compounded preterperfect tense?

**An.** Besides the words here named, some other may be found to have had the reduplication of their simple verbs in their compounded preterperfect tenses; as *decurreo*, *percurro*, *concurro*, *procurreo*, *occurro*, *despondeo*, *detondeo*, *admordeo*, which all, except the first, are grown far, if not wholly out of use, as to the reduplication of the first syllable of their simple verbs in their preterperfect tenses.

**Decurra**] *Cas.* l. 2. b. *Gall.* hath *decucurri*. *Ad cohortandos milites, quam in partem fors tulit, decucurrit.* So *Sueton.* in *Ner.* c. 11. *Notissimus eques Rom. Elephantum super sedens per catadromum decucurrit.* *Curt.* l. 6. c. 14. *Eodem temporis momento ad Philotam decucurrisse.* *Tacit.* l. 2. *Annal.* *Restituit aram, honorique patrie princeps ipse cum legionibus decucurrit.* Yet *decurri* is more usual. *Her.* l. 1. b. *Hisp.* *Complures ex superiore loco adversariorum decurrerunt.*

**Percurro**] *Hirt.* l. 8. b. *Gall.* *Cum omnes regiones Gallie Caesar percurrisset.* *Cic.* 3. *de Orat.* *Faciles enim partes eae fuerunt duae, quas modò percurri.* But *percurri* is most ordinary.

**Concurro**] *Cato contra C. Pison.* *Videò hac tempestate concucurrisse omnes adversarios: as Priscian.* l. 10. testifies. But *concurri* is ordinary.

**Procurreo**] *Priscian.* l. 10. produces *Livie* saying in his l. 30. *Et si fortius procucurrisset.*

**Occurro**] *Gellius* l. 7. c. 9. quotes *Probus* noting *Elius Tubero* to have used *occurro* with a reduplication and saying, *Si generalis species occucurrit.* But that is now quite out of use.

**Despondeo**] *Plant. Trin.* 3. 1. *Tu istuc Stasime dixisti nostrum herilem filium Lesbianicum suam sororem despoudisse.* Yet in the next verse he hath it without the redup-

reduplication. *Cui homini despondit?* Id. True. ac. 4. Sc. *Egone tibi Dinarchus, cui illam prius, desponderam.* But *despondi* is far more usual. Ter. Ad. 4. 7. *Quin jam virginem despondi.*

*Detondeo*] Priscian l. 9. cites Varro saying, *Detonderat forcipibus, vigicarpiferis.* And Enn. in *Annales*. Et *detondit* (or as Vossius rather thinks it should be read, *Deque totondit*) *agros letos, atque oppida capit.* But *detondi* is the now used word.

*Admordeo*] Gell. l. 7. c. 9. cites Plant. in *Aulus*. saying, *ut admemordit hominem!* though in *Tergeminis* he said neither *præmordi*, nor *præmemordi*, but *præmorsus*. *Ni fugissem, medium credo præmorsisset.* But in this wherein he is alone, he may be let alone.

Q. How are the words in this Rule declined?

An. The words in this Rule are declined thus:

The declining of the words.

*Præcurro, præcurris, præcurri, præcurrere, præcursum.*  
*Excurro, excurre, excurre, excurre, excurre.*

*Repungo, repungis, repungi, repungere, repunctum.*

*Do, das, dedi, dare, datum.*

*Disco, discis, didici, discere.*

*Sto, stas, steti, stare, statum.*

*Posco, poscis, poposci, poscere.*

Q. What doth the second Exception concern; and which is it?

An. The second Exception concerns the compounds of *Plico*; and it is this:

*A plico*  
*compositum* *A plico compositum cum sub vel nomine, ut ista supplico, multiplico, gaudent formare plicavi.*  
*Applico, complico, replico, & ex plico, ut vel in avi.*

Q. What is the meaning of this Rule?

An. The meaning of the Rule is this: That some of the compounds of *plico* do form only *avi* in the preterperfect tense, and some both *ui* and *avi*.

Q.

Qu. What compounds of *plico* do form onely *avi*?

An. Of the compounds of *plico* those only do form *avi*, which in their composition either have any noun, as *multiplico*, *duplico*, *triplico*, or either of these two Prepositions *sub* and *re*, as *supplico* and *replico*.

Qu. What compounds of *plico* do form both *ui* and *avi*?

An. Those compounds of *plico* do form both *ui* and *avi*, which in their composition have any of these four Prepositions, *ad*, *in*, *ex*, or *con*, as *applico*, *implico*, *explico*, *complico*.

¶ A *plico* compositum cum *sub* vel nomine ] With some this distinction of *cum sub* vel nomine is vain: because they hold *supplico* not to be a compound of *sub* and *plico* as our Authour supposeth, and Richerius affirmeth but a simple derived of the noun *supplex*. Hence the Gryphisw. Gram. *Quæ a nominibus compositæ habent avi tantum & atum: ut duplico. Sic triplico, quadruplico, multiplico, supplico.* And just so Rhenius. But they seem to be in a mistake, and our Authour in that seems to be in the right. For as Vossius saith, *supplex non minus a plicare est, quàm duplex & multiplex, a quibus duplico, & multiplico, quæ ipsi, & merito quidem, reponunt inter composita a plico.* De Analog. l. 3. c. 20.

*Applico*] Though this verb have both *ui* and *avi*: yet in the business of Navigation it is observed, that the preterperfect in *ui* is most, if not only, usual.

*Replico*] On our Authours side herein the Grammarians generally do go. Richerius having excepted only *supplico*, addeth, *Reliqua autem, quæ ex Præpositione constant, duplex præteritum, & supinum habent, unum regulare, aliud extraordinarium.* So Rhenius declines *replico* with *avi* and *ui*. And therein they follow Priscian, who saith, *Cum nomine composita facere Avi, cum Præpositione junctæ utroque modo, ac sapius per ui efferi: as Vossius reports him, who therein dissents from him Plin. Jun. in his Epist. saith, Quum sapius ille replicasset, tandem*



dem persuasit. Plin. Sen. l. 34. c. 8. *Menachmi vitulae* genu premitur, replicatâ cervice. Id. l. 9. *Margine in macronem emisso intus replicato.* But as *Vossius* saith, *replicat & replicatum vix puto invenire.* Upon which ground he had before reckoned up *replico* with those that onely make *avi* and *atum*. And of his mind is, the glory of our English Criticks, Mr. *Farnaby*, unto whom, till good Authority be produced to the contrary, I shall subscribe. Instead of *replico* the Teacher, if he be so pleased, may put in *implico* (which all, I think, do without contradiction yield to have both *ui* and *avi*) and read the verse thus :

*Applico, complico, ut implico & explico, ui vel in avi.*

To be sure *implicui* and *implicitus* too is read every where almost. *Implicuit teneram succina gutta feram.* So *Martial.* *Habet implicitam controversiam.* So *Cic. 2 de Inv.* Thence *impliciturus* in *Ovid. Fast. 5.* Sertaq; caelestes *implicitura comas.* And if *implicavi* be not so ealie to find, yet *implicatus* is as common, if I may so say, at the high way. *Casaris familiares satis oportune habeo implicatos consuetudine -- Cic. Fam. 6. 11. Nullis occupationibus implicatus deus. Cic. 1. de Nat. Deor.*

*Et explico* ] *Vossius* in his *Etymolog. p. 103.* touching this word hath this note. *Pro interpretatum, potius explicatum, quàm explicum dixeris. Imò Cicero semper explicavi dicit. Meas cogitationes omnes explicavi tibi superioribus.* So he *ad Att. l. 10. Ep. 6.*

Qu. How are the words in this Rule declined ?

Ans. The words in this Rule are declined, thus :  
The declining of *Plico*, *plicas*, *plicavi*, & *plicui*, *plicare*, *plicatum*.  
the words. *Multiplico*, *as*, *avi*, *are*, *atum*.

*Applico*, *as*, *ui* & *avi*, *are*, *itum* & *atum*.

*Complico*, *as*, *ui* & *avi*, *are*, *itum* & *atum*.

*Replico*, *replicas*, *replicavi*, *replicare*, *replicatum*.

*Explico*, *as*, *ui* & *avi*, *are*, *itum* & *atum*.

*Implico*, *as*, *ui* & *avi*, *are*, *itum* & *atum*.

Qu. Which is the third Exception ? and what doth it concern ?

Ans.

*An.* The third Exception concerns the compounds of *oleo*, and it is this :

*Quamvis vult oleo simplex olui, tamen inde, Quodvis compositum melius formabit olevi : Simplicis at formam redolet sequitur, suboletque.*

*Quamvis vult oleo.*

*Qu.* what is the meaning of this Rule ?

*An.* The meaning of this Rule is this : that whereas the simple verb *oleo* forms *olui* in its preterperfect tense, some of its compounds form *olui* (like it) and some *olevi*.

¶ This difference may arise from this, that there was antiently *olo olis*, as well as *oleo oles*. Of *olo olis* that of *Plant. Moss. 1. 1.* is an instance, *Non omnes possunt olere unguenta exotica*. Where saith *Pareus*, it is *olere penult. brevis*. Of *oleo oles* the next words, *si tu oles*, are also an instance. But of either *olo* making *olui*, or *oleo* *olevi* it is hard to shew by instance; only so Analogie requires they should be like *colo colui, deleo delevi* : and the different Preterperfect tenses of the compound words in *ui* and in *evi* make it probable that so they were.

*Qu.* what compounds of *oleo* do form *olui* ?

*An.* Of the compounds of *oleo* these three *redoleo*, *suboleo*, and *oboleo* are said to form their preterperfect in *olui* : as *redoleo redolui*, *suboleo subolui*, and *oboleo obolui*.

¶ Of *redoleo* and *suboleo*, you shall hardly meet with any Preterperfect tense in any Classick Authour: whence some give them *evi* for their preterperfect tense, and some *ui*, which saith *Vossius* is the safer. But of *obolui* indeed there are examples. *Sueton. in Calig. Ille antidotum oboluisse, quasi ad præcavenda venena sua sumptum.* *Suet. in Vesp. c. 8. Maluisse allium oboluisse.* So *Plant. in Amph. 1. 1. Hei ! numquam obolui ego ?* *Id. in Menach. 2. 3. Oboluit marsupium hinc istuc, quod habes.* *Id. in Mostell. 1. 1. Oboluiti allium Germanæ illuvies.* Yet in *Cass. 4. 3.* he hath *obolevi*. *Di herete me capiunt servatum, jam obolevi et sine præci.* So *Stren-*

*Plautus*

phanus reads it: though Plantin, *aboluit*; and so the *Est* Edition. 1523.

Qu. What compounds of *oleo* do form *olevi*?

An. Of the compounds of *oleo* these do form *olevi*: viz. *abolco*, *exoleo*, *obsoleo* *adoleo*, *inoleo*, *peroleo*, *abolco* *abolevi*, *exoleo* *exolevi*, *obsoleo* *obsolevi*, *adoleo* *adolevi*, *inoleo* *inolevi*, *peroleo* *perolevi*.

¶ *Abolevi* is read in Liv. 3. *ab urbe*. *Cujus rei prope jam memoriam abolever* et. Tacit. 1. 4. *Illi quidem septuagesimum ante annum perempti, imaginibus suis noscuntur, quas nec victor quidem abolevit*. *Exolevi* is in Cic. in Sallust. *Posteaquam aetas tua jam ad ea patienda, que alteri facere solibuisse, exoleverat*. *Obsolevi* in Cic. pro Lsg. Manil. *Obsolevit jam ista oratio*. *Adolevit* is in Cic. de Leg. Ratio cum *adolevit* atque perfecta est, nominatur vite sapientia. *Adolui* hath been in use. For so Varro 3 Rhet. cited by Priscian l. 9. *Postquam adoluerit hæc juvenus*. And thence *Adultus* as from *adolutum*. But it is now disused. And that distinction which some would make, as if *adoleo* to grow made *adolevi*, and *adolco* to burn did make *adolui* is vain. For as Varro above used *adolui* in the sense of growing, so did Attius Cassius, as Diomedes quotes him, *ut adolevi* in the sense of burning. So he in his second to Tiberius, *Sic est contra Aegyptiis maximum sacrificium, ubi integrum asserem adoleverunt*. Thus of *inoleo* (which some Grammarians say is safter used with *ui*) there is read in Gell. l. 12. c. 5. a preterperfect in *evi*. *Natura omnium rerum, quæ nos genuit, induit nobis inolevitque in ipsis statim principis, quibus nati sumus amorem nostri & caritatem*. Claud. 6 Consul. Honor. *Et penitus totis inolevit Roma medullis*. So of *peroleo* (which is thought safter used with *ui*) there is read in Lucil. l. 30. an example in *evi*. *Quis totum sic corpus jam perolevit bisulcis*. Where *perolevisse* is put for *perolevisse*. The preterperfect tenses of these verbs in *ui* then use, when ye have example for them. See Vossius de Analo. l. 3. c. 23. and Etymolog. p. 106. Richer. fol. 62. b. Alvar.

Alvar. p. 241. Rhen. p. 176, 177. Farnab. p. 37.  
Burles p. 194. Duisburgen. p. 111. Ram. l. 2. c. 3.  
Danes. Schol. l. 2. c. 12.

**Q<sup>u</sup>. How are the words in this Rule declined ?**

**Ans.** The words in this Rule are declined thus :

The declining of the words.

Oleo, oles, olui, olere, olitum, [ & olerum ] \*  
Redoleo, redoles, redolui, redolere, redolitum.  
Suboleo, suboles, subolui, subolere, subolitum.

\* Saturnius gives it both these Supines. Vossius even of olitum saith, *Si modò olitum usquam invenitur* (how confidently soever others give it that Supine) *Sed antiquè & olerum fecit.* Etymolog. p. 106. So Rhenius, *Apud Priscos etiam olevi olerum, unde olerum pro stercore,* which yet Vossius declares to note locum male olerentem. Analog. l. 3. c. 23. Though Cato de r. r. C. 6. hath it in another sense, *Ager oleto conferundo, &c.*

**Q<sup>u</sup>. What is the fourth Rule of Exception about ? and which is it ?**

**Ans.** The fourth Rule of Exception is about the compounds of *pungo*, and it is this :

*Composita a pungo formabunt omnia punxi :*

*Composita a pungo.*

*Vult unum pupugi interdumque repungo repunxi.*

**Q<sup>u</sup>. What is the meaning of this Rule ?**

**Ans.** The meaning of this Rule is this : That all the compounds of *pungo* do make *punxi* in the preterperfect tense (none of them doubling the first syllable of the present tense) except *repungo* which hath *repupugi* and *repunxi*.

[ *Formabunt omnia punxi* ] Duisburgensis saith, but *pleraque faciunt xi* : Yet he names none that doth not make that ; nor any that makes any thing other beside that. Bird allows *compungo* as well as *repungo* to redouble the first syllable. But without example : I suppose herein he followed *Stephanus*, who declines it, *compungo, compungis, compupugi*. But gives no example of *compupugi* neither. Vossius and Farnaby allow of *compunxi*, and *dispunxi* ; Ramus of *expunxi* ; Rhenius and the

the Gram. of Gryphism. allows of all the three. And also of *repupugi* and *repunxi*. But not one example of either of them do I find among them all. Yet it appears by *Priscian* l. 10. that they both were anciently in use, and that *Caper* would have *repupugi* to be *viciſſim punxi*, but *repunxi* to belong to reckonings, which distinction yet *Vossius* calls *varium commentum*. De Aat. l. 3. c. 19.

Qu. How are the words of this Rule, declined?

An. The words of this Rule, are declined thus:  
 The declining of the words. *Pungo, pungis, pupugi, [ & punxi ] pungere, punctum.*  
*Refungo, repungis { repupugi } repunxi { repungere, repunctum.*

Qu. What is the fifth Exception about? and which is it?

An. The fifth Exception is about those compounds of *do*, which are of the third Conjugation; and it is this:  
*Natum a do, quando est inflectio tertia, ut addo, Credo, edo, dedo, reddo, perdo, abdo, vel obdo. Cendo, indo, trado, prodo, vendo, didi: at nam abscondo, abscondi.*

Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule?

An. The meaning of this Rule is this: That those compounds of *do*, which are of the Third Conjugation do make their preterperfect not in *dedi*, but in *didi*, as *addo addidi*, except *abscondo* which makes *abscondi*.

[ *Natum a do quando, &c.* ] This was needful to be added, because those compounds of *do*, which are of the first conjugation have *dedi*, like the simple verb, as *circundo, circundas, circundedi*.

*Abscondo, abscondi*] In this our Author speaks what is usual; for anciently this verb also did form *dedi*, as well as the rest. Thence *Priscian* l. 10. hath from *Plaut.* in *Carbonaria*, *Secundum ipsam aram aurum abscondidi*. So *Sil. Ital.* l. 8. 38. *Numicius illam suscepit gremio vitreisque abscondidit antris*. Thence *Cicero* 2 *Verr.* hath *absconditus*. *Non obscurum opinor* (saith he) *neque absconditum*. And in 3. de *Finib.* *abscondit*.



as *persto*, *perstas*, *perstiti*. So *asto*, *conflo*, *dislo*, *exflo*, *inflo*, *obflo*, *præflo*, *resto*, *subflo*.

Q. Why do you say generallie? Is there any compound of *flo*, that follows the simple verb, and makes *fleti*?

An. There is one compound of *flo*, which makes *flet*, as the simple verb doth, namely *circumflo*, whose Preterperfect tense is *circumflet*.

¶ *Virgil, Georg. 4.* hath *Curvata in montis facies circumfletit unda*. Thence though divers Grammarians take no notice of it, as neither *Vossius*, nor *Alvarus*, *Deputaverius*, nor *Richerius*, &c. yet others do, and deliver *circumflet* for the preterperfect of this verb: as *Farnaby*, *Hayne*, *Shirley*, *Burles*, *Rhenius*, and the *Gram. of Gysphwald*. Which two last do also give *superflet* for the Preterperfect tense of *superflo*: Which verb though set down by *Stephanus*, *Tyrbellius*, *Cooper*, *Gouldman* without any Preterperfect tense, yet is found to have *superflet* in *Sall. Jugurth. Deinde ubi una aut altera scale comminuta, qui superfleterant, afflicti sunt*. Unless the word be better to be read divided *super fleterant*. And if *circumfletit* in *Virgil* were read divided also (as it is not impossible but the Poet might write it) *circum fletis*, then the exception will run clear without any thing excepted from it.

Some of the Compounds of *sto* have had *avi* in the Preterperf. tense. Hence *Propert. l. 2. El. El. 34. Ne si post Stygias aliquid restaverit undas. Ammian. l. 31. quoque præstaverit*. Which word *Vossius* and *Rhenius* say is also in *Justin institut*. And so what is now in the printed copies of *Vegetius, de Re Milit. l. 1. c. 1. Hispanis viribus corporum nostris præstitisse manifestum est*, in many manuscripts was *præstasse*, as the same *Vossius* saith, *de Analog. l. 3. c. 20*. And whence indeed can *statum* in many of the compounds, as well as the simple verb, be derived regularly, but from *stavi*? But that preterperfect as well in the compounds, as in the simple verb, is out of use.



Qu. How is *sto* declined?

An. *Sto* is declined thus:

*Sto, flas, fletis, flare, statum.*

The declining of the word.

CHAP. VI.

Qu. **H**itherto we have spoken of the disagreement of verbs simple, and their compounds, in respect of their *Preterperfect tenses*: **Are there not some verbs, which being compounded, do also undergo some change in their present tenses?**

An. Besides thole verbs, whose compound *Preterperfect tenses* do differ from their simples, there are others, which have some difference also being compounded, from what they are being simple, in the present tense.

Qu. How many sorts of such verbs are there?

An. There are two sorts of such verbs. *First*, some whose compounds differ from their simples both in the *Present tense*, and in the *Preterperfect tense*. And *Secondly* some whose compounds do differ from their simples in the *Present tense*, but not in the *Preterperfect tense*.

Qu. How many sorts of verbs are there, that being compounded differ from their simples, both in the present, and preterperfect tense?

An. Of such verbs as being compounded do differ from their simples, both in the present, and preterperfect tense, there are two sorts. *First* some, that *change a Vowel, or Diphthong, in their first syllable*. *Secondly* some, that *lose a vowel out of their first syllable*.

Q. How many sorts of verbs are there, that do change a vowel or diphthong in their first syllable?

An. Of those verbs that do change a Vowel or Diphthong in their first syllable, there are three sorts. *First*, some that change it into *e*. *Secondly* some that

change it into *i*. Thirdly some that change it into *u*.

**Qu.** Which is the Rule for them that change it into *e*?

**An.** The Rule for those verbs that change a vowel in their first syllable into *e* is this:

*Mutantia primam vocalem in E.*

*Verba hæc simplicia præsentis præteritique, simplicia. Si componantur, vocalem primam in e mutant:*

*Damno, læsto, sacro, fallo, arceo, trasto, satiscor Partio, carpo, patro, scando, spargo, parioque.*

**Qu.** What is the meaning of this Rule?

**An.** The meaning of this Rule is this: That there are some verbs, which being compounded do change the vowel *a* in their first syllable into *e*, as well in the present as preterperfect tense: as *Damno* being compounded with *con* becomes *condemno*; and is declined *condemno, condemnas, condemnari*: and so in the rest.

[ *Vocalem primam in e mutant* ] This in reference to the preterperfect tense, is to be understood of such verbs, as have not *e* already in the first syllable of it, as it is in *fallo* and *pario*, whose preterperfect tenses are *fefelli* and *peperi*.

[ *Læsto* ] So it is in *delecto, illecto, oblecto*, if they be compounded of *læsto*, and be not rather derived from *delicio, illicio, and oblicio*, as *læsto* it self is from *latio*. But *ablæsto* keeps the vowel of its simple verb thoroughout: if any such verb be read any where else but in the Bible. For *Stephanus* plainly saith of it, *Idonci Authoris testimonium desideratur*: and observes that in stead of it, *Virgil* said, *a læste depellere*; and *Varro* *a mamma disjungere*. Yet some of our English Grammarians allow of it, as *Burles*, and *Haris*, and *Farnaby*, it is to be hoped, upon good Authority.

[ *Arceo* ] As *exerceo*, and *coerceo*. Yet *abarceo* keeps the *a*, as *Burles* hath it; some saith *Stephanus* turn it into

into e, and read it *aberceo* : the former seems more probable.

*Tractō* ] As *contractō*, *detractō*. Yet, though some Grammarians are not pleased to make Exceptions of them, as *Harris* and *Shirley*, *pertractō* and *retractō* keep a, at least often, it not always. Hence *Cic. de Invent. Si gesti negotii, & suam, & adversarii narrationem scire & diligenter pertractabit. Virg. 12. Aen. Nihil est quod dicta retractent. Hor. 2. Carm. Od. 1. Sed ne relictis, Musa procer jocos Cææ retractes munera nevæ. Senec. Ep. 110. Si eadem, quamvis sciat, retractaverit. Yet in Gell. 1. 12. c. 1. Where in the Text is read *detrectandam*, there is a note in the margine, intimating that in old Books it was read *detractandam*.*

*Fatiscor* ] As *defetiscor*. Hence *Ter. Phor. 4. 1. Neque adeo defetiscor unquam experirier. Yet in Plin. 1. 17. c. 2. is read *defatiscentes*. And in *Castellio's* Edition of *Kempis. 1. 1. c. 19. defatiscitur* (I suppose by misprint for *defatiscitur*.) *Priscian 1. 10. owns defetiscor*, but without preterperfect tense.*

*Partio* ] As *impartio*, *dispartio*. Yet though few Grammarians take notice thereof, except *Hayne*, *Farnaby* and *Burles*, *impartio* and *dispartio* are also read. *Cic. de Am. ut si quam virtutis præstantiam consecuti sunt, impartiant cum suis. Plaut. Aul. 2. 1. Edixit mihi, ut dispartirem obsonium hic bisartum. Cic. ut fortunas nostras dispartiat parricidis. So also are read impartior and dispartior. Cic. pro Sext. Rosc. Commoda quibus utimur, a deo nobis dari, atque impartiri videmus. Plin. in Ep. Perire omne tempus arbitrabitur, quod studis non impartiretur. Cic. de Leg. Jureconsulti, quod positum est in unâ cogitatione, id in infinita dispartitur. Id. 3. de N. Deor. Eadem vultis a diis immortalibus hominibus dispartiri, ac dividi somnia. But I conceive *impartio* and *dispartio* the more usual. *Ter. Eur. 2. 2. Plurimâ salute Parmenoxem summum suum impartit**

*Gnatho. Cic. 3. Catil. Atque etiam viro forti Collee meo. C. Antonio laus impertitur. Plaut. Aul. 2. 2. Injuriâ dispartivisti, pinguorem agnam isti habent. Id. Pseud. 1. 5. Populo vitim dispartivier. Mr. Buryes, addes bipertio, and quadripartio. I find bipartio, bipartior, and bipertior, quadripartior and quadripartior, bipartitus and quadripartitus, both in Dictionaries and Authours: but bipertio, and quadripartio, Not so much as in the Dictionaries of Stephanus, Nizolius, Cooper, or Gouldman. Which last only hath bipartio. Perhaps later and better Editions of Authours have those words, as he reads them.*

*Scando* ] As *conscendo*, *descendo*; which latter word anciently in its preterperfect tense had *descendidi*. Thence *Valerius Antiates*, *Deinde funere locato, ad forum descendidit. So Laberius, Ego mirabar quomodo mammae mihi descendiderant. Gell. 1. 7. c. 9. But that preterperfect is now obsolete.*

*Spargo* ] As *conspargo*, *aspergo*, *inspergo*, *perspergo*, *prospargo*, *respergo*, *circumspargo*. But Mr. Buryes excepts *præspargo*. And so indeed in *Lucret. 1. 15. it is read, Flora quibus mater præspargens ante vias Cuncta coloribus egregiis & odoribus implet. Gouldman and Stephanus have superspergo as well as superspergo: of the latter I find an example in Cato, de R. R. c. 54. Stramenta in lecto condito, & sale superspergito; Of the former as yet no example.*

*Qu.* There is a Note annexed to the Rule, touching the compounds of *Pario* (viz. — *Parioque Cujus nata peri duo comperit, & reperit dant: Cætera sed perui; velut hæc aperire operire.*) What is the meaning of that *perui*?

*Ans.* The Meaning of that Note or rule touching the compounds of *Pario* is this: That of the compounds of *Pario* there be two, namely *comperio* and *reperio*, which have *Peri* in the preterperfect tense, whereas all the rest have *Perui*.

Q<sup>1</sup>. What is the meaning of that note also annexed to the Rule, touching the compounds of *pasco*,

VIZ.

*A pasco pavi tantum composita notentur.*

*Hæc duo compesco, dispesco pascui habere :*

*Cætera, ut epasco, servabunt simplicis usum.*

*A Pasco  
Pavi.*

*An.* The meaning of that Note or Exception from the Rule touching the compounds of *Pasco* is this: That two compounds of *Pasco*, namely *compesco* to restrain, and *dispesco* to drive away beasts from pasture, do change their first vowel into *e*, and make *pascui* in their preterperfect tense, as *compesco, compescis, compesqui; dispesco, dispescis, dispesqui*: but that all the rest of the compounds of that verb, do follow the simple verb, and keep its first vowel and declining, as *epasco, epascis, epavi*. So *depasco, depasces, depavi*, to eat up or to feed beasts in a pasture.

¶ *Compesco*, Though *compesco* to restrain, *bridle*, *restrain*, or *keep in*, differ from the simple verb, yet *compasco* to feed together agrees with it, as both *Burles* and *Stephanus* decline it. Thence *Plin. l. 9. c. 54.* hath *compascere*. *Var. de r. r. l. 1. c. 53.* *compascei*, and *Sæv. l. c.* *Plures saltum communem, ut ius compascendi haberent mercati sunt.* *Cic. in Top.* *Si compascuus ager est, ius est compascere*. So though *depasco* to eat up do follow the simple verb; yet *depesco* to drive away cattel suits in form with *dispesco*, as well as in sense, and is to be found in *Gouldman*, though from what *Author* I know nor, because he names none: nor do I find it elsewhere.

Q<sup>2</sup>. How are the words of this Rule and the Notes annexed thereto declined?

*An.* The words of this Rule and Notes annexed thereto are declined thus:

*damno, damnas, damnavi, dammare, damnum.*

*Lallo, lallas, lallavi, lallare, lallatum.*

*Sacro, sacras, sacravi, sacrare, sacratum.*

*Fallo, fallis, fiseilli, fallere, falsum.*

The Declining of the words.

*Arceo, arces, arcui, arcere,*  
*Tracto, tractas, tractavi, tractare, tractatum.*  
*Fatiscor, fatisceris, — fatisci —.*  
*Partis, partis, partivi, partire, partitum.*  
*Carpo, carpis, carpsi, carere, captum.*  
*Patro, patras, patavi, patrare, patratum.*  
*Scando, scandis, scandi, scandere, scansum.*  
*Spargo, spargis, sparsi, spargere, sparsum.*  
*Pario, paris, peperit, parere, partum.*  
*Comperio, comperis, comperi, comperire, compertum.*  
*Reperio, reperis, reperi, reperire, repertum.*  
*Aperio, aperis, aperui, aperire, apertum.*  
*Operio, operis, operui, operire, opertum.*  
*Pasco, pascis, pavi, pascere, pasum.*  
*Compesco, compescui, compescui, compescere.*  
*Dispesco, dispesci, dispescui, dispescere.*  
*Epascio, epascis, epavi, epascere, epasum.*

\* That the compounds of *Pario* are all declined after the fourth conjugation, though it self be of the third, can be no wonder to him, that remembers, that *Pario* it self was once of that conjugation. Whence *O-va parire*. in *Ennius*, as we shewed before in, *Fit Rio vi ut pario peperit*.

**Q.** Are there not some other words, besides these here named in this Rule, , that being compounded do change their first vowel into e ?

**Ans.** Besides the words here named in this Rule, there be some other words, which in some, if not all of their compounds do change their first Vowel, or Diphthong into e. Such are (1) *Fascto*, whence *dejecto*, *ejecto*, *injecto*, and *rejecto*. (2) *Farcio*, whence *differcio* and *refercio*. but *effarcio* and *infarcio* keep a : though there is read *effercio* and *infercio* also. (3) *Canto*, from whence *accepto* and *recepto*; and so *capto*, from whence *incepto* and *oscepto*. (4) *Halo*, from whence *anhelo*, though *exhalo* keep a. (5.) *Mando* from whence *commendo* and *emendo*, though *amando*, *præmando*, and *demandò* keep a. (6) *Canto* from whence

con-

*concento*, and *occento*. (7) *Juro*, whence *dejero* and *pejero* though the other compounds of this verb *abjuro*, *adjuro*, *objuro*, and *conjuro*, do keep the first vowel of the simple verb; and even *dejuvo*, and *perjuvo* is sometimes read too. (8) The old verb *cando*, whence *accendo*, *incendo* and *succendo* (9) *Audio* from whence *obdia*.

Dejecto is in Stat. Virgil hath *Ore ejaſtante*. *Æt.* 1. Statius 9 *Theb.* *Aufus erat furto dextram injeſtare.* *Lucret.* 1. 2. *Montes Iſti rejeſtante voces ad ſidera mundi.* From *capto* *Plant.* *Cure.* 1. 1. hath, *Incepas facinus facere*, and *Menach.* 5. 5. *Jam hercle acceptat inſanire primulum.* From *differcio* *Hor.* 1. 1. *Ep.* 6. hath *differtum tranſire forum.* *Cic.* *pro Seſt.* hath *Cloacus reſercivi.* *Plant.* *Moſtell.* 1. 1. Hath *Eſte*, *effercite vos.* *Cic.* 2 *de N. Deor.* *Poeta hominum vitam Superſtitione omni reſerferunt.* *Colum.* 1. 12 c. 43. *Largum ſalem inſarcito.* *Sueton:* *Mori inedia deſtinanti per vim ore diducto inſarciri cibum juſſit.* Where *Budeus* reads *inſercire.* *Cic.* *in Orotor.* *Neque inſarciens verba.* Where in an old copy it is read *inſerciens.* *Concento* is cited by *Gouldman* from *Plant.* And *occento* is found in him in divers places. *Cureul.* 1. 2. *Quid ſi adeam ad fores atq; occentem.* *So Merc.* 2. 3. *Perſ.* 4. 4. *Ter. Eun.* 2. 3. hath *Liquet mihi dejerare.* *Cic.* *pro Roſc. Com.* *Qui mentiri ſolet, perjerare conſuevit.* *Id.* *pro Rab.* *Poſth.* *ubi ſemel quis pejeraverit, ei credi poſtea non oportet.* *Plant.* *Rud.* 5. 2. *Dejura te mihi argentum daturum.* *Hor.* 1. 2. *Sat.* 3. *Quare, ſi quidvis ſatis eſt, perjuras, ſurripis, auſfers!*

To this Rule may alſo be referred for likenes of change of *a* into *e*, theſe verbs in *or*: *Patio* from whence *perpetior*; yet *comratio* (if any ſuch word be) keeps *a*. So *gradior*, whence *aggredior*, *congedior*, *digredior*, *egredior*, *circumgedior*, *prægedior*; *progredior*, *regredior*, and *ſuggredior*: Yet *retrogradior* keeps *a*. *Plin.* 1. 2. c. 15. *Ab his retrogradiuntur ad ſolem.* *Id.* 1. 8. c. 15. *Ob id retrograditur in p.ſcendo.*



## CHAP. VII.

**Q.** **W**E have spoke of the Rule for the verbs that change their first vowel into *e* which is the Rule for those verbs, that change their first vowel into *i*, and that both in the present, and preterperfect tense &

**Ans.** The Rule for those verbs, that change their first Vowel or Diphthong into *i* in the Present and Preterperfect tense is this

*Mutantia primam vocalem in i.*

*Hæc habeo, Hæc habeo, lateo, salio, statuo, cado, ludo, lateo, [Pango dans pegi] cano, quero, cado, cecidi, Tango, egeo, tenco, taceo, sapio, rapioque, Si componantur vocalem primam in i mutant ut: rapio rapui, eripio, eripui.*

**Q.** What is the meaning of this Rule &

**Ans.** The meaning of this Rule is this: That these verbs *habeo, lateo, &c.* being compounded do thorough both in their present and preterperfect tense, change their first Vowel or Diphthong into *i*: as of *rapio rapui* compounded with *e* is made *eripio eripui*.

[ *Habeo* ] As *exhibeo, inhibeo, &c.* But yet *possibiles* (as is noted in the Margine) *simplicis formam servant.*

[ *Lateo* ] As *deliteo*, for which Mr. Burles hath *diliteo* unless it be a mis-print.

[ *Salio* ] As *exsilio, insilio, desilio, dissilio, assilio, resilio, consilio, subsilio, transilio, supersilio*, which have the Supines, *prosilio*, and *absilio*, which want them.

[ *Statuo* ] As *instituo, destituo, asituo, prestituo, restituo, prostituo, consituo, substituo*.

[ *Cado* ] As *accido, concido, decido, extido, incido, intercido, occido, procido, succido, supercido*. Of which *incido, occido, recido*, have Supines, or at least Participles

es in *rus*, which cannot be formed but from Supines ; the rest want them.

*Lado* ] As *allido*, *collido*, *illido* ; but *oblado*, keeps *a* unchanged. *Plaut. Casin.* 2. 5. *Ne oblaſis* [for *obleſaris*] *manum*.

*Pango dans pegi* ] This word doth not properly belong to this Rule, becauſe there is no change of vowel in the preterperfect into *i* : but the preterperfect tenſe keeps its firſt ſyllable unchanged, remaining the ſame in compoſition, that it was before it was compounded ; but it belongs to the next Rule, *Hec ſi componas*. The Teacher may blot it out, and ſupply the room of it thus : *Et placeo, maneo* — for thoſe two words, though not named in the Rule, yet have relation to it, in as much as in ſome of their compounds, they do change their firſt vowel into *i* thorowout. And to theſe if we will hearken to *Alvarus*, we ſhall add *amico*, *amicor*, whoſe compounds are *inimico*, *inimicor*.

*Cano* ] As *accino*, *concino*, *incino*, *occino*, *percino*, *precino*, *recino*, *ſuccino*. Yet *Tacitus* l. 2. hath *Tum ſentius occuncire cornua tubaſque juffit*. *Danſ.* l. 2. c. 12.

*Quero* ] As *acquirō*, *conquiro*, *exquiro*, *inquiro*, *perquiro*, *requiro*.

*Cado cecidi* ] As *aſcido*, *exſido*, *incido*, *intereido*, *ocido*, *percido*, *p<sup>r</sup>ecido*, *reſido*, *ſuccido*.

*Tango* ]. As *atingo*, *contingo*, *pertingo*, which have *taſſum* in their Supines.

*Egeo* ] As *indigeo*, without Supines.

*Teneo* ] As *abſtineo*, *attineo*, *pertineo*, without Supines as *Farnaby* and *Burles* ſay : yet *Rhenius* allows of *abſentum*, as from which is formed *abſentus*. Whence the *J. C.* ſay, *Abſentus hæreditate*, i. e. *ſeparatus*, held off, or kept from : but *contineo*, *detineo*, *retineo* with Supines.

*Taceo* ] As *conticeo*, *obſiceo*, *reticeo*, *ſubiceo*, all without Supines.

[ *Sapio* ]

**Sapio** ] As *desipio*, *resipio*, Whence *Plin. l. 14. c. 1. Vitæ picem resipiens.*

**Rapioque** ] As *abripio*, *arripio*, *corripio*, *diripio*, *eripio*, *præripio*, *proripio*, *surrripio*. *Plaut. Cure, 1. 1. Ut quæquam occaso est, illi surripere se ad me.*

**Q1.** What is the meaning of that Note touching the compounds of *cano* annexed to the Rule

*A cano*  
*natum.*

— *A cano natum*

*Præteritum perui, ceu concino, concinui dat ?*

**Ans.** The meaning of the Note annexed to the Rule touching the compounds of *Cano* is this: That the compounds of *Cano* make their preterperfect not in *cini* like the simple verb, but in *cinui*; as of *concino* is formed *concinui*, and so in the rest.

**Q1.** How are the words of this Rule, and the Note annexed thereto declined?

The declining of thus:

**As.** The words in this Rule and Note are declined thus:  
the words. *Habeo, habes, habui, habere, habitum.*

*Liteo, later, latui, latere, [latitum.]*

*Salio, Salis, salii, & salui, salire, saltum,*

*Statuo, statuis, statui, statuere, statutum.*

*Cado, cadis, cecidi, cadere, casum.*

*Ledo, ledis, laci, ledere, lesum.*

*Pango, pangis, panxi [ & pegi ] pangere, pactum.*

*Cano, canis, cecini, canere, cantum.*

*Quæro, quæris, quæsi, quærere, quæsitum.*

*Cedo, cedis, cecidi, cadere, casum,*

*Tango, tangis, tetegi, tangere, tactum.*

*Egeo, eges, egui, egere.*

*Teneo, tenes, tenui, tenere, tentum.*

*Taceo, taces, tacui, tacere, tacitum.*

*Sapio, sapis, sapui, [ & sapiui ] sapere, [ sapitum ]*

*Rapio, rapis, rapui, rapere, raptum.*

*Eripio, eripis, eripui, eripere, ereptum.*

*Concino, concinis, concinui, concinere, concentum.*

**Q1.** What is the meaning of that Rule touching *placeo* and the compounds of it? viz. ]

*placeo, sic displiceo; sed simplicis usum*  
*hic duo complaceo, cum perplaceo bene servant.*

*A placeo,*  
*sic displiceo.*

*An.* The meaning of this Rule is this: That though *placeo* compounded with *dis* do change its first vowel into *i*, so that of *placeo* so compounded is made *displiceo*, yet compounded with *con* or *per* (and we may add *bene*) keeps its first vowel unchanged, as in *complaceo*, *perplaceo*, and *beneplaceo*.

¶ *Complaceo* ] This verb is not lightly found, but in the preterperfect tense, and in the passive form: but so that it is more frequent. So *Plaut. Rud. 1. 2. Hoc deo complacitum est. Ter. And. 4. 1. Postquam me amare dixi, complacita est tibi.*

Q. How are the words of this Rule declined?

*An.* The words of this Rule are declined thus:

*Placeo, places, placui, placere, placitum.*  
*Displiceo, displices, displicui, displicere,*  
*complaceo, complaces, complacui, complacere, complacitum.*  
*Perplaceo, perplaces, perplacui, perplacere, perplacitum.*  
*So beneplaceo, beneplaces, &c.*

The declining of the words.

Q. What is the meaning of that Rule touching *pango*, and the compounds of it? Viz.

*Composita a pango retinent a quatuor ista*  
*Depango, oppango, circumpango atque repango?*

*An.* The meaning of the Rule is this: that these four compounds of *pango*, viz. *depango*, *oppango*, *circumpango*, and *repango* (whereunto may be added a fifth; viz. *expango*) do keep their first vowel unchanged into *i*, though it be so changed in others, as *compingo*, and *impingo*.

¶ *Oppango* ] *Rhenius* reads it *oppingo*; but *oppango* I take to be the right reading, and so *Stephanus* sets it down. The preterperfect of this verb is read in *Plaut. Cure. 1. 1. ubi suavius oppegit, fugit.*

*Expango* ] This verb is read in *Plin. 1. 2. c. 26. Idemque ausus rem etiam deo improbam, annumerare posteris stellas, ac sidera ad normam expangere.*

Q.

**Q<sup>u</sup>. How are the words of this rule declined?**  
**An.** The words of this rule are declined thus:  
 The declining of *Pango*, *pangis*, *panxi*, [ & *pegi* ] *pangere*, *passum*,  
 the words. *Depango*, *depangis*, *depegi*, *depangere*, *depassum*.

*Oppango*, *oppangis*, *opegi*, *oppangere*, *oppassum*, \*  
*Circumpango*, *-gis*, *-pegi*, *-pangere*, *-passum*, \*  
*Repango*, *repangis*, *repegi*, *repangere*, *repassum*, \*  
*Expango*, *expangis*, *expegi*, *expangere*, *expassum*.

\* *Farnaby* saith these four want Supines, but other  
 Grammarians, and Lexicographers allow them Supines  
 as *Ramus*, *Rhenius*, *Stephanus*, *Gouldman*, &c. Exam-  
 ples I believe are scant, yet some there are. See after-  
 ward in the fourth Question after *Hac raro*, &c.

**Q<sup>u</sup>. What is the meaning of that Rule touching**  
*maneo* and his compounds, viz.

*A maneo mansi*, minus dant quatuor ista  
*Pramineo*, *emineo*, *cum promineo*, *imminesque*,  
*Simplicis* at *verbi servabunt cetera formam*.

**An.** The meaning of the Rule is this, That the  
 four compounds of *maneo*, viz. *pramineo*, *emineo*, *promi-*  
*neo* and *immines*, not only change their *a* into *i* in the  
 present tense; but also have *minus* in their preterperfect  
 tense, whereas the rest of the compounds of that verb  
 neither change their first vowel into *i*, in the present  
 tense, and have *mansi* (like the simple verb) in the  
 preterperfect tense; as *permaneo permanfi*; *foremaneo*,  
*commaneo*, *obmaneo*, *emanco* (to stay out of place) are  
*intermanco*.

*Pramineo*] *Vossius* likes of *praminui*, though he saith  
 he had not read it.

*Eminco*] To this may be added the decompound *se-*  
*peremineo* (which, as all the rest that have *minus*, want  
 the Supines) used by *Virgil*, 6. *Aa. Victorque viros se-*  
*pereminet omnes*.

**Q<sup>u</sup>. How are the words of this Rule declined?**  
**An.** The words of this Rule are declined thus:  
 The declining of *Maneo*, *manes*, *mansi*, *manere*, *mansum*,  
 the words. *Pramineo*, *pramines*, *praminui*, *praminere*.

*Eminco, emines, eminui, eminere.*

*Prominco, promines, prominui, prominere.*

*Imminco, immines, imminui, imminere.*

**Qu.** We have spoken of those verbs, that change their first vowel into *i*, as well in the preterperfect as present tense : **which is the Rule for those Verbs that being compounded, do change their first vowel into *u* ?**

**An.** The Rule for those verbs that change their first vowel into *u* is this :

*composita a scalpo, calco, salto, a per u mutant :*

*Id tibi demonstrant exsculpo, inculco, resulto.*

*Composita a scalpo.*

**Qd.** **what is the meaning of this Rule ?**

**An.** The meaning of this Rule is this : That these Verbs *scalpo, calco, and salto* being compounded, do change their first vowel into *u* : so that *scalpo* compounded with *ex* becomes *exsculpo* ; *calco* compounded with *in* becomes *inculco*, and *salto* compounded with *re* becomes *resulto*.

¶ *Scalpo* ] In this our Authour follows *Diomedes* ; and Mr. *Harris* follows our Authour. *Diomedes* saith no such word as the simple verb *sculpo* is found, and therefore we must say, *Scalpere gemmam*, and not *sculpere*. *Id est verum est, innumeri libri* ( saith *Duñburgensis* ) *mendoserunt, in quibus legimus sculptor & sculpsit.* p. 127. But he might have read in *Ovid. Met. l. 10. Fab. 8. Interea nec cum mirâ feliciter arte sculpsit ebur.* *Plin. l. 36. c. 4. Marmore sculpendo inclaruerunt.* And that of *Cic. 4. Acad. Non enim est e saxo sculptus*, was read *sculptus*, as *Stephanus* tells us, in *veteri codice*. Now if there be such a verb as *sculpo* (and if there be not, then besides that these Authours are misread, many Grammarians also are mistaken, as *Ramus, Vossius, Rhenius, Farnaby Buryles, &c.* ) I say, if there be such a verb as *sculpo*, then it was needless to fancy a change of *a* in *scalpo* into *u* to make thereof in composition *sculpo*, which already was in being, without any such change. Besides *exscalpo* (as they have been pleased to write) in the pre-

per sense of the word (to scratch, scrape, or pick) *o* is read without any change of *a* into *u*: *Appul. Met. 9. Ipse delato lumine scabiem vetustam cariosa testa incipit exscalpere.* So *Cato de r. r. Foramina longa pedes tres semis & exscalpta digitos sex.* If the teacher please he may thus read the Rule.

*Si componantur calco, salto, a per u mutant, Id tibi demonstrant composita inculco, resulto.*

**Qu. How are the words of this Rule declined?**

**An.** The words of this Rule are declined thus:  
The declining of *Scalpo*, *scalpis*, *scalpsi*, *scalpere*, *scalptum*,  
the words. *Calco*, *calcas*, *calcavi*, *calcare*, *calcatum*.

*Salto*, *saltas*, *saltavi*, *saltare*, *saltatum*.

*Exscalpo*, *exscalpis*, *exscalpsi*, *exscalpere*, *exscalptum*.

*Inculco*, *inculcas*, *inculcavi*, *inculcare*, *inculcatum*.

*Resulto*, *resultas*, *resultavi*, *resultare*, *resultatum*.

**Qu.** We have spoke of the verbs that change the fifth vowel into *a*: Which is the Rule for those that lose a vowel out of their first syllable?

**An.** The Rule for those that lose a vowel out of their first syllable is this:

*Composita a claudio, quatio, lavo, rejiciunt a*:

*Id docet a claudio, occludo, excludo, a quatioque,*

*Percutio, excutio: a lavo, proluo, diluo nata.*

**Qu.** What is the meaning of this Rule?

**An.** The meaning of this Rule is this: That these three verbs *claudio*, *quatio*, and *lavo*, being compounded, do lose *a* out of their first syllable, so that *claudio* becomes *cludo*; as in *occludo*, and *excludo*, *quatio* becomes *catio*, as in *percutio*, and *excutio*; and *lavo* becomes *luo*, as in *proluo* and *diluo*.

¶ *Claudio*] That there is such a word as *cludo* of like sense with *claudio* is evident by testimonies out of Classical Authours. *Cic. 2. de N. Deor. Ipsum autem mare sic terram appetens litoribus cludit.* *Sen. Ep. 25. Intra quæ quisquis desiderium suum clusit.* *Sen. c. 3. ac Tranq. Animi; Nos non in unius urbis mœnibus clusimus.*

*Senec.*



*Sen. Med. Quasunque aperui tibi vias, clusi mihi.* Gell.  
 l. 13. c. 19. *Tot verba in paucissimas literas cludere.* Plin.  
 l. 33. c. 1. *Aliis sub gemmis venena cludent.* Varro. de  
 r. 1. l. 3. c. 3. *Qua materie ad villam venationis causâ  
 cludentur.* So Val. Flac. Martial. Juvenal Statius. Colum-  
 mel. This being so, what need of taking the remoter  
 verb *claudo* for the compounding of *occludo*, and *excludo*  
 withal, or any other the like compounded words (which  
 are many, *concludo*, *includo*, *accludo*, *percludo*, *præcludo*,  
*circumcludo*, *intercludo*, *recludo*, *secludo*) when the  
 nearer verb *cludo* is at hand to be used, without any  
 change, loss, or trouble? Whereupon (saith *Seba-  
 stian, Duisburgensis*) *Copposita magis a cludo videntur  
 quàm a claudo.* But if Mr. Farnaby, or Burles, Bird or  
 Haye, or any other will rather compound these words  
 of *claudo* than of *cludo*, (that is go by the Bow rather  
 than by the String) they may for me; Since it is in-  
 different with *Alvarus* to form them from either. p.  
 227.

*Quatio* ] It seems to me to be an inveterate errour,  
 to write *u* after *q*, which is no letter but an abbreviation  
 of two letters *c* and *u* into one character, partly compo-  
 sed, and perfectly standing for both: and if nothing  
 else, the very forming of *executio* from *quatio* by the cast-  
 ing away of *a* doth evince it: for *quatio* being turned in-  
 to *cutio* by the casting away of *a*, it must follow either  
 that *q* stands for nothing but *c*; and then what are we  
 troubled with a needless superfluous Letter for? or else  
 that it stands for *c* and *u*: and then if *u* must be written  
 after *q*, then when that character is resolved into *c* and  
*u*, there must be an *u* twice written after *c*, and we must  
 write, not *executio* but *executio*, which is against all ex-  
 ample, and Orthography. And therefore some, that  
 would write accurately, do not write *quis*, *quæ*, *quid*,  
 but *qis*, *qæ*, *qid*. But if this errour be too overgrown,  
 to be amended, (as there is no hope, being espoused by  
 so great *Grammarians*, and so ingrown into use with e-  
 very body as it is) we must then touching this verb,

say with Mr. Bayles, that the compounds of *quatio* do change *qua* into *cu*: as *concutio*, *decutio*, *discutio*, *excutio*, *incutio*, *percutio*, *recutio*, *succutio*.

*Lavo* ] If this verb had been written and read *lavo* with an *au* diphthong, there had been no more to do: but being written, and read *lavo*, it may be enquired how either *prolavo* or *diluo*, or any other the like word said to be compounded of it, can with *pro* or *di* &c. and that which remains of this verb, when *a* is cast out of it, make *prolavo* or *diluo*, or any such other word. For what will remain of *lavo*, when *a* is cast out, but *lvo*? and what doth that either signifie, or sound? or what doth it make compounded with *pro* or *di*, but *prolvo* or *dilvo*? but those are not the words, which are here said to be made of *lavo*, by casting away *a*, but *prolavo*, and *diluo*. There must therefore be a further change in the word made to fit it for composition. The consonant *v* must be changed into a vowel, and be divided from the *o*, and joyned to the *l*, so as to make *lvo*. But to what purpose is all this stirre, casting out, and changing of letters and syllables, when there is at hand the verb *luo* ready, without any thing at all of this, for this composition? For such a verb as *luo* undoubtedly there is, and that both in *Dictionaries* and *Authours*. Thence *Cic. ad Att. l. 12. Quomodo ergo hæc lues?* *Id. 3. Ver. Ejus libidinem hominum innocentium sanguine lui velles?* *Id. Ver. 9. Maculas furtorum & flagitiorum tuorum sociorum innocentium sanguine luere arbitrabare?* i. e. *abstergere & clare*, saith *Stephanus*. And hence *Vossius* compounds these words. For having declined *luo*, *lui*, *lu tum*, unde *luiturus*, he adds. *Hinc diluo, dilui, diluturi. Sic abluo, eluo, reluo. Etymolog. p. 124. Danæsius* could like this, but that the signification of the word is against it. Why but amongst other significations, this also is given to it by *Gouldman*, to *wipe* or *wash* away, and that suitable to those derivations which are given it, either from *lavo* in *Latine*, or from *λέω* in *Greek*. And from what can those Metaphorical expressions of *Cicero*, where he hath *libidi-*

*libidinem sanguine lui*, and *maculas luere*, be fetch'd from, but such signification of the word? Therefore it seems more commodious to derive these compound words *proluo*, *diluo*, &c. from *luo*, than from *lavo*. Yet if this satisfy not, rather than give offence to any of our Grammarians, who are otherwise minded (and they I see are many, *Hayne, Harris, Bird, Farnaby, Shirley*, &c.) I shall be contented, that it may be as they say: and so we will compound not only *proluo*, and *diluo*, but *abluo* and *eluo*, and *perluo*, and *interluo*, and all of *lavo*. For *perluo*, 'tis read in *Colum. l. 12. c. 53. Oportebit aqua dulci diligenter perlui*. And *interluo* is in *Claudian de Rapt. Proserp. l. 1. --Rupit confinia Nereus Victor, & abscessos interluit equore montes*.

**Qu.** How are the words of this Rule declined?

**Ans.** The words of this Rule are declined thus:

*Claudo*, *claudis*, *clausi*, *claudere*, *clausum*.  
*Quatio*, *quatis*, [*quassi*] *quaterere* [*quassum*].  
*Lavo*, *lavis*, *lavi*, [*lavere*] *lotum*, & *lautum*.  
*Ocludo*, *occludis*, *occlusi*, *occludere*, *occlusum*.  
*Excludo*, *excludis*, *exclusi*, *excludere*, *exclusum*.  
*Percutio*, *percutis*, *percussi*, *percutere*, *percussum*.  
*Excutio*, *excutis*, *excussi*, *excutere*, *excussum*.  
*Proluo*, *proluis*, *prolui*, *proluere*, *prolutum*.  
*Diluo*, *diluis*, *dilui*, *diluere*, *dilutum*.

The declining of the words.

**Qu.** May not some word be yet further added of the like nature with these mentioned in the Rules, untaken notice of in any of them?

**Ans.** There may perhaps be added one word, which changeth the diphthong in its first syllable into *o*, in three compounds of it, and that is *Plando*, three of whose compounds, viz. *displando*, *explando*, and *supplando*, are made of it by the change of *au* into *o*, which yet remains unchanged in the other compounds of it, viz. *applando*, and *complando*.

¶ From *supplando Cic. 1. de Orat. hath, Nemo in illo iudicio supplōsit*. These verbs Mr. Dares derives from the old verb *plado plosi*, of which yet he saith, *nescio an*

*unquam in ysu.* Perhaps those, in whom *au* is read, come of *plaudo*, and those in which *o* is read come of *plodo*, if ever there were any such verb, as Mr. Daines doth fantasie to have been, wherein I will determine nothing.

To the last Rule *Composita a claudo*, &c. Our ingenious Poetical Grammarian Mr. Shirley adds *causo*, giving the Rule thus: *Hec claudo, causo, quatio, lavo, rejiciunt a. p. 91.* But I cannot find such a word as *causo* in *Stephanus* or *Gouldman*, though *causor* be ordinary. And *Stephanus* compounds *accuso* of *ad*, and not *causo*, but *cuso*, an antiquated frequentative of *cudo*: adding that there are some, who compound it from *ad* and *causa*, or *causor*, and that more rightly in *Gouldmans* opinion. But why may there not antiently as well have been *causo*, as *cuso*, though now out of use? There have been *adulo*, and *comito*, and *consolo*, *crimino* and *digno*, *frustro* and *horto*, *auguro* and *amplexo*, as well as their deponents in *or*, which now are in use: and why might there not have been *causo*, as well as *causor*? But it is not my part to be Unpire betwixt persons of so great wit and learning: neither needs that ingenious person so poor a defence, as my *weakness* is able to make for him. Let the Reader chuse for, and please himself.

And thus far of the Verbs whose compounds differ from their simples both in the present and preterperfect tense.

## CHAP. VIII.

Qu. **W**hich is the Rule for those verbs that being compounded differ from their simples in the present, but not in the preterperfect tense?

An. The Rule for those verbs that, being compounded

ed

ed do differ from their simples in the Present, but not in the Preterperfect tense is this.

*Mutantia primam vocalem in I præterquam in præterito.*

*Hæc si componas, ago, emo, sedeo, rego, frango.  
Et capio, jacio, lacio, specio, premo, semper,  
Vocalem primam præsentis in I sibi mutant  
Præteriti nunquam; ceu frango, refringo, refregi,  
A capio, incipio, incipi.*

*Hæc si  
componas.*

**Q.** What is the meaning of this Rule?

**Ans.** The meaning of this Rule is this: That some verbs and particularly these here named in the Rule, *ago, emo, &c.* being compounded, do change the first vowel of their Present tense into *i*, but do not change the first vowel of their Preterperfect tense into any other thing from what it was.

As for example, if *frango fregi* be compounded with *re*, then *frango* is made *fringo*, as in *refringo* the *a* of the present tense being changed into *i*: but *fregi* is not made *frigi*, the *e* in the compound Preterperfect tense *refregi* remaining the same, that it was in the simple preterperfect tense *fregi*. Thus by like change *capio* being compounded with *in*, becomes *incipio*, but *cepi* is not turned into *cipi*, but remains the same that it was: the preterperfect tense of *incipio*, being not *incipi*, but *in-cepi*.

**¶** *Hæc si componas* ] To these may be also added *lego, facio, and pango pegi*, which all in composition do change the first vowel of their present tense into *i*, but not the first vowel of their preterperfect tense: as *deligo, delegi; conficio, confeci; compingo, compegi*; Yet with exceptions of some particulars disagreeing with the Rule, as we shewed before of *pango*, and shall shew by and by of *facio*, and *lego*. And to this Rule may be referred these verbs in *or*, *fateor*, from whence *confiteor* and *diffiteor*; and *aspiscor* from whence *adipiscor* and *indipiscor*.

*Ago* ] As *abigo*, *adigo*, *exigo*, *redigo*, *subigo*, *transigo*, *transadigo*, *prodigo*, which wanteth the Supines, and *ambigo*, which wanteth both preterperfect tense and Supine.

*Emo* ] As *eximo*, *perimo*, *redimo*, and *adimo*, if it be compounded of *ad* with *emo*, and not rather *demo*, as *Phocas* and *Diomedes* thought. But *coemo* keeps the vowel of the present tense. Hence *Cic. Verr. 6. Quam tam non modo non vendebant, verum etiam coebant.*

*Sedeo* ] As *assideo*, *consideo*, *desideo*, *insideo*, *obsideo*, *persideo*, *præsideo*, *resideo*, *subsideo*. But yet *circumsedeo*, and *supersedeo*, keep the first vowel of their present tense. *Cic. Phil. 10. ut intelligat non D. Brutum, quem vallo circumsederet, sed seipsum obsidere.* *Liv. 1. 1. b. Pun. Saguntum vestri circumsederent exercitus.* Though *circumsedeo* also is said, and read, as *Stephanus* saith, quoting diverse places from *Cic.* & *Liv.* unless they be miswritten. For in the first mentioned by him, *Cal. ad Cic. 1. 8. Ep. 15.* In stead of (as he reads it) *Nisi maluit Pompeium Brundusii circumsidere*, in the correcter copies it is *circumsehere*. But in *Cic. Attic. 1. 9. Ep. 14.* it is as he reads it, *P. R. n. exercitus Cn. Pompeium circumsidet*, viz. in the Edition of *Dupuy*; yet with a Note in the Margine that *Lambine* reads it *circumsederet*. *Supersedeo* is every where. *Cic. 2. de Invent. Omnino narratione supersehdendum.* *Cas. b. G. 1. 1. Propter eximiam opinionem virtutis praelio supersehere statuit.* So *Plaut. Cato, Liv. Plin. Gell.*

*Rego* ] As *corrigo*, *porrigo*, *erigo*, *arrigo*, *dirigo*, and *subrigo*, whence *Plin. 1. 9. c. 29. Ita se paulatim subrigens.*

*Frango* ] As *adfrango*, *confrango*, *defrango*, *diffringo*, *effringo*, *infrango*, *perfrango*, *præfrango*, *refringo*.

*Capio* ] As *accipio*, *concupio*, *decipio*, *excipio*, *incipio*, *occipio*, *percipio*, *præcipio*, *recipio*, *suscipio*. But yet *antecapio* keeps a. Thence *Sall. in Catil. Sed ea omnia luxu antecapere.* *Id. Consul optimum factu ratus, noctem que infla-*

*instabat antecapere. Id. Jug. Maxime festinans tempus legatorum antecapere, quos ante prælium factum ab Adherbale Romam missos audiverat. Thence in Liv. l. 5. ab urbe. Non loco castris antecapio, non premunito vallo. And in Cic. 1. de N. Deor. Antecapta animo rei quedam informatio. I presume anticipo is the more usual word.*

*Facio* ] As *abjicio*, *adjicio*, *circumjicio*, *conjicio*, *dejicio*, *disjicio*, *ejicio*, *injicio*, *interjicio*, *objicio*, *præjicio*, *projicio*, *subjicio*, *superjicio*, *trajicio*, *transjicio*. But there is read *superjacio* also. Thence in *Colum. l. 2. c. 21. Et arboribus delapsa folia superjaciebantur.*

*Lacio* ] As *alicio*, *illicio*, *pellicio*, *perlicio*. But *alicio* hath *elicui* in the preterperfect tense. Thence *Ovid* in *Ibula. Elicuit pluvias victima casus aquas.* And so indeed saith *Priscian l. 10.* the other compounds of this verb *alicio*, *illicio*, and *pellicio*, made *allicui*, *illicui*, and *pellicui*, but *allexi*, *illexi*, and *pellexi*, are the more usual.

*Specio* ] As *aspicio*, *circumspicio*, *conspicio*, *dispicio*, *dispicio*, *inspicio*, *perspicio*, *prospicio*, *respicio*, *suspicio*.

*Premo* ] As *apprimo*, *comprimo*, *deprimo*, *exprimo*, *imprimo*, *opprimo*, *perprimo*, *reprimo*, *supprimo*.

Qu. How are the words in this Rule declined ?

Ans. The words in this Rule are declined thus :

*Ago*, *agis*, *egi*, *agere*, *actum*.

*Emo*, *emis*, *emi*, *emere*, *entum*.

*Sedeo*, *sedes*, *sed*, *sedere*, *sessum*.

*Rego*, *regis*, *rex*, *regere*, *rectum*.

*Frango*, *frangis*, *fregi*, *frangere*, *fractum*.

*Capio*, *capis*, *cepi*, *capere*, *captum*.

*Facio*, *facis*, *feci*, *facere*, *factum*.

[ *Lacio*, *lapis*, *lexi*, *lacere*, *lectum*. ]

[ *Specio*, *specis*, *spexi*, *specere*, *spectum*. ]

*Refringo*, *refringis*, *refregi*, *refringere*, *refractum*.

*Incipio*, *incipis*, *incepi*, *incipere*, *inceptum*.

Qu. What is the meaning of that Note touching some of the compounds of *ago*, viz.

————— *Sed pauca notentur*

The declining of the words.

*Sed pauca notentur.*



*Namque suum simplex perago sequitur, satagoque  
Atque ab ago dego dat degi, cogo coegi.*

*An.* The meaning of that Note or Rule is this; That two of the compounds of ago namely *perago*, and *satago*, to which we may perhaps add a third *cicumago*, do keep the vowel of the simple verb: and two of them namely *dego* and *cogo* do change the first vowel of it, but not into *i*, but the first into *e*, and the second into *o*.

¶ *Cicumago* is ordinarily read. *Liv. l. i. ab urbe. Prius quàm circumagerent frenis equos, terga vertunt. Plin. l. 2. c. 3. circumagitur orbis 24. horarum spatio. Hor. l. 1. Sat. 9. Nil opus est te circumagi.*

**Q.** How are the words of this Rule declined?

*An.* The words of this Rule, are declined thus:  
The declining of *Perago*, *perazis*, *peregi*, *peragere*, *peractum*.  
the words. *Satago*, *satagis*, *sategi*, *satagere*.

*cicumago* --gis. --egi, --agere, --actum.

*Dego*, *degis*, *degi*, *degere*.

*Cogo*, *cogis*, *coegi*, *coagere*, *coactum*.

**Q.** What is the meaning of that Rule touching some compounds of *rego*? *Viz.*

*A rego sic A rego sic pergo perrexī, vult quāq. surgo  
pergo. Surrexi, mediā praesentis syllabā adempiā.*

*An.* The meaning of the Rule is this: That two compounds of *rego*, namely *pergo*, and *surgo* do not change *re* into *ri*, like the other compounds of it, *erigo*, *corrigo*, &c. but leave it quite out.

**Q.** How are the words of this Rule declined?

*An.* The words of this Rule are declined thus:  
The declining of *Rego*, *regis*, *rexī*, *regere*, *rectum*.  
the words. *Pergo*, *pergis*, *perrexī*, *pergere*, *perrectum*.  
*Surgo*, *surgis*, *surrexi*, *surgere*, *surrectum*.

**Q.** What Rule is there touching the compounds of *facio*?

*An.* Touching the compounds of *facio* there is this Rule:

*Nil*

*Nil variat facio, nisi preposito praeunte,  
et docet ofacio, cum calfacio, inficioque.*

*Nil vari-  
at facio.*

**Q<sup>u</sup>. What is the meaning of this Rule?**

**An.** The meaning of the Rule is this: That when *facio* is compounded with a preposition, the first vowel of it is changed into *i*, else not.

Therefore we say not *ofacio*, but *o'facio*, nor *calfacio*, but *cal'facio*, because those verbs are not compounded with any preposition, but with *oleo*, and *caleo*, two verbs; and again we say *infacio*, and not *in'facio*, because that verb is compounded with the preposition *in*.

**¶** *O'facio cum calfacio*] So *floccifacio*, *nauicifacio*, *satisfacio*, *benefacio*, *malefacio*, *frigefacio*, *compendifacio*, and *commonefacio*. Against the two last words Mr. Bayles in his Margin sets these two words [*ex usu*] with an *asterisc* directing to them, as meaning, I imagine, that those words are out of use, but if he mean otherwise, then I misapprehend him. The former of them is in *Plant. Mostell. c. 1. 57. Orationis operam compendifacere*. So *Id. Pers. 3. 5. Nam ego hodie compendifeci binos panes indies*. The latter is ordinary. *Cic. Fam. 5. 3. Is vos doceret, & commonefaceret. Cic. 4. Verr. Illi cum commun faciunt, ut si ei videatur, utatur instituto suo*. So *Sall. and Gell. See Stephanus and Nizolius*. But perhaps that *Asterisc* was intended only as a direction to the former of them, and that indeed is not unusual.

**Inficioque**] So *afficio*, *conficio*, *deficio*, *efficio*, *interficio*, *officio*, *perficio*, *prae'facio*, *proficio*, *reficio*, *sufficio*.

**Q<sup>u</sup>. How are the words of this Rule declined?**

**An.** The words of this Rule are declined thus:

*Facio, facis, feci, facere, factum.*

*O'facio, o'facis, o'feci, o'facere, o'factum.*

*Cal'facio, cal'facis, cal'feci, cal'facere, cal'factum.*

*Inficio, inficis, infeci, inficere, infectum.*

**Q<sup>u</sup>. What Rule is there for the compounds of**  
**Lego?**

**An.**

The de-  
clining of  
the words.

*Q. lego nata re, se, per, præ, sub trans præeunte*  
*ta re, Præsentis servant vocalem in i cætera mutant.*

**Q. What is the meaning of this Rule?**

**An.** The meaning of this Rule is this: That some compounds of *lego* do not change the first vowel into *i*, namely those that are compounded with *re*, *per*, *præ*, *sub* and *trans* (whereunto *ad* may also be added) as *relego*, *perlego*, *prælego*, *sublego*, *translego*, and *allego*: but that the rest of the compounds of *lego* do change the first vowel of it into *i*: as *deligo*, *eligo*, *diligo*, *intelligo*, *negligo*, *feligo*.

**¶ Se.]** The adding of *Se* amongst the particles, with which when *lego* is compounded, it changes not the first vowel into *i*, seems to be a mistake, and it seems also to be noted by some hand setting an *Asterisc.* before it. For *feligo* is the usual writing, nor *selego*. So *Cic. in Orat. Omnia expendet, & feliget. Ovid. 3. Amor. 3. eleg. Tu felige tantum.* The Teacher, if he please, may put out *se*, and make up the verse by putting in [*ad*] thus:

*A lego nata re, per, præ, sub, trans, ad præeunte.*  
 For *ad* compounded with *lego* makes *allego*, not *alligo*. Thence *Suet. in Tiber. Instanti sæpius, ut civitate donatum in Decurias allegeret, negavit se allecturum*; Perhaps to distinguish it from *alligo* the compound of *ligo*, and so in the rest, where likeness of composition may expose to mistake.

**Qu. What is the meaning of that Note annexed to this Rule touching the compounds of lego?**

*De quibus hæc intelligo.*

*Viz. De quibus hæc intelligo, diligo, negligo tantum, Præteritum lexifaciunt; reliqua omnia legi.*

**An.** The meaning of that note is this: That of the compounds of *lego*, three make their Preterperfect tense in *lexi*, viz. *intelligo* *diligo*, and *negligo*: but all the rest in their Preterperfect tense have *legi*.

**De quibus hæc intelligo -- negligo.]** Antiently these words made *intellegi*, and *neglegi*. So *Diomedes* and *Prisc.*

Rule:

Rule: some  
el into  
er, pre  
as re-  
allega:  
age the  
telligiwith  
e first  
also  
re in  
Orat.  
Ta  
outme.  
ign.  
as-  
er-  
o,  
ex-

ed?

e

e

e

e

e

e

e

Christian tells us, that *Anil. Macer* spake *Omne no-  
rum neglexerit auctoritatem*. And *M. Antonie* in *Cic.  
phil. 13.* *Theopompum nudum, expulsus a Trebonio,  
confugere Alexandriam neglegistis*. And that *ulpius*  
did use *intellegerit* for *intellexerit* more than once, is  
testified by *Vossius de Analog. l. 3. c. 27.* But these are  
now out of use.

**Q.** How are the words of this Rule declined?

**Ans.** The words of this Rule are declined thus:

The de-  
clining of  
the words.

*Lego, legis, legi. legere, lectum.*  
*Intelligo, intelligis, intellexi, intelligere, intellectum.*  
*Diligo, diligis, dilexi, diligere, dilectum.*  
*Negligo, negligis, neglexi, negligere, neglectum.*

And thus far of the Rules for the preterperfect tenses  
of verbs as well compound as simple.

## CHAP IX.

**Q.** WE have spoken of the Rules for the  
forming of *Preterperfect tenses*, and  
are now to proceed to the Rules for the forming of *Su-  
pines*; Is there any Order observed by the Gram-  
mar in the treating of these things?

**Ans.** In treating of the Rules for the forming of *Su-  
pines* the Grammar observes this Order: First it treats of  
the Supines of *Simple verbs*; And then of the Supines of  
verbs *Compounded*.

**Q.** What General Rule have you for the form-  
ing of the Supines of simple verbs?

**Ans.** For the forming of the Supines of simple verbs  
we have this Rule.

*De Simplicium Verborum Supinis.*

*Nunc ex Praterito discas formare Supinum.*

*Nunc ex  
Praterito.*

**Q.** What is the meaning of this Rule?

**Ans.** The meaning of this Rule is this: That the

*Sup-*

*Supines* of *simple verbs*, are formed from their *Preterperfect tenses* according to the directions given in the particular rules hereafter following; wherein from the termination of the *Preterperfect tense* we are taught how to form the *Supine*, and that according to the order of the Alphabet, beginning with *bi*, and going on to *ci*, *di*, *gi*, *li*, *mi*, *ni*, *pi*, *qui*, *ri*, *si*, *psi*, *ti*, *vi*, *ui*, *xi*.

**Qu. what is the Rule for the forming of the Supine, from those preterperfect tenses, that end in bi?**

*Bi sibi tum format.* **An.** The Rule for the forming of the *Supine* from a preterperfect tense ending in *bi*, is this: *Bi sibi tum format; sic namque bibi bibitum fit.*

**Qu. what is the meaning of that Rule?**

**An.** The meaning of the Rule is this: That of a Preterperfect tense ending in *bi*, the *Supine* is formed by changing *bi* into *bitum*: as of *bibi* by such change is made *bibitum*.

*Bi sibi tum format* ] I should rather say by changing *i* into *tum* or *bi* into *bitum*, than by adding *tum* unto *bi*: because the *i* in *bi* in the preterperf. is long; but the *i* in *tum* or *bitum* in the *Supine* is short: and therefore there is more in the forming of this *Supine*, than a bare addition of *tum*, there is also a mutation of *i* long into *i* short.

**Q<sup>1</sup>. How is the word in this Rule declined?**

**An.** The word in this Rule are declined thus:  
The declining of the word. *Bibo, bibis, bibi, bibere, bibitum.*

**Q<sup>1</sup> what is the Rule for the formation of the Supine from a preterperfect tense in ci?**

**An.** The Rule for the forming of the *Supine* from a preterperfect in *ci* is this —

*Ci fit etum.* *Ci fit etum, ut vici victum testatur, & ici dicitur.*

**Q<sup>1</sup>. what is the meaning of this Rule?**

**An.** The meaning of the Rule is this: That of a preterperfect ending in *ci*, the *Supine* is formed by changing

changing *ci* into *ctum* : as of *vici* by such change is made *victum* ; and of *ici* *ictum*.

**Q.** Is there any Exception from this Rule ?

**Ans.** From this Rule there is no exception : yet upon we are to make this observation, That those verbs pertaining to it, which did change *a* in their present tense into *e* in their preterperfect tense ; do in their Supine change the *e* again into *a* : so as that of *feci* formed from *facio*, is not made *fectum* in the Supine, but *factum* : nor of *jeci* from *jacio*, *jectum*, but *jectum* ; and so our Authour, *Feci factum, jeci quoque factum*.

¶ This observation is not peculiar to this Rule, but extends it self further, even unto all those verbs of what Rule soever, that have changed either *a*, or *e* in their present tense into *e* or *i* in their preterperfect tense, which all in their Supine do resume or take again their changed letter : as these which changed *a* into *e* ; *pango pepigi, frango fregi, ago egi, fallo fefelli, capio cepi, pario peperit, do das dedi, sto stas steti* have *passum, fractum, actum, falsum, caprum, partum, datum, statum*. So these which changed *a* or *e* into *i*, *cado cecidi, edo cecidi, pago pepigi, tango tetigi, cano cecini* have *casum, casum, passum, tactum, & cantum*.

[ *Et ici danti ictum* ] Of the present tense of this verb we have an example in *Plaut. Truc. 2. 7. Hoc vide, dentibus frindit, ici femur*. Of the preterperfect in his *Vidular, Ibi ut piscabar, Fuscina ici vidulum*.

**Q.** How are the words of this Rule declined ?

**Ans.** The words of this Rule are declined thus :

*Vinco, vinctis, vici, vincere, victum.*

*Ico, icis, ici, icere, ictum,*

*Facio, facis, feci, facere, factum,*

*Jacio, jactis, jeci, jaccere, Jactum.*

The declining of the words,

**Q.** What is the Rule for the forming of Supines from preterperfect tenses in *di* ?

**Ans.** The Rule for the forming of Supines from

pre-

preterperfect tenses ending in *di*, is this:  
*Di fit sum. Di fit sum, vidi visum.*

**Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule?**

**An.** The meaning of this Rule is this: That of preterperfect ending in *di* the Supine is formed by changing *di* into *sum*, as of *vidi* by such change is made *visum*.

**Qu. Are there any words excepted from the Rule?**

**An.** From this Rule there are excepted four Supines which end in *tum*, though formed from preterperfect tenses in *di*, viz. *tentum* from *tetendi*, *peditum* from *pepedi*; *datum* from *dedi*; and (which here is not named) *estum* from *edi*.

**Qu. What is the meaning of that first Note annexed to this Rule, viz. — Quædam geminant sicut pandi passum, sedi sessum: adde scidi quod Dat scissum, atque fidi fissum, fodi quoque fossum.**

**An.** The meaning of that Note is this: That some Supines formed from preterperfect tenses in *di*, besides the change of *di* into *sum* in the end, do also assume or take in *s* before *sum* in the middle, as in *sedi sessum*, *scidi scissum*, *fidi fissum*, *fodi fossum*.

¶ **Geminant s** ] This taking of letters into the middle, besides the change of the last syllable, is not peculiar to this Rule, but extends to verbs of other Rules also. Thus *missum* and *passum* from *miſi* and *pavi* take in *s*; *tensum* and *punctum* from *tutudi* and *pupugi* take in *n*; *haustum* from *hausi* takes in *t*; *solutum* and *volutum* from *solvi* and *volvi* take in *u*.

**ut pandi passum** ] This verb did anciently form a regular Supine *Pansum*, from the preterperfect tense *pandi*. And though *Alvarus* and *Despauterius*, *Ramus* and *Rhenius*, and diverse of our English Writers, as *Hayne*, *Shirley*, *Harris*, name no other Supine for this verb, but *passum*: Yet *Vossius* and *Farnaby*, *Ewles* and *Jasx Berengi* do give it *pansum*, as well as *passum*. Thence *Prudeat*, in *Cathemer. Hymn. ult.* *Pansis in al-*



um brachiis. & l. 1. cont. Symmach. Vix passo poterat  
currere carbaso. And thence saith Voss. ( Etymol. Lat.  
p. 113. in Pliny is expansa retia. Gell. l. 15. c. 15. hath  
capillo quoque mulier passo dicitur quasi porrecto & ex-  
panso, even in that very place, where he denies the use  
of passum and expansum: but whence can expansus  
come, but from expansum? and whence that, but from  
passum? So Lucret. l. 1. Deniq; fluctifrago suspensa in  
litore vestes urescunt, eadem dispansa in sole ferefcunt.  
So Plantin in his Edition plants it; and so Vossius saith  
the place was written in his own, and other Manuscripts.  
Whence Danes. gives dispansum for the Supine of  
Dispandi, which were anciently dispandi dispassum, as  
he saith, Schol. l. 2. c. 13. Tertull. adv. Gent. c. 48.  
Dispositioni aternitatis aulei vice oppansa est. Minut.  
Felix in Octavio. Signum plane naturaliter visimus in  
navi, cum velis tumentibus vehitur, cum expansis pal-  
mulis labitur. But now it seems Euphonia gratia there is  
a change of the *n* into *s*, so that of passum is made passum  
and expassum. Thence Cic. passis velis pervehi. And  
Virg. An. 1. Ecce trahebatur passis Priameja virgo Cri-  
nibus. And Tacit. l. 21. Expassa repente delubri fores.  
The users of passum are noted by Rhenius to be recen-  
tiores. p. 190.

This changing of letters in the middle ( that by the  
way upon this occasion we may speak of it ) happens  
also in other verbs. Thus in fressum of frendi *n* is  
changed, as here into *s*; in lotum from lavi *a* is chang-  
ed into *o*; in laurum from lavi, and cautum from cavi  
*a* is changed into *au*; in fatum from sevi *e* is changed in-  
to *a*; in vulsum from velli (if vulsum must according to  
our Author be formed from velli, and not rather from  
vulsi) and in sepultum from sepelivi *e* is changed into  
*u*; and in cultum from colui *o* is changed into *u*.

Adde scidi quod dat scissum ] Of scidi saith Vossius,  
is the Supine (as I suppose that should be, which is mis-  
printed prateritum) scissum, for which they vulgarly  
use scissum; for which he supposes the reason to be, be-  
cause

cause that in *scisum* the first vowel is long, whereas in *scidi* it is short. But from *scisum* he cites out of *Luce* 1. 3. *Detruncata corpora brachiis abscisis.* and *Iustia*, 1. 15. *Abscisis manibus.* But use hath prevailed to have it written with a double *ss*.

Qu. What is the meaning of that second Note annexed to the Rule, touching the Supines of verbs, which double the first syllable of the present in the preterperfect tense, viz.

*Hic etiam Hic etiam advertas, quod syllaba prima supinis advertas. Quam vult prateritum geminari non geminatur :*

*Idque totondi dans tonsum docet, atque cecidi quod casum, & cecidi quod dat casum, atque tetendi quod tensum & tentum, tutudi tunsam, atque p pedit quod format peditum; adde dedi quod jure datum vult?*

An. The meaning of this second Note is this: That such verbs as have a reduplication of their first syllable of the present tense in their preterperfect tense, have not that reduplication in their Supines. So that of *tondi* is made not, *tonsum*, but *tonsam*; of *cecidi*, not *cecasum* but *casum*; of *tetendi* not *tetensum* or *tetentum*, but *tensum* & *tentum*; of *tutudi* not *tutunsum*, but *tunsam*; of *pepedi*, not *pepeditum*, but *peditum*.

[ *Hic etiam advertas* ] This note is not peculiar relative to the verbs in this Rule, but is extended unto other verbs also: as namely unto *pepigi pactum*, *pepigi punctum*; *pepuli pulsum*; *ceculi* (if any such preterperfect tense may be allowed of) *culsam*; *fefelli fultum*; and *cecini cantum*.

*Atque tetendi quod tensum & tentum* ] From *casum* comes *tensus* *Stat. 9. Theb. Poplite tenso saxa tenet. Lucan. 1. 1. Et varias ignis tenso dedit acre formas. Id. 1. 2. Tensisque rudentibus actæ.* From *tentum* comes *tentum* *Hor. 2. Serm. Sen pinguis tentus omaso Furius. Id. Epol. 16. Resertque tenta Grex amicus ubera. Id. Ep. 17. Neque est levare tanta spiritus præcordia. Ib. Oc. 12. Tenta cubilia testaque rumpit.*

*Tutudi tunsam* ] Thence *Virgil. Georg. 3. Tunsam*

*galla admiscere sapore. Id. Georg. 4. Tunis gemet area frugibus. Ar. 1. Tunsæ pectora palinis.* This verb hath another Supine, namely *tusum*. Thence *tusus*. *Plin. l. 22. c. 13. Radix tusa cum aceto non minus utilis. Ib. c. 21. Folia tusa in pastillo digerunt. Ib. c. 25. Paris tusus atque iterum coctus.* Daniel Vossius Farnaby.

*Atque pepedi quod format peditum*] Deshaerius, Vossius, Farnaby and Burles, Ramus and Rhenius, &c. give this verba Supine: Other Grammarians think otherwise. Mr. Harris gives it none. Richerius denies it hath any. Alvarus and Duisburgensis speak warily of it. This last saith, *Supinum est peditum, licet non sit multum frequens.* The former, *Hujus verbi supinum non facile invenies: qui putant habere peditum, non satis probant.* Whereupon some are so wise as to say nothing of it, as Hayne and Bird. That Vossius allows of it, he gives you his ground, which is his reading the verbal *peditus* or *peditum* in *Catull. Carm. 5. 5. Subtile & leve peditum Libonis*; and his finding it in *Charisius l. 2.* If you like not his reason, which is the best, and all I see given, you may put it out, as some do, and in the stead of it write, — *atque pependi Quod format pensum.* Which Supine is generally allowed of, as from *pendo*, though not as from *pendeo*, which Vossius and Farnaby deprive of Supine, though Harris and Richerius are pleased to give it one, with whom do side not Ramus only, but Rhenius, who saith, thence is formed *pensilis*, used by Plaut. in *Pseud. 1. 1. Restim volo mihi emere, qui me faciam pensilem.*

Q. How are the words of this Rule and its Notes declined?

Ans. The words in this Rule and Notes are declined thus:

*Video, vides, vidi, videre, visum.*

*Pando, pandis, pandi, pandere, passum [ & pansum ].*

*Sedeo, sedes, sedi, sedere, sessum.*

*Scindo, scindis, scidi, scindere, scissum.*

*Findo, findis, fidi, findere, fissum.*

B b

Fodis.

The Declining of the words.

*Fodio, fodiis, fodi, fodere, foffum.*  
*Tondeo, tondes, torondi, tondere, tonfum.*  
*Cado, cadis, cecidi, cadere, cafum.*  
*Caſo, cadis, cecidi, cadere, cafum.*  
*Tendo, tendis, tetendi, tendere, tenfum [ & tentum. ]*  
*Tundo, tundis, tundi, tundere, tunfum [ & tuſum. ]*  
*Pedo, pedis, pepedi, pedere, peditum.*  
*Do, das, dedi, dare, datum.*

**Q<sup>a</sup>. What is the Rule for the Supines of preterperfect tenses ending in Gi ?**

*An.* The Rule for the forming of Supines from preterperfect tenses ending in *gi*, is this : *Gi fit ſum*, ut *legi lectum*.

*Gi fit  
ſum.*

**Q<sup>a</sup>. What is the meaning of that Rule ?**

*An.* The meaning of the Rule is this : That of a preterperfect tense ending in *gi*, the Supine is formed by changing *gi* into *ſum* : as of *legi* by ſuch change is made *lectum*.

**Q<sup>a</sup>. What Exceptions are there from this Rule ?**

*An.* There is but one word properly excepted from it, which is *fugi*, from which the Supine is formed, not by changing *gi* into *ſum*, but into *gitum*.

In all the other words *gi* is changed into *ſum* : only there is in them ſome further alteration in their former and middle ſyllables ; the reduplications omitted, as in *ſepigi*, *teſigi*, and *pupugi* ; and the firſt vowel of the preſent retained, as in *pegi* of *pango*, *ſepigi* of *pago*, *ſreſigi* of *ſraago*, *teſigi* of *tango*, and *egi* of *ago* ; and the *u* in the preſent tenſe of *pungo*, that was left out in *pupugi* the preterperfect tenſe, reſumed into the Supine *punctum* ( if it muſt be ſaid to be formed of *pupugi*, and not rather of *puxi*, which though hardly ſound alone, yet is the common preterperfect tenſe to the compounds of *pungo*. ) So our Authour goes on —

— *ſepi pepigique*  
*Dat paſſum, ſreſgi ſcaſum, teſigi quoque taſum,*  
*Egi aſum, pupugi punctum ; fugi fugium dat.*

Q. How are the words of this Rule declined

or?

An. The words of this Rule are declined thus :

*Lego, legis, legi, legere, lectum.*

*Pango, pangis, pegi, & panxi, pangere, pactum.*

*[Pago, pagis,] pepigi, [pagere,] pactum.*

*Frango, frangis, fregi, frangere, fractum.*

*Tango, tangis, tetegi, tangere, tactum.*

*Agro, agis, egi, agere, actum.*

*Pungo, pungis, pupugi, pungere, punctum.*

*Fugio, fugis, fugi, fugere, fugitum.*

Q. What is the Rule for the forming of Supines from Preterperfect tenses in *li*?

An. The Rule for the forming of Supines from preterperfect tenses ending in *li* is this —

*Li fit sum; ut falli stans pro sale condio falsum.*

*Li fit sum.*

Q. What is the meaning of this Rule?

An. The meaning of the Rule is this : That of a preterperfect tense ending in *li*, the Supine is formed by changing *li* into *sum* : as of *falli* by such change is made *falsum*.

Q. Is there any Exception from this Rule?

An. From this Rule there are properly but three words excepted. The first is *tuli*, whose Supine *latum* is either a word borrowed from elsewhere to supply the place of a Supine to it, or else formed of it, by changing *li* into *latum*, and casting away the first syllable *tu*. The second is *pepuli*; and the third *ceculi*, which form not *li* but *i* into *sum*, and do moreover cast away the initial reduplicated syllables *pe* and *ce*, so making *pulsum* and *cusum*.

Q. What are the other two words in the Rule regularly formed?

An. The other two words in the Rule are regularly formed as touching the last syllable: for they both change *li* into *sum*, according to the Rule. But the first, namely *falsum*, resumes the first vowel of its present tense, and rejects the reduplication in the preterperfect

tense: So of *fefelli* making *falsum*. And the second namely *vu'sum* (if *vulsum* must be formed of *velli*, and not of *vulsi*) besides the change of *li* into *sum* in the end changes also *e* into *u* in the beginning, So of *velli* making *vulsum*. So our Authoar, *Dat pepuli pulsum, seculi culsum, atque fefelli Falsum; dat velli vulsum; tu habet quoque latum.*

¶ *Salli stans pro sale condio*] This Note *stans pro sale condio* is put here to distinguish *salli* of *sallo* from *salli* of *psallo* (as some write it, though the right writing be *Psalli*) the former hath *falsum* for his Supine, the latter hath no Supine. Antiently there hath been *salitum* or *sallitum*; whence *salitus* or *sallitus*. *Corn. Sever. At quem salliti pomiliones adferebantur.* But that was *salivi* of the fourth conjugation, in all likelihood.

**Qu. How are the words of this Rule declined?**

*An.* The words of this Rule are declined thus:

The declining of *Pello*, *pellis*, *pepuli*, *pellere*, *pulsum*.  
the words. [*Cello*, *cellis*, *ceculi*, *cellere*, *culsum*.]

*Percello*, *percellis*, *percuti*, *percellere*, *perculsum*.  
*Fallo*, *fallis*, *fefelli*, *fallere*, *falsum*.  
*Vello*, *vellis*, *velli* [*& vulsi*], *vellere*, *vulsum*.  
*Fero*, *fers*, *tuli*, *ferre*, *latum*.

**Qu. What Rule is there for the forming of Supines from preterperfect tenses in *mi*, *ni*, *pi*, and *qui*?**

*An.* For the forming of Supines from preterperfect tenses ending in *mi*, *ni*, *pi*, and *qui*, there is this Rule.

*Mi*, *ni*, *pi*, *qui tum fiunt*, *velut hic manifestum*:  
*Emi emtum*, *veni ventum*, *cecini cecantum*,  
*A capio cepi dans captum*, *a cœpio cœptum*;  
*A rumpo rupi rupitum*, *liqui quoque lictum*.

**Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule?**

*An.* The meaning of this Rule is this: That of a preterperfect tense ending in *mi*, *ni*, or *pi*, a Supine is formed by changing *i* into *tum*; and of a preterperfect ending

*Mi*, *ni*, *pi*,  
*qui tum*  
*fiunt*.

ending in *qui* a Supine is formed by changing *qui* into *flum*.

As of *emi* by such change is made *emtum*; of *veni* *ventum*; of *cecini* (a of the present tense being withheld resumed, and *ce* the reduplication in the preterperfect tense being rejected) is made *cantum*; of *cepi* from *capio* (the first vowel of the present tense being resumed) is made *caprum*; of *cepi* from *capio* is made *caepium*; of *rupi* *ruptum*; and of *liqui* *littum*.

[*Emi emptum*] So it is written ordinarily; but the right writing is *emtum*, and most agreeing with this Rule, which saith *mi tum fit*, not *mi ptum*. Though it rather methinks should have been, *Mi, ni, pi faciunt tum, qui etum hic ut manifestum*; or in some such way. For strictly, if *mi, &c.* be made *tum*, then *emi* will neither be *emtum*, nor *emptum*, but *etum*, so *veni*, not *ventum*, but *vetum, &c.*

[*A capio caepium*] This verb is looked upon as a Defective: (and so delivered to be afterward in our Grammar, like *odi* and *memini*) in the present tense, at least *magna ex parte*. And I suppose that, and the tenses coming of it, are not very vulgarly read. Yet read they are, some of them at least, both in *Plaut.* and *Ter.* and *Cato*. From this last *Vossius* quotes, *Caepiam seditiosa verba loqui*. And so from *Cælius* in *Peribæa*. *Aere obscuro hercle desinam, Mane caepiam*. *Plant. Truc. 2. 1. ubi nihil habeat alium quæstum caepiat*. *Id. Menech. 5. 5. Neque ego insonio, neque ego pugnæ, neque lites caepio*. *Id. Persa. 1. 3. Lubido extemplo caepere est convivium*. *Ter. Ad. 3. 3* (or as some read 4.) *Annon sex totis mensibus Prius olfecissim, quàm ille quidquam caeperet*. So *Vossius* reads it, though others *caeperit*; and so *Turnebus*, adding, *omnino legendum est caepet, ab antiquo verbo capio; nam temporum ratio illud caeperit refutat, & aspernatur; caeperet autem flagitat & poscit*. And so *Donatus*. But whether all this will serve either to render this verb no defective, or to bring it back again into use I know not. See *Voss. de Analog. l. 3. c. 39. Alvar. p. 243.*



*Liqui quoque liſtum* ] The ſimple Supine *liſtum*, or any thing of it, is hardly read but in *Prifcian*, and from him in *Stephanus*, but without any example of it, or derivative participle, or verbal from it. Thence our *Author* afterwards reckons it among them that want Supines. *Reſpuo, linguo, luo, &c.* And ſo both *Mr. Harris* leaves it without Supine; and *Richerius*, declining it *linquo liqui, reſeſto ſupino*. Yet in the compounds of it *delinquo* and *relinquo* *liſtum* is read. And ſo *Alvarius* ſaith, *Linguo caret ſupino, compoſita habent; ut reſiſtum, deſiſtum*; and ſo *Richerius*, *compoſita liſtum fabricant in ſupino, ut delinquo deliqui, deſiſtum, &c.* And thence it is that thoſe, give this word a Supine, as our *Author* here, *Deſpauterius, Ramus, Rherius, Voſſius, Shirley* and *Bird*, are to be underſtood (as I conceive) as meaning only, that it hath a Supine when it is compounded. And accordingly *Alvarius* gives the Rule for this verb thus: *Linguo ſibi liqui, cupiunt ſibi pignora liſtum*. And ſo *Hayne*, a *liqui formato reſiſtum*, adding in his Margine this Note, with a reference to the Supine *reſiſtum*. *In compoſito relinquo: Supina verbi ſimplicis non leguntur*. And *Mr. Farnaby* and *Burles* to ſhew the ſame have only the compound *relinquo, reliqui, reſiſtum*, and not the ſimple *linquo, liqui liſtum*. And with this diſtinction of having a Supine, when it is compounded, and of having no Supine, when it is not compounded, is that contradiction of himſelf wherewith our *Author* by ſome is charged, eaſily ſalved and cleared.

Q<sup>i</sup>. How are the words of this rule declined?

Ans. The words of this rule are declined thus:

The declining of the words.

*Emo, emis, emi, emere, emitum.*

*Venio, venis, veni, venire, ventum.*

*Cano, canis, cecini, canere, cantum.*

*Capio, capis, cepi, capere, captum.*

[*Cæpio, cæpis*] *cæpi, [cævere] cæſtum.*

*Rumpo, rumpis, rupi, rumpere, ruptum.*

*Linquo, linquis, liqui, linquere, liſtum.*

Q<sup>i</sup>.

Qu. What is the Rule for the Supine of a Preterperfect tense ending in *Ri*?

An. The Rule for the forming of a Supine from a preterperfect tense in *Ri* is this——  
*Ri fit sum, ut verri versum.*

*Ri fit sum*

Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule?

An. The meaning of the Rule is this: That of a Preterperfect tense ending in *ri*, a Supine is formed by changing *ri* into *sum*; as of *verri* by such change is made *versum*.

Qu. Is there any exception from this Rule?

An. From this Rule *partum* is excepted, which besides that it casts away the reduplication of the preterperfect tense, and resumes the first vowel of the present tense, changes also *ri* into *tum*, so that from *peperi* of *pario* is formed *partum*.

[ *Verri versum* ] It may be supposed that antiently it hath formed *verritum*: because thence formed may be read *converritor*. Whence Appul. in *Apologia*, hath *converritorem pridiana reliquia*: but all too old to be brought back into use.

[ *Partum* ] I conceive *partum* may be said to be made by a Syncope from *parisum*, and that formed from *parvi*: both because some of the compounds of *pario* have *perui* in the preterperfect tense, as *operio* and *aperio*; and because the participle in *rus*, formed from this verb is *pariturus*. See before, *fit rio ri*: and *Cujus nata peri*. But But I will not contend with any about it. Only I shall tell him that Deshaunierius from *peperi* of *pario* forms both *partum* and *paritum*: *Dat pario peperi partum paritum*. So he whom Duisburgensis follows therein saying, *Dat peperi partum vel paritum; hinc pariturus, illic partus*.

Qu. How are the words of this Rule declined?

The declining of the words.

An. The words of this Rule are declined thus:

*Verro, verri, verri, vertere, versum.*

*Pario, paris, peperi, parere, partum.*

**Qu. What is the Rule for the Supine of Preterperfect tenses ending in *si*?**

**An.** The Rule for forming a Supine from a preterperfect tense ending in *si* is this: *Si fit sum ut vidi visum.*

**Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule?**

**An.** The meaning of the Rule is this, That of a preterperfect ending in *si* a Supine is formed by changing *si* into *sum*: as of *visi* by such change is made *visum*.

**Qu. Are there any Exceptions from this Rule?**

**An.** From this Rule only these eight Supines are properly excepted, which end in *tam*, though formed from preterperfect tenses in *si*, namely *fultum*, *haustum*, *fartum*, *factum*, *ustum*, *gestum*, *tortum* and *indultum*: for as for *missum*, that doth agree with the Rule, only (as hath before been observed of others) it takes in *s* into the middle of it, or doubles the *s* in it; So our Author

————— *Tamen s geminato*

*Missi formabit missum: fulsi excipe fultum*

*Hausi haustum, farsu fartum, farsu quoque fartum,*

*ussi ustum, gessi gestum: torsi duo tortum*

*Et torsum, indulsi indultum indultumq. requirit.*

[ *Visi visum* ] Unless we like rather to form *visum* alwaies from *vidi*, this may go for *Vossius*, or any else.

[ *Fulsi excipe fultum* ] This *fulsi* is not of *fulgeo* of the second conjugation, which perhaps borrows a preterperfect tense from *fulgo* of the third ( read in *Lucret.* l. 5. *Fulgere cum cæli donavit plaga vapores.* And ib. l. 6. *Fulgit item cum rarefunt quoque nubila cæli* ) for that verb hath no Supines: but from *fulcio* of the fourth.

[ *Hausi haustum* ] *Hauustum* is made of *hausum* by putting in *t* after the *s*. Thence *hausurus* in *Virg.* *Æn.* 4. *Supplicia hausurum scopulis.* In *Appul.* there is found *hauri-*

*hauritum* : but that is formed from *hauriri*, as much also out of use, as *hauritum* is, *Vossius*, *Farnaby*, *Dane-sius*.

*Farsi factum* ] *Factum* is by a Syncope put for *factum*, as that by a Syncope is put for *farcitum*, whence *farcimen* and *farcitus*; which *Cic. in Verr.* hath, *Pulvinius perlucidus Melitensi rosâ farcitus*. but is now hardly used.

*Torsi duo tortum & torsum* ] With our *Author* here-in agrees the *Gryphisw. Gram.* and *Rhenius* who from *torsi* saith *torsio* is formed, which Substantive is read in *Plin. l. 20. c. 17. Ejus usus contra torsiones stomachi*. But in none else can I find *torsum*, unless with a note intimating its antiquation : *Vossius* having mentioned *tortum* adds : *Veteres tamen & torsum dixere, unde Ca-to 2. Orig. Marfus hostem occidit prius, quàm Pelignus : Propterea Marucini vocantur de marso de tortum nomen*. So *Alvarus*, *Torsum* a torqueo apud vetissimos reperitur, sed jam exolevit. *Voss. de Analog. l. 3. c. 24. Alvar. p. 240.*

¶ *Indulsi indultum indulsumque*—] *Indultum* is by all allowed of; *indulsum* by none beside our *Author* that I meet with except *Sebastian Duuburgensis*, who saith of *indulgeo*, that it sometime hath *indulsum*. It might have been wished he had named some *Authority* for it. But that is no easie matter to do, at least in the opinion of *Alvarus*, who saith, *Indulsum non facile invenies, neq; Grammatici ullum testem citant.* p. 240. And till we have authority for the use of it, we may do well to let the using of it alone.

**Qu. How are the words of this Rule declined?**

*An.* The words of this Rule are declined thus :

*Viso, visis, visi, visere, visum.*

*Mitto, mittis, misi, mittere, missum.*

*Fulcio, fulcis, fulsi, fulcire, sultum.*

*Haurio; hauris, hauri, haurire, haurum,*

*Sarcio, sarcis, sarsi, sarcire, sartum.*

*Uro, uris, ussi, urere, usum.*

The de-clining of the words.

*Gero,*

*Gero, geris, gessi, gerere gestum.*

*Torqueo, torques, torxi, torquere, tortum.*

*Indulgeo, indulges, indulxi, indulgere, indultum.*

**Q.** What is the Rule for the forming of a Supine from a preterperfect ending in *psi*?

*Psi fit  
ptum.*

**A.** The Rule for the forming of a Supine from a preterperfect ending in *psi* is this: *Psi fit ptum*, as *scripsi scriptum*.

**Q.** What is the meaning of this Rule?

**A.** The meaning of this Rule is this: That of a preterperfect ending in *psi* the Supine is formed by changing *psi* into *ptum*; as of *scripsi* by such change is made *scriptum*.

**Q.** Are there any Exceptions from this Rule?

**A.** From this Rule *campsum* is excepted, which forms *psi* into *psum*, if any such word be read, and may be admitted as *cambio*.

[ *Psi fit ptum* ] So of *forpsi* is made *forptum*: and as for *forbitum*, which seems to have been in use, because thence is formed *forbitio* used in *Plaut. Pseud. 2. 3. Quia forbitioze faciam ego te hodie mea*—that is formed from *forbitum* of *forbui*.

*Campi excipe campsum* ] See *Quarta dat is ivi*, before.

**Q.** How are the words of this Rule declined?

The de-  
clining of  
the words. **A.** The words of this Rule are declined thus:  
*Scribo, scribis, scripsi, scribere, scriptum.*  
*Cambio, cambis, campsi, cambire, campsum.*

**Q.** What is the Rule for the forming of a Supine from a preterperfect ending in *ti*?

**A.** The Rule for the forming of a Supine from a preterperfect ending in *ti* is this: —

*Ti fit tum; Ti fit tum; a flo namque steti, a sistoque stiti fit.*  
*Præterito commune statum*

**Q.** What is the meaning of this Rule?

**A.** The meaning of this Rule is this: That of a pre-

preterperfect ending in *ti*, a Supine is formed by changing *ti* into *tum*: as of *steti* by such change (and the remission of *a*) is made *statum*.

Qu. Is there any exception from this Rule?

An. From this Rule is excepted *versum* which is formed of *verti*, by changing *ti* into *sum*; so saith our Authour

——— *Verti excipe versum.*

¶ *A sto namque steti, a sistoque stiti fit Præterito commune statum* J. That is from *steti* the preterperfect of *sto*, and from *stiti* the preterperfect of *sisto* (actively signifying to make to stand) is formed one Supine *statum*, whence comes *status* signifying as much as *στασις*, as in *stati dies*, and *stata sacrificia* as *Vossius* saith, *Etymolog.* p. 122.

Qu. How are the words of this Rule declined?

An. The words of this Rule are declined thus:

*Sto, stas, steti, stare, statum.*

*Sisto, sistis, stiti, sistere, statum.*

*Verto, vertis, verti, vertere, versum.*

The declining of the words.

Qu. What is the Rule for the forming of a Supine from a preterperfect tense in *Vi*?

An. The Rule for the forming of a Supine from a preterperfect in *vi* is this: *Vi fit tum, ut flavi statum. Vi fit tum.*

Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule?

An. The meaning of the Rule is this: That of a Preterperfect ending in *vi* the Supine is formed by changing *vi* into *tum*: as of *flavi* by such change is made *statum*.

Qu. Are there any Exceptions from this Rule?

An. From this Rule there are eleven verbs, which have supines somewhat differing; not in respect of their last syllable, for they all change *vi* into *tum*, and so far agree with the Rule, but in respect of some other letter, or syllable, which is added to, taken from, or altered in them.

The

The first is *pavi*, which in the Supine takes in *s* before *tum*; so of *pavi* making *pastum*.

The second is *lavi*, which unto *a* takes in *u* before *tum*, and so of *lavi* makes *lautum*, for which they antiently (changing the *a*, or *au* into *o*) said *lotum* (for as for *lavatum* that is regularly formed of *lavavi* now out of use.

The third is *potavi*, which by the taking out of *ti* from *potatum* regularly formed makes *potum*.

The fourth is *favi*, of which, by the change of *a* into *au*, is made *fautum*.

The fifth is *Cavi*, of which, by the like change of *a* into *au*, is made *cantum*.

The sixth is *sevi*, of which with the change of *e* into *a* is made *satam*.

The seventh is *levi*, which with the change of *e* into *i* is made *litum* (for as for *livi* antiently used *litum* is regular, as formed of that; and so of *lini*, not by this, but a former Rule, *Mi, ni, pi- tum fiant.*)

The eight is *solvi*, of which by the taking in of *u* before *tum*, is made *solutum*.

The ninth is *volvi*, of which by the like taking in of *u* before *tum* is made *volutum*.

The tenth is *singultivi*, of which by the loss of *ti* before *tum* is made *singultum*.

The eleventh is *sepelivi*, of which by the loss of *i* before *tum*, and the change of *e* before *l* into *u* is made *sepultum*.

**Qu.** Why do you not except *venum*, which differs more from the Rule than any of them?

**An.** I do not except *venum*, because *venum* is no Supine of *veneo*, but a part of its composition, which is made up of *venum* and *eo*; so that *veneo* hath no Supine.

¶ *Flavi statum* ] *Flavi* here is of *flo flas*: not of *flaveo flaves*, for that hath no Supines.

¶ *Pavi excipe pastum* ] *Pavi* here is of *pasco*, not of *pa-veo*, for that hath no Supines.



*Dat laui lotum interdum lautum atque lavatum* ] Of *lavo lavas comes lavatum*: but of *lavo laui* is in all likelihood comes *lautum* and *lotum*. Some would have *lautum* made of *lavitum* by a Syncope: but if *i* be taken out, there must still be a change of the *v* consonant into *u* vowel, and a coalition of those two into one Diphthong *au* to the making of *lautum*. Neither will it so agree with our Rule, for when *vi* is taken away from *laui* to be changed into *tum*, there will remain nothing but *la*: the easier way therefore it appears to me, to change *a* into *au*, and then for the rest all is according to the Rule; and the same may be said of *favi* and *cavi*. But still if any think it better to form them of *lavitum*, *favitum*, *cavitum*, I shall not gain-say.

*Potavi potum interdum facit & potatum* ] *Potatum* is used in *Plaut. Pseud.* 5. 2. *I simul mecum potatum*. Thence by a Syncope is made *potum*. Which is used by *Virgil. Eclog.* 9. *Et potum pastas age Tityre*. From *potatum* comes *potaturus*, used by *Ter. Phorm.* 5. 5. *Nam potaturus apud me est*. From *potum* comes *potus* ordinarily read. *Virg. Georg.* 4. *Quoque modo potis gaudeverint inryha fibris*: and *poturnus*, *Lucan.* 1. 5. *Strymona sic gelidum bruma pellenae relinquant Poturae te Nile grues*.

*Cavi cautum* ] This Supine *Vossius* forms of *cavitum* by a Syncope of *i*, but he must also change *av* into *au*, else it will not do. Hence comes *cavitio* as *Festus* saith, for that which now we say *cautio*. And (as *Scaliger* reads that in *Plaut. Pseud.* 2. 3. which ordinarily is read *cavata*) *cavita est*. *Nam ipsa mihi opportunitas non potuit opportunis Advenire, quam huc cavita est mihi opportune epistola*. *Frischlin* would have it formed of *catum*, and because *catus* signifying *advised*, *warly*, *prudent*, seems derived from thence. *Plaut. Epid.* 2. 2. hath *consilium catum*: and both *Plaut. Pseud.* 2. 3. & *Cic.* 1 *Tusc. homo catus*. And *Plaut. Trin.* 3. 2. *Proinde ut corde amantes sunt cavi*. *Vossius* rejects this, because *catus*, as he saith, never is a Participle. I will not be Umpire

pire betwixt them : Either way from *catum* or *cavillum*, by Addition, or Subtraction, and due alteration, we may form *cantum* : and that's all I care for at present.

*Litum* ] Hence comes *litus* used both in the simple and compound way. In the simple. *Virg. 4. Georg. Et paribus lita corpora guttis. Martial. l. 10. Ep. 68. Deque coloratis nunquam lita mater Etruscis.* In the compound. *Cic. 1. Ep. ad Calv. apud Priscian. Tali moleste, quod litera delicta sunt a te reddita. Tabulae se interlitas esse clamant.*

*Vult singultivi singultum* ] Whether *singultum* or *singultitum* be the Supine of this verb, *Vossius* saith, *non satis convenit.* Yet he set down the former (and so do all I meet withal) for the Supine of it : moved thereto by the consideration of *singultus* the verbal. *Rhenius* considering that, and *singulto* also, set it down so too. *Duisburgensis*, when he so set it down, besides his Authour *Despauterius*, who delivers that for the Supine of it, had an eye to the Adverb *singultim*, used by *Horace*, as he cites him, *ut veni coram singultim multa locutus.* Yet *Vossius* considering also that *singultus* may perhaps better come from *singultio*, resolves into this opinion, *ut omnino satius sit Supino abstinere.* *De Etymolog. Lat. p. 125.*

*Veneo, venis, venivi, venum* ] *Veneo* is compounded of *venum* and *eo*, as *venundo* of *Venum* and *do*, and *peffundo* of *peffum* and *do*, and *satisdo* of *satis* and *do*. But verbs are not compounded of, nor formed from their Supines, but Supines formed from their verbs. Therefore being part of the composition of *veneo*, it can be no Supine of it; no more than *peffum* or *satis* can be the Supine of *peffundo* or *satisdo*. And indeed *venum* is a Noun. Hence *Tacit. 13. Annal. Militibus immunitas servaretur, nisi in iis quae veno exercebant.* lb. l. 14. *Posita veno irritamenta luxus.* So that *venire* is in one word *ad venum ire*, or *venum ire*, without, but understanding *ad*, as *Plaut. Mercat. Prolog. said, mercatum*

re, for *ad mercatum ire*. See Farnab. p. 42. Voss. Etymolog. Lat. p. 130. and Analog. l. 3. c. 33. and the addenda to that Book. p. 118. And if the authority and reason of these two great Grammarians must stand good, then in a mistake will be not our Authour alone, but many more, as Deshaunterius, Alvarus, Ramus, Richerius, Gram. Gryphistw. Hayne, Harris, Bird, Jasz-Berengi. To supply the place of a Supine to this verb, which Rhenius saw had none of its own, he saith, *Supini loco usurpatur adverbium venum*. p. 222. And Mr. Shirley compounds *veneo ex adverbio venum & eo, sicut ex pessum fit pessundo*. That *pessum* properly signifieth deorsum, Pareus saith in his *Lexicon Plaut.* and so it is an adverb, and so he saith it is, *valens in imum locum, & quasi sub pedes*. But that *venum* is an Adverb is not to me so likely, as that it is a noun because of the variations of case, which I find of that word, which agree not to an adverb. Yet I will not stubbornly contend with any about it: but having reported the opinions of Grammarians in this matter, leave the Reader to chuse what he is best pleased withal.

*Sepelivi rite sepultum*] Cato in *Thermis* cited by Priscian l. 9. hath, *Mortuus est sepelitus est*. Thence it is probable, that *sepultum* was made by a Sycope, of *sepelitus*, with the change of *e* into *u*. And so Danssius, and Vossius affirm. Voss. Analog. l. 3. c. 33. Danes. Schol. l. 2. c. 13.

Qu. How are the words of this Rule declined?

An. The words of this Rule are declined thus:

The declining of the words.

*Flo, flui, flui, flave, flatum.*  
*Pasco, pascu, pavi, pascere, pastum.*  
*Lavo, lavis, lavi, lavere, lautum, & lotum.*  
*Lavo, lavas, lavi, lavare, lavatum.*  
*Poto, potas, potavi, potare, potatum, & potum.*  
*Faveo, faves, favi, fovere, fantum.*  
*Caveo, caves, cavi, cavere, cautum.*  
*Sero, seris, sevi, serere, satum.*  
*Lino, linis, lavi, [livi, lini] linere, litum.*

So, so,

*Solvo, solvis, solvi, solvere, Solutum.*

*Volvo, volvis, volvi, volvere, volutum.*

*Singultio, singultis, singultivi, singultire, [singultum.]*

*Veneo, venis, [veniri] venii, venire.*

*Sepelio, sepelis, sepelivi, sepelire, sepultum.*

**Qu.** What Rule is there for the forming of a Supine from a preterperfect in *ui*?

**Quod dat** **An.** For the forming of a Supine from a preterperfect in *ui*, there is this Rule: *Quod dat ui, dat itum, ut domui domitum.*

**Qu.** What is the meaning of this Rule?

**An.** The meaning of the Rule is this: That of a Preterperfect ending in *ui* a Supine is formed by changing *ui* into *itum*: as of *domui* by such change is made *domitum*.

**Qu.** Are there any Exceptions from this Rule?

**An.** From this Rule there are three Exceptions:

**Qu.** What is the first Exception of?

**An.** The first Exception is of verbs in *uo*, which have *ui* in their preterperfect tense: for in them generally the Supine is formed of the preterperfect tense by changing *ui* into *utum*: as of *exuo exui* is made *exutum*: So our Authour — *Excipe quodvis.*

**Excipe** *Verbum in uo, quia semper ui formabit in utum,*  
**quodvis** *Exui ut exutum:*  
**verbum in**

*uo.*

**Q.** But do not all verbs forming *uo* into *ui* in the preterperfect tense, make *utum* in their Supine?

**An.** Not all verbs in *uo ui* have *utum*, but some *uitum*, changing *i* into *itum*, or *ui* into *uitum*: as of *ruo rui* is formed *ruitum*. So our Authour —

*A ruo deme rui ruitum dans.*

**r. ruitum** **[ Rui ruitum ]** With our Authour herein, agrees *Desfontenais, Duishu. gensis, Harrii, Shirley, Rhemius, Richerius, Hayne, Alvarus, Bayles.* But *Vossius* in his *Analog.* l. 3. c. 32. plainly saith, *Aruo est rui, ruitum.* And that such a Supine hath been in use, is evident by

by *vita casa* met withal, not only amongst the latter Civilians, but in *Varro* de L. L. l. 8. *Ideoq̃ in venditionis lege fundi vita casa ita dicimus ut & producamus.* And again by the compounds of this verb, which have *rutum* in their Supines, acknowledged by those, that allow the simple verb to have but *ruitum*; as *dirutum*, *erutum*, whence the Participles *dirutus* and *erutus*. Yet withal that *ruitum* hath been used, appears by *ruiturus* derived from it, and used by *Lucan*. l. 2. v. 499. *Ite simul pedites, ruiturum ascendite pontem.* So by *Ovid*. Met. l. 4. f. 13. *Aut petis, aut urges ruiturum Sisyphe saxum.* And by *dirutus* in an ancient Inscription in Rome, wherein is *ediculam dirutam*, as *Vossius* cites it from *Gruter*. And by *eruturus* in use, though from *erutum*, as *Vossius* saith. Hence both *Vossius* himself in his *Etymolog. Latin*. p. 124. and *Ramus* and *Farnaby* and the *Gram. of Gryphiswald*. give unto this verb *ruitum* and *rutum*. And for ought I know, one may as well be used as the other. Hither may be referred *luo lui*, which (though it be hardly now to be found <sup>in the</sup> expressed, and therefore is afterward ranked by our Authour amongst those, that *raro aut nunquam* have any Supines, yet) hath, or anciently hath had *luitum* for its Supine. Hence *luiturus* in *Claudian*. Paneg. 6. Consul. Hono. ii. -- *Puppis Vastato tandem penas luitura profundo.* And hence *luitio* in *Ulpian* cited by *Stephanus*. Whereupon though *Desfontenarius* and *Alvarus*, *Richerius*, *Hayne* and *Bird*, do deprive this verb of Supine; yet *Vossius* and *Farnaby*, *Ramus* and *Burles*, *Rhenius* and the *Gryphiswald Grammar*, *Shirley* and *Jasq-Berengi* do allow this verb *luitum* for its Supine. Which if it may be allowed, will be another exception to our Authours Exception from *ui* into *utum*, or rather the only Exception that so forms *ui*; because *ruo* forms *ui* into *utum*, as well as into *uitum*, if not only *utum*; *uitum* being made of *utum* by the *Epenthesis*, or putting in of *i*. But thus much for the first Exception.

Q<sup>1</sup>. What is the second Exception of ?

An. The second Exception is of some particular words, which form their Supine by changing *ui* into *tum* : which as our Authour sets them down are these :

*Vult secui sectum, necui nectum, fricuiq;  
Fictum, miscui item mistum, ac amicum dat amictum.  
Torrui habet tostum, docui doctum, tenuique  
Tentum, consului consultum, alui altum alitumq;  
Sic salui saltum, colui oculi quoq; cultum.  
Pinsui habet pistum, rapui raptum, seruique  
A sero vult serium, sic texui habet quoque textum.*

Of which these thirteen, *secui, necui, fricui, amicum, docui, tenui, consului, alui, salui, ocului, rapui, serui*, and *texui*, form a Supine in *tum*, by the just change of *ui* into *tum*; as *secui sectum*, &c. but these four *miscui, torui, colui* and *pinsui*, have some further alteration in them, by loss, or change : *miscui* loseth *e*, and *pinsui* *s* : *colui* changes *o* into *u*, and *torui* for two *r* *r*, takes in one *s*.

¶ *Vult secui sectum* ] *Sectum* is formed of *secui*, as things now stand, by changing *ui* into *tum* : but indeed originally it seems to be made by a Syncope of *secatum*, whence *secaturus* in *Colum.* l. 5. c. 9. mentioned before.

*Necui nectum* ] *Nectum* is likewise by a Syncope formed from *negatum* : not that *nectum* the simple supine is any where read, but that *eneco* the compound of *neco*, is supposed to have *enectum*, because thence is formed the participle *enectus* frequently read in *Cicero*, as 1 *Tusc.* *Mento summo aquam attingens siti enectus Tantalus.* *Possius* also cites *Cic. Philip.* 14. for *internectus* : and though he mention not the words, yet *Stephanus*, from whom I suppose he took them upon trust, doth *Internecti nota credo testamenta subiiciunt.* Though after all this, in that Oration I find no such words. Perhaps they be in some other. He cites also *Plant. Amphit.* for the same, but without any particular reference,

ferences, which he useth to be very punctual in. But Stephanus again, from whom I suppose he took it, cites 4. 35. that is act. 1. sc. 1. v. 35. *Duello extincto maximo, atque internecitis hostibus.* But there again, in one Edition it is *internecatis*; in another it is *internecitis*, yet with *internecatis* in the Margine. And yet *enecatus* is also read of *eneco*, as was noted before from Plin. l. 18. c. 13. *Flaccidorum quoque & in horreis enecatorum, vel major quam virentium.* Instead of *nequineum*, the Teacher, if he please, may read, *eneceum*: for so the verse will stand good too.

*Fricui frictum* ] *Fricum* is also by a Syncope from *fricatum* of *fricavi*: whence *fricatio*, *defricatus*, *perfricatus*, *infricatus*, *refricatus*. Whereof see above in *As in P a senti*.

*Miscui item mistum* ] Of *miscui* regularly is formed *miscitum*, and of that, saith Vossius, by a Syncope of *ei* is made *mistum*. Some leaving out the *i* only, and transposing the *c* and *s* make thereof *mixtum*: & there being no more but *c* and *s*.

*Ac amicum dat amictum* ] So you may say; unless you shall think better to say, that *amixi* makes *amictum*, as *Atvarus* doth, giving the Rule for it thus: —*dat amixit amictum*; or unless you think fit to form it by a Syncope of *i* from *amicitum*, as of *amici vi*.

*Tenuique tentum* ] Hence (*viz.* from *tentum* of *tento*) *in iure absenti dicuntur, qui auctoritate tutoris revoquantur ab addenda hæreditate*, saith Vossius citing *Scævola*, *Papinian*, *Ulpian* for the use of the word. *De Analog.* l. 3. c. 24. Yet saith *Duisburgensis* the Supine *absentum* is not in use: according to a memorial verse; *Abstineo nullum video retinere supinum*; the same we may say of *attineo*, and *pertineo*, which have no supines, according to both Mr. Farnaby and Shirley.

*Consului consultum* ] The regular supine is *consultum*, but of that, now out of use, by a Syncope of *i* is made *consultum*, saith Vossius.

*Alui alitum alitumque* ] Of *alui* first was formed *al-*  
C c z *litum*



*litum* regularly : and thence by a Syncope of *i*, *altum* of *alitur* is *alitus*, read in *Val. Max.* 1. 5. c. 4. *Quid tam in usitatum, quid tam inauditum, quam matrem nata uberibus alitam* ? Of *altum* comes *altus* cited from *Sall.* by *Diomedes*, *Arpini altus*. *Diomedes* yet prefers *alitus*, for the avoiding of ambiguity, lest *altus* fed, should be confounded with *altus* high.

*Collui cultum* ] Of *colitur* by a Syncope of *i*, and a change of *o* into *u*, is made *cultum*.

*Pinxui habet pinxum* ] Of *pinxui* regularly is formed *pinxum*. Thence *Colum.* 1. 12. c. 27. hath, *Irim bene pinxum nec plus unciae pondere addito*. So *pinxum panicum*, and *pinxum hordeum* may be read in *him.* 1. 2. c. 9. and 1. 8. c. 4. Of *pinxum* by the Syncope or taking out of [ *it* ] is made *pinsum*. Thence *Vitruv.* 1. 7. c. 1. *Id non minus pinsum absolutum crassitudine do-drantis*. 1b. *Idque pinsum absolutum ne minus pede sit crassum*. Of the same *pinxum* again by casting out *n* and the middle *i* is made *pistum*. Unless ye think rather to form it from *piso*, which the Ancients, as *Diomedes* saith, used without *n*. Whence *Plin.* 1. 8. c. 10. *Si pistæ serantur*. And thence *pistor*, and *pistrinum*, saith *Vossius*, de *Analog.* 1. 3. c. 31.

*Seruique sertum* ] This simple supine is not now in use ; yet it remains in the compounds and derivatives of it. Of which see above in *Ro fit vi*, *sero seu*, &c. But thus much of the second Exception.

#### Qu. What is the third Exception of ?

*Ans.* The third Exception is of some words ; which from a praterperfect tense in *ui*, form a supine in *sum*, which according to our Authour are these :

*Hæc sed ui mutant in sum.*

*Hæc sed ui mutant in sum* : *nam censeo censum*  
*Collui habet celsum* ; *meto messui habet quoque messum* ;  
*Nexui item nexum*, sic *pexui habet quoque pexum*,  
*Dat patui passum* ; *carui cassum*, *caritumque*.

In which *censui*, and *messui*, *nexui*, and *pexui* do form a supine in *sum*, not by changing of *ui* into *sum*, but *ui* into *um* alter s already in the word, as *censui censum* ;

*ensum*, *messui messum*, where *s* is formally in: *sonex-  
ni nexum*, and *plexui pexum*, where *s* is eminently in:  
standing for *cs*. But for *cellui*, there is no such sim-  
ple verbas that: only *excello* hath *excellui*, and *præ-  
cello præcellui*, and thence by change of the latter *l*  
into *s* and then of *ui* into *um* is made *excelsum* and  
*præcelsum*. And for *patui*, it hath no supine: *passum*  
being the supine of *pandi*, not of *patui*. And *carui*  
though it form *caritum*, according to the Rule, yet it  
doth not form *cassum*, according to this Exception.

¶ *Censuo censum*] That *censuo* makes *censum* is shew-  
ed as *Vossius* saith, by the verbals *census*, *censor*, *censura*  
ordinarily read, and by *censi* and *adcensi* noted by *Fe-  
stus* in the old Authours; and by *recenso Senatu* said by  
*Sueton.* in *Vespasian*: (And so *Suetonius* indeed said,  
ib. c. 9. as *Stephanus*, from whom I suppose *Vossius* took  
it, reads the place, *Supplevitque recensio Senatu &  
equite*; though yet *Isaac Casaubon* reads it *recensito Se-  
natu*) and it may be added by the Noun verbal *recensus*,  
which *Sueton.* in *Jul. Caf. c. 41.* hath *Recensum populi*,  
*nec more, nec loco solito, sed vicatim per dominos in-  
sularum egit*. It may also be added, that, what this  
Authour saith in the same chapter, *Ex his qui recen-  
siti non essent*, the Books of *Pithæus* and *Memmius* read  
*recensi*, as *Casaubon* notes. There is read also *recen-  
situs*, as in the named place of *Sueton.* So in *Claud.*  
*Entrop. l. 2. Prisca recensitis evoluite secula pensis*.  
But that is rather from *recensio* of the fourth Conjugation,  
as *Vossius*, *Alvarus*, and *Danefius* think. To which  
that makes somewhat, that *recensio* the Noun Verbal  
is read in the same place of *Sueton.* viz. *Jul. Caf. c. 41.*  
*Ac ne qui novi cæus recensiois causâ moveri quandoque  
possent, instituit*—*Vossius*, de *Analog. l. 3. c. 24.* *Danef.*  
*Schol. l. 2. c. 13.*

*Cellui habet celsum*] What is to be thought of this,  
see above in *cello pro, frango cecui*.

*Nexui item nexum*] that such a supine as *nexum* is,  
or hath been in being, is evident from *nexus* the partici-

ciple; and *nexus*, and *nexilis* the verbals derived from it. But whether it be from *nexi* or *nexui*, and from *nexo* of the first, or either *necto*, or *nexo* of the third, I leave to others, who have more leisure than I to give, determination upon it: though in the mean time I think we may form it from *necto*.

*Sic pexui habet quoque pexum* ] That such a Supine as *pexum*, hath been formed from *pexui*, appears from *pexus* the participle ordinarily read. Whence *Martial*. l. 2. Ep. 44. Edit. Farnab. *Emi seu puerum togamve pexam*. And from *sextas* in *Plin*. l. 11. c. 24. *Quam non ad hoc pertinere videtur sextas tela*. That *pestitum* also hath been formed from this verb, as if it had made in the preterperfect tense *pestui*, or as some say *pestivi* (perhaps not altogether so congruously, being that *pestitum* hath the middle syllable short, which happens not to be in a Supine of a verb that hath a preterperfect in *ivi* of more syllables than two, the compounds of *eo* only excepted). See before in the Rule, *Ab esto fit exi*.

*Dat patui passum* ] That *passum* is the Supine of *pando*, hath before been shewn. See: *Di fit sum*. Deshaue-rius, Ramus and Richerius, Shirley and Bird, agree with our Author in allowing *passum* for the supine of *pateo*, who therein follows *Priscian*. l. 9. and *Diomedes* l. 1. But *Vossius*, *Rhenius*, *Farnaby*, *Burles*, *Hayne*, and the *Gryphisw. Gram.* give it no supine, adding (most of them) that *passum* usually mistaken for the Supine of *pateo*, is the Supine of *pando*. And the other not proving their affirmative; what these say, may for me stand good, especially being so great a Grammarian as *Phocas* concludes it to have no supine, from its forming no participle in *us*.

*Carni cassum caritumque* ] That of *carni* is *caritum* regularly formed, is out of dispute; as being clear from that of *Qui l. Met* 1. 2. *Tab. 1. Et tandem nivibus Rhodope cecidit*; and that of *Juvén. 16. Sat. v. 39. Cogitat excedem cariturus tartare magno*. But that *cassum* is formed

formed as any supine of it, is not so clear. Deshaulterius, Richerius, Ramus, Duisburgensis, Bird, Shirley and Jafz-Berengi side with our Authour, forming *cassum*, as well as *caritum* from *carui*. But Rhenius, Farnaby and Burles, form nothing from it but *caritum*. Vossius, Hayne, Alvarus, are against *cassum*: not only because *cassus* is a noun adjective, like *lassus*, but because we cannot say *cassurus*, as we say *cariturus*. And though Priscian l. 9. think *cassum* may be formed of *carco*, yet l. 10. when he comes to speak of Participles and of Tenses, he is of another mind, so the reasons afore mentioned. See Hayne p. 74. Voss. Etymolog. p. 108. Analog. l. 3. c. 24. Danes. Schol. l. 2. c. 13. Alvar. v. 238.

**Q.** How are the words of this Rule declined?

**A.** The words of this Rule are declined thus:

The declension of the words.

*Domo, domas, domui, domare, domitum.*

*Exuo, exuis, exui, exuere, exutum.*

*Ruo, ruis, rui, ruere, ruitum & rutum.*

*Seco, secas, secui, secare, sectum.*

*Eneco, enecas, enecui, enecare, enectum.*

*Frico, fricas, fricui, fricare, frictum.*

*Misceo, misces, miscui, miscere, mistum.*

*Amicio, amicio, amicio, amicio, amicio, amicio, amicio.*

*Torreo, torres, torui, torere, tostum.*

*Docceo, edoces, docui, docere, doctum.*

*Teneo, tenes, tenui, tenere, tentum.*

*Consulo, consulis, consului, consulere, consultum.*

*Allo, alio, alui, alere, alitum & altum.*

*Salio, satis, salui & salii, salire, saltum.*

*Colo, colis, colui, colere, cultum.*

*Oculo, oculis, ocului, oculere, occultum.*

*Pinso, pinxis, pinsui, pinsere, pinsum, pinsum & pinsum.*

*Rapio, rapis, rapui, rapere, raptum.*

*Sero, seris, serui, serere, sertum.*

*Texo, texit, texui, texere, textum.*

*Censeo, censes, censi, censere, censum.*

*Excello, excellis, excellui, excellere, excelsum.*

*Meto, metis, messui, metere, messum.*

*Necis, necis, nexui, necere, nexum.*

*Pecis, pectis, pexui, pectere, pexum.*

*Pateo, pates, patui, patere.*

*Careo, cares, carui, carere, caritum.*

**Qu.** What is the Rule for the forming of a Supine from a preterperfect tense in *xi*?

**An.** The Rule for the forming of a Supine from a preterperfect in *xi* is this, *Xi fit Etum, ut vinxi vin-*  
*Etum.*

**Qu.** What is the meaning of this Rule?

**An.** The meaning of this Rule is this: That of a preterperfect tense ending in *xi* a Supine is formed by changing *x* into *Etum*: as of *vinxi*, by such change is made *vinEtum*.

**Qu.** Is there any thing annexed to this Rule?

**An.** To this Rule there is annexed an *Observation*, and an *Exception*.

**Qu.** What is the Observation annexed to this Rule?

**An.** The Observation annexed to this Rule, as our  
*Quinque abjiciunt*  
*Abjiciunt*  
*7.*  
*Author* makes it, is this — *Quinque abjiciunt*:  
*Nam fixi fEtum, minxi mEtum, inque supino*  
*Dat pinxi pEtum, strinxi, rinxi quoque rEtum.*

**Qu.** What is the meaning of this Observation?

**An.** The meaning of this Observation is this: That five preterperfect tenses, *viz. fixi, minxi, pinxi, strinxi, rinxi* do in the forming of the supines from them, besides the change of *xi* into *tum*, also cast away *n*; so that thereof is made *fEtum, mEtum, pEtum, strEtum, rEtum*.

[ *Minxi mEtum* ] *Mingo* of which *minxi* is formed, is an old verb grown out of use, *meio* being used instead thereof: whence *Despauterius* saith — *Cave dicere mingo*: but *minxi* the preterperfect thereof remains in use, supplying the room of that preterperfect, which *meio* should have of its own, but hath not. Whence *Martial*, l. 3. Ep. 78.

*Minxi*

*Minxisti currens semel Pauline carinā :*

*Meiere vis iterum, jam Palinurus eris.*

He could as well have said *Mingere vis iterum*, if it had been usual. *Minctum* hath been used formerly, for which C. Titius is quoted : but it is now out of use. Richerius deprives *mingo* of all supine, pag. 64. and so Jask-Berengi.

*Rinxi quoque rictum*] That such a verb as *ringo rinxi* hath been in use, and the supine *rictum* thence formed, is evident by the verbal *rictus* derived from it. Whence Richerius reckons it like our *Authour*, with those, that have Supines, but cast away ~~it~~ out of the middle of them. p. 64. and so Desbauterius. But though vulgar Grammarians take it up, upon the account of Priscian's Authority, who in his *l. 10.* doth own it : yet both Alvarus and Vossius tell us, there is nothing of it to be found now in the extant Authours : only the deponent *ringor* being in use, which they say hath neither supine nor preterperfect tense. So that when, in the declaring of the meaning of the Observation, we say *rinxi* maketh *rictum*, the intent is only to shew, what it did make, when it was in use, not to assert it as a verb now to be used. See Alvar. p. 247. Voss. Etym. p. 116. Analog. l. 3. c. 27. Danes. l. 2. c. 13.

Qu. What is the Exception from this Rule ?

An. The Exception from this Rule is this :

*Xum flexi, plexi, fixi dant, & suo fluxum.*

*Xum flexi  
plexi.*

Qu. What is the meaning of this Exception ?

An. The meaning of this Exception is this : That these four preterperfect tenses in *xi, flexi, plexi, fixi* and *fluxi*, do form their Supines, by changing *xi* into *xum*, as making of *flexi flexum*; of *plexi plexum*; of *fixi fixum*, and of *fluxi fluxum*.

¶ *Plexi*] For this verb, as it hath two preterperfect tenses *plexui*, and *plexi* so they make also two supines, *plexum* and *plectitum*; for the latter of which Mr. Faraby quotes Columella, but at large, without mention of place. The Rudiments Writer hath *plectum, plectum* I suppose

pose it was so mis-printed for *pletum plexum*. For *pletum* *Stephanus* cites *Priscian* forming *plexi pletum*. But of *pletum* or *pletitum* I see no instances or Authorities, but what ye have heard. Of *plexum* *Lucretius* hath *plexus* l. 5. *Tum caput atque humeros plexis redimire corosis*. Let that therefore stand.

*Fixi*] This is generally acknowledged to form *fixum*. But it formeth also *fictum* sometimes say both *Farnaby* and *Vossius*. Mr. *Burles* (if he be not mis-printed) gives it no other but *fictum*. In others *fixum* is the current supine. From *fictum* *Diomedes* l. 1. cites *Scaurus*, saying, *sagittis confictus*. From *Callistratus* l. 7. de incendio, ruina, naufragio, this is cited by *Cujacius*; *Si quando navis vel inficta, vel fracta intra finis agri cujusque fuerit*, where *inficta* is put for *infixa*. *Giffanius* (as *Vossius* saith) proves this from *Cicero*, *Varro*, and others in his *Index*, in the word *fictus*. Yet *fixus*, *fixurus*, *confixus*, *infixus* are so ordinary, that *fictus*, or any compounds of it, as from *figo* will hardly ever come into use again.

*Et fluo fluxum*] That *fluxi* formeth *fluxum* is out of doubt. And that it hath also formed a regular Supine *fluctum*, is seen by the Verbal *fluctus*. And so *Vossius* and *Daneshus* noted. But that is now out of use.

Unto these may be added *frixi* of *frigo*, whereof is formed both *frictum* and *frixum*, whence in *Plin. cara frixi*, saith *Vossius*. So in *Cornel. Cels.* l. 2. c. 18. *Tum res eadem magis alit purulenta, quam assa, magis ossa, quam frixa*. But *frictus* of this verb is much more usual. See *Columel.* l. 7. c. 5. *Varro R. R.* l. 2. c. 4. *Plant. Pat.* l. 2.

Q. How are the words of this Rule declined?

Ans. The words of this Rule are declined thus:

The declining of the words.

*Vincio, vincis, vinxi, vincere, victum.*

*Fingo, fingis, finxi, fingere, fictum.*

[*Mingo, mingis*] *minxi, [mingere] mictum.*

*Pingo, pingis, pinxi, pingere, pictum.*

*Stringo, stringis, strinxi, stringere, strictum.*

[*Ringo,*



[Ringo, Ringis, vixi, ringere, victum.]

Flecto, flectis, flexi, flectere, flexum.

Plecto, plectis, plexi, plectere, plexum.

Figo, figis, fixi, figere, fixum.

Fluo, fluis, fluxi, fluere, fluxum.

And thus far of the Rules for the forming of the Supines of simple verbs.

CHAP X.

Qu. **W**hat is the Rule for the forming of the Supines of Verbs compound?

An. The Rule for the formation of Supines from Verbs compounded is this :

*De compositorum Verborum Supinis.*

*Compositum ut simplex formatur quodque supinum.*

*compositum  
ut simplex.*

Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule ?

An. The meaning of the Rule is this : That the Supine of a compounded verb is so formed, as the Supine of the same verb being simple was formed.

Thus, as of *docui* is made *doctum* by the change of *ui* into *tum*; so of *edocui* is made *edoctum* by the same change; and as of *scripsi* is made *scriptum*, so of *conscripsi* is made *conscriptum*.

Qu. Is there alwaies an exact conformity of the compound to the simple verb in this respect ?

An. There is sometimes a variation in the supine of the compounded verb, from the supine of the simple verb, as our Author noteth in that Caution annexed to the Rule, *Quamvis non eadem sed semper syllaba utriq.*

*Quamvis  
non eadem.*

Qu. What is the meaning of that Caution ?

An. The meaning of that Caution is this : That there is sometimes a difference in a letter, or syllable betwixt the simple, and compounded supine; as our

*Au.*

... inews in the supines of *tundo*, *ruo*, *salio*, *sevo*, *capio*, *fatio*, *jacio*, *rapio*, *cano*, *pario*, *stargo*, *carpo*, *facio*, *edo*, and *nosco*.

Qu. What is the difference betwixt the Supine of *tundo*, and the Supines of the Verbs compounded of it?

An. The difference betwixt the Supine of *tundo*, and the Supines of the Verbs compounded of it is this: That whereas the simple verb *tundo* hath *tunsum* to its supine, the verbs compounded of it have supines in *tusum* without the *n* in the middle, as *contusum* and *per-tusum*. So our Authour--

Composita  
a *tunsum*.

Composita a *tunsum* dempta *n* *tusum*.

[ *Tunsum* dempta *n* *tusum* ] Though this may be, yet there is no necessity of it, because as we shewed before, on *Hic etiam advertas*, &c. the simple verb hath *tusum* as well as *tunsum*, for its supine, from whence is formed the simple *tusus*, and so may be the compounds *per-tusus* and *contusus*. Neither is this universally true: for *obtusus* is read with *n* sometimes, though seldomer, if *Stephanus* and *Vossius* take their mark right. For this *Stephanus* cites *Plin. Ep. 3. l. 7. Dulcibus cibis acres acutosque miscerem, ut obtusus illis & oblitus stomachus his excitaretur*. But in some Books he saith it is *obtusus*, and so it is in mine. *Vossius* quotes *Columella l. 6. c. 8. for obtuso alio*; but in my Book it is *tunso* only. *Eandem partem alio tunso, & halleculâ linire*, are the words of that Authour there. He also quotes *Tertullian l. 1. adv. Marcion*, saying that there is read there *obtusis sensibus*. But yet in that, as appears there even by him, Editions vary. Notwithstanding, what both he and *Stephanus* quote out of *Plaut. in Casin. 4. 1. Obtuso ore nunc pervelim progredi senem*, is there read, and that reading owned by *Pareus* in his *Lexicon Plautinum*. So that if at all used, it would be but sparingly.

Qu. What is the difference between the Supines of *ruo*, and of the verbs compounded thereof?

An. The difference between the supine of *ruo*, and the

the supines of the verbs compounded thereof, as our *Author* sets it down, is this : That the simple supine hath *i* in the middle of it, but the compounds have not *i*. So He

— *A ruitum fit I mediâ demptâ rutum.*

As in *dirutum*, *corrutum*, *erutum*, &c.

*A ruitum*

*fit I mediâ*

¶ *I mediâ demptâ rutum* ] There was no necessity of this: there being *rutum* a simple supine without *i*, as well as *ruitum* with *i*, for the compounds to be formed of, or after, as we shewed before in *Quod dat* *ni*.

A more pertinent Exception might be made of the compounds of *luo* : for whereas the simple supine is *lutum*, as we have shewed, the compounds of it have only *lutum*. Whence that of *Persius* 3. *Satyr.* *Dilutas queritur gemit quod fistula guttas.* So *Varro* R. R. 3. 9. *Ea abluta condunt in fursures.* So *Columella* l. 6. c. 3. *Licet etiam si sit leguminum inopia & eluta, & siccata vinacia--* Id. l. 9. c. 16. *Expressa favorum reliquia, posteaquam diligenter aqua dulci perluta sunt, in vas anem conjiciuntur.* If the Teacher please, he may alter the Rule thus : -- *A lutum fit I mediâ demptâ lutum.*

Qu. what is the difference between the Supine of *salio*, and of the Verbs compounded of it?

An. The difference between the supine of *salio*, and of the verbs compounded of it is this : That whereas the supine of the simple verb is *saltum*, the supines of the verbs compounded of it, changing *a* into *u* have *sultum*. This our *Author* notes in his saying, -- *Et a saltum quoque sultum.*

As in *Exsultum* of *exilio*; *dissultum* of *dissilio*; *insultum* of *insilio*; *assultum* of *assilio*; *consultum* of *consilio*; *præsaltum* of *præsilio*; *resultum* of *resilio*; *transsultum* of *transilio* : But *posilio*, and *absilio* have no Supines.

Qu. what is the difference between the Supine of *sero* *sevi*, and the compounds thereof?

An. The difference between the simple supine of *sero*

*fero sevi*; and the compounds thereof is this: That whereas the simple supine is *satum*, the compounds changing *a* into *i* make *situm*; accordingly as our Author saith:

*A fero,*  
*quando sa-*  
*tum.*

*A fero, quando satum format, composita situm dant.*  
As in *confitum, insitum, assitum, circumsitum, destitum, dissitum, intersitum, oblitum, persitum*, supines of verbs compounded of *fero sevi*. See *Burles* p. 207.

¶ *Composita situm dant*] Yet *Stephanus* tells us, that *præfero* read in *Columel.* 7. 9. hath *satum*: but he gives no example: The like he said of *rebero*, read in *Columel.* 3. 11. that it hath *resatum*, but without example. Mr. *Burles* following him in them adds the like of *subfero*, read in *Columel.* 4. 15. but without Example 190. Not only *Gouldman* but *Stephanus*, and so *Cooper*, and *Trebellius* his abbreviators, give it *subsitum* for its supine. Till example appears, to warrant practice, it may be best both in this, and in the other two, to follow the Rule.

**Q1.** What is the difference between the Supines of these Simple Verbs *capio, facio, jacio, rapio, cano, pario, spargo, carpo, farcio*, and the Supines of the Verbs compounds thereof?

*Ans.* The difference between the simple and compound supines of these verbs *capio, facio, jacio, rapio, cano, pario, spargo, carpo, and farcio*, is this: That all the compounds (except one from *capio*, and a few from *facio*) do change the *a* of the simple supines into *e*. Hereupon of *captum* is made *ceptum*, of *factum* *fectum*, of *jactum* *jectum*, of *raptum* *reptum*, of *cantum* *centum*, of *partum* *peritum*, of *sparsum* *persum*, of *carptum* *cerptum*, and of *factum* *fertum*. So our Author, *Hæc capium, factum, jactum, raptum, a per u mutant, Et cantum, partum, spartum, carptum, quoque fertum*.

*Hæc cap-*  
*tum, fa-*  
*ctum.*

¶ *Capium*] Hence *acceptum, conceptum, deceptum, exceptum, incipitum, oceptum, perceptum, præceptum, receptum, susceptum*. Yet as *antecapio*, changes not *a* into *i*, so neither doth *antecapium* change *a* into *e*. Hence

*lit. x. de N. Deor. Antecapita animo rei quadam infor-*  
*matio.* Unless the words be to be read divided.

**Factum** ] Hence *affectum, confectum, defectum, ef-*  
*fectum, insectum, offectum, perfectum, praefectum, profe-*  
*ctum, rescctum, suffectum, interfectum.* But yet those  
 compounds of *facio*, which are compounded with a *noun*,  
*verb*, or *adverb*, and so do not change *a* into *i* in their  
 present tense, do not change *a* into *e* in their supines.  
 Hence *flocisfactum, naucisfactum, calfactum, olfactum,*  
*commonisfactum, benefactum, malefactum, satisfac-*  
*tum.*

**Factum** ] Hence *abjectum, adjectum, coniectum,*  
*dejectum, ejectum, circumjectum, interjectum, pra-*  
*jectum, proijctum, subjectum, superjectum, trajectum,*  
*&c.*

**Raptum** ] Hence *abreptum, arreptum, correptum, di-*  
*reptum, ereptum, praeptum, surreptum, proreptum.*

**Et cantum** ] Hence *concentum, incentum, accentum,*  
*percentum, pracentum, recentum, occentum, succen-*  
*tum.*

**Partum** ] Hence *apertum, opertum, repletum, com-*  
*pertum.*

**Sparum** ] Hence *aspersum, conspersum, inspersum,*  
*perspersum, respersum, circumspersum.*

**Carptum** ] Hence *descriptum, excerptum, discerptum,*  
*concerptum, praeceptum.*

**Fartum** ] Hence *resertum, dissertum*; but *effarcio*  
 makes *effartum*, and *insarcio* *infartum*, saith *Stephanus*;  
 perhaps there may be also *effertum* and *infertum* as *effercio*,  
 and *infercio* are read; but I have nothing of cer-  
 tainty herein to offer.

**Q.** What is the difference between the Supines  
 of *edo*, and the compounds thereof?

**An.** The difference between the supines of *edo*, and  
 of the compounds thereof is this: That though the sim-  
 ple verb *edo* make *esum* and *estum*, yet none of the com-  
 pounds of it do make any more but *esum* only. Ex-  
 cept *somedo*, which maketh both *esum* and *estum*:  
 so

So that of *comedo* is formed *comesum* and *comestum*. So our Authour:

*Verbum edo compositum, non estum, sed facit estum :  
edо compo- unum duntaxat comedo formabit utrumque.  
situm.*

[ *Non estum* ] Hence *abesum*, *adesum*, *ambesum*, *exesum*, *superesum*, *obesum*, *presum*, *subesum*, &c. Nay to find the simple *estum*, unless in a Grammar or Dictionary I conceive will be no easie matter. Yet that such a supine is, or hath been, appears by *comestum* derived from it; if yet any such word as *comestum* may be allowed of, nothing that I meet with, being by our Grammarians alledged for it, but only that *Didymus* speaking of *Sallust* saith, *comestum patrimonio*. What to make of that of *Cato*. c. 157. de R. R. as it is in my Book, I know not. Speaking de brassica he saith, *Ad salutem temperat comesta sese semper cum calore, & vigore arido, simul & humido, & dulci, & amaro, & acri*. That which follows may perhaps be somewhat to purpose. Sed *qua vocatur salivosa in hac septem habet bona in comestura*. For whence *comestura*, but from *comestum*? Yet *comesum* may be safer to be used.

Qu. What is the difference between the simple Supine of *nosco*, and the compounds of it?

An. The difference between the simple and compound supines of *nosco*, is this: That two of them change o in *notum* into i, viz. *cognitum* and *agnitum*, the rest differ in nothing from it, ending all in *notum*; as *ignotum*, *prænotum* *pernotum*, and *dignotum*. So our Authour saith.

*A nosco tantum duo cognitum & agnitum habeantur :  
cætera dant notum : nullo est jam noscitur in usu.*

[ *A nosco* ] *Nosco* is from the ancient *gnosco*, which as *Vossius* saith, *Varro* used for *nosco*: *Adesse, adesse, qua feramque, gnoscite*. This is from the Greek γινώσκω. Thence comes the g into *ignosco*, *cognosco*, *agnosco*, which yet is left out in *prænosco*, and *pernosco*, Euphonie gratia.

[ *Agnitum* ] Thence *agnitus* is ordinary, for which as

Pris.

*Priscian* testifieth, *Pacuvius* used *agnotus*; from whence *Sallust* l. 2. *Histor.* hath *agnoturus*: both which are now disused.

*Cetera dant notum*] Though anciently *Piso* in 2. *Anal.* from *ignosco* hath *ignosciturus*, yet now the derivatives from *notum* prevail. Thence *ignotus* in *Cicero*, *Virgil*, *Ovid*, *Plant.* &c. Thence as *Stephanus* quotes it, not only *Cato* l. 5. *Origin.* hath *ignoturus*; *Quod eorum nemo mihi ignoturus esset*; but *Cic.* in *Catone*, *Ignotum alteri quod patrem, alteri quod tutorem secutus esset.* See *Voss.* de *Analog.* l. 3. c. 25.

*Nullo est jam nescitum in usu*] Yet anciently as it should seem, it hath been in some use: for thence surely came *nosciturus*, allowed of by Grammarians, *Farnaby*, *Hayne*, &c. and thence, saith *Vossius*, came *noscito*, used by *Plant.* in *Cistellar.* a. 4. l. 2. *Nam vestigia siquæ sunt, noscitabo*; also by *Caullus*, and *Livie* in several places. But now we have no more use of it.

Q. How are the words of this Rule declined?

Ans. The words of this Rule are declined thus:

The declining of the words,

*Tundo, tundis, tundi, tondere, tunsus* [ & *tusus*, ]  
*Ruo, ruis, rui, ruere, ruitum* [ & *rutum*, ]  
*Salio, salis, salui, & salii, salire, saltum*,  
*Sero, seris, sevi, serere, satum*,  
*Capio, capis, cepi, capere, captum*,  
*Facio, facis, feci, facere, factum*,  
*Facio, jacis, jeci, jacere, jactum*,  
*Rapio, rapis, rapui, rapere, raptum*,  
*Canis, canis, cecini, canere, cantum*,  
*Pario, paris, peperit, parere, partum*,  
*Spargo, spargis, sparci, spargere, sparsus*,  
*Carpo, carpis, carpsi, carpere, carptum*,  
*Farcio, facis, farsis, farcire, fartum*,  
*Edo, edis, vel es, edi, edere, vel esse, esum* [ *estum* ]  
*Comedo, {comedis, } comedi, {comedere, } {comesum*  
*{comes } {comesse } {comestum}*,  
*Nosco, noscis, novi, noscere, notum*,

D d

Cognosco,



*Cognosco, cognoscis, cognovi, cognoscere, cognitum, Agnosco, agnoscis, agnovi, agnoscere, agnitum.*

**Q<sup>1</sup>.** May there be any thing further added to the Rule?

**An.** To this Rule there may yet be something added touching some compounds of *do, sto, plico, miscro, olco, and tendo.*

**Q<sup>1</sup>.** What is to be added to this Rule touching the compounds of *do*?

**An.** Touching the compounds of *do*, this is to be added, That those of them which are of the first conjugation, do keep the vowel of the simple supine, and have *datum*; as *venundo, circundo, satifdo, &c.* But those which are of the third conjugation change the *a* of the simple supine into *i*, and make *ditum*: as *abdo additum, addo additum, &c.*

Unless perhaps *abscondo* may be thought fit to be in part excepted, as making, at least having made, not *absconditum* only, the now usual supine, but *absconsum*; whence saith Vossius, there is *absconssio* in Plin. *absconssus* in Jul. Firmicus. and *absconje*, *αδῖπα* in Vett. glossis. *De Analog.* l. 3. c. 26.

**Q<sup>1</sup>.** What is to be added touching the compounds of *sto*?

**An.** Touching the compounds of *sto* this is to be added, That whereas all the compounds of it, are said to change *a* in the simple supine *statum* into *i*, and make *situm*, as *assto aslitum, consto constitum, &c.* Yet some, if not all of them, do also make *statum*, as *præsto præstatum, consto constatum, &c.*

¶ From *Adsto Amil. Porcia* in Priscian l. 9. hath, *Tempore adstiturum, atque petiturum, me abisse.* So from *præsto Cic. Fam.* 6. 3. hath, *Se præstituros, nihil ex te offensiois habiturum.* Id. ad Brut. *ut non dubitem, quin se præstiturus fuerit acerrimum propugnatorem communis libertatis.*

Touching *circumsto* Writers differ; Some give it no supine, as Rhenius and the Gryphisw. Grammar. Stephanus

*pharus* gives it *circumstitum*. Hayne in his Grammar excepts it not from his general Rule of, *Dant statum atque satum composita situmque situmque*. No more doth Desputerius, who down-right saith, *Stetit atque statum sto, Cujus compositum stiti atque statum capit apte*. Whom his Expositor Sebastian Duisburgensis follows *κατὰ μόδα*, saying, *sto steti statum, Hujus composita situm faciunt, ut praesto praestitum, insto institum*. But Mr. Shirley gives it *circumstatum* for its supine: and with him seems to be Mr. Farnaby and his follower Mr. Bayles (if they allow it any supine at all, for they name none) for after declining *sto, steti, statum*, and *circumsto circumsteti*, they say, *Cetera composita stiti and situm*, the rest of the compounds have *stiti* and *situm*; so that this with them, hath *statum*, or nothing. And that *statum* it hath, or hath had whatever be of *situm*, is a little visible from *circumstatio* the verbal derived from it. This Gell. l. 7. c. 4. hath, *Milites custodiae causa, captivorum venantium greges circumstarent: eaque circumstatio militum corona appellata sit*.

Whether *supersto* have *superstatum* may be doubted, For though *Vossius* say peremptorily of the compounds of *sto*, *in supino sapius habent A longum; varius I breve*; (quite contrary to the stream of vulgar Grammarians) Yet I neither find *superstatum*, nor *superstatus*, nor *superstatio*, nor any derivative from it of that sort. But as from *superstitum* I find *superstito* and *superstitio*. And *Rhenius* having declined it with *itum*, adds *reliqua composita habent atum & itum*. So that it seems more probable that it hath *itum* only; and not *atum*. *Voss. de Analog. l. 3. c. 20. Rhen. p. 170.*

That *praesto* maketh *praestatum*, is evident from abundance of instances in the derivatives from it. *Claudian* in his *Phoenix* hath, *Praestatura novas vires incendia nutrit*. *Cic. ad Att. l. 14. Ep. 19. Puto, siquid pudoris in homine est, praestaturum eum, ne pro se quodammodo dependatur*. *Brut. in his Ep. to Cicero in Priscian l. 9 Oc-*

ciso C. Casare, postquam mare transierat, præstatum est. Many places more of several Authours are quoted by Voss. de Analog. l. 3. c. 20. And saith he, what we have seen in præsto, that also hath place in conslo, and the like. As Lucan. l. 2. Constatura fides superum. Martia. l. 1. Ep. 41. Constatura fuit Megalensis purpura centum Milibus. Plin. l. 18. c. 5. ut fructus is maxime probaretur, qui quàm minimo impendio constaturus esset. Plin. l. 12 c. 22. Exstatuta etiamnum duabus gemmis. Quincl. l. 2. c. 12. Video quosdam in iso statim limine obstaculos mihi. Frontin. l. 1. c. 12. Fugientibus instaturos vi- flores. Yet as from instium is read insito. Cesar. l. 1. b. g. Qui in montem sese receperant, rursus institare, & prælium redintegrare ceperunt. But here copies vary, and some have instare. So that whatever others say, without proof, as far as proof appears, that of Alvarus, whom Vossius follows is true, —

*A sto flecte flecti, statum: sitit at inde profecta  
Atque situm cupiunt, molto sed crebrius atum.*

Qu. What is to be added touching the compounds of plico?

Ans. Touching the compounds of plico this is to be added, That though the simple supine of it be plicatum, yet those compounds of it which have plicus in their preterperfect tense as well as plicavi, all or most have plicitum also as well as plicatum in their supines, as applico, implico & explico.

As from applicavi applicatum is applicatus; whence Cas. 3. b. Civ. Applicatiq; nostris ad terram navibus. So from applicui applicitum is applicitus. Sil. l. 15. Proxi- mus applicito saxi aggere sylvis Tendeat. Plin. ep. 41. Applicitum est cubiculo hypocaustum perexiguum. Again, as of explicavi explicatum is explicatus, Cic. pro Plane. Mihi in causâ facili atque explicata perdifficilis & lu- brica defensionis ratio proponitur. Cas. 3. b. c. His expli- catis rebus, duas in castris legiones retinuit. Martia. l. 14. ep. 1. Versibus explicitum est omne duobus opus.

As

As also from *implicavi implicatum* is *implicatus*. Cic. 5. Verr. Tu qui omnibus legibus implicatus tenebare, libidinem tibi tuam pro lege esse voluisti? So from *implicui implicatum* is *implicatus*. Plin. 1. 3. ep. 9. *Quæ sicut implicita suspicionibus, ita non satis convinci probationibus visa est.* Of *complicavi complicatum* I find *complicatus*. Cic. 3. offic. Si quis voluerit animi sui complicatam notionem evolvere, jam se ipse doceat. But *complicitum* or any thing from it, I yet find not.

Qu. What is to be added touching the compounds of *mulceo*?

Ans. Touching the compounds of *mulceo* this is to be added, That though *mulceo* have only *mulsum*, yet *permulceo* one compound of it, hath both *permulsum* and *permultum*. From *permulsum* is *permulsus*. Hence that of Cicero in *contentione Metelli*, as Stephanus cites it, *Permulsæ atque recreatæ*. From *permultum* is *permultus*. Hence that of Sall. 4. *Historiar.* Deni lenita jam irâ, posterâ die liberalibus verbis permultæ sunt. See above, Level R. ante Geo.

Qu. What is to be added touching the compounds of *oleo*?

Ans. Touching the compounds of *oleo*, this is to be added: That though the simple verb *oleo*, *olui* have *olitum*, yet *exoleo exolevi* hath *exoletum*, *obsoleo obsolevi* *obsoletum*, and *adoleo adolevi* *adultum*: and *inoleo* hath no supine.

¶ From *exolevi exoletum* comes the Participle *exoletus*. Quintil. 1. 8 ut si quis exoletus scriptatus authores id ipsum petat. And thence the Substantive *exoletus*. Cic. pro Mil. Ille qui semper secum scorta semper exoletos, semper lupas ducebat. From *obsoletum* of *obsolevi* comes *obsoletus*. Cic. 3. Verr. Nimis antiqua hæc & jam obsoleta sunt. And from *adultum* of *adolevi* comes *adultus*. Virg. 4. Georg. Aliæ spem gentis adultos Educunt fœtus. Cic. in Catilin. Extinguetur atque delebitur non modo hæc tam adulta reipublica pœlis— But *aboleo* hath *abolitum*. Whence Quintil. 1. 1. c. 9. Sed abolita atque ab-

*rogata retinere impudentia est.* And so in the rest *redoleo, suboleo, oboleo, peroleo.*

**Qu.** What is to be added touching the compounds of *tendo*?

**An.** Touching the compounds of *tendo* this is to be added, That whereas the simple verb *tendo* hath both *rentum* and *tensum* two compounds of it, *viz.* *attendo* and *contendo* have only *rentum*, but the rest follow the simple having both, yet *rentum* more usually, except *ostendo*, which more usually hath *ostensum*.

¶ From *attentum* of *attendo* comes *attentus*, *attentio* and *attentè* ordinarily read. And from *contentum* of *contendo* comes *contentus*, *contentio*, and *contentè*. But I meet with nothing derived from *attensum* or *contensum* as yet. But from *intendum* of *intendo* comes *intensus*. *Cic. 3. de Orat. Voces, ut eboræ, sunt intenta.* And from *intensum* *intensus*. *Cic. Orat. Principia verecunda, non elatis intensa verbis, sed acuta sententiis.* So from *extentum* of *extendo* comes *extensus*. *Colum. 1. 5. Quare ad summum palum recta vitis extenta est, capistro confringitur.* From *extensum* comes *extensus*. *Cic. 4. Acad. Quum extensis digitis animadversam manum ostenderat, visum inquebat hujusmodi—* Of *prætentum* from *prætendo* is read *prætenus*. *Ovid. Met. 3. Infantiaque ora retardat Cuspide prætentâ.* And from *proletum* of *pro-tendo* is read *proletus*. *Tacit. 1. 14. Eques protentis hastis perfingit, quod obvium & validum erat.* But though our Lexicographers and Grammarians give *prætensum* and *protensum* as well as *prætentum* and *protenzum* for supines to these verbs, yet I see, as yet, little to induce them so to do, unless it be the analogy of other the like words. Though again *ostensum* of *ostendo* is more usual, whence in *Lucan. 1. 2. Ut scelus hoc Scyllæ cædesque ostensa placeret*: Yet of *ostentum* is read *ostentus* in *Varro l. 1. r. r. c. 25. Qui locus optimus vino sit, & ostentus soli*; Which yet *Diomedes* reads *lacus-obtentus soli*. So *Cato de r. r. c. 6. Ager oleo cinservendo qui in ventum feroniam spectabit, & soli ostentus erit,*

alius

*alius bonus nullus erit.* And in his *Orat.* for *L. Caesar*, he, as *Priscian* l. 9. observes, hath, *Quod ego me spero ostenturum.* But finding it in none but old Authours, suffice it that it hath been, though now it may not be, in use. However thence is derived *ostentum* as *Priscian* observed; and *ostentus* the verbal substantive, yet out of use now, in all but the Dative case *ostentui*, and that used chiefly if not only, by *Historians*, *Sallust*, and *Tacitus*. See *Voss. de Analog.* l. 3. c. 26. and *Danesh. Schol.* l. 2. c. 17.

**Q.** Why not something be added of the compounds of *sisto*?

**A.** Of the compounds of *sisto* this some add: That if they have any supine, it is *sistum*: but that it is better to forbear them.

¶ There is found in *Æpiæ exsisturus* of *exsisto*. *Si diu incertum hæres exsisturus recte sit.* Thence is the conjecture of *sistum* being the supine of those verbs, which are compounded of *sisto*: and it is not irrational.

And thus far of the Rules, which the Grammar gives, for the *Preterperfect* tenses and *Supines* of Verbs in *O*, whether simple or compounded.

## CHAP. XI.

**Q.** We are now come to the Rule for the *Preterperfect* tenses of Verbs in *Or*: what is the Rule for the *Preterperfect* tenses of those Verbs?

**A.** The Rule for the *Preterperfect* tenses of Verbs in *Or* is this:

*De præteritis verborum in Or.*

*Verba in or admittunt ex posteriore supino Præteritum, verso u per us, & sum confociato Vel fui; ut a lectu, lectus sum vel fui.*

D d 4

*Verba in or admittunt.*

**Q.**

Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule?

An. The meaning of this Rule is this: That the preterperfect tense of a verb in *or* is formed from the latter supine by adding *s* thereto, and joining therewith in construction *sum*, or *fui*. As from *lectu* the latter supine of *lego*, by adding *s* to it, is made *lectus*; and that with *sum* or *fui* stands for a preterperfect tense to the verb *legor*.

¶ Verbs in *or* have no regular preterperfect tense of their own; therefore to supply that want, they have a periphrastical preterperfect tense made for them, consisting of the participle of the preter tense (which indeed is formed of the latter Supine by putting *s* to it) and the verb *sum* or *fui*, accordingly as reason requires. For though they be looked upon by some as indifferent, and are sometimes used one for another, yet in strictness they differ: as *Amisus est, qui adhuc desideratur*; *Amisus fuit, qui jam est inventus*. So *Vinna obsessa fuit, non obsessa est*. *Rhen. p. 238.*

Qu. What is the meaning of that Note annexed to the Rule? viz.

*At horum,  
Nunc est  
deponens.*

*At horum, Nunc est deponens, nunc est commune notandum.*

An. The meaning of that Note is this: That all verbs in *or*, which have a preterperfect tense formed from the latter supine, are not passives, but some are *deponens*, and some are *commons*.

¶ *Deponens* are such verbs as formerly under the one termination of a passive, did signify both actively and passively, but now have laid down their passive signification, and signify only actively. *Commons* are such as under the one termination of a passive, have the signification both of the active and the passive. Properly none but actives have supines: from thence passives have their preterperfect tenses formed. But deponens and commons have also preterperfect tenses formed from the supines of actives, which either have been, but now are disused (such as *adulo*, *comito*, *consolo*, *crimino*, *digno*, *frango*, *habeo*, *auguro*, *amictor*, &c. From whence *adu-*  
lor,



*comitor, conſolor, criminor, dignor, fruſtror, hortor, auguror, amplexor,* ) or elſe may be imagined to be, or have been; ſo as that to form *veritus ſum* to be a preterperfect tenſe to the deponent verb *vereo*; we muſt imagine ſuch a verb as *vereo, verni, veritum*, from whoſe ſupine we may form that preterperfect tenſe. And ſo to form *lapſus ſum vel fui* a preterperfect tenſe for the deponent verb *labor*, we muſt imagine ſuch a verb as *labo, liſſi, lapſum*, from whoſe latter ſupine that preterperfect tenſe may be formed. The like may be ſaid of *patior paſſus ſum*, for the forming of which, we muſt imagine ſuch an active verb, as *patio, paſſi, paſſum*, like *quatio, quaſſi, quaſſum*. And ſo of the reſt.

Q<sup>a</sup>. What do you conceive to be the meaning of the Author in adding theſe ſo many verbs in or, as hereafter are named, to the Rule?

A<sup>u</sup>. The meaning of the Author, in adding theſe ſo many verbs in or unto this Rule for the forming of their preterperfect tenſes, I conceive to be this: Partly to ſhew their being formed from real or imaginary Actives, and partly to note the irregularities of them, or the compounds of them in their formation or compoſition, there being few, if any, here, but what in ſome reſpect or other are irregular-- So our Author—

*Nam labor lapſus, patior dat paſſus & ejus  
Nata, ut compatior compaſſus, perpetiorque  
Formans perpeſſus, fateor quod faſſus & inde  
Nata, ut confiteor confeſſus, &c.*

*Nam labor lapſus* ] Anciently they wrote *labſus* (as Voſſius obſerves.) Ita, ſaith he, Pierius in vet. rodd. *labſus legi ait in 3. Georg. & elabſus 1. Georg. idque ex Probi præſcripto, qui elabſus, prolabſus, labſani emper B. ſcribere jubet.* But that way of writing is now out of uſe. Hiſher refer *allabor, delabor, dilabor, elabor, collabor, ilabor, prolabor, ſublabor, relabor.*

*Fateor quod faſſus, &c.* ] So *profiteor.* Auſonius Papa (1. 1. de uſu Antiquæ Locutionis, c. 11.) ſhews out of Cic. Agrar. 2. that *fateor* hath alſo had a paſſive ſignification,

nification, *Excipere nominatim agrum, qui publicus esse fateatur*. And so though now it be a deponent, yet formerly it was a common.

*Gradior dat gressus, &c.* ] So *aggredior*, *egredior*, *ingredior*, *regredior*. Of *gradior* formerly, saith *Rhenius* was *grassus*, whence *grassor* *grassaris*; *Gressus* now only remains. This verb is now of the third conjugation. Whence *Plaut. in Truc. 1. 2. Tu fer contra manum, & pariter gradere*. So *Pseud. 4. 7. Si graderere tantum, quantum, loquere, jam isse ad forum*. But anciently it hath been of the fourth. Whence *Plaut. Truc. 3. 5. Quamvis causa sum tantum clam dolum aggrediri*. So *Pacuvius in Festus, Aggreditur astu regem: manticulandum est hoc mihi*. Whereon (saith *Vossius*) *Versus est Trochæicus, ut tertia syllaba sit porrecta*. *De Analog. 1. 3. c. 35.*

*Junge fatiscor fessus sum* ] This verb *Rhenius* looks upon as an antiquated word. And *Alvarus* freely confesses, *Fatiscor, quod quidam putant fessus sum fateor, nondum potui invenire*. Only he tells you of *fatiscor* said to be made of *fateor* by *Gellius 1. 7. c. 2.* where some body, but how rightly I know not, read *fatisco*. Yet of that verb every body may read *defetiscor* in *Ter. Phorm. 4. 3. Neque adeo defetiscar unquam experiri, donec*. But against either this or that making *fessus*, or *defessus* in the preterperfect tense (though *Priscian*, and those that follow him, allow of it, as *Despauterius*, *Hayne*, *Bird*, *Shirley*) not only was *Diomedes* of old (1. 1.) but *Rhenius*, *Vossius*, *Alvarus*, *Danæsius*, and *Farnaby* of late are. And though *fessus* and *defessus sum* be read, (as this latter is in *Ter. Ad. 4. 6.*) *Defessus sum ambulando*, yet in the opinion of *Alvarus* *fessus* and *defessus* are nouns, (and with him do therein consent, the two eminent Grammarians of High and Low Germany, *Rhenius* and *Vossius*,) and that therefore *defetiscor* wants the preterperfect tense: and no marvel, for *fatiscor* doth so, and must, if *fessus* be a noun; and how should it do other, being derived, as *Vossius* saith, from *fatisco*, which hath no preterperfect tense. See *Alvar. p. 255.*

Dea. p. 217. Voss. Etymolog. Lat. p. 113. Danes. Schol. 2. c. 14.

*Mensus sum metior*] So *dimetior*, *remetior*. Some could have this verb to have *metitus sum*: as reading Cic. l. 2. de Nat. Deor. *dimetita signa*. But the better editions have *demetata*. They quote also Curt. l. 3. for *spendium metitum est*; but Vossius saith he could find nothing like it there. True in l. 5. may be read passive-ly *spendium mensum*, but that's not the business; but write against it. Scaliger himself, if he use the word, Vossius saith he doth ll. de causis. L. L. c. 91. must have a better Authority for it, before we receive it. Voss. Analog. l. 3. c. 33.

*Utor & usus*] So *abutor*, and *coutor* found in the Glossaries, if it may be used. Anciently there was *uto*, yet read in Cato de r. r. c. 96. Where, saith that Author, *Eodem modo in omnes quadrupedes utito, si cabra erunt*. From *usum* the supine of that verb formed from *uti*, like *versum* from *verti* of *verto*, is formed *usus*. That *utor* was anciently common, Gellius saith l. 15. c. 23. His words are, *utor & vereor & hortor, & consolor, communia verba sunt, & utroque versus dici possunt: vereor te, & vereor abs te, id est tu me vereris. utor te, & utor abs te, id est tu me uteris*. The passive use he approacheth upon the Authority of Novius. *Quia susellex multa, quæ non utitur, emitur tamen: id est quæ usui non est*. Vossius also from Priscian cites Qu. Hortensius saying. *Abusis jam ab omnibus locis, and Varro, utile abutimur potius, quam ab Rege abutimur*. But these Authorities will hardly bring the Passive using these words into use again.

*Pro texo orditus, pro incepto dat ordior orsus*] Di-verse of our English Grammarians, as Hayne, Bird, Harris, and the Rudiment Writer, have both *orditus*, and *orsus*, and also the Gryphisw. Grammar. But Rhenius and Desbauterius, Alvarus and Vossius, Farnaby and Shirley have only *orsus*. Not but that *orditus* hath been in use. (For Vossius quotes *ordita lectio* from Diomedes l. 1. )

1. 1.) but that *orditus* is now grown out of use. As for our Authours distinction of *orditus pro texto*, and *orditus pro incepto*, though followed herein by those, that would pretend to correct his errours, and as it may seem, favoured by that of *Stephanus*, *Orditus prætextum, ad tele vel alterius hujusmodi compositionem stat*, yet I see no ground for it. And the forementioned quotation out of *Diomedes* [*ordita lectio*] overthrows it. That *ordior* hath been used as a passive and not actively, that of *Columel.* (l. 1. c. 5. sheweth. *Cum ex loco depressiore fuerint orsa fundamenta, non solum superficiem suam facile sustinebunt, sed— Exordior* the compound of it (*proprium verbum artis Minervæ*, as *Plinius* in his *Lexicon Plautinum* saith) hath *exorsus* only, what ever *orsus* have, of which yet I should be loath to use any more than so, till better authority appeared for it. Perhaps the weaving sense is the proper sense of the word: though the sense to begin, being but Metaphorical have out-grown it, and out-worn it too.

*Nitor nifus vel nixus sum*] *Rem miram!* The Grammarians are agreed, that *nitor* maketh *nifus* and *nixus*. But, saith *Alvarus*, *Nixus frequentissimum est, nifus varius*, Yet he produceth an Authourity for that out of *Vitruvius* l. 1. c. 2. *ut architectus his literis imbutus hanc nifus sum scribere*. *Vossius* produceth another out of *Tacitus*. l. 1. *Anal. Seque inferre monitoribus nifi*. The like is produced for *annitor*. *Tacit.* l. 3. *Latonam partu gravidam, & olea quæ tum etiam maneat, adnifam, edidisse ea numina*. So *Liv.* l. 5. *ab urbe. Et patres rescire intercessores legis annifi sunt*. *Id.* l. 4. *Patres summa opera annifi sunt*. *Id.* l. 2. *ab urbe Annisurum ut appareat exilio sibi iratos esse non fractos animos*. *Id.* l. 4. *dec. 5. Illud affirmare pro certo habeo, audeoque, me omni opere adnifurum esse, ne—* The like for *enitor*. *Id.* l. *Eni saque legiones*. *Cic. ad Qu. Fr.* l. 3. *In quo enitar non minus quam sum enisus in nostro*. *Cæs.* 2. b. c. *Brutus celeritate novis enisus est, ut parvo momento antecederet*. But there is read of them both *annixus*, and *enixus*: the former

former in *Virgil*. 1. *An. Cymothor simul & Triton ad-*  
*ixus acuto Detrudunt naues scopulo.* So *Liv.* 1. 1. ab  
 le. *Quod annexus pro se quisque sit.* The latter in *Sall.*  
*Jugurth. Ab adolescentiâ ita se enixum, ut ab optimo*  
*quoque probaretur.* By which place by the way is over-  
 thrown that error, which some Grammarians are in,  
 viz. that *enixus ad partum spectat, enisus ad ceteros co-*  
*natus* as *Alvarus* saith, and so *Rhenius*, whom *Hayne* fol-  
 lows therein. For the Authour speaks of no such thing  
 as *partus* there. And besides in the place of *Tacit.* 1. 3.  
 produced before *Latoram partu gravidam, &c. adnissam*  
 is used *de partu*. The distinction may hold much, but it  
 is not universal. Other compounds of *nitor* rather have  
*nixus*, as *inixitor, connitor, obnixitor, pernixitor, subnixitor,*  
*renitor*. Thence *obnixus*, from whence *obnixus: pernixus,*  
 whence *pernix; connixus*, (though in *Tacit.* be read *con-*  
*nissus* &c. *Alvar.* p. 255. *Voss. de Analog.* 1. 3. c. 31.  
*Rhen.* p. 218. *Danes. Schol.* 1. 2. c. 14.

*Ulciscor & ultus* ] This verb was anciently used as a  
 passive. *Sall. Jug. Quicquid sine sanguine civium ulcisci*  
*nequitur, jure factum sit.* So *Valer. Flacc.* useth *ultus*  
 passively, 1. 4. *Argonaut.* And no marvel, when there  
 was in being an active *ulcisco*, which *Ennius* in *Eumenid.*  
 hath, *Nisi patrem materno sanguine exantlando ulcisce-*  
*rem.* But the active verb, and passive sense are now laid  
 down, and the verb is used as a deponent.

*Iraſcor ſimul iratus* ] This verb is used like a verb  
 in its preterperfect tense. *Plant. Pæn.* 2. 3. *Hunc chla-*  
*mydatum quem vides, ei Mars iratus eſt.* *Id. Truc.* 2. 6.  
*Uebementer nunc mihi eſt irata.* And the generality  
 of Grammarians quarrel it not. Yet *Vossius* and *Rhenius*  
 think *iratus* a noun like *fretus*, and the like. No doubt  
 but all, or most participles sometimes are used like nouns.  
 But we must not thence say that all participles, or those  
 that are so used are nouns. But let every man have his  
 liberty of opining for me.

*Reor atque ratus ſum* ] This verb hath no participle  
 of the p. eſent tense, future in *dur.* or future in *rus.* Dat  
 ratus

*ratus tantum* saith the acute *Saturnius* l. 6. c. 1. The vulgar Grammarians take no notice of this that I see.

*Obliviscor vult oblitus sum*] This verb, it should seem by *Vossius*, was anciently of passive signification also. Thence *Virgil* 9. *Eclog.* *Nunc oblita mihi tot carmina.* The old *Scholias*t on *Juven. Sat.* 7. v. 51. explains *scribendi cacoethes*, to be *mala consuetudo scribendi*; *que oblivisci non potest.* And there, saith *Vossius* it is to be taken passively. *De Analog.* l. 3. c. 6. But the active use now prevails, so that the verb is looked upon as a deponent.

*Fruor optat fructus vel fruius*] *Fruius* is found in *Gellius* l. 17. c. 2. but from *Novius*. *Qui non parsit, apud te fruius est.* And in *Ulpian* l. 29. *Non meo nomine, sed suo, fruius est emtor.* From the same Authour *Priscian* l. 9. quotes *fruiturus*. Which even *Saturnius* allows of; and good reason, being read in *Cicero*, 3. *Tusc.* *Beno stoicorum actissimus contendere magnâ voce solebat, eum esse beatum, qui praesentibus voluptatibus frueretur, consideretque se fruiturum.* *Fructus* hath also been in use. It is found in *Lucret.* l. 3. *Sine ea que fructus curque es periere profusa.* Thence *Priscian* l. 10. cites *Cicero* in *Hortens.* saying, *Summâ amœnitate perfructus est.* And *Lucretius* l. 3. hath *Omnia perfructus vitae prœmia marces.* But the use of this is rare. Rare *fructus*, saith *Hayne*. But *fructurus* is not read at all; if *Saturnius* may be believed. *Fructus namque, fruius, & fruiurus dicitur, non autem fructurus*, So *Saturnius*. l. 6. c. 5. and *Vossius* saith, *Fructurus pro fruiturus dixit Appuleius*, but he names nor words, nor place. But it may be found in *Stewichius* notes on that Authour, where he restores that word in *Panegy.* *Voss. de Analog.* l. 3. c. 32. *Joseph Scaliger* in his *Conjectan.* upon *Varro* p. 181., produces a place in *Varro*, where *fruur* is passively used, at least as he reads it, and interprets it. *Fructus aferendo res, & hæ quas fundus, & hæ que in fundo ferunt, ut fruuntur.* Thus he reads the Authour: now it

ut fruamur. But as he reads it, so he takes it passively, appealing to Grammarians for it, that the ancients used *frui* passively also. I had rather he had produced Authours to justify Grammarians: whose words are slippery things many times without Authours to vouch them. See *Danesf. Schol.* l. 2. c. 14. Hither may be referred *fruisco*, derived from *fruo*, and anciently used for it. Whence *Næv.* in *Gell.* l. 17. c. 2. *Id fruiscei non gaudent.*

*Misereri junge misertus* ] *Misertus* is by a Syncope made of *miseritus*: For thence is *miseritum est* read in *Ter. Heaut.* 3. 1. *ut me tuarum miseritum est fortunatum.* So *Phorm.* 3. 2. and *Hec.* 3. 3. And that from *miserico* sure, (whence remains the impersonal *miseret*, used in *Plaut. Captiv.* 3. 5. 106. *Mei miseret neminem.* *Ter. Phor.* 1. 4. *Ejus me miseret*) though no such word be now in use.

*Vult tuor & tueor non tutus, sed tuitus sum, Quamvis & tuum, & tuitum sit utrique supinum* ] *Tuor* is a kind of antiquated verb, at least so looked upon by some. Yet it is read both simple, and compounded. Simple in *Quid. de morte Drusi*, cited by *Danesius*, *Nunc ego te infelix sumum teneoque tuorque.* *Schol.* 2. l. 13. c. So *Var.* l. 6. de *L. L.* *Quociens caelum qua tuimur, dictum templum.* ib. *Et intra eas regiones, qua oculi conspiciunt, id est tuimur.* Compounded with *in* 'tis found in *Senec. Agam.* 3. 2. *Amici fida presidia intuor.* So *Ter. Heaut.* 2. 4. *Quisnam hic adolescens, qui intuitur nos?* *Papin. Stat. Theb.* l. 3. *Armigeras summi Jovis exultante cetera Intuor.* *Plaut. Mostell.* 3. 1. 150. *Profecto nullam equidam illic cornicem intuor.* With *con* in *Lusret.* l. 4. *In somnis sive figuras Continimur miras.* *Plaut. Mostell.* 3. 2. 152. *Volturios forte possis contui.* *Id. Afin.* 1. 1. v. 111. *Illud argentum tam paratum filio scio esse quam me hunc Scipionem contui.* But *tueor* and the compounds of it are more ordinary; yea *tueri* in the simple alwaies, *tui* never. *Virg.* 1. *An. Fines custode tueri.* • *Plaut. Truc.* 1. 2. *Qui alterum incusat probri, ipsum se intueri oportet.*



portet. Cic. 4. de N. Deor. Similiter facis ac si me regeretur te duobus continer oculis. Id. 1. Tusc. Tandem spectaculum fore putamus, quum totam terram contreri licebit? Plaut. Mostell. 3. 2. At tu isid ad obtinere. ib. Atate non quis obtineret. Id. Amph. Iamcososa sum obtineret. Id. Bacch. 4. 4. Num qui num exciderant heri tibi quod sic terram obtinere? Tuitus in Plin. 1. 6. Epist. Tuitus sum Juliam Bassum. Quintil. pro Cæc. Tuitus sum adolescentis miseri causam. Quintil. 1. 7. Id consequemur si iuviti fuerimus, quæ sit lex, que litem faciat. From *continuitus* the participle comes the verbal substantive *continuitus* in Plin. 1. 11. c. 37. *Oculi continui multæ formes*. Cic. pro Sestio. *Vesier iste in me animorum, oculorumque continui*. Laurent. Valla *Eligant. I. 1. c. 38.* reckons *tutus* amongst the Participles, saying *Tutus dicatur portus, tota urbs, quod tueatur alios, non quod ab aliis defendatur*. And yet oftentimes he saith it is taken passively as applied to men, as *Tutus sum ad hostibus, quod minuitur & sine periculosum*. But Rhenius and Danesiuss will have *tutus* a noun, not a participle, being never read as a participle in any Classick Authour, but oft as a noun. But if there be such a word as *obtinutus* a verbal substantive, then there should seem to have been at least such a participle as *obtinutus*, and so *tutus* whereof it is compounded. And that of Cic. 1. Off. *Ex oculorum obtinutu, ex elevatione, aut remissione superciliorum*, Stephanius saith the more correct Copies read *obtinutu*. But however it were, it hath it seems left off to be a participle, either in simple, or compounded word: and *tuitus* is the only word remaining in use. Yea *tutum* from *tutor* *Alcius* expressly saith is not in use, and then sure not *tutus* (as our Authour here delivers, *non tutus, sed tuitus*) nor *tuturus*. But if not *tutus* to either *tutor* or *tueor*, then why *tutum* as well as *tuitum* to both? [ *Quamvis & tutum & tuitum sit utrique supinum.* ] Perhaps this may be the meaning of our Authour, not that both *tutor* hath *tutum* and *tuitum*, and *tueor* *tutum* and *tuitum*, as the words seem to sound, but that they both

both have, of both that which is proper unto each, *tuor* and *tueor tuitum*. And so 'tis true, the latter hath, the former hath had that, which here is given unto it. If this be not it, then I know not what it is, unless this, that some compound have both the signification of *tuor* and *tueor*, and so be thought to have also the formation of both: and so *tuitum* and *tuitum* will be *utrique supinum*, or rather supines to that one compound verb, but in different respects; the one as it is taken in the notion of *seeing*, and the other as in the notion of *defending*: and it *Rhenius* hit right, one verb there is, that is so taken, and but one, and that is *contueor*, quod, as he saith, *videre & defendere significat*. p. 182. If any else can better untie this knot, I shall be glad of it. In the mean time this we may note concerning these verbs, that they are properly Deponents, as having laid down that passive signification, which, as *Priscian*. l. 7. saith, they formerly had. *Alvarus* went about to shew this from a passage of *Seneca* Ep. 91. *Infirmiores a validioribus tuebantur*. But, (and see what 'tis to defend a good cause on bad grounds) *Vossius* saith he is deceived, because *infirmiores* here is the accusative case, and therefore *tueri* is taken actively, *ut sententia fit, priscis seculis principatum eos meritis suis inter homines obtinuisse, qui infirmiores tuerentur adversus validiorum injurias*. With the like success the same *Alvarus* produceth another passage out of *Livie* l. 23. to the same purpose, *Melita a Carthagenensibus tuebatur*. For saith *Vossius*, the passage in the Author is read thus, *Ipse in insulam Melitam, que a Carthagenensibus tenebatur, trajecit*. *Saturnius* to a title hath the same mistake that *Vossius* chargeth *Alvarus* with. *Merc. Major*. l. 1. c. 35. It may be wondred how both, or either of those two so learned persons, should so mistake: Yet the thing is true, for *Vossius* himself proves it from *Varro* de r. r. l. 3. c. 1. *Quod & in pace a rusticis Romani alebantur, & in bello ab his tuebantur*. *Ansonius* Popma l. 1. de usu Ausiq. Locut. c. 11.

hath the same proof : and adds from *Julian* l. 21. *Di-  
gestor. Consilio & operâ curatoris tueri debet non solum  
patrimonium, sed & corpus & salus furiosi.* Also an  
old Inscription, *Parant ergo, & noscant omnes, Se-  
natus & Populi Romani Imperium Deorum numine, &  
militum fortitudine & tueri, & regi.* To which let me  
add this from *Saturnus* out of *Senec. l. de Morib. Omnes  
dies, velut ultimus, intueantur.* *Voss. de Analog. l. 3.  
c. 6.*

*A loquor adde locutus* ] This verb both *Popma* and  
*Vossius* observe to be used passively by *Calius* in his 8.  
Ep. to *Cice. o, De damnatione ferventer loqui est capium.*  
I dare not stand by them in their observation, but leave  
it to others to consider of : but methinks *loqui est cap-*  
*tum* sc. *ab illis*, is no more than *loqui ceperunt.*

*Experior facit expertus* ] So *comperior*, as the *Gram.*  
of *Gryphiswal.* ( fol. 51. a ) saith, hath *comperitus sum.*  
This indeed *Auson. Popma l. 1. de usu Antiq. Locut.*  
proves to be used in active sense, under a passive end-  
ing, and so to be a Deponent, from *Sall. Jug. Sed ego  
comperior Bocchum magis Punicâ fide, quàm ob ea qua  
prædicabat, simul Romanos & Numidam spe pacis detin-*  
*uisse.* So *Tacit. Historiar. l. 4. Gravem & sapientem  
virum fuisse comperior.* So *Appul. Apolog. 1. Ibi ego com-*  
*perior omnes judices tanto poætæ adfurrexisse.* But *Vossius*  
denies it to have any other preterperfect tense but *com-*  
*peri*, borrowed from *comperio*, saying *Comperitus sum pas-*  
*sivè sumitur, non activè*, unless in *Tertullian*, who ad-  
vers. *Hermog. c. 18. hath, unde ergo comperitus est He-*  
*mogenes informem & confusam illam [materiam] fuisse.*  
*Id. l. 4. adv. Marcion. Quo die (David) ipse comper-*  
*tus est veniam, jejunii dico.* But had it been found in a-  
ny *Classic Author*, *Stephanus* would have gone near to  
have found it : but He in his *Thesaurus*, in this active  
sense gives *comperior* no preterperfect tense. But that  
*opperior* (to be added hither also) hath *opperitus sum*,  
and in Active sense too, appears from *Ter. Phorm. 3. a.*  
*Unam præterea horam ne oppertus sit.* For which *ope-*  
ritus

ritus is read in *Plaut. Mostell.* 3. 2. *seni otium non erat: id sum opperitus.* in whom also is read *opperibor.* *Voss.* de *Analog.* l. 3. c. 33.

*Formare paciscor gaudet pactus sum* ] Hence *Sueton.* de *clar. Gram.* c. 7. *Nec usquam de mercedibus* (which in *Stephanus* through mistake is read *mercibus*) *pactus*, eoque plura ex liberalitate discentium consecutus. Hither add *depaciscor*, as some, or *depeciscor*, as others would have it written. In *Julian* some Editions read *deopactus*, some *depectus*: and thence is the difference. *Alvius* prefers the former, and so *Vossius*, as finding in *Cic.* l. 2. de *invent.* *Depactus est cum eo, ut arma & impedimenta relinqueret.* *Vossius* by sundry instances the *pactus* of *paciscor* to be used passively. *Tacit.* l. 2. *Annal.* *Silani filia Neroni, vetustissimo liberorum ejus pacta erat.* *Hor.* l. 3. od. 3. *Ex quo destituit Deo merc. de pacta Laomedon, &c.* And no wonder *pacisco* an active being read in *Nonius* out of *Nævius* b. *Pun.* l. 2. *Id quoque paciscunt, ut mania sint, qua Lutatium conciliant.* *Id. Captivos plurimos Sicilienses paciscunt, obsides ut reddant.* *Voss.* de *Analog.* l. 3. c. 7. and 5. and 25. and lib. 4. c. 11. *Alvar.* p. 254. *Rhen.* p. 217.

*Nanciscor nactus* ] Of this *Saturnius* cites an example from *Lactant.* l. 6. *Si ducem nactus fuerit, qui dirigat ad meliora titubantem.* So *Sall.* *Homines adolescentes summam potestatem nacti.* So *Ter. Ad. Pisces ex sententiâ nactus sum.* *Rhenius* saith it was anciently *nancus sum* ab antiquo *nancio.* *Vossius* shews that it was passively taken in the preterperfect or participle rather, or thartense from *Hygin.* *Fab.* 1. *Occasione nacta.* So *Fab.* 8. So *Appul.* l. 7. *Nacta libertate, veris initio, pratis herbentibus, rosas utique reperturus aliquas.* *Saturn.* l. 1. c. 39. *Rhen.* p. 217. *Voss.* de *Analog.* l. 3. c. 6.

*Apiscor, quod Vetus est verbum aptus sum* ] This verb as *Saturnius* saith is *perrarum quidem, Latinum tamen*; quoting for the use of it several Authours out of *Nonius Marcellinus.* *Auson.* *Popma* l. 1. de *usu Antiq.* *Laus.* & 7. produceth diverse passages for it. *Plaut.* in *Epid.*

(and ye may find it, though he cite it not, in *Aët.* 5. sc. 2.) *Tace his modò sive me hominem apisci.* So it may be found in *Rudent.* *Prolog.* v. 17. *Qui hic item apisci postulant perjurio.* *Siscinna Historiar.* 3. *Itaque postero die legatos Iguvium redeuntes opiscitur.* *Lucret.* l. 1. v. 449. *Nec ratione animi quam quisquam poscit apisci.* *Tacit. Annal.* 3. *Præbuit juveni materiam apiscendi honoris.* *Id.* *Historiar.* 4. *Intus summa apiscendi libido.* *Id.* *Annal.* 5. *Jurinus Gallio censuerat, ut prætoriani, ætis stipendiis, jus apiscerentur in quatuordecim o. dinibus sedendi.* But the design of *Popma* in producing them is to shew, that the Ancients did cast syllables out of the middle of words, and so to prove by so many instances, that *apiscor* is put for *adipiscor*. But sure he did not then think of *indipiscor*, read in *Plant. Trin.* 2. 3. *Multum in cogitando dolorem indipiscor*, and *Stich.* 4. 2. *senex quidem voluit, si posset indipisci de cibo.* And *Rud.* 5. 2. *Largiter mercedis indipiscor.* *Gell.* l. 1. c. 11. *Sed enim Achaos Homerus pugnam indipisci ait, non sedicularum, tibiarumque concentu, sed mentium animorumque confiratione nitibundos.* *Id.* l. 17. c. 2. *Conabamur postea memoria vegetandæ gratiâ, indipisci animo, ac recensere quæ in libro scripta essent.* Else he would rather have thought *adipiscor* compounded of *apiscor* and *ad*, like *indipiscor* of *apiscor* and *in*, than that *apiscor* was made of *adipiscor* by a Syncope of *di* from the middle of it. Of the preterperfect *aptus est*, it may not be amiss to give some examples. *Saturnius* cites one out of *Varro*, *Ea omnibus ostendat, quæ bello aptus est.* *Plant. Captiv.* 4. 1. hath, *Sine sacris hereditatem sum aptus effertissimam.* *Vossius* cites an Epitaph for *Plant.* out of *Gell.* l. 1. c. 24. *Postquam est mortem aptus* *Plantus comedia ingens* and reproves *Aleiat.* for reading it *cantus*. But in my Book it is thus, *Postquam morte datus est* *Plantus*. He also quotes out of *Nonius Marcellin.* *Quod ego in acie crebro objectus vitam bellando aptus sum.*

*unde adipiscor adeptus*] *Adipiscor* is ordinary. *Ci. 1. Offic. Qui adipisci veram gloriam volunt, iustitiam fungantur officiis.* Thence *adeptus* in *Tacit. 1. 5.* cited by *Saturnius*, *Servius Galba verum adeptus est, i. e. potitus.* So *Cic. pro Clu. Summos a populo Romano honores est adeptus.* *Colum. 1. 5. c. 6. Quum deinde arbor vetustatem fuerit adepta.* This verb hath anciently signified passively. Thence *Plaut. in Trin. 2. 2. Non erat, verum ingenio adipiscitur sententia.* So *C. Farnius* cited by *Priscian. 1. 8. Hæc adipiscuntur,* i. e. *ἐπιτυγχάνονται.* *Et Fab. Max. amittit magis, quam adipisci.* *Gell. 1. 18.* cited by *Saturn.* *Nomine non adepto jam, sed cum esse mox adipiscendi.* *Sall. Jug. Prope jam adeptam victoriam retinere cupit.* *Boeth. 1. 3. de Consol. c. 2. Id autem est bonum, quo adepto, nihil ulterius desiderari queat.* *Cic.* cited by *Parvus* in his *Lexic.* *Plaut. Adipiscendi magistratus sunt.* And no marvel, being there have been verbs in *o*, from whence these in *or* are formed. One I have now before my eye in *Plaut. Asin. 3. 2. v. 13. Nunquam adepol quadrigis albis indipiscet posse.* And *Stephanus* cites another from *Plaut. Aul. 4. 10. Neque partem tibi Ab eo, cui est, indipisces.* But my Book reads it, *Ab eo, quique est inde posces.* *Atvar. p. 254. Voss. de Analog. 1. 3. c. 6. & 25 Rhen. p. 316. Saturn. 1. 6. c. 6. Popma de usu Antiq. Locut. 1. 1. c. 7.*

*Expergiscor sum experrectus*] This verb is from the old *expergor*, and sometimes it hath *experrectus*, and sometimes *expergitus*: betwixt which two *Diomedes* makes this distinction, that *experrectus* notes one wakened out of his sleep by another. Hence *Sallust. Interdum somno experrectus, arreptis armis, tumultum facere.* But *expergitus* notes one satisfied with sleep, and awaking of himself. Hence *Lucil. Ergo E somno pueros cum mane expergitus clamo.* I suppose this latter too old to be used.

*Et hæc quaque comminiscor commentus*] From *memor*, (whence *memini* and *mento*) comes *meniscor*, and thence *comminiscor*, and so *reminiscor*, *Græc. Vossius.* *Commentus* is in *Plaut. Trin. Sc. ult. v. 24. Megarides*

*communis hoc meus & tuus Benevolens commentus est.*  
*Truc. 1. 1. Eo nunc commenta est dolum.* It is needless to  
 shew other reflexes of it to be taken *actively*. That else  
 of *Plaut. Asin. 1. 1. Fabricare quidvis, quidvis commi-*  
*niscere*, would do it. It hath been attempted to be prov-  
 ed to have also had the *passive* signification; and 'tis pro-  
 bable: Yea not so much by that of *Appius Cæcus*, cited  
 from *Priscian* by *Vossius*; *Amicum cum vides obliviscere*  
*miserias. inimicus si e. commentus ne libens aqua*  
 (which I understand not) as by that of *Plaut. Truc. 2.*  
*3. Adopol. commentum male.* Which *Barro* quotes as an  
 instance, that *commentum* signifies *confictum*, and is  
 taken *passively*. *Lexis Plaut.* To which purpose he  
 cites also that of *Plaut. Cist. 2. 1. Credo ego amorem*  
*primum apud homines carnificinam commentum.* And  
 if it have it, no wonder, when there may be read *com-*  
*minista* in *Active* in *Appul. Met. 4.* quoted by both *Pop-*  
*ma* and *Vossius*, *Medium* (or as *Beroaldus* reads it, *res*  
*medium*) *ere natâ validum, eo volente comminiscimus.*  
*Voss. de Analog. l. 3. c. 6. and 39. Popma de usu Antiq.*  
*Locut. l. 1. c. 11.*

*Nascor natus*] From *Cato de r. r. Aufon.* *Popma* brings  
 in an instance, that *nasco* in the *active* form was anci-  
 ently said. *ubi germen nascere cœperit.* Thence was  
*nasciturus*, and as from thence *nasciturus*, which *Por-*  
*tius Latro* in his declamation used. *Famam verò popula-*  
*rem a majoribus nostris sæpe numero accepimus, neque*  
*temere unquam nascituram esse, neque temere occasu-*  
*ram.* Thence the sacred Writers got it into use. But  
 it is so rare, that *Phocas* said *nascor* had no such *Parti-*  
*ciple* belonging to it, as *Alvarus* notes. Yea saith *Sa-*  
*turnius*, *Nasciturus participium antiquis illis visum fuit*  
*adeo fugiendum, ut loco ejus nonnulli uti potius voluerint*  
*nascendus. Cujusmodi A. Gell. l. 3. Ad homines quoque*  
*nascendos.* And *Rhenius* quotes *Varro* and *Silius* for the  
 same, but names no place. This verb *Saturnius*, and  
 that upon second thoughts, doth plainly assevere  
 to have a *Passive* signification, and because wherever  
*nascor*



*nascor* is used, we may in stead of it use *gignor*. As in *Cic. 1. Off. Quae in terris gignuntur*, was said by *Cicero* for *nascuntur*. 'Tis the letter to be wondered at, when we have seen before *nasco* an active. *Popma de usu Antiq. Locut. l. 1. c. 11. Voss. Etymolog. p. 112. Alvar. p. 225. Rhen. p. 273. Saturn. Merc. Maj. l. 1. c. 41.*

*Moriorque mortuus* ] This verb anciently hath been of the fourth Conjugation. Hence in *Priscian l. 9. Ennius 14. Annal. hath, Nobis ostendat, si vivimus five morimur*. And *Ter. Eun. 3. 1. Ris omnes qui aderant, moriri*. *Plaut. Afin. 1. 1. v. 108. Moriri sese misere mactet, Quam non perfectum reddat, quod promiserit*. It looks somewhat like a passive in those passages which *Saturn.* cites out of *Cic. ad C. Cass. D. Syllam alii mortuum a latronibus, alii cruditate dicebant*. And *Lucan. l. 10. Quis nolit ab isto Ense mori*. But it is but like one that is patient, when it is said, *Mundus a se patitur*; or *calesco*; when it is said, *Anima calefcit ab ipso spiritu*; or *occido*, when it is said, *Occidit a se ti, sic Dii voluisti, Achille. Mortuus* some will have a noun: but they are deceived, saith *Vossius*, in as much as it is not only declined with case, but together with the thing signifies time, as in that of *Cic.* before mentioned, *D. Syllam*, &c. The participle of the future in *rus moriturus*, used in *Virgil, Quo morituro ris*? is formed as from the supine *moritum*, which yet is not to be found in any extant Author, that I know of. *Saturn. Merc. Major. l. 1. c. 40. Voss. Anal. l. 4. c. 10. Etymolog. p. 124.*

*Atque orior quod prateritum facit ortus* ] This verb is one of those, that partake of the formations of diverse conjugations: and have some terminations of both the third and the fourth. *Oriri* of the fourth it hath alwaies, but never *ori* of the third. Again, *Ories, oritur, orimur*, it hath, if not alwaies, yet more usually, than the same persons of the Fourth. *Ovid. Met. l. 10. Tu quiesces oreis viridique in cespite flores. Ovid. 1. Fast. Prospera lux oritur*. As from *orissum* it hath *orissurus*. *Har. l. 2.*

ep. 1. Nil oriturum aliàs, nil ortum tale fatentes. So of *ortum* by a Syncope made *ortum* it hath *ortus*. Whence Cic. pro Clu. *Quum quadam in callibus (ut solet) controversia pastorum esset orta*. From this verb comes *oriundus*, by an Antisthæson for *oriendus* which though it hath the termination of a participle of the future tense, yet hath the signification of the preterperfect tense, most an end, if not alwaies. Plaut. Pax. 5. 2. Nam haud repudio hospitium, neque Carthaginem, Inde sum oriundus. Plin. (or Suet.) de viris Illustribus. c. 3. Pyrrhus rex Epirotarum materno genere ab Achille, paterno ad Hevale oriundus. Hither may be referred *adorior* compounded of *orior*, as that which somewhat follows the simple verb. Hence as Sall. in Jug. Ne quo seditio aut bellum oriretur, anxius erat; So Liv. l. 1. ab urbe Timor incessit, ne vis aliqua externa civitatem adoriretur. Lucil. l. 3. in Præcilian. Conturbare animam potis est quicumque adoritur. So Lucret. l. 3. Commutare animam quicumque adoritur & infit. And as Ovid. 4. Fast. saith, Sylvis fuit ortus in altis: So Ter. Ad. 3. 3. Adortus jurgio fratrem. This participle Vossius from Præcilian l. 8. cites Aurelius using passively, Ab his Gallos adortor, ex insidiis plurimorum necatos. The participle in *us*, is *adoriendus*, not *adoriundus*, that I can find. Cic. ad Heron. Occasio queritur, Idoneane satis fuerit ad rem adoriendam, an alia melior. Voss. de Analog. l. 3. c. 6. and 35.

Q. How are the words of this Rule declined?

The de- An. The words of this Rule are declined thus:

clining of Labor, *eris vel ère, lapsus sum vel fui, labi, lapsus*.

the words, *Patior, eris vel ère, passus sum vel fui, pati, passum*.

[*Compatior, eris vel ère, compassus s. v. f. compati, compassus*]

*Perpetior, eris vel ère, perpassus s. vel f. perpeti, perpassum*

*Fateor, eris vel ère, passus s. vel f. fateri, passum*.

*Confiteor, eris vel ère, confessus s. vel f. confiteri, confesum*.

*Difficior, eris vel ère, diffessus s. vel f. diffiteri, diffesum*

*Gradior, eris vel ère, gressus, &c. gradi, gressum*.

*Digredior, eris vel ère, digressus, &c. digredi, digressum*.

*Fatiscor,*

Fatiscor, Eris vel ère, [fessus, &c.] fatiscere, [fessum]  
 Metior, Iris, &c. mensus, &c. metiri, mensum,  
 utor, uteris, &c. usus, &c. uti, usum,  
 Ordior, ordiris, &c. orsus, &c. ordiri, orsum,  
 Nitior, Eris, &c. nissus & nixus, &c. niti, nissum & nixum  
 Ulciscor, Eris, &c. ultus, &c. ulcisci, ultum,  
 Irascor, Eris, &c. iratus, &c. irasci, iratum,  
 Reor, veris, &c. ratus, &c. veri, ratum,  
 Obliviscor, Eris, &c. oblitus, &c. oblivisci, oblitum,  
 Fruor, Eris, &c. fructus & fructus &c. frui, fructum & fructum  
 Misereor, Eris, &c. misertus, &c. misereri, misertum,  
 Tutor, tueris, &c. tutus sum, &c. [tui] tutum,  
 Tuor, tueris, &c. tutus &c. tueri, tutum,  
 Loquor, Eris, &c. locutus, &c. loqui, locutum,  
 Sequor, eris, &c. secutus, &c. sequi, secutum,  
 Experior, Iris, &c. expertus, &c. experiri, expertum,  
 Paciscor, Eris, &c. pactus, &c. pacisci, pactum,  
 Nanciscor, Eris, &c. nactus, &c. nancisci, nactum,  
 [Apiscor, Eris, &c. aptus, &c. apisci, aptum,]  
 Adipiscor, Eris, &c. adeptus, &c. adipisci, adeptum,  
 Queror, Eris, &c. questus, &c. queri, questum,  
 Proficiscor, Eris, &c. profectus, &c. proficisci, profectum  
 Expergiscor, eris, { experrectus }  
 &c. { [expergitus] } expergisci, experrectum,  
 Commiscor, Eris, &c. commentus, &c. commiscisci, com-  
 Nascor, Eris, &c. natus, &c. nasci, natum, (mentum  
 Morior, Eris, &c. mortuus, &c. mori,

Orior { oreris }  
 &c. { ortus, &c. oriri, ortum.  
 oriris }

Qu. May there any other verbs be added hither?

An. Of regular verbs there may be added many of all conjugations: but of irregular ones, not many, yet some: as *divertor*, *prævertor*, *revertor*, which have *diverti*, *præverti*, and *reverti* in their preterperfect tense; *assentior* which hath *assensus sum*; and *potior* which hath *potitus*

*potitus sum*, and is found used sometimes as a verb of the Third conjugation, and sometimes as of the Fourth.

¶ Of *Potior* used as a verb of the third conjugation these instances there are. *Virg.* 3. *Æn.* *Polydorum obruncat, & auro Vi potitur.* *Ovid.* 3. *Fast.* *Mars videt hanc, visamque cupit, potiturque cupitâ.* *Ovid. Met.* 13. v. 130. *Tuque tuis armis, nos te poteremur Achille.* And so of its use as a verb of the fourth conjugation, these instances there are cited by *Vossius* from *Lucil.* *Deficit anima Ceres, nec plebes pane potitur*, and from *Neuvius* or *Levius* l. 2. *Iliad.* *Fecundo penetrat penitus, thalamoque potitur.* *Gell.* 1. 9. *Macedones gentium, nationumque multarum potiri caperant.* *Plant.* *Rud.* 1. 3. *Nam hoc mihi haud labore est laborem hunc potiri.* *Cic. de Finib.* *Cleantes solem dominari, & rerum potiri putat.* *Id. Ep.* *Si exploratum tibi sit, posse te illius regni potiri.* Yea saith *Vossius*, in infinitivo semper est *quar.* 4. That this verb is taken passively sometimes, is the opinion of great Criticks: *Potiri hostium mira phrasi dicitur* saith *Pareus* in his *Lex.* *Plautin.* citing *Plaur. Epid.* 2. 4. Sc. 1. *Gnata mea hostium potita est.* *ib.* v. 35. *Mu.* *Filiam quam ex te suscepi.* *Pe.* *Quid eam?* *Mu.* *Eductam perdidisti.* *Hostium est potita.* *Id. Capt.* 1. 1. v. 24. *Nam postquam meus rex est potitus hostium.* That of *Ter.* in *Phor.* 3. 1. v. 5. *Ne quid propter tuam fidem decepta pateretur quid mali*, was anciently *poteretur*, as *Donatus* saith; and *Janus Gualtelmus* calls them miserable Criticks (*na illi miseri critici sunt &c.*) who could not follow so good an Authour. By the phrase *potiri mali*, as *Pareus* expounds it, is meant *opprimi a malo*, & in ejus tanquam potestatem venire. In this sense *Cic.* 1. *Tusc.* *pues potitur fatorum* for *moritur*. Hence *Tryphoni* l. de bello, *Tit. de Captivis* & *postliminio reversis.* *Cætera quæ in jure sunt, posteaquam postliminio redit, pro eo habentur, ac si nunquam iste hostium potitus fuisset.* And *Papinian.* *Exinde sui juris videtur fuisse, ex quo pater hostium potitus est.* See *Voss.* de *Analog.* l. 3. c. 6. and 35. *Pareus Lex. Plant. voce Potiri.* *Schrevel.*

in Ter. Phorm. 3. 1. Saturn. Merc. Major. l. 1. c. 37.

And thus far of the Rules for the preterperfect tenses and supines of Regular Verbs.

CHAP. XII.

Qu. **W**E have done with the Regular verbs, and are now come to the Irregular ones, Tell me, how many sorts of them there be?

An. Of irregular verbs there be three sorts, Redundants, Variants, Defectives.

Q1. What is the Rule for the Redundant Verbs?

An. For the verbs that are Redundant there is this Rule.

*De verbis geminum præteritum habentibus viz.*

*Activa & Passiva vocis.*

*Præteritum activa & passiva vocis habent hæc,*

*Cano cœnavi & cœnatus sum tibi format;*

*juro, juravi & juratus, &c.*

*Præteritum  
activa &  
passiva  
vocis*

Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule?

An. The meaning of the Rule is this: That there be some verbs; which have two preterperfect tenses, the one of the Active, and the other of the passive form: as placeo placui placitus; nubo nupsi nupta sum; libet libuit libitum; licet licuit licitum; tædet pertaduit pertasum; pudet puduit puditum; and piget piguit pigitum.

¶ *Præteritum activa & passiva vocis* ] By passive voice we are to understand sometimes only the passive form, and not alwaies the passive signification: for though the signification be much according to the form, yet sometime the signification is active, when the form is passive.

*Cano*

*Cena cenavi & cenatus sum tibi format* ] *Cenavi* in *Cic. Qu. Fr. l. 2. ep. 8. Eo die cenavi apud Craspedem. Id. in Vat. Quis in funere familiari cenavit cum togâ pullâ. Cenatus* is in *Cic. de Invent. Cenati diē ebuerunt ibidem. But Cenavi and cenatus sum* are not in every point the same. For we may not say *cenatus sum apud te*, but *cenavi* only : at *Plant. Amph. 2. 2. Me cum cenavisti. Cenatus* (as *Vossius* and *Alvarus* say) hath place, when we say what one did, or had done to him, when, or after that he had supped. *Cic. 1. de Divin. Qui cum cenati quiescerent. Cic. pro Deiot. Quam illa munera inopexisset cenatus. Horat. 1. Serm. 10. Satyr. Amet scripsisse ducentos Ante cibum versus totidem cenatus. Sall. in Jugurth. Consilium adprobat, ac statim milites cenatos esse in castris, ignesque creberrimos fieri. Cic. Att. l. 2. ep. 16. Cenato mihi & jam dormitanti epistola illa reddita est. And perhaps whilst he supped. As in that of *Cornel. Nepos in vita Attici. Neque unquam sine aliquâ lectione apud eum cenatum est. Voss. de Analog. l. 3. c. 21. Alvar. pag. 236, 237.**

*Juro juravi & juratus* ] *Juratus sum* seems used sometimes for *juravi*. *Plant. Cure. 4. 4. Quod fui juratus feci. ib. 2. 3. v. 88. Quid quod juratus sum? Id. Persa. 3. 2. Qui mihi juratus est sese hodie argentum dare. Gell. 7. 18. Statimque ut juratierant ad Annibalem profecti sunt. Plant. Rud. 5. 2. v. 16, 17. Non tu juratus mihi es? Juratus sum, & nunc jurabo. Yet *juratus sum* is not the preterperfect of *juro*, but of *juror*, read in *Lucan. & Stat.* observed, not by *Vossius* alone, as himself acknowledged. *De Analog. l. 3. c. 21. Joan. Tislin. Comment. in Ciceron. pro Cecin. p. 175.**

*Potique potavi & potus* ] *Potavi* is alwaies taken actively : *potus* sometimes, if we will believe *Rhenius*. But no example of it have we in him, or any else, that I find : and therefore I conclude it taken alwaies either Passively, or Neutrally. Passively as in *Ovid. 2. Pastor. Quo plus sunt pota, plus sciuntur aquæ. Id. Met. 15. Nottens erit pota, sine voxâ luce bibuntur. Cic.*

*de Clar. Orator. Sanguine tauri potu mortuus concidit*  
*Themistocles. Neutrally in these Cic. pro. Mil. Adde in-*  
*scitiam pransi, poti, oscitantis ducis. Ovid. 3. Fastor.*  
*enem potum pota trahere anus. Cic. Fam. 1. 7. ep.*  
*Et si domum bene potus seroque redieram, tamen-*  
 and so Saturnius saith of the two former, *Quæ ego*  
*pius absoluta existimaverim, quam transitiva. In a*  
 word, of whomsoever it may be said *potus est*, of him  
 it may be said *potavit*: but whether of whomsoever it  
 may be said *potavit*, of him it may be said *potus est*;  
 let the sober Reader judge. If not, then is not *potus*  
 the preterperfect of *poto*, Rhin. p. 269. Saturn.  
 16. c. 5. Voss. Analog. 1. 3. c. 21. Alvar. p. 236,  
 237.

*Titubo titubavi vel titubatus* ] *Titubavi* is alwaies  
 used actively: but *Titubatus* either passively, as *Cic. 3.*  
*de Orat. Versus debilitatur in quacunque ejus sit parte*  
*titubatum. Id in ep. Si quid forte titubatum est, ut in*  
*Illo. Id. Si tantulum offensum titubatumque sit. Or*  
 Neutrally, as *Virg. 5. Aen. Hic juvenis jam victor orans*  
*cessigia presso Haud tenuit titubata solo, i. e. quæ titu-*  
*baverant.*

*Sic careo carui & cassus sum* ] *Cassus* is a noun, and  
 not a participle: nor will it be easie to find where any  
 one said *cassus sum* for *carui*. So that till Authority be  
 produced for it, the continuance of this in his Grammar  
 seems to be a mistake in the learned *Jasq. Berengi*. See  
 before *Carui, cassum, caritumque*.

*Prandeo, prandi, & pransus* ] *Pransus* is not the  
 same that *prandi*: but signifies *qui prandit, vel confecto*  
*prandio, vel a prandio*, as *Alvarus, Farnaby* and *Noni-*  
*us Marcellinus* think: and like *cenatus*, hath place,  
 when we declare what one doth, or suffereth, or how  
 one is affected, after that he hath dined; as *Cic. pro*  
*Mil. Vide inscitiam pransi, poti oscitantis ducis. Nor as*  
*Plaut. said in Pæn. Calidum prandium prandisti, would*  
 any one say *Calidum prandium pransus es*. Nor would  
*Vossius* say *pransus sum apud te* but *prandi*: and again  
 prans.



*pransus ad te accedam.* See before *Ceno & poto.* And *Alvar.* p. 236, 237, 239. *Voss. de Analog.* l. 3. c. 21.

*Pateo patui & passus* ] But we have shewed before that *passum* is not from *pateo*, but from *pando*: and *passus sum* is the preterperfect of *pando*, not of *pateo*. It *Jasq. Berengi*, who espouses this, shall give us his Authour for it, he will then give us cause to free both himself, and our Authour from imputation of mistake.

*Placeoque dat placui & placitus* ] *Placui* and *placitus sum* are very near, if not all out, the same in sense. *Ter. Hecyr. Prolog.* *ubi sunt cognita, placita sunt.* i. e. *placuerunt* *A. Gell.* l. 1. cited by *Saturn.* l. 1. c. 27. *Et statim displicita est insolentia, Ovid.* *Non ita diis placuit.* *Plaut. Amph.* *Ita diis placitum.* *Quintil.* *Paturos adulescentibus sedere permixtos non placet mihi.* So *Saturnius* cites it from him. *Hor.* l. 2. *Od.* 17. *Sed potenti justitiæ placitumque Parcis.* But yet *placitus sum* can hardly be said to be the preterperfect tense of *placeo*, if such a word as *placeor* be read. And such a word *Saturnius* quotes from *St. Cyprian*, who in his *Ep.* said, *Si hominibus placetur, dominus offenditur;* Suitable to what *Seneca* said, *Ab his nihil divinitas nocetur.* Notwithstanding because this word is, as *Saturnius* saith, *perinde varum, ut nusquam alibi reperitur,* if it shall not be allowed of (so willing am I to find no more faults in our Authour, or any else, than needs must be) let *placitus sum* go for a preterperfect tense of *placeo*, if it please you. And however with *Vossius* and *Saturnius*, let the Impersonal *placet* have *placuit*, and *placitum est*; which perhaps is that, and all that our Authour here meant. *Saturn.* l. 3. c. 14.

*Suesco suevi atque suetus* ] *Suevi* and *suetus* may agree much in sense and use, but neither of them is from *sueso*. But *suevi* is from *sueo*, used by *Lucret.* l. 1. *Et semina rerum Appellare suemus;* i. e. *solemus.* *Ib.* *Nec frigora quimus usurpare oculis, nec voces cer-*

*desuemus*. And thence *suesco* borrows the preterperfect *suevi*. And *sueus sum* is, if not from *sueor*, no such word being read, yet from *suescor*, whereof in Liv. l. 2. is read *assuescor*. *Charitasque ipsius soli, eum longo tempore assuescitur, animos eorum consociasset*. Whence I suppose the Gryphisw. Grammar hath not *suesco*, but *assuesco*, *assuevi* and *assueus sum*. p. 93.

*Veneo pro vendor, venivi venditus & sum*] *Venivi*, or rather *venii* (as Grammarians love to speak) and *venditus sum* may in sense agree, yet they are preterperfect tenses of two several verbs, *venivi* or *venii* of *veneo*, and *venditus sum* of *vendor*. And I cannot understand why *fasz Berengi* or any other should give to a verb a preterperfect tense more than it needs, or hath.

*Nubo nupsi nuptaque sum*] *Nuptus sum* I find not read in any Authour, but *nupta sum*, not scarce in any Grammarians, but *Saturnius* and *fasz Berengi*, thence I suppose our Authour changes the gender of the participle. But in sense I see no difference between *nupsi* and *nupta sum*. Cic. 1. Divin. *Virgo nupsit illi, cui Catilia nupta fuerat*. Cic. pro Cluent. *Qua brevi tempore post patris mortem A. Aulio Melino consobrino suo nupsit*. Plaut. Amph. 2. 9. *Quid ego deliqui, si cui nupta sum, tecum fui*. Cic. Fam. 15. 3. *Quocum esset nupta regis Armeniorum soror*. Id. 1. 2. de Orat. *quo cum* (if *Saturnius* quote it right) *nupta erat matertera nostra*. Plaut. Trin. 1. 2. *Dum quidem hercle tecum nupta sit, sanè velim*. A. Gell. 1. 1. *ut una apud duos nupta esset*. Cic. pro Cael. *Cum ex amplissimo genere in familiam clarissimam nupsisses*. Tacit. 1. 1. *Julia denupsit in domum Rubellii*. But this verb is used not of women only, but of men too, yet womanish men most an end, if not alwaies. *Martial*. 1. 12. *Barbarus rigido nupsit Callistratus Afro*. *Hæc quæ legi viro nubere virgo solet*. Id. 1. 8. ep. 12. *uxori nubere nolo meæ*. Juven. Sat. 2. *Quid queris? nubit amicus*. *Pomponius Pannuceatis in Nonius, sed meus major frater*

*frater nupsit dotata vetula.* Hence *Chalinus* in *Plaut. Casin.* 5. 1. is called *nuptus*. *Lubet Chalinum, quid agat scire, novum nuptum cum novo marito.* And when it is that a man is married to a man which is against nature, it may not be unfit to say of that man, *nuptus est*, though that be against use; which perhaps those two very learned Grammarians above-mentioned had respect unto. Yet is not *nuptus* or *nupta sum* the preterperfect of *nubo*, but of *nuber*: which is read in *Plaut. Pers.* 3. 1. *Non tu nunc hominum mores vides. Quojusmodi hic cum famula facile nubitur? Dum dos sit, nullum vitium vitio vertitur.* If that may not be allowed of, then we may say with *Vossius* too as well as our Authour, *Nubo facili nupsisti, & nupta sum.* *Voss. de Analog.* 1. 3. c. 25. *Saturn. Merc. Mij.* 1. 1. c. 27. *Rhen. f.* 269. *Alvar. p.* 244.

*Meveor meritis sum vel merui* ] *Meritis sum* and *merui* may agree in sense: but as *meritis sum* is of *meveor*, so *merui* is of *merco*: for that verb is read in *Plaut. Menach.* 2. 3. *Item huic ultro sit, ut merer, potissimum nostrae domi ut sit.* *Id.* 5. 7. *Adibo, atque hominem accipiam, quibus dictis meret.* *Id. Mostell.* 1. 1. *Quia nunquam merui, tu meruisti, & nunc meres.* So in *Plaut. Pseud.* 4. 7. is read *demerco*: *Quid mercedis petasus, bade domino demeret?* *A. Gell.* 1. 1. c. 8. *Grandem pecuniam demerebat.* *Suet. in Aug.* *Avunculum magnopere demeruit.* i. e. *devinxit*, saith *Saturnius*. So *Promerco* is in *Plaut. Trin.* 3. 2. *Nam retineri nequeo, quin dicam ea, quae promeres.* *Ter. And.* 2. 1. *Neutiquam officium liberi esse hominis puto, cum is nihil promercat, postulare id gratiae apponi sibi.*

*Adde libet, libuit, libitum* ] So *Saturnius.* 1. 3. c. 23. and *Vossius Etymolog.* p. 117. and *Alvar. p.* 242 *Libuit* is read in *Ter. Eua.* 4. 7. as *Stephanus* quotes it, and *Farnaby* reads it. *Et cum te clam subduxisti te mihi? Libuit,* *Schrevelius* reads it *libuit*. So in *Plaut. Pseud.* 1. 3. *Cur id ausus facere? Libuit, mea fuit.* So *Stephanus*

reads

reads it: *Plantin, libuit. Libitum est* is near the same in sense with it. *Ter. Ad. 5. 1. Prodeambulare huc libitum est. Plant. Curc. 5. 2. Quid istum tibi tactio est? Quia mihi libitum est. Plant. Bacch. 5. 1. Is me scelus usque attrondit dolis doctis, indoctum ut libitum est.* Where *libitum est* hath the perfect sense of the preter-perfect tense. *Plant. Mil. 3. 2. Qui libitum est isti condormiscere? Cic. 2. de Leg. Quoniam libitum est vobis me ad hæc impellere.*

*Et licet adde quod licuit licitum.] Quintil. l. 4. c. 4. hath licuit. Procuratorem tibi esse non licuit. Cic. pro Flac. Hanc te copere non licuit. Cic. Att. l. 2. Nihilominus ei licitum esset plebeio temp. perdere quam similibus ejus me consule patriciis licitum esset. Id. in Fam. Quibus sine dolore licitum est mortem cum vitâ commutare. Id. Antiq. in Exil. Dum in civitate manere licitum est.* So that here also we may say with *Vossius, Saturnius, and Alvarus*, as well as our own Authour, *Allicit venire licuit, & licitum est satis constat.* One thing by the way I observe, that *est* is more used with *licitum*, and *libitum*, than *fuit*. *Voss. de analog. l. 3. c. 22. Saturn. l. 3. c. 23.*

*Tædet quod tæduit & dat pertasum.]* So *Vossius* in his *Etymolog. p. 137.* as well as our Authour. *Tædet* is in *Cic. Att. l. 5. Tædet omnes nos vitæ Ter. Eun. l. 1. Et tædet, & amore ardeo. Id. Phorm. 3. 2. At enim tædet jam audire eadem millies. Plant. Casp. l. 1. Tædet sermonis tui. Tædebat* is in *Ter. Ad. l. 1. Credo jam omainum tædebat. Tædeat* in *Cic. 2. Verr. sunt homines quos libidinis & infamiae suae neque pudeat, neque tædeat. Pertasum est in Virg. An. 5. — Et quos Pertasum magni incepti verumque tuarum est. Id. Aen. 4. Si non pertasum thalamis tædeque fuisset. Plant. Mostell. l. 4. Ita me tui male convivii sermonisque pertasum est.* But this *tæduit* I cannot find. Hence I suppose both *Rhenius* and *Saturnius*, and *Hayn* decline this verb *tædet* only with *pertasum est*. And so *Alvarus*: *tantum tædet vel potius pertædet pertasum est.* And yet *Saturnius* from

*perit adeo citius perit aduissent* out of *A. Gell. l. 1. Verbis ejus defatigati perit aduissent*. Thence doubtless *M. Farnaby* instead of *tadet* hath *peritadet*, *peritaduit* & *peritasum* est. And so *Linacir*. & a *tadet*, vel potius *peritadet peritasum* est. He had said that some (and he names this amongst the rest) had a double preterperfect tense given to them; therefore giving this for one, he allows *taduit* or rather *peritaduit* for the other. If therefore we shall allow our Authour (and why may we not?) to set down *taduit* by an *Aphorismus* for *peritaduit*, he may be as right as the best; *taduit* the simple being no more in use, than *tasum*, for which we use the compound *peritasum*, and so may *peritaduit*; for ought I know. *Isid. Berengi* hath *taditum* est: but I know no Authour for that. *Voss. Etymolog. p. 137 Farnaby. p. 37. Linacir de Emendat. Sc. ult. l. 4. p. 179. Saturn. l. 4. c. 25. Hayre p. 76. Rhen. p. 258. Alvar. p. 242.*

*Adde pudet faciens puduit puditumque* ] So *Farnaby*, and *Vossius*, *Rhenius*, and *Alvarus*. *Puduit* is in *Sill. l. 10. Mens abiit, puduitque sua*. *Puditum* est in *Plaut. Mucch. 3. 1. Neque mei, atque te tui intus puditum est factis, quæ facis. Appul. in Apolog. Nonne vos puditum est hæc crimina tali viro obicere?* *Cic. in Ilac. Nonne esset puditum, si hanc causam ego mihi severè*. *Plaut. Casin. 5. 2. v. 4. Pudet quod prius non puditum unquam est. Indeed Saturnus laith, peritadit pigritum est, & puditum est, pro piguit & puduit, jam quis inter verba recepit?* *l. 3. Meric. Mas. c. 25.*

*Atque piget tibi quod format piguit, pigitumque* ] So *Farnaby*, *Vossius*, *Rhenius*, *Alvarus*. *Piguit* seems no ordinary word. *Stephanus* cites *Columella l. 6. c. 1. for it. Caterum de tam sapiente viro piguit dicere*. But in the Authour, at least in my Book, it is, and as it seems should be, *piget*. But indeed *Cic. contr. Sall.* (if that be *Cicero's*) it is read. *Neque piguit quære, cur ego P. Crassum domum missem*. *Pigitum* is in *Sill. l. 7. Nec pigitum est*

parvosque laves humilisque subire. *Limina cœlicolam te-*  
*lli.* So Gell. l. 13. cited by Saturnius, *Pigitum est cinctos*  
*saltem esse & penulatos.* Id. 15. 13. *Veritum autem, sicut*  
*puditum & pigitum, non personaliter per infinitum mo-*  
*dam dictum esse non a veterioribus tantum videmus.*  
*Farnab. p. 37. Alvar. p. 242. Voss. Etym. p. 157.*  
*Analog. l. 4. c. 13. Rhén. p. 259. Saturn. Merc. Maj.*  
*c. 15.*

**Q.** How are the words of this Rule declina-  
 ed?

**A.** The words of this Rule are declined thus :

*Cano, canas, canavi, canare, canatum,*  
*Juro, juras, juravi, jurare, juratum,*  
*Poto, potas, potavi, potare, potatum & potum,*  
*Titubo, titubas, titubavi, titubare, titubatum,*  
*Caveo, caver, cavi, cavere, cavatum,*  
*Prædeo, prædes, prædi, prædere, præsum,*  
*Placeo, places, placui & placitus sum, placere, placitum,*  
*Pateo, pates, patui, patere* —  
*Suesco, suecui, suevi, suecere, suetum,*  
*Venico, venis, venii, venire,*  
*Nubo, nubis, nupsi, [ & nuptus sum ] nubere, nuptum,*  
*Mereor, mereris, meritus sum, mereri, meritum,*  
*Mereo, meres, merui, merere, meritum,*  
*Libet, libebat, libuit & libitum est, libere,*  
*Licet, licebat, licuit & licitum est, licere,*  
*Tædet, tædebat, pertæduit & pertæsum est, tædere,*  
*Pudet, pudebat, puduit & puditum est, pudere,*  
*Piger, pigebat, piguit & pigitum est, pigere.*

**Q.** Are there any other words of like nature,  
 that may be added hither?

**A.** Of like nature to the words in this Rule some  
 other words are accounted to be, which may be referred  
 hither : as *punio punivi & punitus sum* ; *doleo dolui &*  
*dolitus sum* ; *censco censui & census sum* ; *quæ quis quivi*  
*& quitus sum* ; *odio ( out of use ) odi & osus sum* ; *des-*  
*ino, desui & desitus sum.*

**¶** The active preterperfect tenses of these verbs are  
 not

The de-  
 clining of  
 the words.

not doubted of: those of the passive form, though of Active signification follow. Of *punitus sum* we have an instance in *Cic. pro Mil. Cujus tu inimicissimum multo crudelius etiam punitus es, quam erat humilitatis meae postulare. Punitus es, i. e. punivisti*, saith *Barthol. 2. tomus Schol. in loc.* This 'tis like *Quintillian* had in his Eye, when in his l. 9. c. 3. he set down that figure of speech, *Inimicos punitus es*. And no doubt but *Appul.* followed, in his l. 8. when he said, *Punita sum nefarium mearum nuptiarum praedonem*. Yet in *Strindels* though *punitus sum* be used to signifie the same that *punii*, it is not a preterperfect. et *punio*, and so *punio* (though *Vossius* himself give it, that *punio etiam apud Tullium punii & punitus sum facit*) is no Redundant, but it is a preterperfect of *punior*, which in other tenses also, beside the preterperfect tense, was used Deponently in an active sense, as *Auson. Poma l. 1. de Antiq. Locust. c. 11.* sheweth. *Cic. Tusc. l. 1. Multi inimicos etiam mortuos puniuntur. Id. de Offic. l. 1. Neque ad ejus qui puniuntur aliquem, aut verbus castigat, sed ad recipiendae utilitatem referri. Id. Phil. 8. Clarissimorum hominum crudelissimam puniretur necem.*

That *doleo* hath *dolui* and *dolitus sum* is *Saturnius* his observation: and he proves it three times over, p. 57. and 69. and 281. Yet all with one proof out of *A. Gell.* l. 9. c. 13. *Id subito perdoluitum est cuidam Tito Manlio summo genere nato*—which are the words of *Claud. Claudigius* there related by *Gellius*.

That *censeo* hath *census sum* beside *censui* is thought because of that of *Ovid. l. 1. de Pont. El. 3. Hanc probat & primo dilectam semper ab aeo, Est inter comites martia censa suo*. But if *censeo* have not been a Deponent, as *Stephanus* and his followers say, but supposed by *Vossius* to be mistaken, yet this like the other of *perdoluitum est*, is but an *ἀπαρξὶς ἀγόμενον*, no news of it elsewhere, that I hear of, but in *Cic. pro Flac.* where there is at least in the opinion of *Vossius*, a false cry of it, See *Voss. de Ana'og. l. 3. c. 5.*

That



That *queo* makes not *quivi* only, but *quitus sum* is thought, because of that of Gellius l. 20. c. 1. *Savitia ista pœne contemni non quita est.* And that of Ter. Hec. 4. 1. v. 57. *Nam quum compressa est quata, forma in tenebris nosci non quita est.* But Saturnius, Rhenius, and Vossius too, tell us that *queatur* is read in *Lucret.* l. 1. for *queat*. And so 'tis v. 1043. *Dum veniant alie ac suppleri summa queatur.* And I am sure in *Plaut. Pers.* 2. 2. v. 12. is read *queantur.* *Nec subigi queantur unquam, ut pro eâ fide habeant iudicem.* Appul. in *Apolog.* hath *nequitur.* *Sola virginitas, cum semel accepta est, reddi nequitur.* *Plaut. Rud.* 4. 4. v. 20. *Ut nequitur comprimi!* And then *quitus sum* may signifie the same that *quivi*, but it will not be a Redundant preterperfect of *queo*, but the right preterperfect of *queor* used Deponently.

As there is *odi* by a Syncope put for *odivi* (used by M. Anton. in his letters recited in *Cicero's Philip.* 13.) of the obsolete verb *odio*, yet used by St. Hierome, So there is *osus sum* also read in active signification. *Plaut. Amph.* 3. 2. 19. *Ita ingenium meum est, Inimicos semper osus sum obtinuer.* Gell. l. 4. c. 8. *Hunc Fabricius non probabat, neque amico utebatur, osusque curi mortis causâ fuit.* And so the compounds of it *perosus* & *exosus*. *Sueton. Tib.* c. 21. *Si non Populum Romanum perosus sunt.* *Curt.* l. 8. *Patrios mores exosus es.* So *Ovid. Met.* 8. l. *Longumque perosus Exilium.* *Id. ib.* l. 1. *Ille velut crimen tædas exosa jugales.* *Liv.* l. 8. *ab Urbe. Plebs consulum nomen, haut secus quàm regum, perosa erat.* *Voss. de Analog.* l. 3. c. 39. *Rhen.* p. 222.

*Desivi*, and by Syncope *desi* is ordinary: and in *Plaut.* as from *desitus sum*, is read *desitum est.* *Mosell.* 4. 2. *Numquam hic triduum unum desitum esse & bibi.* *Gram. Gypsiwald.* p. 53.

There are besides these Redundants of other sorts:

First some have two preterperfect tenses and both of the active form: as *conniveo connivi* & *connixi*; *parco peperci* & *parsi*.

Secondly, some two Preterperfect tenses and both of the

the passive form : as *nitor nifus & nixus sum; fruor fructus & fructus sum, &c.*

Thirdly, some are Redundant in their supines only : as *torqueo torfi tortum & torsum; indulgeo indulfi indultum & indultum.*

Fourthly, some are Redundant both in Preterperfect tense and Supine : as *sorbeo sorbui & sorpsi* ( according to vulgar account ) *sorbitum & sorptum; mulgeo mulsi & molsi, mulsum & mulsium, &c.*

But as these are reckoned up all together in their orders by Mr. Bird in his Grounds of Grammar. p. 91, 92. so they have been severally touched in these Notes, in passing along, and may be found in their respective places, and so need not here again to be repeated.

And thus far of Verbs Redundant : Our next proceeding must be unto those that are Variant.

### CHAP XIII.

Qu. **W**hich do you call Variant Verbs ?  
 An. Variant Verbs are those which in their declining do vary from the common form of declining.

Qu. How many sorts of such verbs are considered here in the Grammar ?

An. In the Grammar here are considered two sorts of Variant Verbs, First some that are declined with an Irregular preterperfect tense formed from themselves, Secondly some that are declined with an irregular preterperfect tense borrowed from some other Verb.

Qu. What verbs are declined with an irregular preterperfect formed from themselves ?

An. With an irregular preterperfect formed from themselves are declined some Neuter-passives.

Qu. Which is the Rule for those Neuter-passives ?

An.

*An.* The Rule for those Neuter-passives is this :

*De Neutro-passivorum præteritis.*

*Neutro-passivum sic præteritum tibi format ,  
Gaudeo gavisus sum ; fido fesus & audeo  
ausus sum, fiso factus, soleo solitus sum ,  
Mæreo sum mæstus ; sed Phocæ nomen habetur.*

*Neutra-  
passivum  
sic præteri-  
tum.*

*Q1. what is the meaning of this Rule ?*

*An.* The meaning of the Rule is this : That some Neuter-passives are declined with a preterperfect tense of the Passive form ; as *gaudeo gavisus sum ; fido fesus sum ; audeo ausus sum ; soleo solitus sum.*

**[ Neutro-passivum ]** Verbs neuters though they neither be passives, because they end in *o* like Actives ; nor be Actives, because they cannot take *r*, and become Passives, yet do many times partake with both the Active and the Passive, whence those distinctions of them into *Neuter-active*, and *Neuter-passive*, A *Neuter-active* is a verb, that is partly active, and partly neuter : *Active*, in that it hath an active signification and construction : *Neuter* in that it ends only in *o*, and cannot take *r*, and become a passive, as *ambio, convenio, facio, &c.* A *Neuter-passive* is a verb that is partly Neuter and partly Passive : *Neuter* in that it cannot take *r* and become a Passive ; and *Passive* in that it either hath a passive signification and construction, as *vapulatio, venio, lino, exulo* ; or else a *Preterperfect tense of the Passive form* and termination, as *gaudeo gavisus, fido fesus, audeo ausus, soleo solitus* ; or thirdly both, the passive signification and construction throughout the whole, and the passive form and termination in the preterperfect tense, as *fiso factus sum*. And this accurateness of distinction I see observed by that rational and methodical Writer Mr. Bird School-master of Gloucester ; but by none else. Scaliger in his 5. l. de caus. Ling. L. l. c. 100. gives us this account of these minutiores antiquorum sectiones, as he calls those subdivisions of verbs made by the Ancients. *Inter Neutra* (saith he) *sunt*

*ēre Neutropassivum : ut exulo, vapulo : ac Neutra quidem, quoniam ex sese Passivum non crearent : Passiva autem, quia significatio recideret in eum de quo verbum dicebatur. Igitur ab accidente, hoc est a voce Neutra : a formā, hoc est a significatione Passiva dicta sunt.* But this description is too narrow, reaching only unto the first branch of our distinction, so that *vapulo, veneo, &c.* shall only be *Neuter-passives*, but not *gaudeo, audio*, and the rest of that sort; because they do not signify passively. *Sebastian Duisburgensis* in his Notes on *Despauterius* defines a *Neuter-passive* thus : *Verbum neutro-passivum est, quod desinens in o, facit prateritum ac si desineret in or, ut soleo solitus sum, &c.* And so the *Grammar of Gryphiswald.* *Quaedam verba dicuntur Neutro-passiva, quæ cum in o desinant, praterita tamen more passivorum faciunt : ut audio ausus sum, &c.* But this description also is too narrow, for it takes not in *exulo, vapulo, &c.* which have the passive signification, though they be not declined in any respect like passives; and therefore not only by *Scaliger*, and the *Ancients* before, but by our own *Grammar* also afterward, in the *Syntaxis*, where it treats of the construction of passives, are called *Neuter-passives*; *vapulo, veneo, liceo, &c.* *Neutro-passiva passivam constructionem habent.* So the *Rule* there however here, by the examples our Author seems to look upon those only as *Neuter-passives* which have a preterperfect tense of the passive form and termination. To rectify this mistake *Mr. Hayne* in his *Grammar* reads this rule, not in the general, or indistinct way, as here, *Neutropassivum, &c.* but more particularly and restrainedly, *Neutro-passiva hæc sic prateritum tibi formant, Gaudeo gavisus sum, &c.* Yet the meaning of *Duisburgensis* and the *Gram. of Gryphisw.* was not wholly to exclude those of the first branch, *vapulo, &c.* for they bring them in under other terms of distinction, as unwilling to confound those under one denomination, betwixt which they saw there was a real distinction. The first calls them *Neut. a-passiva, Ver-*  
*bis*

*bum neutrum-passivum* (saith he) *quod in o desinens passivè significat: ut sex hic posita, vapulo i. e. percutior, &c.* The second calls them *Neutralia passiva, quæ licet desinant in o, passiv. tamen significant;* And so doth *Vossius* too in the Text of his Grammar, though in his *Margine* he adds, *vel Neutro-passiva*, as intimating that they are called also *Neuter-passives*; yet adding that *Aliàs Neutro-passiva dicuntur, quæ præteritum formant more passivorum; ut audeo ausus sum, &c.* Either term *Neutro-passiva* or *Neutra-passiva* will serve to take in all the members of our distinction, but neither of them do so distinctly note one member as to exclude the others, and become (as Mr. *Stockwood* in his *Disputations* qu. 29. p. 206. makes them) subdividing terms, as if those that are *Neutro-passiva* were not *Passiva-neutra*, & *vice versâ*. In this methinks there may be a reconciliation if *Neutro-passiva* be allowed to comprehend also all that are *Neutra-passiva*, or *Neutralia-passiva* as some speak, yet *κατ' ἐξοχήν* to note those more especially, which form a passive preterperfect tense, as these in our Rule here do. Or again if *Neutra-passiva* be allowed to comprehend those also that are termed *Neutro-passiva*, yet more especially to note those, which have the signification, but not the formation of a passive. If any man think otherwise, I will not prescribe to his opinion or fancy. Only I seem not so well to relish that term *Neutralia-passiva*, because that to me seems to signify Passives that are Neuters, or taken Neutrally, of which sort I know none distinct from Deponents signifying Neutrally, or Absolutely, as *orior* I rise, or *glorior* I boast, which if any man will call *Neutralia-passiva*, I shall not hinder him.

*Gaudēgavissus sum* ] From *gavissum* comes *gavissus*; and *gavissum* comes from *gavisi*, which formerly was in use; Hence *Cassius Hemina* in *Priscian*. l. 9. *Itaque admiratum esse gavisi*. So *Liv.* (there also) *Quoniam audi vi paucis, gavisi*. Though *gavisi* is now out of use.

*Fido fisisus* ] *Fisus* comes from *fisum*, and *fisum* from *fidi*,

*fidi*, once in use; whence *confidi* read in *Liv.* 1. 4. *dec. 5. Agros confiderunt se a populationibus tueri posse.*

*Et audeo ausus* ] *Ausus* is from *ausum* (as also *ausurus* in *Sall. Jug. Nihil illum ausurum palam.* And *Auson. Turpe quid ausurus te sine teste time*) and that from *ausi* sometimes used: (whence *Cato pro Luc. Anton. in Priscian* 1. 9. *Non ausi recusare*) but now out of use.

*Fio factus* ] This verb is properly a *Noster-passive*, ascending in *o* like an *Active*, and yet signifying like a *Passive*. But it is not properly placed in this Rule. For this Rule (at least in my apprehension of it) intends only such Verbs as form an irregular preterperfect tense from themselves: but *fio* forms neither *factus*, as *Dionodes* 1. 1. saith it doth, nor any other preterperf. from it self, but wanting a preterperfect tense of its own, as *Vossius* and *Farnaby* say, borrows one from another verb, and so belongs upon that account to the Rule following, *Quadam prateritum verba accipiunt aliunde.* The verb that it borrows its preterperfect from is *facior*, formerly used. Whence that of *Nigidius Figulus* cited by both *Vossius* and *Saturnius*, *Id quod dica huiusmodi est; ποιεῖν facit, ποιεῖται facitur, ποιεῖν facere.* Thence not only thole compounds of this verb *afficior*, *perficior*, &c. Yet in use, but some others also grown out of use, as *parvifaciatur* written by *Titinnius* in *Quinto*, and *satisfacitur* by *Varro* in *Cynico*, as *Vossius* from *Nonius*, and *Priscian* shews. *Farnaby* p. 42. *Saturn.* 1. 6. c. 5. *Voss.* *Analog.* 1. 3. c. 38. *Danes.* 1. 3. c. 15.

*Soleo solutus sum* ] *Solutus* is from *solitum*, and that from *solui*, which also antiently hath been in use, though now it be disused. Thence *Sall.* 1. 2. *Historiar.* cited by *Priscian* 1. 9. *Neque subsidii uti soluerat compositis.* And *Celins* 1. 7. *Annal.* in *Nonius*, *Duos & septuaginta libelloris domum deportavisse fascēs, qui duelloribus hostium ante soluerint ferri.* Of this verb *Saturnius* saith he reads no such Participle as *soliturus*: and *Charisius* saith it hath no future tense, because one cannot be said to have accustomed himself to that which but shall be.

*Saturn.*

Saturn. l. 6. c. 5. Voss. Analog. l. 3. c. 21.

*Mæreo sum mæstus* : sed *Phoca nomen habetur* ] *Vossius* in his Grammar declines *mæreo* with *mæstus sum* : and so *Duisburgensis* on *Deshauterius*, and *Farnaby* and *Burles*. Yet as *Farnaby* so *Vossius* hath a marginal Note intimating as if *mæstus* were no participle, but, as *Phocas* thought a noun; *Nisi mæstus potius nomen est, ut videtur*. But what there he speaks doubtingly of, in his *Analog.* l. 3. c. 24. he, and not *Saturnius* only, or *Rhenius*, doth confidently affirm. *At mæstus nomen est; non participium, ut putarunt*. I see not why *mæreo* might anciently have formed *mæru*, and thence *mæritum*, and by a Syncope *mærtum*, and thence by a change of *r* into *s* (which is an ordinary change) *mæstum* and so *mæstus*. But on the other side I find degrees of comparison *mæstior* and *mæstissimus* formed from this word, whereas none such, that I meet with, are formed from the Participles of the rest of these Neuter-passives; and that may be a presumption, that it is no Participle like them, but a Noun; yet not infallible neither, because I find no comparing of *fessus*, or *lassus*, which yet are supposed to be Nouns, and not Participles.

The Grammar of *Gryphiswald*. together with these verbs, ranks and reckons up those, which besides their active preterperfect tense, have also a preterperfect tense of the passive form, as *prandeo prandi pransus sum; cæno cenavi cenatus sum, &c.* And well they may, for ought I know be reckoned here, upon the account of their Passive preterperfect tense, though upon the account of their Redundancie they be treated of in another Rule.

Q<sup>n</sup>. How are the words of this Rule declined?

Ans. The words of this Rule are declined thus :

*Gaudeo, gaudes, gavisus sum, gaudere, gavisû,*  
*Fido, fidis, fesus sum, fidere, fesus,*  
*Audeo, audes, ausus sum, audere, ausum,*  
*Fio, fis, factus sum, fieri, factus,*

*Soleo,*

The declining of the words.



*Soleo, soles, solitus sum, solere, solitum,  
Mæreo, mæres, mæstus sum, mæreere.*

Thus far of Verbs declined with an Irregular Præterperfect tense formed from themselves.

## CHAP. XIV.

**Qu.** Which is the Rule for those verbs that are declined with a præterperfect tense borrowed from another verb?

**An.** The Rule for those verbs that are declined with a præterperfect borrowed from some other verb is this:

*De verbis præteritum mutuantibus.*

*Quædam  
præteritum  
verba.*

*Quædam præteritum verba accipiunt aliunde.*  
**Qu.** What is the meaning of this Rule?

**An.** The meaning of this Rule is this: That some verbs which have no regular præterperfect tense of their own, are yet declined with the præterperfect tense of another verb, which so supplies the room of their præterperfect tense, as if it were their own.

**Q.** How many sorts of verbs doth your Grammar here speak of, that do borrow a præterperfect from another verb?

**An.** There be three sorts of verbs here spoken of which borrow a præterperfect tense from another verb, The first is some Inceptives in *sco*: the second is some particular verbs in *o*; the third is some particular verbs in *or*.

**Qu.** What saith your Grammar touching Inceptives in *sco*?

**An.** Touching verbs Inceptives in *sco*, our Grammar saith this:

*Inceptivum  
in sco.*

*Inceptivum in sco stans pro primario adoptat  
Præteritum ejusdem verbi: vult ergo tepesco  
A tepio tepui, fervesco a serveo servi.*

**Qu.**

Q<sup>1</sup>. What is the meaning of this Rule ?

Ans. The meaning of this Rule is this : That verbs Inceptive in *sco* standing for (that is, used or taken in the signification of) those primitive verbs, that they are derived from, are declined with the preterperfect tenses of those primitive verbs, from which they are derived.

¶ *Inceptivum in sco* ] A verb *Inceptive* is properly such a verb as betokens the beginning, or increase of any action, or passion, and may, saith *Rhenius*, be expounded by *incipio* or *fit* : as *labasco*, i. e. *incipio labare*; *maturesco*, i. e. *fito maturus*. Not all *Inceptives* are declined with a borrowed preterperfect tense, but only those that are formed from verbs : (for those that are formed from nouns are declined with no preterperfect at all) and of those that are formed from verbs, those only are so declined, that are formed from verbs in use, having preterperfect tenses, from which they are derived (an example of which putting we have in that of *Virgil*, *Incipiunt agitata tumescere* i. e. *tumere*, vel *tumesceri*) for if the primitive have no preterperfect tense, or be out of use, then the inceptive is not declined with any preterperfect tense ; one only that I know of, being excepted, namely *evilesco*, which in *Suetonius* hath *evitui*, though no such verb as *evileo* be read, *Voss. Etymolog.* p. 142. If any meet with any more, he may add them. It is very pertinent, that which *Saturnius* speaking of these verbs saith, namely that, *Etsi vis inchoativa repugnet, ut prateritum habeant perfectum, auctoritate tamen usuque prevalente illud ipsum aut ex sese habent, aut certe a suis primitivis (quanquam a nominibus deducta praterito perfecto carent existimaverim) permutuantur, ut quod natura inchoatum est, id arte perficiatur, &c.* *Saturn. Merc. Major.* l. c. c. 16.

Q<sup>1</sup>. What other verbs doth your Grammar reckon up, which end in *o*, and borrow a preterperfect tense from some other verb ?

Ans.

*An.* The words in *o* which are declined with a borrowed preterperfect tense, are (with the preterperfect tenses which they borrow, and the verbs from which they borrow them) by our Grammar reckoned up thus:

*A video*  
*cerno vult*  
*vidi.*

*A video cerno vult vidi; a concutio vult*  
*Preteritum quatio concussi; a percutioque*  
*Percussi ferio: a mingo vult meio minxi:*  
*A sedeo sideo vult sedi, a suffero tollo*  
*Sustuli; & a suo sum fui; a tulo rite fero tuli:*  
*A sto sisto steti tantum pro stare: furoque*  
*Insanivi a verbo ejusdem significati.*

**Qu.** What is the meaning of this branch of the Rule?

*An.* The meaning of this branch of the Rule is this: That *cerno* [to see] borrows *vidi* from *video*; *quatio* borrows *concussi* from *concutio*; *ferio* borrows *percussi* from *percutio*; *meio* borrows *minxi* from *mingo*; *sideo* borrows *sedi* from *sedeo*; *tollo* borrows *sustuli* from *suffero*; *sum* borrows *fui* from *suo*; *fero* borrows *tuli* from *tulo*; *sisto* [in the sense of standing only] borrows *steti* from *sto*; and *furo* borrows *insanivi* from *insanio*.

**[ A video cerno ]** Of this see before in *No fit vi*.

**[ Quatio concussi ]** *Quassi*, if read, is rare: therefore *concussi* which is ordinary, is ordinarily declined with this verb, as the preterperfect tense of it. But see before in *Tio ffi*.

**[ Percussi ferio ]** *Ferio*, as *Vossius* from *Charisius* notes, anciently had *ferui* for its preterperfect tense, which now is grown out of use. And though *Servius* on *Ving. An. 7.* refuse not *feriturum*, nor *Petrarcha* *feritum*, saying in 8. *Africa, Pax populis ductibusque placet fœdusque feritum*, yet they are not to be followed therein.

**[ Meio minxi ]** *Diomedes* allows of *meii* of *mingo*, whence this is said to borrow a preterperfect tense, *Vossius* wonders how it came to be so, as it is now in use, being

ing an obsolete verb. *Phocas*, *Diomedes*, and *Priscian* have it. And upon the account of their Authority doubtless it was anew taken up *Voss. de Eym.* p. 155. *Avar.* p. 248.

*Sido vult sedi* ] That *sido* borrows *sedi* from *sedro*, that of *Senece de Benef.* l. 2. c. 8. shews: *Cum subsedis cupiditas*, &c. Yet *Columella.* l. 12. c. 24. hath the proper preterperfect of this verb: *Patiemur picem considerare*, & *cum considerit, aquam eliquabimus.* *Voss. de Analog.* l. 3. c. 16. *Danesh. Schol.* l. 2. c. 15.

*A suffero tollo sustuli* ] *Tollo*, or *tulo*, as they did anciently, expels it, of old had *tetuli*: instead of which the compound *sustuli* is now in use: but that is not from *suffero*, as here is said, but from *sustollo*: for *suffero* it self borrows its preterperfect tense from *sustollo*. Now that is read in *Plant. Mil. Glor.* 2. 3. *Credo hercle has sustollat ades totas*, atque hinc in crucem, *Catull. Carm. de Nupt. Pel. & Thet. Candiaque intorti sustollant vela rudentes.* *Cael. Aurelian.* l. 1. *Erit igitur sustollendus agrotans subjectione manuum ex utraque alarum parte.* So from *atollo* or *attulo* is *attuli*; from *absollo* or *absulo* is *absuli*; from *contollo* *contuli*; and from *protollo* *protuli*; though those preterperfect tenses be not now declined ordinarily with those verbs, but rather with the compounds of *fero*, *affero*, *confero*, *profero.* *Voss. de Analog.* l. 3. c. 37.

*Et a suo sum fui* ] *Fui* is read in *Plant. Bacch.* 1. 2. *Ne phoenix factis tuis suam.* *Id. Capt.* 2. 3. 71. *Caveto mihi iratus suas.* *Id. Pers.* 1. 1. 52. *Cave suas mihi in quaestione.* *Virg. Aen.* 10. *Tros Tyriusve fuit, nullo discrimine agetur.* *Plant. Capt.* 2. 2. 10. *Si fuit, occasio*: and in many places more. *Par. Lex. Plant. Sarrum.* p. 280.

*A tulo rite fero tuli* ] For *tuli* they anciently said *tetuli*. Hence *Plant. Amjb.* 2. 2. *Osculum tetuli tibi.* *Id. Rud.* 4. 1. *Volupte est hodie me his mulierculis tetulisse auxilium.* *Ter. And.* 4. 6. *Si id scissem, nunquam hac tetulissem pedem.* *Plant. Menach.* 2. 3. *Huc*

*in hanc urbem pedem nisi hodie nunquam intro tetulit.*  
Now that reduplication is grown out of use in this word.

*A flos flos fletu tantum pro stare* ] That is, *flos* the neuter [to stand] hath *fletu*, whereas *flos* the active [to make to stand] hath *fletu*. Of which see before in *To fletu*.

*Furoque insanivi a verbo ejusdem significati* ] That is *furo* borrows *insanivi* from *insanio*. In *Sedulius* l. 1. *operis paschatis*, as *Vossius* saith, there is read *furui*. *Nec minus & Davii furerunt jussa tyranni*. But in any Classick Authour, you will neither meet with preterperfect nor Supine of this verb. Yea *furo* it self, saith *Vossius*, is insolent. Yet it was used by *Varro*, as *Priscian* saith, who bids it be declined, *furis, furit*. In *Arat.* l. 11. there is read, *Cui pelagus tellusque furuit*. *Voss. de An. log.* l. 3. c. 30.

Hither may be referred *gigno*, which borrows its preterperfect *genui*, from the old verb *gino*. Of which see above, *Gigno, poro, cano*, So *nexo, nexas*, hath *nexui* from *necto*, or *nexo*; *Lavo, lavas*, hath *lavi*, from *lavo, lavis, &c.* Of which before.

**Qu.** What particular verbs in or doth your Grammar here reckon up, which borrow their preterperfect from other verbs?

**An.** The particular verbs in or, which borrow a preterperfect from other verbs are by our Authour reckoned up thus.

*Sic poscunt* *Sic poscunt vescor, medeor, liquor, reminiscor*  
*vescor.* *Præteritum a pascor, medeor, liquefio, recorder.*

**Qu.** What is the meaning of this part of the Rule?

**An.** The meaning of this part of the Rule is this: That *vescor* in the declining of it, borrows from *pascor* its preterperfect *pastus* to be declined withal, so *medeor* borrows *medicatus* from *medicor*; *liquor* borrows *liquefactus* from *liquefio*; and *reminiscor* borrows *recordatus* from *recorder*.

■ Sic

¶ *Sic poscunt*] It is not to be thought, that these preterperfect tenses, *passus, medicatus, liquefactus, recordatus* are the preterperfect tenses of those verbs which borrow them from their own verbs: for the borrowers of them have no preterperfect tenses of their own: but this is all, that for the supply of their defect of preterperfect tenses, it is grown an use to name the preterperfect tenses of the other verbs of like sense with them in the room of theirs. And so *Phocas, Ad supplementum declinationis defectivis accommodantur*. And the same may be said of the rest before. See *Voss. de Analog.* l. 3. c. 28.

Qu. *How are the words of this Rule declined?*

An. The words of this Rule are declined thus:

The declining of the words.

*Tepeſco, tepeſcis, tepui, tepeſcere,*  
*Tepeo, tepes, tepui, tepere*  
*Ferveſco, fervescis, servi, fervescere,*  
*Ferveo, fervēs, servi, fervere,*  
*Video, vides, vidi videre, viſum,*  
*Cerno, cernis, vidi, cernere, viſum,*  
*Quatio, quatis, concuſſi [quaſſi] quater, concuſſi [quaſſi]*  
*Percutio, percuti, percuſſi, percutere, percuſſum,*  
*Ferio, feris, percucſſi, ferire, percucſſum,*  
*[Mingo, mingis, minxi, mingere, miſum,]*  
*Meio, meis, minxi, meiere, miſum,*  
*Sedeo, sedes, sedi, sedere, ſeſſum,*  
*Sido, fidis, sedi, fidere, ſeſſum,*  
*ſuffero, ſuffers, ſuſtuli, ſufferre, ſublatus,*  
*Tollo, tollis, ſuſtuli, ſufferre, ſublatus,*  
*[Fuo, Fui, fui, fuere, futum,]*  
*ſum, es, fui, eſſe,*  
*[Tulo, tulis, tuli, [teruli] tulere, latum,]*  
*Fero, fers, tuli, ferro, latum,*  
*ſto, ſtat, ſteti, ſtare, ſtatum,*  
*ſiſto, ſiſtis, ſteti, ſiſtere, ſtatum,*  
*inſanio, inſanis, inſanivi, inſanire, inſanitum,*  
*[Furo] furis, inſanivi, furere, inſanitum,*  
*Paſcor, paſceris, paſtus ſum, paſci, paſtus,*

Gg

Veſcor,

*Ves*cor, *ves*ceris, *pas*tus sum, *ves*ci, *pas*tus,  
*Medic*or, *medic*aris, *medic*atus sum, *medic*ari, *medic*atus,  
*Mede*or, *mede*ris, *medic*atus sum, *mede*ri, *medic*atus,  
*Lique*scio, *lique*scis *lique*factus s. *lique*sceri, *lique*factus,  
*Liqu*or, *lique*ris, *lique*factus sum, *liqu*i, *lique*factus,  
*Recor*dor, --*ari*s, *recor*datus sum, --*ari*, --*atus*,  
*Remin*iscor, --*eri*s, *recor*datus sum, --*isci*, *recor*datus,

Hither may be referred *scio*, as being declined with *factus* not formed from it self, but borrowed from the antiquated verb *facior*; So *comperior* formed not with *comperitus* sum, but *comperi*.

And thus far of Verbs Variant. We are now to proceed to Verbs Defectives.

## CHAP. XV.

Qu. **H**ow many sorts of Defective Verbs are there?

An. Defective verbs may be distributed into two sorts, Lesser Defectives, and Greater Defectives.

Qu. Which call you the Lesser Defectives?

An. The Lesser Defectives are those, whose defects or wants are lesse or fewer.

Qu. Which call you the Greater Defectives?

An. The Greater Defectives are those, whose defects or wants are more, or greater; and which from the greatness of their wants are called by way of eminency, Defectives.

Qu. Are the Lesser Defectives of one, or of more sorts?

An. The Lesser Defectives are of four sorts.

First, There are some that are defective only in some person, as *dari*s & *faci*s, which want the first person of the present tense in all moods: and so *sci*a which hath no such person as *sci*i in the imperative mood.

Secondly, There are some that are Defectives only



in their *preterperfect* tense: as verbs passives, whose actives have no supines.

Thirdly, There are some that are defective only in their *Supines*, as *lambo, mico, &c.*

Fourthly, There are some that are defective both in *preterperfect* tense and *supine*, as are all those which have no *preterperfect* tense.

**Qu. Of what sorts of these Defectives doth your Grammar treat?**

**An.** The Grammar treats but of the *Second, Third, and fourth sort*, namely those that want their *Preterperfect* tense, and those that want their *Supine*, and those that want *both*: the first being so few and inconsiderable as not much to deserving treating upon.

**Qu. What is the Rule that the Grammar gives touching those that are Defective in their preterperfect tense?**

**An.** The Rule for those verbs that are defective in their *preterperfect* tense is this:

*De verbis præterito carentibus.*

*Præteritum fugiunt vergo, ambigo, glisco, fatisco,*

*Polleo, nideo: Ad hæc inceptiva ut puerasco:*

*Et passiva quibus carere activa supinis:*

*ut metuor, timeor: meditativa omnia præter*

*arturio, esurio, quæ præteritum duo servant.*

*Præteritum fugiunt.*

**Qn. what is the meaning of this Rule?**

**An.** The meaning of this Rule is this: That there are several sorts of verbs, which are defective in their *preterperfect* tense, neither having any of their own, nor being declined with any borrowed from some other verb.

[ *Præteritum fugiunt* ] The word *fugiunt* here is *præteritive*, intimating not only that these verbs have no *preterperfect* tense of their own, but that they do not so much as borrow any *preterperfect* tense from other verbs to be declined withal, like those in the

foregoing Rule, who though they have no preterperfect tense of their own, yet cannot properly be said to be defective in preterperfect tense, because by use and custom, which is Law in words, as well as things, their want of that is supplied from others, which have it: and what they have, they cannot properly be said to want, though they do but borrow what they have: as he cannot be said to want a horse to go his journey with, that hath a horse, though but a borrowed one, to ride upon.

**Q.** What sort of Defectives doth your Grammar first mention in this Rule?

**Ans.** The Grammar in this Rule first mentions some particular verbs, which are not declined with any preterperfect tense, and they are these six, *vergo*, *ambigo*, *glisco*, *fatisco*, *Palleo*, *nideo*.

**¶ Vergo** ] From this verb *Diomedes* forms *verxi*, but without any Author, and so not with any authority.

**Nideo** ] This verb is looked upon as out of use. *Nideo simplex insolens*, saith *Daxef.* But the compound of it, *renideo*, is used. *Hor. 2. Carm. Od. 18. Non tibur, neque aureum Mea renidet in domo lacunar. Stat. Theb. 10. Emicat effigies & Harpa orichalca renident.* Yet without preterperfect tense. *Quidam ei prateritum irribuunt renidui* (saith *Vossius*) sed absque idoneo auctore. *Simplex ejus est nideo, verum non est in usu.* *De Etymolog. p. 106. Danes. Schol. l. 2. c. 15.*

**Q.** May there any more of this sort be added hither?

**Ans.** To those may be added also these, *labo*, *glabresco*, *danfco*, *aveo*, *flaveo*, *liveo*, *ceveo*, *clueo*, *liquet*, *ringo*, *ringor*, *attollo*, *suffero* for *patior*, and *calvor*.

**¶** There be many more words, which have no preterperfect tense of their own: but being declined with the preterperfect tenses of other verbs, they pass for such as do not want them: as *lavo* of the first conjugation, which hath *lavi*, not of its own; which should

be *lavavi*, but of *lavo lavis* of the third. *Flaves* and *lives* are said by some to have *flavi*, and *livi*, as *Vossius* notes, but without any good authority. For *suffero Vossius* gives this reason, because *sustuli* and *sublatum* retinent tollendi significationem: ac proinde ea *suffero* sibi nequit vindicare: sed ad veram originem pertinent, quæ est *tollo*, vel potius *supollo*. De Etymolog. p. 120. Mr. Farnab. adds *pueritet*. But that of *Ovid*. *Teque se:unt ira pœnituisse tua*, seems to intitle it to a preterperfect tense.

Qu. After these particular verbs named, what sort of verbs wanting their preterperfect tense doth your Grammar proceed unto?

An. After these particular words, which want the preterperfect tense the Grammar next proceeds to *Inceptives* in *scō*, which also want their preterperfect tense, as is said, *Ad hæc inceptiva, ut puerasco*.

*Ad hæc in-*

Q. What is the meaning of that branch of the Rule?

An. The meaning of that branch of the Rule is this: That such inceptives as *puerasco*, that is, Inceptives formed not from verbs, but from nouns (as *repuerasco* is from *puer*) are not declined with any preterperfect tense: as *herbesco*, *ignesco*, *sylvesco*, *lapidesco*, *mitesco*, *integrasco*, from *herba*, *ignis*, *sylva*, *lapis*, *mitis*, *integer*.

¶ This distinction of *Inceptives* formed from *verba* and from *nouns* passeth current amongst Grammarians: and yet it is possible, that it may be without ground, those which are said to be formed from *nouns*, being formed from *verbs* out of use. So *Vossius* observes that *calvesco* is derived from *calvus*, *canesco* from *canis*, and *senesco* from *senex*, and yet, saith he, *calveo* is in *Plin.* *Canes* in *Virg.* and *senes* in *Catull.* And accordingly *herbeo*, *igueo*, *sylveo*, *lapideo*, *mitis*, *integer*, *repuero*, may have been in use, though now disused. Yet as to the preterperfect the Rule holds, that those have the preterperfect of their primitive Verbs (*ubi a-*

pus, as Mr. Farnab. saith ) where need is , which are formed from primitive verbs in use : but of those which are formed from primitives out of use , few are declined with a preterperfect tense : *evileſco* is named, which hath *evilui*, though *evileo* be not read : but few, if any else. See *Voss. Etymolog.* p. 111. 112. 142. *Saturn.* l. 4. c. 16. *Rhen.* p. 139. 184. Where is a Catalogue of the Inceptives derived from verbs, and derived from nouns.

**Q<sup>a</sup>. What sort both our Authour next speaks of?**

*An.* The next sort of verbs wanting preterperfect tenses, which our Authour speaks of is *Passives* formed from *Actives* wanting Supines. So he

*Et passiva, quibus caruere activa supinis,  
ut metuo, timeor.*

**Q<sup>a</sup>. What is the meaning of this branch of the Rule?**

*An.* The meaning of this branch of the Rule is this : That those passives have no preterperfect tenses, which are formed from actives having no Supines.

¶ The preterperfect tense of the Passive being formed from the Supine of the Active, it must needs be that the Active having no Supine, the Passive can have no preterperfect tense. *Sublatâ causâ tollitur effectus.*

**Q<sup>a</sup>. What is the last sort of verbs wanting preterperfect tense, which our Authour speaks of?**

*An.* The last sort of verbs wanting preterperfect tense which our Authour speaks of, are certain verbs in *urio*, called here *Meditatives*, and by others *Desideratives*. So he,

*— Meditativa omnia prater  
Parturio, esurio, qua prateritum duo servant.*

*Meditativa omnia.*

**Q<sup>a</sup>. What is the meaning of this branch of the Rule?**

*An.* The meaning of this branch of the Rule is this : That *Meditative*, or *Desiderative* verbs ending in *urio*,  
do

do all want preterperfect tense : *parturio* and *esurio* being excepted only.

¶ Neither are all verbs ending in *urio* Desiderative or Meditative verbs : for *ligurio* and *scaturio*, *prurio* and *curio* or *cucurio* are no desideratives, as not being expressive of any desire, which is the property of desiderative verbs, as *esurio*, saith *Vossius*, is *cupio edere*, so *parturio* is *cupio parere*. Neither do all desiderative verbs end in *urio*, for *capto* is a desiderative verb, as signifying *capere cupio*, yet it ends not in *urio*. Therefore the Rule is strictly to be understood, not of all verbs in *urio*, nor of all Meditatives whatsoever, but of such Meditatives only as end in *urio*, as is aforesaid.

Qu. How are the words of this Rule declined ?

An. The words of this Rule are declined thus :

*Vergo*, *vergis*, *vergere*,

*Ambigo*, *Ambigis*, *ambigere*,

*Glisco*, *gliscis*, *gliscere*,

*Fatisco*, *fatiscis*, *fatiscere*,

*Polleo*, *polles*, *pollere*,

[ *Nideo*, *nides*, *nidere* ] or rather

*Renideo*, *renides*, *renidere*,

[ *Puerasco*, *puerascis*, *puerascere* ] or rather

*Repuerasco*, *repuerascis*, *repuerascere*,

*Metuor*, *metueris*, *metui*,

*Timeor*, *timevis*, *timeri*,

*Parturio*, *parturis*, *parturivi*, *parturire*, *parturitum*,

*Esurio*, *esuris*, *esurivi*, *esurire*, *esuritum*.

And thus far of Verbs that are defective in their preterperfect tense. We must next proceed to those that are defective in *Supine*.

The declining of the words.

## CHAP. XVI.

Qu. **VV**hat Rule doth your Grammar give for those that are defective in their Supines?

An. The Grammar Rule for Defectives in Supines is this:

*Verba supinum raro admittentia.*

*Hac raro, aut nunquam retinebunt verba supinum Lambo, mico micui, &c.*

Qu. What is the meaning of this Rule?

An. The meaning of the Rule is this: That there be many verbs which have preterperfect tenses, whose Supines yet are seldom, or never read, as *lambo lambi, mico micui, &c.*

[ *Hac raro* ] This word *raro* is *operative*, importing thus much, that of some of the verbs here named in this Rule, *sometimes*, though *seldome*, there be read Supines, or at least Participles derived from their Supines. This they should consider, that stumbling by chance on some *Supine*, or *derivative* from some Supine of some of these verbs, presently like ill natured Scholars flye with indignation in the face of their Master: or else crying *supra supra* clap their wings and crow over, censure and condemn poor *Lilly*, as guilty of some unpardonable error, who yet saw without doubt, the most of what they find of this nature; but for the *rarity* of it, lest it unmentioned, yet included under this term of *raro*, as a thing, though *sometimes* yet *seldom* read: and so the Title of his Rule, if they would mind it, is *Verba supinum raro admittentia*: and the Rule it self begins with, *Hac raro, aut nunquam retinebunt verba supinum*, which for hast to catch a shadow, they mind nor.

[ *Lambo* ] *Alvarus* saith *lambitum* is found in *Pristian*, but yet without testimony of any other; so avouch it

ii. Yea *Vossius* saith, *plerique Grammaticorum agnoscunt; sed auctoritatem requiro.* I suppose ancient ones, for I find none of the Moderns, but *Rhenius* and the *Grammar of Gryphiswald.* that have it. *Aluar.* p. 244. *Voss.* *Analog.* l. 3. c. 25.

*Mico micui* ] The simple verb *mico* hath no supine. But the compounds of it, as *dimico*, and *emico*, are said to have *dimicatum* and *emicatum*: Whence in *Seneca* is read *emicaturus.* l. *de Consol. ad Helviam*, c. 11. *Ad summa emicaturis.* And yet in those, as from *micui* is formed no supine, but all as from *micavi*. And who knows, but the meaning of our Authour in adding *micui* to *mico* might be to note, that though in the compounds of this verb from *micavi* was formed *micatum*, yet from *micui* neither in the simple nor compound, was any thing formed. Of *intermico* is formed *intermicatio*: but no supine or participle is extant of it, that I see.

*Rudo* ] *Rhenius* and the *Gryphisw. Gram.* have *ruditum*: but none, that I meet with else. *Appul.* indeed in *Met.* 7. hath *rudivi*, whence *ruditus*, the braying of an Ass, may come, as *rugitus* the roaring of a Lyon, from *rugivi*: but that, if allowed, is from *rudio*, whose Supine is, if any thing, *ruditum*, and so is nothing to *ruditum* of *rudo*: though *rudio* it self, out of *Appuleius*, you may be seeking.

*Scabo* ] This verb hath no Advocate to plead any thing for it, why it should have a Supine, and so is gone, if I may so say, at the Common-Law.

*Parco pepercui* ] So *Mr. Bird.* But *Rhenius*, the *Gryphisw. Gram.* *Shirley*, *Dessauter.* *Duisburg.* *Vossius* in his *Grammar.* *Harris*, *Hayne*, *Farnaby*, *Burles*, *Danes.* yea, and *Alvarus* are for two supines from this verb, *parsum* as from *parvi*, and *percitum* as from *pepercui*. Yet this granted, our Authour is in no error: for it is but rare, not very often that either is found. For *parsum* *Varro & Livie* l. 25. are quoted out of *Priscian* by *Vossius*. And for *percitum* two places are named. *Plin.* l. 30.



l. 30. c. 4. *Italia parcium est vetere interdicto Patrum, ut diximus.* Where yet some read, *Italia parci vetere interdicto Patrum diximus*, as both *Vossius* and *Alvarus* say. Perhaps the Authour writ at first *parcium*; and thence by some transcriber was made *parcium*. Again *Appul. l. 8. Met. Leopolemo parcito lanceam dimisit.* The consideration of which two places made the ingenious & learned *Saturnius* retract afterward, what he had written and published in the first Edition of his *Mercurius*, viz. that *parco peperci* had no supines. But no necessity of that retraction. For admitting all, that can be said from these two places, without questioning the reading of the first, yet it follows not that *parco peperci* hath any Supine formed from it, unless it could be assured, that *parcium* were formed from *peperci*, and not rather from *parci*, from which *Vossius* in his *Analog. l. 3. c. 25.* distinctly saith it is formed, bringing these very places for proof of it. *A parci est supinum parcium, Plin. l. 30. c. 4. &c.* From whence also *parcia* used by *Seneca 1. de clement.* will be derived. And for *parci*, that of *Nævius, Suo labori nullus parciuit*, is quoted by *Nonius*, as both *Vossius* and *Alvarus* say: From *parsum* comes *parsurus*. Thence *Sueton. in Tib. Caf. c. 62. At ne reliquis quidem nepotibus parsurus creditur.* So in *Ner. c. 37. Multasque nec dubias significationes saepe jecit, ne reliquis quidem se parsurum Senatoribus.* Also *parsimonia* used by *Cicero* and every body. But our Authour in adding *peperci* to *parco*, shews, that he meant not to go against any thing of that, 'tis *parco peperci*, not *parco parsi* that he saith seldom or never hath any supine. And in consideration of what is said above, you may now chuse, whether it shall be *rare* or *nunquam*, that *parco peperci* hath any; and if you will say *nunquam*, for me you may. *Voss. de Analog. l. 3. c. 25. Alvar. p. 244. Saturn. l. 6. c. 5. Farnab. p. 37. Duisburg. p. 117. Hayne p. 74. Danesf. Schol. l. 2. c. 15.*

*Dispersco* ] With our Authour here are *Alvarus, Richerius*

*cherius, Saturnius, Bird, Hayne, Harri, Rhenius, and the Gryphisw. Grammar.* But *Despauterius, Vossius, Ramus, Farnaby, Burles* are against him, all giving to this verb *dispecitum* for its Supine: But upon what authority? None that I see produced by them, but their own words. Unless this be it, that *Priscian* l. 10. doth admit of it, as of *compecitum, discitum, and poscitum.* But if that be it, then in l. 11. where he comes to treat of Participles in *rus*, he recalls himself, as *Alvarus* notes, and teacheth that the verbs, from whence these are supposed to come, do want Supines. In short, 'tis either never said, or but seldom said: and either way 'tis according to what our Authour here saith, *rard aut nunquam.*

*Posco* ] Two *Grammarians, Ramus and Richerius* give this verb a supine. But I have fourteen for those two (great odds, seven to one) that are against its having. And yet *Vossius* as well as *Ramus* cites *Seneca* saying (but I know not where) *exposcentum caput*, which, if it be, must come from *poscitum.* But our Authours *rard aut nunquam* will have place here: here's *rard* for the compound, and *nunquam* for the simple; the one read once, and the other never.

*Disco* ] Here the *Grammarians* run all on our side again. Only *Ramus* gives a supine to this verb. His Authority is *Priscian.* But he, as we noted on *Dispeco*, in his tenth Book was for it, in his eleventh against it. *Rhenius, and Vossius, and Alvarus* tell us that *Appul.* in *Phadone* hath *disciturus*; but, (not to say, as *Alvarus* doth, that that Authours speech *non semper eruditis probatur*) if ever it was said, for ought appears, it was but seldom, *rard aut nunquam* as our Authour speaks. Hither refer *addisco, condisco, edisco, pedydisco.*

*Compesco* ] The same falls out in this verb as in *dispeco.* The same are for, and the same are against its having a supine: the grounds on both sides are the same: and therefore what was said of that, may serve for this.

**Quinisco** ] This is said here, as before, by an *Apha-*  
*res* for *conquinisco*, the compound of *quinisco*, which if  
 any thing be, is in use. None, that I see, gives it any  
 supine, and so we have no more to do with it.

**Dego** ] This verb on every hand is denied a Supine,  
 and I have nothing to say for it; nor for *prodigo*, which  
 likewise is destitute of Supine.

**Ango** ] From this verb *Priscian* forms *anctum*: and  
*Diomedes* *anxum*. From *anxum* undoubtedly is *anxius*,  
 and *anxietas*: but neither *anxum* nor *anctum* are now  
 in use. *Voss. Analog.* l. 3. c. 27. *Alvar.* p. 247. *Richer.*  
 p. 64. *Ram.* p. 91.

**Sugo** ] Some few, *Despauterius*, *Alvarus*, and two or  
 three more of our *Country-men* are with our Authour  
 herein: but many more are against him, and are for  
*fugo* having *suctum* in the Supine. So *Vossius*, *Farnaby*,  
*Rhenius*, *Ramus*, &c. But why so? Why in *Plin.* l. 8.  
 c. 36. there is read the noun verbal *Suctus*. Speaking  
 of Bears he saith, that sometimes *priorum pedum suctu*  
*vivunt* (they quarter themselves upon their claps, as  
 the ingenious Authour of *Hudibras* doth expresse it.)  
 The same word he hath again, l. 9. c. 30. and l. 28. c.  
 3. Again, though *Jasq-Berengi* reckon *exsugo* amongst  
 those that want Supine, yet in *Hor.* 5. *Epod.* there is  
 read *exsuctus*. *Exsuctanti medulla & aridum jecur a-*  
*moris esset poculum*. Hence undeniably appears that *ex-*  
*suctum*, and *suctum* too, hath been in use: but the su-  
 pine *suctum*, or the simple participle *suctus*, are either  
 seldom or never read: and therefore still no errour in our  
 Authour for all this.

**Lingo** ] With our Authour herein are *Despauterius*,  
 and *Duuburgensis*, *Ramus*, *Richerius*. *Shirley*, *Brw*, *Har-*  
*ris* and the *Rudiment* writer. But a greater number  
 give this verb *linctum* for its supine: as *Alvarus*, *Sa-*  
*turnius*, *Hayne*, *Vossius*, *Farnaby*, *Daves*, *Burles*, *Rhe-*  
*nius*, the *Gryp.* *Gram.* and *Jasq-Berengi*. And why so?  
 Why *linctus* the Participle is read in *Plin.* l. 35. 15. *Sul-*  
*phur prodest & sulphuriosis linctum*. Yea *linctus* the Su-  
 pine

pine is read in his l. 3. c. 17. *Assius lapis prodest & phthysicis linctum*. So *linctus* the verbal, in his l. 3. c. 9. *Multi tussim veterem linctum salis discussere*. But this is but one Authour: nor is the Participle, Supine, or Verb read any more than each of them once, that I see yet, in him: and that will still suit with our Authours *raro*, though not with his *nunquam*. If better store be found, then, and now too, if you will; do as Mr. Hayne hath done, and put this word out of the Rule. *Voss. de Analog.* l. 3. c. 27. *Saturn.* l. 6. c. 5. Of the compounds of this verb *tingo* is by *Jasx-Berengi* reckoned amongst them that want Supine: but *pollingo* is by *Vossius* declined *pollingo, pollinxi, pollinctum*. Whence the verbal *pollinctor*, as he saith, *Etymolog.* p. 116.

*Tingo*] Neither *Despauterius*, nor *Dausburg*, nor *Richerius* make any exception of this word from the general Rule: So that by their Rules *tingo*, or *tinguo*, as it was anciently written, should make *ninxi* and *ninctum*: but in as much as they give us nothing but their bare word for it, and that but in a general Rule, without any example, and there be many (twelve that I have against three) that expressly except it, and deprive it of Supine, therefore it is like, for me, to go still for a defective in Supine.

*Satagoque*] This verb is on all hands concluded to want Supine, like *dego*, and *predigo*; and so is *Psallo*, so that I pass them by.

*Volo*] The generality of Grammatarians deny this Verb a Supine, as well as our Authour: But the *Gram. of Gryphisw.* very confidently gives it two for sureness, *volitum* and *vultum*. *Rhenius* with more caution tells us, that it hath *volitum apud recentiores*. Yea that some such thing hath been, seemed to *Vossius*, who though he give this verb no Supine, yet saith, *Ab inusitato supino volitum est volitus, & inde per Synopen vultus, seu vultus: ut a colitum, cultum, cultus*. But still we are but at *raro*, aut *nunquam* for all this. To the compounds of this verb *nolo* and *malo*, none.

none, nor the *Gryphism. Grammar* is so kind as to give any Supines, and therefore them I pass over without more ado.

*Tremio* ] So *Despaut. Tremo ponitur absque Supino.* And so every body else, that I meet with: to which we may add the compounds of it *contremo* and *intremo*. And the same I say for *frideo*, and *frido*: for *flaveo*, and *liveo*; for *aveo*, and *paveo*; for *conniveo* and *serveo*, and the compounds of this latter *deserveo*, and *esserveo*. So that we shall pass them also over without more ado, and go on.

*A nuo compositum ut renuo* ] *Stephanus* and his Abbreviatour *Trebellius* decline this verb with the supine *renutum*. And accordingly *Jasx-Berengi* so declines it; and with him is *Saturnius* l. 6. c. 5. But *Farnaby* and *Burles* say, that neither *renuo* nor *abnuo* have any supine. *Richerius* deprives *nuo* it self of supine though his country-man *Ramus* allow it to have one. *Harris* adds *innuo*, yet by the word *soli*, he seems to mean, that *renuo*, *annuo*, and *innuo* are all the compounds of *nuo* that want the supines. But *Shirley* to *renuo* adds *abnuo*, *innuo*, &c. *Hayne* and *Bird* are as general as our Author, and deprive all of supine; whereas not only to *nuo*, but to all the compounds thereof, *abnuo*, *annuo*, *innuo*, *renuo*, *Rhenius* gives supines; and so the *Gram. of Gryphism.* *Anno cum sociis nulla supina dabunt*, so saith *Despauterius*; yet his Commentator *Seb. Duisburg.* saith *nuo* hath supines, *forte & abnuo*, and perhaps *abnuo*, for he saith *abnuitus* is found: but he tells not where. *Alvarus* saith *annutum* and *renutum* are found in *Priscian*, who yet likes them not. In fine, *Alvar.* saith, *Videntur nonnulli ex his aliquando habuisse supinum unde nominantur nutus & renutus relicta sunt.* And there is sense methinks in what he saith. *Nutus* is in *Virg. Aen. 9. Annuit & totum nutu tremefecit Olympum.* So *Cic. Fam. 11. 22. Nutus tuus potest hominem incolumem retinere in civitate.* And both that, and *renutus* is in *Plin. 1. 1. Ep. 7. Nam ego quoque simili nutu*

ac *renutu* respondere voto tuo possum. But whence these but from *nutum* and *renutum*? And as *nuto* ( which what can it come from but *nutum*? ) is in *Plant. Menach.* 4. 2. *Nutat me loquar*; and else-where. So *abnuto* is in *Plant. Captiv.* 3. 4. *Quid mihi abnutas? Tibi ego abnuto?* and *Cic. 3. de Orat. Quidnam est obsecro? quid te adiri abnutas?* But what can this be from but *abnutum*? It may be seasonable to add here, what *Saturnius* above saith upon occasion of his giving *Supines lin-ctum* and *renutum* to *lingo*, and *renuo*. *Nec est quod hic mihi aliquis reclamet, Numnam igitur dicere licebit lincturus, renutus, ta, tum, & renuturus? Quidni, quantum ad verbi naturam pertinet? Neque enim propterea supinis fraudanda sunt, quia eorum participia in usu non sint. Id quod vel de aliis, quorum participia, aut obscura sunt, aut minus usurpata, dicendum.* Well, if *nuo* and the compounds of it, have *nutum* and *renutum*, &c. Yet it is rare, that any of them are found, and so our Authour, who is but for *raro* aut *nunquam*, will be in the right still. These, if you will hear *Danes*, *tunc utaris licebit, quum apud idoneum aliquem auctorem reperies.* *Schol. l. 2. c. 15.*

*A cado, ut incido: prater Occido quod facit occasum, recidoq, recasum* ] From *occasum* comes *occasurus* in *Cic. pro Mil. Vossq, obsecro, iudices, ut vestra beneficia, quæ in me contulistis, aut in huius salute augeatis, aut in huius exitio occasura esse jubeatis.* So *occasus* in *Gell. l. 17, c. 2.* Where citing *sole occaso* from *Novius* in *Atellana*, he adds *sole occaso, non insuavi venustate est*: and then brings a Law out of the twelve Tables, where that word is. *Sol occasus suprema tempestas esto.* From *recasum* is *recasurus* cited by *Vossius* and *Stephanus* from *Cic. ad Att. l. 4. Id ego puto, ut multa ejusmodi, ad nihil recasurum.* But the like may be said for *incido*. For *incasurus*, which can come but from *incasum*, is read in *Plin. l. 2, c. 47. Sed ea accidisse, non quia hæc facta sunt arbitror: verum hæc ideo facta, quia incasura erant illa.* But this is rare  
 ill

still that they are read, and therefore our Authour is not to be taxed for this neither. The like will hardly be read of *accido*, *concido*, *decido*, or any other of the compounds of *cado*, which therefore are reckoned up amongst those that are defective in supine.

*Respno*] So *Vossius*: who allows yet *spuo*, and the other compounds of it the supines; which *Jasq. Berengi* denies to *conspuo*, and *despno*. Yet *Stephanus* declines *conspuo* with *consputum*, and *despno* with *desputum*; and *exspuo* with *exsputum*; and *inspuo* with *insputum*. And indeed from *consputum* is formed *consputo*, read in *Cic. ad Qn. Fr. l. 2. Hora fere nonā, quasi signo dato, Clodiani nostros consputare ceperunt*. So from *insputum* is formed *insputo*; whence *Plaut. Cap. 3. 4. Qui me opus sit insputarier?* *ib. Quibus insputari saluti fuit, atq; aliis profuit*. I suppose it would be rare to shew either a supine, or a participle from any of these verbs, which made him deny them, though from these derivatives *Vossius* may grant them.

*Linguo*] Of this word see above, *Ali, ni, pi, qui*.

*Luo*] From this verb *Claudius* hath *luiturus*: thence though some deny, yet others grant this verb a supine. But see above, *Quod dat ni dat itum: Rui ruitum*.

*Metuo*] Ancienly this verb hath had for its Supine *metutum*. Whence *Lucret l. 5. Nam cupidā consulcat nūm autē metutum*. But now neither it, nor *prmetuo* compounded of it have any supine.

*Cluo*] This verb is not so often read as *clueo*: but if it have a preterperfect tense, as *clueo* hath none, yet it hath no more supine than that. And if *Pareus* should think either of these verbs had a supine, because there is *inclutus*, which may be supposed to be derived from thence, there is a Greek word *χλυτός*, from whence it would rather be derived. But perhaps he thought so too, and then we are agreed. So *frigeo*, *calvo*, *fierto*, and the compound of it *disfierto*, and *timeo*, I see none pretending to have met with any Supines. Only *Vossius* and *Rhenius* talk of *calumpnia* being derived from *calvo*,



as if from the Supine *calutum*, formed from *calvi*, like *solutum* from *solvi*: but if ever it was in, yet now it is out of use; and so *Despauterius*. *Calvo calvi facit absque supino*. *Danesius* saith *frigo tertia* hath *frictum*, but *frigeo secunda* caret *supinis*. Schol. 1. 2. c. 15.

*Sic luceo*] So *alluceo*, *diluceo*, *illuceo*, *praluceo*. Yet saith *Vossius*, *Compositum ejus polluceo*, quod verbum est ad sacra pertinenens, habet *polluxi polluctum*. Hence *Macrobius* 1. 3. c. 16. *Proprie autem catillones dicebantur, qui ad polluctum Herculis ultimi cum venirent, catillos ligant*. And hence in *Plaut. Mostell.* 1. 1. *Obsonate pol-lucibiliter*.

*Et arceo, cujus composita ercitur habent*] That the compounds have *ercitur*, as *exerceo exercitur*, and *coerceo, coercitur*, as none doubts it; so the participles and verbals *exercitus*, and *coercitus*, &c. derived from them prove it. And if the simple verb *arceo* have no supine as well as preterperfect tense, which some, it seems, have denied it, though *arxui* be both in *Cic.* 11. *Philipp.* and *Ovid* 13. *Met.* as *Vossius* notes, yet sure it hath had one: whence *arxus* for *arxitus*, and the frequentative *arxto*, as well as the Supines of the compound Verbs *exercitur*, and *coercitur*. *Voss. de Analog.* 1. 3. c. 22.

*Sic a gruo, ut ingruo natum*] To which add *congruo*.

*Et quaecunque in hi formatur neutra secunda*] As *abhorreo*, *abstinco*, *aceo*, *areo*, *attineo*; *calleo*, *candeo*, *clareo*, *colliqueo*, *conticeo*; *deliqueo*, *delitico*; *emineo*, *egeo*, *exarceo*, *floreo*, *freudeo*, *froudeo*; *horreo*; *immineo*, *indigeo*; *lacteo*, *languo*, *liqueo*; *madeo*, *marceo*; *niteo*; *obtimeo*; *palleo*, *pateo*, *pertineo*, *pramineo*, *promineo*; *ranceo*, *renideo*, *riticeo*, *rigeo*, *rubeo*; *scabreo*, *sileo*, *splendeo*, *sordeo*, *surdeo*, *torpeo*, *tumeo*; *vigro*, *vileo*, *vireo*, with their respective compounds, besides some before mentioned, as *ferbeo*, *ferbui*, &c. Yet this Rule is not so general, but that it hath exceptions, as accordingly it follows.

*Exceptis oleo, doleo, &c. gaudent haec namque supino*] And yet not all these excepted neither, nor only these, Nor all these, for *pareo* hath no supine: nor only these,

for *jaceo*, and *coaleo* have, or have had *supines*. Hence from *jaceo* *Stat.* 7. *Theb.* *Haud vetito nudus jaciture sepulch.* 8. So from *coaleo*, *Tacit.* l. 15. *Coalitum libertate irreverentiam eo prorupisse fremenibus.* Id. 20 *Si Alpes praesidiis firmentur coalitâ libertate dispecturas Gallias, quem virium suarum terminum velint.* A. Gell. l. 12. c. 1. *Cujus in corpore, cuiusque ex sanguine concretus homo & coalitus sit.* And of these it is not to be expected, that it punctually should be shewn, where they have *supines*. It may suffice to produce instances of participles formed from their *supines*. Nor is there any great reason, that they should be accounted defective in *supine*, whose participles derived from their *supines* may be shewn. Some say *studeo* hath a *supine* *studitum*, though *Dionysius* from *Dionedes*, saith it hath none: neither doth *Stephanus* decline it with any.

*Oleo* ] This verb hath been thought by *Priscian* to make *oletum*. Whence *oletum* the verbal substantive in *Perf.* 1. *Satyr.* *Veto quisquam faxit oletum.* This *Vossius* would have derived from the present tense. I see no great reason but it may be fetched from *oletum* a *supine* formerly used, though now out of use, and that formed from *olevi*, which is in use in some of the compounds of this verb, though in the simple *olui* now be only in use, from whence they form *olitum*, but yet are as far to seek for an example of it, as of *oletum*, but for what they find in some of the compounds of it: and when they have found it, are not sure but it may come from another verb, viz. *olo* of the third conjugation and read, saith *Parvus*, in *Plant. Mostell.* 1. 1. if he mistake not his Authour, whom, as I have heard, he studied forty years. See *Voss.* de *Analog.* l. 3. c. 23. where he saith, *Oleo nunc tantum olui & olitum facit*, whereas in his *Etymolog.* Lat. p. 106. Upon *oleo*, *olui*, *olitum* in his Text, he hath this Note in his Margine, *Si modò olitum uspiam invenitur. Sed antiquè & oletum fecit.*

*Doleo* ] Hence is read in *Hor.* 15. *Epod.* *O dolitura mea multum viriute Neera.* *Ovid. Met.* 9. *Fab.* 4. *Si-*

quis tamen Hercule siquis Forte deo doliturus erit.

*Placco* ] Hence *Virg. An.* 11. *Nuncius hac Idmon. Phrygia mea dicta tyranno Haud placitura refer.* *Plin. Ep.* 1. 8. *Interim tamen tanquam placituram, & fortasse placebit, expecta.*

*Taceoque* ] Hence *Ter. Eun.* 3. 5. *Tacitus citius audies.* *Id. Ad.* 3. 4. *Ignorant est, tacitum est, creditum est.* Yet *coniceo* and *reticeo* compounded thereof have no supines.

*Parvo* ] A supine or participle of this verb is hard to find in any *Classick Authour.* Yet *Alvarus* and *Vossius* cite *Scavola* and *Jabolenus* *ICC.* saying, *paritum esse conditioni.* *Saturnius* also names this word among the rest, *Quorum omnium supina* (as he saith) *ac participia in medio usu.* *Voss. de Ana. og.* 1. 3. c. 24. *Alvar. p.* 238. *Saturn.* 1. 6. c. 5.

*Item careo* ] Hence *Juven.* 2. *Sat.* *Tollere dulcem Cogitat heredem cariturus turture magno.*

*Nocco* ] *Ces.* 3. 1. c. *Jurejurando accepto nihil his nocturnos, se Octavio dederunt.* *Sen.* 2. *de Benef.* *Sunt quaedam nocitura impetrantibus, quae non dare, sed negare beneficium est.*

*Pateo* ] Of this verb see before, *Dat patui passum.*

*Lateoque* ] *Stephanus* declines this verb without Supine. *Alvarus*, and from *Priscian* 1. 11. saith it hath no supine. Yet *Vossius*, *Hayne*, *Farnaby*, *Rhenius*, *Despaut.* *Duisburg.* &c. allow it to have a supine. I see nothing of authority for it. *Vossius* only saith *simplex lateo latui format ex se latiturus*, but without example. Yet *latito* is formed from thence. So that it hath, or hath had the supines. However *deliteo* the compound of it is not found to have any supine.

*Et valco* ] Hence *Ovid.* 1. *Trist.* *El.* 3. *Multaque in adversos effudis verba penates Pro deplorato non valitura viro.*

*Caleo* ] *Ovid. Met.* 13. *Diesque Deo mihi sacrificos, calituraeque ignibus aras.*

Qu. How are the words of this Rule declined?  
 id?

The de-

clining of *Lambo*, *lambis*, *lambi*, *lambere*,  
 the words.

At. The words of this Rule are declined thus :  
*Mico*, *Micas*, *micui*, *micare*,  
*Rudo*, *rudus*, *rudui*, *rudere*,  
*Scabo*, *scabui*, *scabi*, *scabere*,  
*Parco*, *parcis*, *peperci*, *parcere*, *parsum* [ & *parcitum* ]  
*Dispecco*, *dipesceis*, *dipesceui*, *dipescere*,  
*Posco*, *poscis*, *poscui*, *poscere*,  
*Disco*, *discis*, *didici*, *discere*,  
*Compecco*, *compeceis*, *compeceui*, *compeocere*,  
 [ *Quiaisco*, *quiniisceis*, *quexi*, *quiniiscere*, ]  
*Dego*, *degis*, *degi*, *degere*,  
*Ango*, *angis*, *anxi*, *angere*,  
*Sugo*, *sugis*, *suxi*, *sugere*, *suctum*,  
*Lingo*, *lingis*, *linxi*, *lingere*, [ *linctum*, ]  
*Ningo*, *ningis*, *ninxi*, *ningere*,  
*Satago*, *satagus*, *saregi*, *satagere*,  
*Psallo*, *psallis*, *psalli*, *psallere*,  
*Volo*, *vis*, *volui*, *velle*, [ *volitum*, ]  
*Nolo*, *norui*, *nolui*, *nolle*,  
*Malo*, *maui*, *malui*, *mallo*,  
*Tremo*, *tremis*, *tremui*, *tremere*,  
*Strideo*, *strides*, *stridi*, *stridere*,  
*Stido*, *stidis*, *stidi*, *stridere*,  
*Flavco*, *flaves*, — *flavere*,  
*Livco*, *lives*, — *livere*,  
*Aveo*, *aves*, — *avere*,  
*Parco*, *parcis*, *pavi*, *parere*,  
*Conniveo*, *conniver*, *connivi* & *connixi*, *connivere*,  
*Ferveo*, *ferves*, *ferui*, *fervere*,  
*Nuo*, *nui*, *nui*, *nuere*, *nutum*,  
*Renuo*, *renuis*, *renui*, *renuere*, [ *renutum* ]  
*Cado*, *cadis*, *cecidi*, *cadere*, *casum*,  
*Incido*, *incidis*, *incidi*, *incidere*, [ *incasum* ]  
*Occido*, *occidis*, *occidi*, *occidere*, *occasum*,  
*Recido*, *recidis*, *recidi*, *recidere*, *recasum*,

Resp. arie

Respo, respis, respui, respere,  
 Linquo, linquis, liqui, linquere,  
 Luo, luis, lui, luere, luitum,  
 Metuo, metuis, metui, metuere, [metutum,]  
 Cluo, cluis, — cluere,  
 Frigeo, friges, frixi, frigere,  
 Calvo, calvis, calvi, calvere,  
 Sterto, stertis, stertui, stertere,  
 Timeo, times, timui, timere,  
 Luceo, lucet, luxi, lucere,  
 Arceo, arces, arui, arcece,  
 Gruo, gruis, grui, gruere,  
 Ingruo, iagruis, ingrui, ingruere,  
 Oleo, oles, olui, olere, olitum,  
 Doleo, doles, dolui, dolere, dolitum,  
 Placeo, places, placui, placere, placitum,  
 Taceo, taces, tacui, tacere, tacitum,  
 Parco, pares, parui, parere, [paritum]  
 Careo, cares, carui, carere, caritum,  
 Noceo, nocet, nochi, nocere, nocitum,  
 Pateo, pates, patui, patere,  
 Lateo, lates, latui, latere, [latitum]  
 Valeo, vales, vail, valere, valitum,  
 Calco, cales, calui, calere, calitum.

Q. Have you any other Verbs to add to this Rule?

Ans. To this Rule many verbs more are added, whose supines, or any thing derived from their supines, hardly are read. As of the first Conjugation, *elinguo*. Of the second *assulgeo*, *algeo*, *dependeo*, *detungo*, *effulgeo*, *fulgeo*, *niveo*, *pendeo*, *resulgeo*, *resideo*, *turgeo*, *ugeo*. Of the third, *antecello*, *butuo*, *clango*, *excello*, *incesso*, *obtingo*, *præcello*, *refello*, *sum* with his compounds, *desum*, *obsum*, *insum*, *possum*, &c. *Sapio*, *desipio*, *insipio*, *resipisco*, *delitescio*, *erubescio*, *evanesco*, *excandescio*, *maturo*, *refrigescio*, *senescio*. Of the fourth, *cæcutio*, *gestio*, *inceptio*, *absilio*, *profluo*, *nupturio*, *parturio*, *scaturio*, *canario*, *niario*, *veneo*.

**Q1. What say you of verbs Inceptives in *scō*?**

**An.** Touching verbs inceptives in *scō*. I suppose, as for preterperfect tense, so for Supine, they follow their primitive verb, which they stand for, and have what it hath, and want what it wants.

**Q1. What say you of verbs that borrow their preterperfect tense?**

**An.** Touching verbs that borrow their preterperfect tense, I suppose they follow the use of the verbs, from whom their preterperfect tense is borrowed, having supines if they have them, and having none, where they want them.

**Q1. Are there no other verbs used to be referred hither?**

**An.** Hither some do refer several verbs as wanting supines, whereof yet there are to be found supines, or derivatives from their supines, viz. *Participles, Verbales &c.* at least which are thought by learned persons to have supines. Such are *fateor, audeo, fido, gaudeo, gradior, dolo, irascor, misereor, metior, nanciscor, nitor, nascor, neo, obliviscor, operior, ordior, orior, patiscor, proficiscor, patior, depango, circumpango, queror, reor, sollicitudet, ulciscor, ulor.*

**F** From *fateor* comes *fassus* and *fassurus*. Hence *Ovid. Met. 13. Ignoscere fasso.* and *Ovid. 1. de Porto. D. veniam fasso.* *Id. Met. 14. Quid cuperet fassura fuit.*

**Audeo]** Hence *ausus, ausurus*. *Ovid. 1. Met. Magni tamen excidit ausis.* *Auson. Turpe quid ausurus te sentire time.* *Virg. An. 6. Ausi omnes immane nefas, ausoque potiti*

**Fido]** Hence *fisso, and confisso*, used by *Cic. in Tusc. 4. Fidentia, id est firma animi confissio, scientia quædam est.* So *confissus. Cic. pro Rosc. Comed. Copia & facultas causa confissus.*

**Gaudeo]** Hence *Gavisus* in *Ter. Heaut. 4. 8. Vale frustra igitur gavisus miser, Cic. Fam. 8. 14. Nunc sum gavisos homines suum dolorem.*

**Gradior]** Hence *gressus* the participle. *Virg. 6. Ae*  
partice

*Pariter grossi per opica viarum.* So *gressus* the verbal.

*Ovid. 3. Met. Subsequitur pressoque legit vestigia gressu.*

*Disfo*] Hence is *distito* a frequentative in Gouldman.

*Irascor*] Hence *iratus*. *Cic. pro Cael. Huic homini deos plerique iratos putabant. Cic. Att. 1. 15. Antonio est enim fortasse irator. Id. Phil. 8. Illis fuerat iratissimus. Colum. 7. 18. Nonnunquam etiam conservos iratus contineantur.*

*Miseror*] Hence *Plaut. Trin. 2. 4. Me ejus miseritum est. Stephanus reads it miseritum est. Ter. Phor. 3. 2. Miseritum est.*

*Met or*] Hence *mensus, mensor, mensura. Cato. r. r. Modio aleareo mensum dato C. 2. de N. Deor. Spatia mensa quia, conficiunt cursus lune, menses vocantur. Colum. 6. 1. Quod ego non agricolæ, sed mensoris officium esse dicebam.*

*Nascor*] Hence *nactus* *Plaut. Capt. 2. Valentior natus adversarium.*

*Nitor*] Hence *nisus* and *nixus. Cic. 2. Tusc. Pedetentim, inquit, ite, & sedato nisu. Cic. pro Cluent. Sicut vestra æquitate nixi confidimus. A. Gell. 1. 12. 1. Quam laboriosi nixus fuissent.*

*Nasor*] Hence *natus* the Substantive. *Virg. 1. An. Nate patris summi.* So *natus* the Participle. *Cic. 7. Verr. Natus genere nobili.* So *natus* the Adjective. *Cic. pro Se. stio. Vir. ad dignitatem & ad gloriam natus.* And *natio* both for a Country, and for a Family.

*Neo*] Hence *netus* the Participle twisted; and *netus* or *netum* the Substantive, a Net; also *netorius* of Spinning or Netting in Gouldman.

*Obliviscor*] Hence *oblitus. Hor. 1. Ep. 11. Oblitusq; meorum, obliviscendus & illis.*

*Operior*] Hence *opertus. Cic. de Sen. Nullo imbre, nullo frigore adduci, ut capite operto sit.*

*Ordior*] Hence *orsus* the Participle. *Virg. An. Veneris contra sic filius orsus.* Also the Substantive Verbal. *Cic. 2. de Div. Scire ratosne habeant, an vanos pehoris orsus Virg. 12. An. Sic ore vicissim Orsa refert.*



**Orior**] Hence *ortus* the Participle *Cic. Att. l. 11. Ortus rumor ex sulpitii literis.* The verbal Substant. *Cic. 1. Offic. Ortus nostri partem patria vindicat.* The participle *oriturus Hor. 2. Ep. 1. Nil oriturum aliàs, nil ortum tale fatentes.*

**Paciscor**] Hence *pactus* the participle. *Cic. 1. Off. Cum triginta dierum essent cum hoste pactæ induciæ, nocte populabatur agros.* The Substantive verbal *pactum. Ovid. Ep. 9. Nec mihi credideris, recitetur formula pacti.* And *pactio. Cic. 2. de Invent. Quum omnes perituri milites essent, nisi ad pactiorem venissent.*

**Proficiscor**] Hence *profectus* the Participle. *Cic. de Sen. Adolescentulus miles profectus sum ad Capuam.* And the Verbal *profectio. Cic. l. 3. ad Qu. Fr. Recordere consilium nostrum, quod fuerit profectiois nostræ.*

**Patior**] Hence the Participle *passus. Virg. 1. Æn. O passi graviores, dabit deus his quoque fixem.* And *passurus, Stat. 3. Theb. Situm indignum passurus.*

**Depango**] Hence *depaetus*. *Plin. l. 2. c. 96. Depaeti in terram non extrahantur.* So from *circumpango* is *circumpaetus*. *Plin. l. 17. c. 13. Ramis terra circumpaetis.* And though I meet not with the like of *oppango*, and *repango*, yet *Stephanus* gives them *oppaetum* and *repaetum* for their *Supines*.

**Queror**] Hence the participle *questus. Ovid. ad Liriam. Oraque nequicquam per modum quæstæ fluunt. Cic. Fam. l. 1. Ep. 9. Quid multa? questus est graviter.* So *questus* the verbal Substantive. *Virg. Æn. 4. Tantos illa suo rumpebat pectore questus.*

**Reor**] Hence comes *ratus* the Participle. *Tacit. l. 18. Ipse abunde ratus, si presentibus frueretur.* And the Adjective verbal. *Cic. 5. Tusc. Quorum vogi motus, rata tamen & certa sui cursus spatia definiunt. Cic. 1. Tusc. Omnia ista perinde ut cuique data sunt, pro rata parte a vitæ longa, aut breviora dicuntur.*

**Solito**] From hence comes *solitus. Ovid 6. Met. Solito finem imposuere labori. Id. 14. Met. Velocius solito currit.*

*Tader*

*Telet*] Hence *pertafum* est. *Virg. Æt. 4. Si non pertafum* (halami) *reda*que fuisset. And *pertafus*. *Suet. Cæs. c. 7. Et quasi pertafus ignaviam suam, quod nihil dum a se memorabile actum esset.*

*ultiscor*] Thence comes *ultus*. *Ter. Phor. 1. 4. Rectè ego mihi vid fẽm, & senis effẽm ultus iracundiam.* So *ultio*. *Plin 1. 11. c. 28. Illis enim ultionis causã datum est.* *Tacit. 1. 2. Simul perfidos & raptores pacis ultioni & gloria mactandos.* So *ultor*, and *ultrix*.

*utor*] Hence the Participle *usus*. *Plin. Ep. 25. usus est firmã valetudine, nisi quod solebant ei manus tremere.* So the Substantive *usus*. *Cic. pro R. Ro. Posth. usus est magister optimus.* *Id. 1. 1. de Orat. Adjungatur usus frequens, qui omnium magistrorum præcepta superat.* The Participle *usus*. Whence *Ovid. Met. 11. Malè usurus donis.* And the verbal *uso*. *A. Gell. 1. 4. c. 1. Longe usonis gratiã contribuantur, & recondantur.*

**Qu. Have you yet any thing more to add touching verbs that want their Supines?**

**An.** There is this yet further to be added, that all those verbs do want Supines, who want preterperfect tenses.\*

¶ *Præterito quæcunque carent careatque Supino. Dines.*

And thus far of the Lesser Defectives.

## CHAP. XVII.

**Q<sup>1</sup>.** **W**hether doth the Grammar give any Rule in verse, touching the greater Defectives?

**Ans.** in regard that, what was to be said touching the greater Defectives, was such as would not stand in verse, nor was capable of being comprehended under any Rule; therefore the Authour of this part of the Grammar gives no Rule either in Verse or Prose for them, but delivers what he had to say of the Particular Verbs themselves, in prose: So he

*De Verbis Defectivis.*

*Sed nunc ut totum percurras ordine verbum,*

*Istis pauca dabis mutilata & anomala verba:*

*Que quia clauda quidem remanent nec versibus apta,*

*Qui rectis pedibus plerisque incedere gaudent,*

*Hicce sequens dabitur quem cernis sermo solutus.*

**Q<sup>1</sup>.** How many verbs Defectives doth the Grammar treat of?

**Ans.** The Defective verbs which the Grammar treats of are Fifteen, viz. *Aio, ausim, salve, ave, cedo, faxo, forem, quaso, infit, inquit, vale, odi, ceppi, memini, novi.*

**Q<sup>1</sup>.** What Moods or Tenses, Numbers, or Persons, &c. is *Aio* delivered to have?

**Ans.** *Aio* is delivered to have these Moods, Tenses, Numbers, and Persons, &c. following.

*Præsens Indicativi aio, ais, ait. Pluraliter aiunt. Præteritum imperfectum, aiebam, aiebas, aiebat, Plur. aiebamus aiebatis, aiebant.*

*Imperativus ai. Præsens Optativi, Potentialis, & Subjunctivi Aias, aias. Plur. aiamus, aiant. Præs. Particip. Aiens.*

*Aio*

¶ *Aio* is in *Cic. de Div. Aio te Macida Romanos vincere posse.* *Aiebam* is also there read. *Quid ergo Aius iste, quando cum nemo norat, aiebat, & loquebatur?* For *aiebant*, the ancients said *aibant*. *Aiat* is in *Tull. de Fin. Quasi ego curem quid ille aiat, aut neget.* *Aiens* in *Tull. Topic. Negantia Sentibus contraria.* *Probus* owns *ai*, *aisti*, *ait* in the preterperfect tense. In *Tertul.* is read *aierunt*. *Atque ita omnes aierunt Fiat voluntas domini.* So he *lib. de fug.* And *Vossius* thinks the Ancients used yet more, as *aitis*, *aite*, which when they appear, may as well be used as others, for ought I know. *Voss. Etymolog. Lat. p. 132. Analog. l. 3. c. 40.*

Qu. what hath *ausim*?

Ans. *Ausim* hath these following, *Præsens, Operativi & Subjectivi ausim, ausis, ausit, Plur. ausint.*

¶ *Ausim* is used for *audeam*, and *ausus sum* So *Liv. l. 37. c. 53. Egonum non ausim me comparare.* And it is made by a Syncope of *ausferim* formed from *ausi*, which anciently, as we have shewed, was the preterperfect of *audeo*, though now *ausus sum* be onely in use.

Qu. what hath *salve*?

Ans. *Salve* hath these following, *Futur. Indicat. salvebis. Imper. salve, salveto. Plur. salvet, salvetote. Infinit. salvere.*

¶ *Salvebis* is in *Cic. Att. l. 6. Salvebis a meo Cicerone. i. e. Cicero meus te salutatur*, saith *Stephanus. Plant. Truc. 2. l. 2. hath salveo.* As *salve St. Satis mihi est tue salutis. Nihil moror, non salveo. Agrotare malim, quam esse tue salute sanior.* But that is spoken in the person of a rustick, and so not to be spoken unless perhaps in the person of such.

Qu. what hath *ave*?

Ans. *Ave* hath these following: *Imperat. ave, ave-to. Plur. avete, avetote. Infinit. -avere.*

*Ave* considered as a word of salutation hath what the

the Grammar delivers of it. *Ave* is ordinary. *Martial.* 1. 51. *Et marulinum portat ineptus ave.* *Catull.* 96. *Atque in perpetuum frater ave atque vale.* *Aveto* is in *Sall. Catilin.* *Per liberos tuos rogatus aveto.* *Avere* in *Martial.* 1. 3. *Ep.* 5. — *Hoc dices, Marcus avere jubet.* But *aveto* to desire or covet, hath more senses. Thence *Cic. Att.* 1. 1. *Valde aveo, are, quid agas.* *Hor.* 1. *Serm.* *Sat.* 4. *E quibus unus avet quavis aspergere cunctos.* *Cic.* 1. *Off.* *Avemus aliquid audire & discere.* *Id.* 4. *de Fin.* — *avent audire.* *Id. Attic.* *Avere te scribis accipere aliquid a me literarum.* *Hor.* 2. *Serm.* *Sat.* 4. — *Non est mihi tempus aventi Ponere signa novis preceptis.*

Q<sup>1</sup>. What hath *cedo*?

*An.* *Cedo* hath these following: *Imperat. Cedo,* *Plur. Cedite,* id est, *Dic, vel porrige, Dicite vel porrigite.*

¶ *Cedo* is used for *Dic.* in *Ter. Heaut.* 4. 2. *Nomen mulieris cedo quod sit.* So *Cic.* 7. *Verr.* *unum cedo auctorem tui facti.* For *porrige,* in *Ter. Hec.* 4. 4. *Puerum mihi cedo.* *Plant. Mostell.* 1. 3. *cedo aquam manibus puer.* *Ter. Heaut.* 3. 1. *Cedo dextram.* Of *cedite* I do not for the present think of, or find any example: Only of *cette* made of and used for *cedite*, there are examples. *Plaut.* in *Mercat.* *ac.* 5. *sc.* 4. *v.* 4. hath it. *uxor tibi placida & placata est, cete dextras nunc jam.* So *Ennius* in *Medea*, *Cette manus vestras, mea que accipite.* Perhaps *cedite* many not be in use, and that may be some reason why *Cicero* as *Stephanus* observes in his *Orat. pro sepio*, useth *Cedo* in the plural number. *Cedo nunc ejusdem illius inimici mei de me eodem ad verum populum in Campo Martio concionem quis &c.* i. e. *date, vel quero & exoptulo a vobis,* saith *Stephanus*, See *Voss. de Analog.* 1. 3. c. 40.

Q<sup>1</sup>. What hath *faxo*?

*An.* *Faxo* hath, *Futurum fixo vel faxim, faxis, faxit, pos faciam vel fecero.* Plural *faxint.*

The

¶ The Ancients did often retain the vowel of the present tense in the preterperfect tense, whence *cannere* in *Sallust* for *cecinerē*: and thence some future tenses came to be uttered in *axo*: Hence *axo* for *egero*; for of *ago* was fi st formed *agi*, thence by casting out *e*, and turning *r* into *s* was *agsi*, or *axi* and thence *axo*; and the compound *adaxo*: and so of *facio* first was formed *faci*, thence *facero*, and of that by casting out *e*, and turning *r* into *s*, was made *facso* or *faxo*. And so of *agerim* and *facerim* by the like changes, was made *axim*, (and *adaxim* the compound of it) and *faxim*. The former of these *axim*, *Attius* in *Peribœa* hath, *ut quæ egi ago, vel axim, verruncent bene*: as *Plaut.* hath *adaxim* the compound of it in his *Aul.* 1. 1. *utinam me divi adaxint ad sustendium*; the latter, *faxim*. *Ter.* in *Ad.* 5. 5. *Tibi lubens benefaxim*. So *Plaut.* *Amph.* 1. 3. *Ego faxim te Amphitruonem esse malis, quàm Jovem*. *Id.* *Pseud.* 1. 1. *Ex tabellis jam faxoscies*. *Pan.* 1. 1. *Utrumque faxo habebit*. *Id.* *Capt.* 1. 2. *Si faxis, te in caveam dabo*. *Id.* *Capt.* 3. 5. *Absecede ab ista obsecro, ne quid in te male faxit in percita*. *Id.* *Truc.* 1. 1. *Quos cum celamus, si faximus conscios*. *Id.* *Capt.* 1. 2. *Ita di deæque faxint*. *Plaut.* *Pseud.* 1. 5. hath *faxem* for *fecissem*. *Pistrinum in mundo scibam, si id faxem* (i. e. *fecissem*) *mibi*. *Vossius* saith *Faxitis* is read in *carminē antiquo devotionis Urbis atque exercituum*. And in *Shirley* there is read *faxere* for *facturum esse*, in his *Via ad Latin.* *Ling. Complanat.* p. 99. See *Voss.* de *Analog.* 1. 3. c. 41.

Q. 1. What hath *forem*?

*An.* *Forem* hath Imperfectum *Ottat.* *Poten.* & *Subjunct.* *Forem, fores, foret, proessem, esses, esset.* *Plur. forent.* *Infin.* *fore, id est, futurum esse.*

¶ *Forem* is made of *fuere*, as *fore* of *fuere*, from the old verb *fuo*. *Ter.* *Hec.* 4. 1. hath it. *Nam si utrumvis horum mulier, unquam tibi visus forem.* The compound thereof *afforem*, is in *Ving. An.* 1. *Atque u-*

*inam*

*tinam rex ipse Noro ampulsus eodem Afforet.* So *confore* is in *Ter. And.* 1. 1. *Et spero confore.* *Voss.* in his *Ety-molog.* *Lat.* p. 133. hath also *desorem*, but without an Authour: yet *Stephanus* for *desore*, cites both *Cicero* and *Silius.* *Verum arbitrabantur non desore, qui illa resistnerent.* So the former *Contr. Rull.* *Promittitque vi-ris nulli se desore restem* so the latter. *Fore* the simple. *Plaut.* hath *Amph.* 1. 2. *Confidese fore.* See *Voss.* de *Ana-log.* 1. 3. c. 41.

Qu. what hath *quaso*?

An. *Quaso* hath *Præsens*, *Indicat.* *Quaso.* Plural. *Quasumus.*

¶ *Lucret.* 1. 5. hath *quasit.* *Non dixim pacem volis adit, ac prece quæ sit.* *Plaut.* in *Menach.* 5. 1. v. 36. hath *quæse*, as *Colvius* reads it, *I, Decio, quæse meum patrem*; but that is now read *quære.* But *Plaut.* hath *quæsere* in *Bacch.* 2. 2. 1. *Mirum est me ut redeam te opere tanto quæsere.* i. e. *rogare, orare.* And *Appuleius* 1. 4. hath *quæsens.* *Multis nos assatibus multisque precibus quæsens adhortatur.* *Voss.* *Anal.* 1. 3. c. 41.

Qu. what hath *insit*?

An. *Insit* (as our Authour saith) *sola vox est, dicet, seu dixit significans.* Plur. *Insunt*, id est, *dicunt.*

¶ *Insit* comes of *insio* used by *Varro* as *Priscian.* 1. 8. testifies. And it signifies the same that *cæpit*, or *incipit*, as *Festus* expounds it. Thence *Plaut.* *Aulul.* 2. 4. *Insit ibi postulare, plorans, ejulans, &c.* So *Virg.* *Æn.* 11. *Ita furier insit.* *Lucret.* 1. 3. *Commutare animum quicumque adoritur & insit.* *Virg.* *Æn.* 12. v. 10. *Tunc sic affatur regem, atque ita turbidus insit.* Besides our Authour; many imagine that it signifies also, *inquit ac ait*, &c. And to this purpose *Stephanus* from *Bucæus* cites *Liv.* 1. 1. *ab urbe.* *Tum ita Tullus insit, Romani si unquam ante alias ullo in bello fuit, quod, &c.* *Id.* 1. *ab urbe.* *Insit annum se tertium & non agesimum agere*: and also adds out of *Virg.* *Æn.* 10. *Tum pater omnipotens rerum uni summa potestas insit, eo dicente deum domus alta silescit.*



flet. So *Virg. An. 5.* Isque his *Aeneam* solatus vo-  
 cibus infit. *Id. An. 10.* —alloquitur merentem & tali-  
 bus infit. But in these or the like, in the opinion of  
*Vossius* there is *loqui* or *fari* understood, which is ex-  
 pressed in that of *Virgil* above named. Ita *fari* infit.  
 See *Voss. de Analog. l. 3. c. 40.* *Danesh. Schol. l. 1. c.*  
*25.* *Miher* may be referred *desit* for *deest*, *desunt*, *de-*  
*fiat*, *deseri*. *Ter. Eun. 2. 2.* Nihil quum est, nihil  
*desit* tamen. *Virg. Ecl. 2.* Lac mihi non aestate novum,  
 non frigore *desit*. *Gell.* Qua crescere luna gliscunt,  
*desiciente*, contra luna *desiunt*. *Plaut. Rud. 4. 4.* Omnia  
 iterum vis memorari scelus, ut *desiat* dies. *Id. Me-*  
*nach. 1. 4.* Trilus vide quid sit satis, neque *desiat*,  
 neque *superfit*. *Ter. Hec. 5. 2.* Nihil apud me tibi *de-*  
*fieri* patiar. So *confit*, *confiat*, *confieret*, *confieri*. *Ter.*  
*Adelph. 5. 8.* Hoc *confit* quod volo. *Colum. 1. 8.* Sic  
 enim curabit ut & panis diligenter *confiat*. *Cic. Att.*  
*1. 9.* -- Quo *facilius* -- res tota *confieret*. *Cas. 7.* *Bell.*  
*Gall.* Postquam id *difficilius* *confieri* animadvertit.

Q. *Ubat hath* inquit?

An. *Inquit* hath these, *Præsens Indicativi*, *inquit*  
*vel inquam*, *inquis*, *inquit*. *Plur.* *Inquimus*, *inquunt*.  
*Præterperfectum*. *inquisti*, *inquit*. *Futurum*, *Inquier*,  
*inquiet*. *Præsens Optativi*, *Potentialis & Subjunctivi*, *In-*  
*quiat*. *Particip.* *Inquies*.

¶ *Inquit* is very little, if at all used. That of *Cicero*  
*2. de Orat.* *Ancupari verba oportebit inquit*, produced for  
 it, is found to be a corrupted place, *inquit* there being put  
 for *in quo*. That of *Catullus*, *Volo ad Serapin Ferri mane*  
*mane, inquit puellæ*, is a little better thought of;  
 though not without suspicion; So that *Regius Lepidus*  
 reads it *inquam*, and *Scaliger inquit*. It may be best  
 therefore to leave *Priscian* in this, and follow *Diomedes*  
 and *Phocas* who disallowed of it. But *inquam* made,  
 as *Vossius* thinks, by a *Syncope* of *inquiebam* (so that  
 at first it was of the *preterimperfect* tense though now it  
 be of the *present* tense) is more usual. *Cic. Ver. 7.*

*Cum,*

*Crux, crux inquam infelici ac misero* Id. pro Rab Posth. *Vos, vos inquam & senatus frequens restitit.* So *inquis* is in Cic. 1. Phil. *Quas tu mihi intercessionem inquis?* So Pers. 1. Sat. *Hic inquis veto quisquam faxit oletum.* *Allo inquit* in Cic. ad Att. En, *inquit mihi hæc ego patior quotidie.* *Inquimus* is in Hor. Sat. 3. l. 1. *Communi sensu plan carere inquimus.* Yea and *inquit* is in Arnob. l. 1. *Sed antiquiora inquit, nostra sunt.* Id. l. 2. *Non credimus, inquit, vera esse, quæ dicit.* *Inquiunt, Cicero in Verr. 6.* hath, *Ubi sunt Pamphile, inquiunt, Scyph?* *Inquebant* is (as Vossius saith) *ipsum Ciceronis*; but where he names not. Nælius quotes Cicero's Topics for *inquebat.* And there indeed I find, *Nihil hoc ad jus, ad Ciceronem inquebat Gallus noster*— in Lambine's Edition, which perhaps in others is *inquebat.* *Inquisti, Cicero* hath in his 2. de Orat. *Tu verò inquisti molestus non eris.* *Inquies Cic. in Fam. ep.* hath, *Ubi igitur inquies Philosophia tua?* *Inquiet* he hath in Verr. *Ergo inquiet aliquis.* So in his ad Herenn. *Quil amor?* *inquiet quisquam*— *Inque* is in Ter. Heaut. 4. 7. 1. *Eccam me inque.* Id. Phorm. 5. 7. 26. *Tum autem Autiphonem video ab se amittere Invitum eam, inque.* Also in Plant. Pseud. 1. 5. 124 *Jus bonum orat Pseudolus. Dabo inque.* *Inquito* in Plant. Aulul. 2. 10. 58. *Bene feliciterque vertat; ita Di faxint inquito.* But of any other tenses or persons of this verb, as yet I meet with nothing in Authors. When ought appears, 'tis reason it should be admitted of.

Qu. *Uthar* hath vale?

An *Vale* hath Ind car. *Valebis. Imper. Vale valere* Plur. *Valetote. Infia. valere.*

¶ *Valebis* and *valere* is in Cic. l. 6. Ad Agric. *Valebis igitur, & valere Piliam, & Catilium nostram jubebis literis; & salvebis a meo Cicerone.* *Vale* in Cic. Fam. 16. 10. *Etiā atque etiam vale* and at the end of almost every Ep. in Cicero. *Vale comes* in Plant. Capt. 3. 5. together with *salve. Vale atque salve, effi aliter*

aliter ut dicam meres. *Id. Curc. 4. 2. Vale atque salve.*  
 And so in *Cissell. 1. 1. 118. Bach. 4. 9. 11.* So in *Cic. Fam. 16. 5. Vale, mitiro, vale, vale, & salve.* So *Ib. Ep. 9. vale, salve.* Betwixt which two we may note that distinction given by *Suetonius in Galba. Exoletum morem, tantum in domo sua harentem obstinatissime retinuit, ut liberti, servi que bis die frequentes adessent, ac mane salvere, vespere valere sibi singuli dicerent. Valere* is the conclusion of *Cicero's Ep. 7. 6. 1. 13. Fam. So. 1. 19. Ep. 1. Tulliola & Ciceroni salutem dic. Valet.* So *Ib. Ep. 4.* Thus it is with this word when used as a term of Valediction, or bidding Farewel. But when it signifies *possum, polleo, potens sum, vim habeo, vires habeo, momentum vel pondus, vel auctoritatem habeo, alicujus momenti putor, operor, proficio, momentum affero,* as *Nizolius* glosseth it, so it is no defective but a perfect verb.

**Qu. What hath odi?**

**Ans.** *Odi* hath the preterperfect tense, and most, if not all these, that come of it, *Viz. odi, oderam, &c.*

**Q.** *Odi* is in *Hor. 3. Carm. Od. 1. Odi profanum vulgus & arceo. Cic. in Off. hath, Quem quisque odit, perisse expetis. Horat. Virtutem presentem odimus. Cic. Att. Nec enim Appium odimus, & Brutum amamus. Cic. in Offic. Quem metunt oderunt. M. Anton. in his Letter recited by Cic. Phil. 13. hath odit. Nec deseram partes quas Pompeius odit. But that is not used. Cic. Attic. Non dubito quin me male oderit. Catull. Epigr. 14. Odissem te odio Vatiniiano. Cic. Fam. Pati contumelias pejus odero malis omnibus aliis. Id. de Am. Aperit vel odisse magis ingenuum est, quam fronte osculare sententiam. Id. ib. Ita amare oportet ut aliquando sis osurus. The Future Tense of the Subjunctive Mood of this Verb is used for the Imperative, as in *Cic. 1. Philip. Oderint dum metuant.* And so it is in *caperd* and *meminero.* For *odi* some have also said *osus sum.**

So *Plant. Amphitr.* 3. 2. 19. *Inimicos semper oſa ſum obtuerier.* So *Gell.* 1. 4. c. 8. *Hunc Fabricius non probabat, neque amico utebatur, oſuſque enim morem cauſa fuit.* This *Præterperfecti odi*, is from the preſent tenſe *odio*, anciently in uſe in Claſſick Authours, and retained by ſome latter eſpecially Eccleſiaſtick Writers, both in the *Active* and *paſſive* form. Thence *Goldaſtus* from the Manuſcript of *Valerian* cites, *Odio conloquium meretricis.* *St. Hier.* hath in his Bible, *odiet, odient, odivi, odite, odientes, &c.* So *Petronius* hath *odientes*, and *Appuleius* *odienti.* In *Proverb.* 1. 2. is read *odibunt ſcientiam.* In *Eccleſiaſtici* c. 20. ver. 8. *qui poteſtatem ſibi ſumit injuſtè oditur.* *Tertull.* *adv. Gent.* hath, *oditur itaque in hominibus innocuis etiam nomen innocuum ib.* *At enim ſecta oditur in nomine utique ſui auctori.* 'Tis beſt to uſe but what is uſual. See *Voff.* de *Analog.* 1. 3. c. 39. *Saturn.* 1. 6. c. 5.

**Qu. cæpiat hath cæpi?**

*An.* *Cæpi* hath the *præterperfecti* and thoſe that come of it, *cæpi, cæperam, &c.* Thence in *Ovid.* 1. *Amor. Eleg.* 7. *Sentire cæpi me nocentem eſſe.* *Ter. Ad.* 2. 1. *Illuc quaſo redi, quo cæpiſſi.* *Id.* 3. 3. *Prius oſſeciſſem, quam ille quicquam cæperit.* *Cic. de Fato.* *Neve inde navis inchoanda exordium cæpiſſet.* *Cic. Att. Cajetam ſi quando abundare cæpero, dnybo.* *Cic. pro Rab. Poſſib.* *ut magis pæniteret cæpiſſe, quam licere deſiſtere, &c.* For *Cæpi* ſome have uſed *cæptus ſum.* *Cic. de Cl. Orat.* *Qua in urbe primùm literis oratio mandari cæpta eſt.* *Id.* 1. *Cat.* *Nunc de repub. conſuli cæpti ſumus.* *Liv.* 1. 3. *Contemni cæpti erant a finitimis populis.* *Cæſ. Cicero.* *De damnatione frequenter loqui eſt cæptum.* *Cic. Att.* 1. 16. *Prior mihi legi cæpta eſt.* *Cic. de Cl. Orat.* *Hortenſius igitur cum admodum adoleſcens orſus eſſet in ſoſd. cere, celeriter ad majores cauſas adhiberi cæptus eſt.* *Id.* *Is cum ſatis floruiſſet adoleſcens, minor haberi eſt cæptus poſtea.* Of the preſent tenſe *cæpi*, alſo, or the tenſes derived from it, there may be read

read examples. Thence *Plaut. Menach. 5. 5. Neque ego insano, neque ego pugnans, neque lites capio. Cæcilius in Peribæa hath Aere obscuro hercle desinam, Mane capiam. Festus also quotes from Cato. Capiam seditiosa verba loqui. Plaut. Truc. 2. 1. ubi nihil habeat, alium questum capiat. Ter. Adelph. 3. 4. Non sex totis mensibus prius oisecissem, quàm ille quicquam caperet? Others read caperit. Plaut. Pers. 1. 3. 41. Lubido extemplo est capere convivium.*

**Q.** *capit hith* meminini?

**A.** *Memini* hath the tenses, that come of the preterperfect tense, and is defective in the present tense, and those that come of it, but that in the Imperative it hath Sing. *Memento.* Plur. *mementote*, as our Author notes.

¶ *Plaut. Curc. 3. v. 14. Nil tunc saturum monueris meminini & scio. Cic. de Senect. Omnia que curant senes meminuerunt. Cic. in Philip. Meministi ipse de exilibus. Id. Ep. Fam. Meministis me ita distribuissè, causam. Plaut. Truc. 2. 1. Nos divitem eum meminimus, atque iste pauperes nos. Plin. l. 8. c. 40. Itinera quamvis longa meminere. Quintil. l. 11. c. 2. Neque omnino huius rei meminit usquam poeta ipse. Cic. Ver. 4. Ipse sui meminerat æque. Plaut. Aulul. 3. 6. Meminervint sese unde oriundi sient. Cic. de Amic. Quæ disputata ab eo meminisset Scævola. Cic. Fam. Ep. Te rogo ut meminervis. Id. pro Quintil. Si hæc meminervitis. Plaut. Capt. 2. 1. 52. Qui nunc sis meminisse ut meminervis. Plaut. Asin. 5. 2. 89. De palla memento amabo. Cic. in Philip. Sed memento præter Appium neminem esse, &c. Memini as Vossius and Stephanus observe, comes of the old verb *meno*, whence by a reduplication, after the manner of the Greeks, comes *memini*, as of *fallo*, *sefelli*. Though there was also read *memino*, whence the participle *meminens*, whereof Vossius produceth many examples. Auson in tumulo Minerodii Rhetoris. Vivis adhuc ævi, quod superest *meminens*. Sidor. Apollinor. l. 6. Ep. 3. Mei *meminens* non sum. both*

which yet *meno*, and *memino* are now out of use. See *Voss. de Analog.* l. 3. c. 39.

Q<sup>1</sup>. *quid habet novi?*

Aa. *Novi*, thought to want the present tense, because (like *odi* and *memini*) in the preterperfect tense it sometime hath the signification of the present tense, yet is not defective in that tense: but hath the present tense, and those that come of it, and so may pass for a perfect verb.

¶ That *odi* hath the signification of the present tense is evident from that fore-mentioned place of *Cicero*. *Servare & contumelias pati pejus odi malis omnibus aliis.* And so from infinite places more. The like for *memini* appears from that of *Cic. pro Planc. Memini enim memini, nec unquam obliviscor nullis illius.* So *Flor.* 1. 12. *Hoc tunc Verientes fuisse, nunc fuisse quis memini.* Whether the same may be said for *capi* I know not. Mr. Farnaby saith the same in this respect of it, as of *odi* and *memini*, which is a good presumption it is so, though *Rhenius* say, *habet significationem tantum prateritum, excepto futuro conjunctivi capero*: But for *novi* it may be said. So it is used by *Ter. Adelph.* 4. v. 33. *Nomen nescio illius hominis, sed locum novi ubi sit.* ib. 38 *illuc ubi etiam coprisicus magna est. nostin? Novi.* And in a thousand places more. Yet that it hath the present tense and those formed from it, is most evident. Thence *Cic. ad Attic. Ego verò causas tuas nosco.* *Stat.* l. 1 *Sylv. Nosco diem causasque sacri.* *Cic. de N. Deor. Deus ille quem mente noscimus.* —Id. in *Verr. Tutores hoc noscunt.* *Ovid.* 1. *Trist.* 4. *El. Nec nescitur ulli.* —*Cic. de N. Deor. Omnes Philosophiæ partes tum noscuntur, cum totæ quæstiones scribendo explicantur.* *Tacit.* l. 18. *Scribonianus a domino noscebatur.* *Plaut. Amph. Periem astutum nosces inquam; illum servum Sopham.* *Cic. Tusc. Cum igitur, nosce te dicit, hoc dicit, nosce animum tuum.* *Plaut. Pen.* 4. 2. *Fac ergo id facile noscam, ut ille possit noscere.* *Cic. de Leg. Atqui vercat,*

vereor, ne istam causam nemo noscat. Id. ib. Sapiencia nos cum ceteras res omnes, tum quod est difficillimum docuit, ut nosmetippos nosceremus. A. Gell. l. 11. Pyrrhonii indicia rei cuiusque negant posse nosci & percipi. Whereupon we may well with Saturnius (l. 1. c. 21.) conclude nosco to be a perfect verb.

**Qu.** Can you name any more Defective Verbs of this sort, beside what our Authour here mentions?

**An.** There are some few verbs more mentioned by Grammarians, which for the greatness of their Defects, may be added hither, such as *Ouat*, *explicit*, *apage*.

**Qu.** What hath *ouat*?

**An.** *Ouat* is said to have *ouat*, *ouarent*, *ouandi*, *ouans*.

**¶** *Ouat* is read in *Valer.* 4. *Argonaut.* *Latus ouat.* *Ouans* in *Plaut.* *Bacchid.* 4. 9. *Mihi evenit, ut ouans prædæ onustus incederem.* *Ouarent* and *ouandi* are named by Mr. Shirley in his *Via ad Latin. Ling. complanata*, p. 92. without Authour, yet I suppose, not without good Authority. And from whence, but *ouatum* a Supine of this verb, can come the verbals *ouatus*, and *ouatio*; yet Mr. Farnaby saith, *ouat & Particip. ouans tantum in usu sunt.* *System. Gram.* p. 42.

**Qu.** What hath *explicit*?

**An.** *Explicit* hath *Ind.* *Pres.* *explicit.* *Plur.* *expliciti.*

**¶** *Explicit* signifies the same that *desinit*. I find it in Mr. Shirley's *Gram. Lat.* pag. 39. and Gouldman's Dictionary.

**Qu.** What hath *apage*?

**An.** *Apage* hath *Imper.* *apage.* *Plur.* *apagite.*

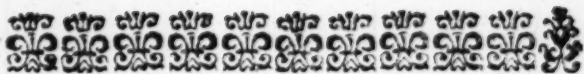
**¶** This word is sometimes used absolutely, sometimes it hath a Case after it. Thence some will have it a Verb, some an Adverb, and some an Interjection, as *Stephanus* notes. The three best of Modern Grammarians, that I have met with, *Vossius*, *Rhenius* and *Farnaby*



aby deliver it for a verb, derived from the Greek ἀπα-  
γω ἀπαγῆς of ἀπαγω abigo. It is used without a  
Case by *Plaut. Amphit.* 1. 1. 154. *Apaga.* Non placet  
me hoc noctis esse, cœnavi modò. With a Case. *Plaut.*  
*Trin.* 2. 1. 25. *Apaga te,* Amor non places, nihil te uxor.  
So *Ter. Euz.* 5. 2. 65. Neque pol servandum tibi Quid-  
quam dare ansim, neque te servare: *apaga te.* *Cic.*  
*Fam.* 5. 10. *Apaga te cum nostro Sex.* Et servilio:  
nam me hercule ego illum quoque amo. *Plaut. Amph.* 2.  
1. 32. *Vah! apaga te a me.* *Id. Merc.* 1. 1. 33. *Apaga*  
*istiusmodi salutem, cum cruciatu que advenit.* *Id.*  
*Cure.* 5. 1. 8. *Apaga istanc caniculam.* And what is  
said of *apaga*, may be said of *age*, which is used some-  
times verbally, sometime adverbally, with *dum* an-  
nexed to it; and without it, as *age agedum, agite agi-*  
*tedum*, with this observation only, that *agite*, and *a-*  
*gitedum* have alwaies a plural with them. Whereof see  
*Farnab. System. Gram.* p. 42. *Voss. Etymolog. Latin.* p.  
132. *Rhenius.* p. 245.



F I N I S.



## Errata in *As in Praesenti*.

**P**Age 259. Line 22. read lavère. p. 266. l. 14. r. cubui. p. 267. l. 5. r. accubitionem. p. 269. l. 24. r. beo, cco. p. 274. l. 7. r. teregi. l. 21. r. oboritur. l. 25. r. Phocas. l. 33. r. melioribus. p. 275. l. 8. r. refrixerit res. l. 34. r. Quintilians. p. 277. l. 16. r. conuico. p. 281. l. 30. r. πῆγες. l. 34. r. Terendi is. p. 283. l. 28. r. tetigi. p. 285. l. 23. r. φαρσι. p. 287. l. 8. r. φαρ-Berenyi. l. 9. r. Servius. l. 16. r. Sepulchra. p. 290. l. 16. r. this is. p. 294. l. 15. r. Danesius. p. 295. l. 14. r. Quin. fol. si. p. 300. l. 3. r. tenui. l. 15. r. stetisti. p. 306. l. 33. r. Prostibulo. p. 307. l. 4. r. se cornuum. p. 308. l. 21. r. te silli. p. 315. l. 32. r. both. its. p. 321. l. 19. r. veneo. p. 323. l. 16. r. sanxerit: p. 328. l. 6. r. exterritus. p. 330. r. tibi. Dinarchus. p. 332. l. 4. r. inveniri. p. 337. l. 5. r. Crassum trabes. p. 347. l. 4. r. oblaferis. l. 20. r. Sentius occanere. p. 348. l. 29. r. tetigi. p. 349. l. 38. r. ac sidera. p. 353. l. 12. r. losse. l. 23. r. composed of. p. 359. l. 12. r. But elicio. p. 366. l. 16. r. geminar: ff. p. 367. l. 19. r. uvescunt. p. 370. l. 3. r. cecidi. p. 371. l. 1. r. tetigi. p. 372. l. 6. r. ceculi. p. 374. l. 13. r. that those that. p. 377. l. 17. r. Marso. l. 18. r. vetustissimos. p. 386. l. 17. r. torruui. p. 388. l. 1. r. altum. l. 3. r. inusitatum. p. 401. l. 32. r. φαρσι; p. 405. l. 18. r. Dein; p. 415. l. 23. r. summum; l. 31. r. illic; p. 419. l. 20. r. pacificit; p. 420. l. 36. r. Marcellin; p. 422. l. 14. r. παρθετικῶς; p. 424. l. 11. r. Hercule; p. 426. l. 11. r. Fa-cunlo; p. 429. l. 29. r. ovaris; l. 26. r. continuare.